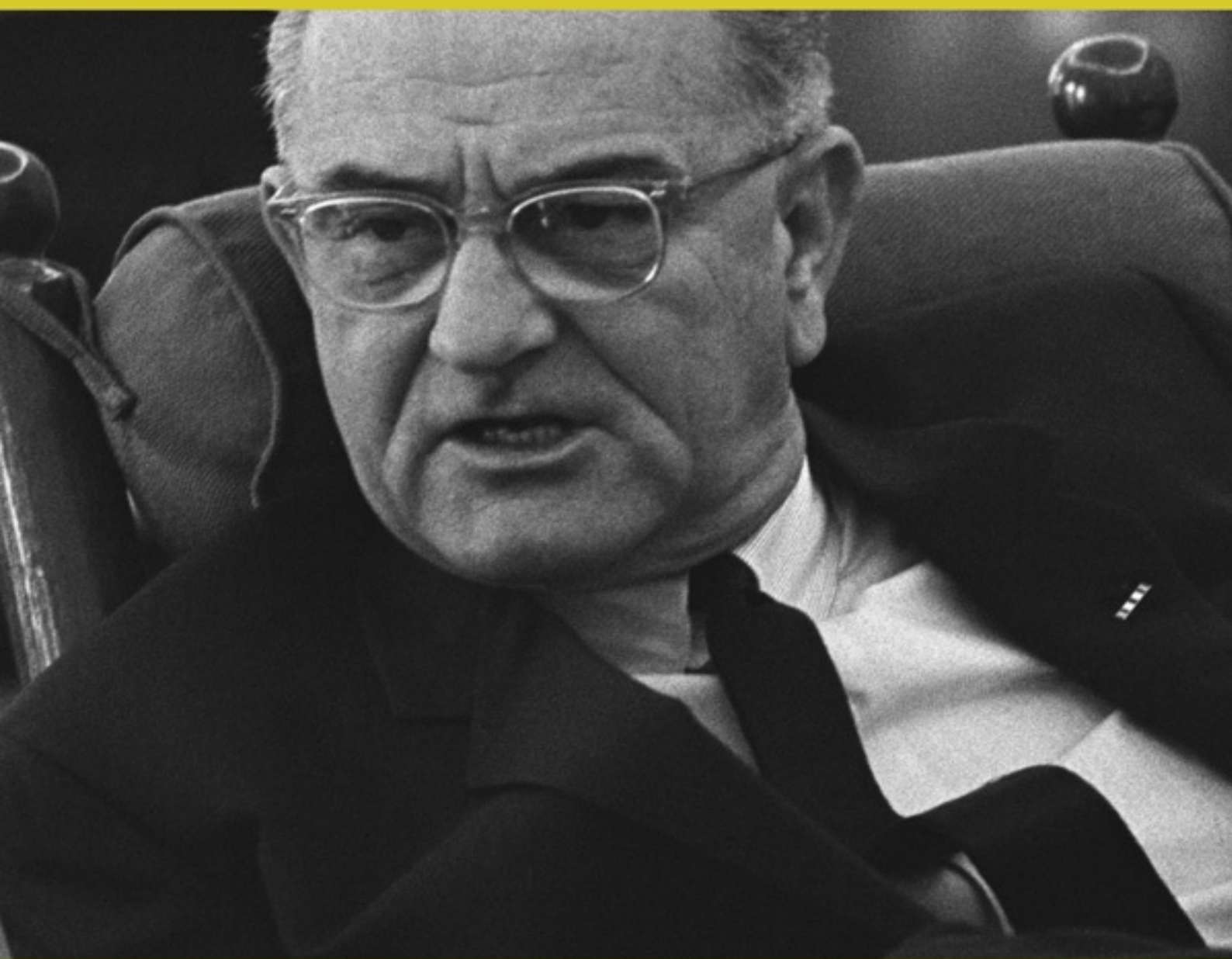


LBJ

From
MASTERMIND
to
"THE COLOSSUS"



From the author of *LBJ: The Mastermind of the JFK Assassination*

PHILLIP F. NELSON

LBJ:
From Mastermind
to the “Colossus”

*The Lies, Treachery, and Treasons
Continue*

Phillip F. Nelson



Skyhorse Publishing

Copyright © 2014 by Phillip F. Nelson

All rights reserved. No part of this book may be reproduced in any manner without the express written consent of the publisher, except in the case of brief excerpts in critical reviews or articles. All inquiries should be addressed to Skyhorse Publishing, 307 West 36th Street, 11th Floor, New York, NY 10018.

Skyhorse Publishing books may be purchased in bulk at special discounts for sales promotion, corporate gifts, fund-raising, or educational purposes. Special editions can also be created to specifications. For details, contact the Special Sales Department, Skyhorse Publishing, 307 West 36th Street, 11th Floor, New York, NY 10018 or info@skyhorsepublishing.com.

Skyhorse[®] and Skyhorse Publishing[®] are registered trademarks of Skyhorse Publishing, Inc.[®], a Delaware corporation.

Visit our website at www.skyhorsepublishing.com.

10 9 8 7 6 5 4 3 2 1

Library of Congress Cataloging-in-Publication Data

Nelson, Phillip F.

LBJ: from mastermind to the “colossus”: the lies, treachery, and treasons continue/Phillip F. Nelson.

pages cm

Includes bibliographical references and index.

ISBN 978-1-62873-692-2 (hardcover: alk. paper)—ISBN 978-1-62914-026-1 (ebook) 1. Johnson, Lyndon B. (Lyndon Baines), 1908-1973. 2. Presidents—United States—Biography. 3. United States—Politics and government—1963-1969. I. Title.

E847.N47 2014

973.923092—dc23

[B]

2014032417

Cover photo courtesy of the LBJ Presidential Library

Printed in the United States of America

LBJ: FROM MASTERMIND TO THE “COLOSSUS”

The Lies, Treachery, and Treasons Continue

Dedicated to the memory of Texas Ranger/U.S. Marshal Clint Peoples, whose relentless but failed pursuit of Lyndon Johnson’s criminal machinations—his success coming finally eleven years after Johnson died—forms the foundation upon which this book rests. It was his life’s work that proves the case being made against Lyndon B. Johnson.

And also to Plato, who said:

“The price of apathy towards public affairs is to be ruled by evil men.”

And finally, to my wonderful wife, Karen, whose patience and forbearance allowed me the opportunity to indulge my efforts to resist becoming apathetic.

CONTENTS

Acknowledgments

Foreword

Introduction

Chapter 1: The (Real) “Lone Ranger”: A Lifelong Quest for Justice

Chapter 2: LBJ: Master of Manipulation

Chapter 3: LBJ’s Template: Keeping Secrets and Planting Lies to Replace Truths

Chapter 4: LBJ’s Use of America’s Wealthiest and Most Influential Men—and How It Led to Presidential Treason

Chapter 5: Endless Investigations, More Murders

Chapter 6: The Demise of Robert F. Kennedy

Chapter 7: Lyndon Johnson’s War

Chapter 8: The Six-Day War and the Attack on the USS *Liberty*

Chapter 9: A Hypothesis of Presidential Treason

Chapter 10: The Legacy of the “Colossus” (a.k.a. the “King of the World”)

Epilogue

Appendix A

Appendix B

Bibliography

Endnotes

Index

ACKNOWLEDGMENTS

In a time of universal deceit, telling the truth is a revolutionary act.

—GEORGE ORWELL

For decades after John Kennedy's assassination, as I pursued my corporate career, I had accepted that the "official story" of the assassination was a fabrication. During all that time, in the deepest recesses of my mind, the enigma of that unsolved crime lingered as I came to believe that the government's findings had been created to assuage the "survivor's guilt" that afflicted most people who experienced the after-effects of the trauma during that first decade. I began to realize that the cover-up was a very sophisticated yet deeply fissured plan that worked only because it exploited the fright and anxiety being felt simultaneously by those same people while offering them a much safer alternative to the real dangers lurking in the background: Worst among them was the pandemic fear, already felt in those cold war years, of the next war, now that the arsenals were filled with the most horrific bombs ever made. Add to this the unthinkable yet viable notion of wars being fought merely for the pecuniary or political gain of the leaders who waged them. Another was a fear of the possibility that invisible and enigmatic, secret forces were responsible for JFK's murder. And still another was an unknown politician who had previously been the butt of a lot of jokes ending in "Lyndon, Who?" Suddenly, an entire country wanted to know more about this gangly Texan, a rather crude cowboy who was now president, and, most disturbing to many who were paying attention, the newspapers and magazines throughout the country had been printing some troubling articles about his closest associates.

The articles didn't stop there, however, and that is where things got more interesting: Stories of political chicanery and sales of political influence, government agencies dispensing licenses to powerful politicians to conduct monopoly businesses, government fraud on a massive scale, rumors of Washington party girls dancing naked in tubs of champagne, and even a number of unusual "suicides," which many suspected were purposely misclassified. It is little wonder that the "safe alternative" the government provided allowed the citizenry to put all those lingering questions aside and allow time to distill them into the accepted official story as it had been set by a presidential commission of "august men."

Many of the original books on the subject were focused simply on the implausibility of the "Oswald as lone assassin" canard. Accepting the obvious implications, and the fact that most of the evidence had been locked away or destroyed, I knew intuitively that there was much more to this story but had resigned myself to the fact that the truth would not be revealed within my lifetime, that the real story was meant for future generations. When I retired in 2003 that was my mind-set. But it would soon change, because in November of that year, I watched as The History Channel added three new episodes to the six they had already done on the JFK assassination under the main title, "The Men Who Killed Kennedy." Indeed, the catalyst of my renewed interest in the case was the last of the three new episodes added that year, "The Guilty Men," which centered on Lyndon Johnson's

alleged role in the assassination; upon seeing that segment, I was stunned by the realization that my long-held suspicions about Johnson had been vindicated. As noted in later chapters of this book, several of the remaining Johnson sycophants forced The History Channel to never rebroadcast it after 2003, but, thankfully, it remains available for purchase or free viewing on YouTube. It was this video that caused an epiphany for me and resulted, after more research into the subject three years later, in my decision to write a book that presented all of the circumstantial evidence that had already accumulated over many decades, yet had never been connected into a coherent and thorough narrative. So, again, I credit all the people who contributed to or produced that video.

Within that last (ninth episode) video, “The Guilty Men,” it was the voice of long-time researcher Ed Tatro that caught my attention the most. I have since met Ed and we have become friends. I have come to believe that he has a keener, deeper, and wider level of knowledge of this subject than any other man or woman alive today. He has been of tremendous help to me in understanding how the pieces of this puzzle fit together, the nuances of otherwise mind-boggling details and the personality traits of many people he personally interviewed and/or corresponded with, men such as Billie Sol Estes, Roger Craig, Gordon Novel, Richard Bissell, Paul Rothermel Jr., Clay Shaw, Earl Ruby, Charles Harrelson, and Chauncey Holt, and women such as Madeleine Brown, Marina Oswald, and Marguerite Oswald (this is a shortened list, as the complete one might take up the entire page). Ed has written his own manuscript, which has never been published. Although he remains undecided about ever publishing it, if he does, he should have no trouble finding a publisher. One of his friends, Bill Cheslock, came along at precisely the right time, just weeks before the 50th anniversary of JFK’s assassination and wrote a short paragraph that—despite being rejected by the *Cape Cod Times*—became the denouement (literally, the final paragraph) of this book. David Denton, another friend of Ed Tatro’s, graciously invited me to appear at both his fiftieth anniversary JFK conference in Illinois and the 2014 conference in Arlington, Virginia on the occasion of the fiftieth anniversary of the Warren Commission Report. Another person who entered the scene as I developed the book is Dr. David W. Robinson, an adjunct professor of education at George Fox University in Newberg, Oregon, who graciously helped me by reviewing the final copy before I sent it to the publisher. He also volunteered to write the foreword, for which I am very grateful. A new and very helpful acquaintance, the well-connected and debonair author Roger Stone, has been very helpful to me in expanding the audience for this book. His own book, coauthored by Mike Colapietro, *The Man Who Killed Kennedy: The Case Against LBJ*, has been a great complement to my own first book, adding much context to an evolving story of Shakespearean drama and dimensions.

There are many others I’ve noted throughout the book who have also been very important sources to me in certain key areas in helping me to develop this book, many of whom I’ve previously acknowledged for their help in my first book, *LBJ: The Mastermind of the JFK Assassination*. Certain of these key people have expressed their desire to remain anonymous, and that wish prevents me from expressing my gratitude to them personally, at least on this page; but they know who they are and how much I am indebted to them. I owe a special debt of gratitude to the person who went to the trouble of copying much of

the oral history of Clint Peoples, obtained from the sixty-plus boxes of materials in the collection of his records at the Dallas Public Library, and made it available to me. Connie Kritzberg has also continued to be helpful to me, despite her health problems and her narrow escape from both of the two major Oklahoma City tornadoes in the spring of 2013. Other ladies who brought forward valuable research included the intrepid freelance researcher/writer Michele Stoddard and a Texas researcher known by many as Wendy Rosi, a pseudonym to protect her privacy; she is respected by those who know her for the breadth of her knowledge about JFK's assassination and her tenacity in exploring all possible avenues of inquiry in her pursuit of the truth. Still another lady who came forward following decades of sworn silence, after hearing an Air Force brigadier general admit that "LBJ had JFK killed," was the ex-wife of Lieutenant Colonel William H. Amos. To protect her privacy, her full name has been omitted. She was yet another valuable witness who was referred to me by Austin researcher Robert P. Morrow, who has been so helpful to me in the past.

Author and radio host Barry Chamish, who wrote, among many other works, *Who Murdered Yitzhak Rabin?*, has been very helpful in rounding out my understanding of Israeli politics and the distinctions I've made between the many degrees of separation on the gamut of Zionism: From those pursuing their goals along diplomatic paths or those who became "freedom fighters," contrasted to those whose actions crossed over those lines and became "terrorist" in nature. Researcher Dave Martin was very helpful to me in gaining a better understanding of the death of James Forrestal and Lyndon Johnson's role in his persecution just before Forrestal's mysterious fall from the sixteenth floor of the Bethesda Naval Hospital.

Others who have assisted me by reviewing, and offering suggestions for correcting, or elucidating, certain passages include Paul Schrade, a friend of Robert Kennedy's who was with him when he was assassinated (and was shot himself by Sirhan Sirhan, unlike RFK), and Dennis David, the officer of the day at Bethesda Naval Hospital for JFK's "autopsy," whose groundbreaking statements made in 1979, and picked up by David Lifton in his 1981 book *Best Evidence*, led to major discoveries of nearly lost truths in this case that can no longer be denied. I've also received advice on this subject from the Irish researcher and author Shane O'Sullivan, whose book *Who Killed Bobby?* and video *RFK Must Die* make him an expert on that event. Paul Evancoe, a former Navy Seal commander—and author of three beautifully written novels of the Vince Flynn and Tom Clancy genre—whose expertise in "all things military," was very helpful to me in understanding those aspects of this story. The prolific author and radio show host Jim Fetzer, so helpful to me over the three years since the first publication of *LBJ: The Mastermind of the JFK Assassination*, also reviewed an early draft of this manuscript, as did Doug Caddy, the JFK researcher and ex-attorney for Billie Sol Estes, and Gerald D. "Jerry" McKnight, author of *Breach of Trust: How the Warren Commission Failed the Nation, and Why* and *The Last Crusade: Martin Luther King, The FBI, and the Poor People's Campaign*. Doug Horne, author of the five volume *Inside the Assassination Records Review Bureau* was also very helpful to me with this book.

G. David Martin, PhD (proprietor of the "DCDave" blog), was very helpful to me in

identifying needed editorial and grammatical corrections as well as a better understanding of still another unresolved mystery, that of the death of James Forrestal and the enigmatic presence of Lyndon B. Johnson in that sordid affair. David's essay on that subject, "Who Killed James Forrestal?," is arguably the most comprehensive and compelling document on that subject ever written and my only regret is that the summary of it that I wrote was not nearly as persuasive as his more thorough six-part series and therefore I commend it to readers who are interested in a closer look at that troubling incident.

All of these men and women, and others noted within the narrative, have been of great help to me in gathering all the component parts of this story, some of which are being published for the first time in any book. The review of the files of Texas Ranger Clint Peoples, just released to the public in 2012, is such an area of new research. Peoples can be considered the very first "JFK assassination researcher" since he had become suspicious of Lyndon Johnson's crimes even before Kennedy was killed. Indeed, it could be argued that had Clint Peoples succeeded in overturning the "suicide" finding in Henry Marshall's death in 1962, he might have joined with Bobby Kennedy's men at the Justice Department and indicted Lyndon Johnson for Marshall's murder and thereby prevented several other murders, including that of President Kennedy. That would have been a possible scenario had Peoples been able to overcome Johnson's control of the Texas political machine, down to certain county sheriffs and state judges and the US attorney for the Northern District of Texas, Barefoot^{*} Sanders, who showed up in the Western District, outside his normal jurisdiction, just in time to take control of the tainted 1962 grand jury. Unfortunately, Johnson had all the high cards in that deck and he used them with such expertise that he literally "got away with murder(s)."

^{*} A family name on his mother's side, not a nickname.

FOREWORD

Power tends to corrupt; and absolute power corrupts absolutely.

—LORD ACTON

Here is a bulletin from CBS News. In Dallas, Texas, three shots were fired at President Kennedy's motorcade ...

—WALTER CRONKITE, 1:38 P.M. EASTERN TIME, NOVEMBER 22, 1963

The events of November 22, 1963, now seem long ago and far away, even to those of us who remember that cataclysmic moment, that time when we heard the news of a murder that changed our world. The Earth has continued to turn, life goes on, and history has recorded many deeds of fearsome violence since that deceptively sunny autumn day in Dallas. Murders, including assassinations, have been all too common in our experience; even schoolchildren and mall shoppers have become routine fair game for a culture that is hag-ridden by dreams of suicidal violence and a gory “fifteen minutes of fame.” These are transmitted to the rest of the planet via Internet links that can alert us all to such events within seconds. We are jaded by the minute-by-minute parade of smartphone videos, showing all manner of awfulness: from bombings—suicide and otherwise—to shootings, drone attacks, hostage situations, tsunamis, and mass graves. It is the stench of our civilization, the noise floor of the world. We are inured—we frown, we shrug, we turn away.

And yet, somehow, this murder and that day continue to haunt the American imagination, tantalizing us with a gnawing sense that *something isn't right*. Somehow, we've missed *what really happened*. It's there, at the very edge of our field of vision. Over there—in the periphery, hidden in dark windows, crouched under trees and behind fences, and populating the storm drains of an obscure Dallas plaza in brilliant light—cold-blooded murderers were brutal foot-soldiers of a dark power. That deadly attack overturned the ideal that Lincoln stated with nobility in his Gettysburg Address. We remember the key phrase: “that government of the people, by the people, for the people, shall not perish from the earth.”

A grim reality was suddenly revealed in a controlled barrage of shots from four or more sniper teams that carried out a public execution with practiced, military ease. The power that directed this “big event” with Machiavellian calculation is what *really* rules America.

Since then, hundreds of books have been written about the assassination of John F. Kennedy. Some support the official story of Lee Harvey Oswald, the strange “lone nut.” Life is tragic; weird things happen; get over it, these say. (Of course, the recurrence of “lone nuts” during the 1960s went well beyond simply “tragic,” crossing over into the realm of a repeated *template*.) Unfortunately for proponents of the Warren Commission Report, somewhere between 70 percent to as many as 88 percent of Americans surveyed over recent decades remain suspicious and literally do not accept that “Oswald did it all by himself.” For that matter, neither did the House Select Committee on Assassinations in the late 1970s, nor the Assassinations Records Review Board of the later 1990s. Despite the

overwhelming influence of the mainstream American powers-that-be, including our alleged “free press,” plus the military-industrial and globalizing domains, Americans remain unconvinced. They are unsure of the real answer, perhaps, but unwilling to accept a lie that they were supposed to swallow whole.

Many others have rejected this “lone nut” theory entirely, and have sought to go beyond uncertainty. Some have engaged in solid research and forensic investigation, *believing that the evidence, properly collected and critically evaluated, points in a radically different direction*. These researchers and investigators are convinced that if we set aside the propaganda and deception, the lies within lies, and the naïve, delusive self-image about America, we will see what has been crouching in plain sight.

I am one of these.

As a student and teacher of history for many years now, I have been following the research of the Kennedy assassination since the mid-1970s. Decade by decade, I have watched the evidence develop, and new, better frameworks emerge that bring John F. Kennedy’s assassination into sharp relief. In the face of incredible official resistance, a cult of secrecy, and alleged “national security,” courageous and tireless researchers have pressed ahead with their examination. They have culled through the archives, gathered oral histories of eyewitnesses, extended a careful documentary grasp through Freedom of Information initiatives, and analyzed the resulting mountain of information. Certainly, we now have an enormously larger trove to work with than fifty years ago provided, although not nearly all the evidence we wish we had. Extremely powerful individuals and institutions, as well as a well-controlled obsession with secrecy still keep truth hidden.

We’re now at a point of critical mass. It’s time to move from assembled evidence to truth telling. The American people need to encounter what happened in Dallas fifty years ago. They deserve a full framework of information now available so they can understand JFK’s assassination. American history must recognize the powerful people who brought it to pass. Rather than trying to run down exactly who the ensemble of shooters were, or what the relationships of the CIA, the Secret Service, and the FBI were to this event, we must go farther up the ladder of authority. Where is the center of the successful plan to murder President Kennedy? What held all of these players in orbit? How did the tight control of the ensuing cover-up succeed then and later? How do we bring the enormous amount and complexity of evidence forward?

The book that you are reading is written by one of the newer and most astute generation of writers exploring the Kennedy murder. Phil Nelson is not a long-time researcher. He is, instead, a writer that this tragic history needs: a precise synthesizer of the mountains of evidence collected over long decades. Beginning in the early 2000s, Nelson dug into new scholarship, Internet-based data sources, and new video documentaries that took the case beyond Oswald, the Mafia, the FBI, the CIA, and their permutations. Working with well-known long-time researchers in the field—such as Ed Tatro—Nelson developed an extensive network of contacts and followed where the evidence led.

The result of Nelson’s earlier years of study and investigation was his first book, with its rather startling title, *LBJ: The Mastermind of the JFK Assassination*. First published in 2010,

it was remarkable for being so courageous in its bold thesis. Certainly its title caught my eye and led to my ordering it immediately. When I read it, however, it became clear to me that this was not simply a sensationalistic toss-away volume. Phil Nelson had carefully assembled a very wide range of sources, and had produced an extraordinary *synthesis* from the prior work of other researchers. In some ways, the most important thing about Nelson's first book was that he had distilled multiple sources, correlating and interweaving various lines of evidence in a way that helped the reader step back, take it all in, and really begin to *understand* the meaning of that larger picture.

In statistical research, we speak of *meta-analysis* when we are concatenating various smaller research studies into a much larger framework. Similarly, Phil Nelson has brought together various sources into a larger whole, taking those smaller slices of the evidence into a larger interpretive picture. When he did so, he found the same thing that a number of earlier researchers (e.g., Ed Tatro, Dr. Jim Fetzer, Jim Marrs, David Lifton, Vince Salandria, Dr. David W. Mantik, Noel Twyman, Rick Russo, Barr McClellan, Doug Horne, Doug Weldon, Fred Newcomb, Vince Palamara, and others) had: at the heart of JFK's murder was none other than the notorious American Machiavellian himself, Lyndon Baines Johnson.

And if this is true, then John F. Kennedy's murder isn't simply an assassination, or even a (mainly) private conspiracy along the lines of John Wilkes Booth and company.

It is, instead, a true coup d'état, the first of its kind in American history. Herein is the horror of the discovery: that we are no longer a government of, by, and for the people. In Nelson's synthesis, we are, instead, subject to the machinations of dark powers that cynically and murderously use the people of America as resources in secret efforts to extend their own reach, and build power upon power. Instead of checks and balances, we have only the appearance of constitutional restraints; instead of the commonwealth, we are given the common, ruled by wealth; instead of truth, informed by our free press, we have propaganda spouted by talking heads corrupted by manipulative interests; instead of an eternally vigilant liberty, we have never-ending war against enemies who conveniently cannot be defined, and thus cannot be defeated.

Phil Nelson's new book, *LBJ: From Mastermind to "The Colossus": The Lies, Treacheries, and Treasons Continue*, is an exceptionally fascinating follow-up to his earlier work. It takes Lyndon Johnson from the verge of the White House into his time in office as president of the United States, and then reflects upon the aftermath. Within moments of JFK's death, he was already seizing every aspect of power, and immediately executed a series of imperial executive initiatives that had the reins of office firmly in hand by the end of that hollow day, November 22. Nelson follows the devilish Shakespearean tragedy of LBJ's term in office, from 1963–1969, years that are burned into the memories of all of us who remember them. They are likewise embedded in our national history as a great movement downward: violence, racial conflict, war, confrontation, cynicism, and demoralization. He maps these turbulent times to various aspects of Johnson's destructive persona and programs, taking care of his corrupt friends in the military-industrial complex, and feathering his own personal net worth from daily infusions of illegal funds.

Chapter by chapter, Nelson weaves a dreadful tapestry of the lies, deceptions, and assorted treasons of Lyndon B. Johnson, and connects our public national convulsions with the private sociopathic presence of this president. The massive deceptions involved in his “Great Society” program; the unilateral invasion of Vietnam under the “False Flag” of the Gulf of Tonkin Incident; the assassinations of Dr. Martin Luther King Jr. and Robert F. Kennedy, who was his most dangerous enemy; his strange relationship with Israel and the corruptions thereof (including the unbelievable account of LBJ’s complicity in the attack on the USS *Liberty*); and his psychological unraveling after his departure from the presidency. Throughout are incidents of further corruption, cold-blooded schemes, and mop-up murders to tie up the numerous loose ends of the JFK assassination. Cover-ups and “plausible deniability” were a way of life, with killings cutting off the loose ends.

Nelson then concludes with the grim legacy of LBJ, including the machinations and plots of the ’80s, ’90s, and the new millennium, including 9/11. Lyndon Johnson’s mastery of deceit, and the halls of mirrors that he constructed on the foundations of unaccountable secrecy and American imperial power, have cast a very long shadow on the nation ever since. We are still deeply enmeshed in the consequences.

If this is indeed his profile, then it would be hard to avoid the conclusion Phil Nelson comes to: that LBJ is indeed the most malevolent man to ever hold the office of the president of the United States. That there are still many devoted defenders of his “legacy” is testimony to the powerfully corrupting and deceptive influence that he had over the people in his orbit. Nelson explores the strange psychological dependence of his subordinates to Johnson; herein is a major point of agreement between Phil Nelson and LBJ biographer Robert Caro. Both document the almost inhuman degradation that Lyndon Johnson inflicted on all of his people, which is a touchstone to understanding the heart of darkness underneath.

And darkness is at the very heart of this man. It brings to my mind some lines from John Milton’s *Paradise Lost*:

A Dungeon horrible, on all sides round
As one great Furnace flam’d, yet from those flames
No light, but rather darkness visible
Serv’d onely to discover sights of woe,
Regions of sorrow, doleful shades, where peace
And rest can never dwell ...

This is from Milton’s opening picture of the fate of destructive pride, as Satan and his angels gaze about the ruin of hell. In this great lyric poem, there is a parallel between the original high prince of the angelic ones, and this American “prince.” He, like Satan, was exalted in his hubris, and completely obsessed with his lust for power: in this case, for the most powerful political position in the United States. In plotting to commit this crime, Lyndon Johnson plunged into a world of “darkness visible,” “woe,” “sorrow,” and destroyed peace for himself and for this nation, as well.

Nelson makes a compelling case that LBJ committed the most heinous and treasonable crimes in the history of the American presidency, that he actually pulled off a true coup d'état, and was then able to cover it up sufficiently to hold onto power for just over five years. Finally, in the spring of 1968, even he could no longer maintain the impossible psychic burden of the unraveling of this power. With Robert Kennedy waiting eagerly in the wings to enter the Democratic presidential contest, Lyndon Johnson announced his withdrawal from the field. This is perhaps the truest and most ironic judgment that could be inflicted on LBJ: the object of his life long lust had turned to ashes in his hands.

His apologists ever since have championed the myths and the “legacy” of Lyndon B. Johnson, but Nelson has provided to us what scholars like Robert Caro should have done, had Caro included *all* the evidence about Lyndon B. Johnson, instead of truncating the truly devastating material. With Nelson’s larger picture in hand, it is now possible for judicious students of JFK and LBJ to understand the events of that beautiful autumn day in Dallas for what they indicated.

Thanks to Phil Nelson’s brilliant synthesis of evidence collected by faithful researchers, we can now understand that our nation was the victim of a coup d'état on November 22, 1963. Lyndon B. Johnson was at the center of that plot. And our nation has not been the same since that day.

Read on.

David W. Robinson, EdD, adjunct professor of education, George Fox University

INTRODUCTION

History is, in fact, the fragmentary record of the often inexplicable actions of innumerable bewildered human beings, set down and interpreted according to their own limitations by other human beings, equally bewildered.

—C. V. WEDGWOOD, *HISTORY AND HOPE*

A Summary of Previous Conclusions, and an Attempt to Reconcile Perspectives of Other Authors

As we will endeavor to demonstrate in the following pages, Mr. Wedgwood's description of how official "history" is recorded—by many "bewildered human beings" who have attempted to interpret actions by other "bewildered" people—was not too far from the essential truth, especially regarding the widely disparate, almost infinite gamut of biographies of Lyndon B. Johnson.

This book begins where my first book, *LBJ: The Mastermind of the JFK Assassination* left off. Within the pages of that book, certain truths were revealed about Lyndon Johnson's persona; they were characteristics that are only briefly acknowledged and forgotten, if noted at all, in other biographies of him. The conclusions reached in that book become the premise upon which this one is based. Although it does contain certain brief observations about his years as president, the focus of the earlier book was the assassination of President Kennedy; now the focus shifts, and we turn our attention to how Johnson's personal conduct became the imprint of his administration as he propelled the country, through pure mania, through five of the most turbulent years ever experienced by the United States.

The many books written about the thirty-sixth president of the United States range from the most obsequious (e.g., those by Jack Valenti, Harry Provençe, Marvin Watson, and Merle Miller) to the most brutally truthful, and therefore highly critical. Clearly, *LBJ: The Mastermind of the JFK Assassination* is on the latter end of that scale, along with this sequel to it, and the books by J. Evetts Haley, the German journalist Joachim Joesten, the books of Barr McClellan, Billie Sol Estes, Madeleine Brown, Craig Zirbel, Glenn Sample and Mark Collom, and, most recently, James Tague and Roger Stone. Additionally, a book by D. Jablow Hershman, and another by Hyman L. Muslin, MD, and Thomas H. Jobe, MD, as listed in the Bibliography make no reference to the JFK assassination, yet they present persuasive evidence of Johnson's mental issues and present evidence that he was a very conflicted man who exhibited multiple personality disorders of both the psychological and psychiatric kind; that he was not mentally fit (i.e., "rational") enough to be president. Together, these are among the most important of those suggesting the same or similar conclusions that I have reached. In addition to these, there exist several other "unpublished manuscripts," written or contributed to by early researchers such as Jay Harrison, Connie Kritzberg, Stephen Pegues, Lyle Sardie, Larry Howard, and Robert Cutler that do the same. Another long-time, highly respected researcher, the aforementioned Ed Tatro, has written a manuscript that may one day be published.

The key difference in the books on this side of the gamut, versus those on the other end, is that these are acknowledged to be politically incorrect, because they are based upon research of unvarnished history; the other side of that gamut consists of books that have twisted or have purposely ignored facts that belie the “real” Lyndon Johnson. These “politically correct” versions of Lyndon Johnson’s historic rise from the bottom to the very highest level of power in the world were heavily censored to avoid real truths in order to increase their appeal to those who like their history distilled, decaffeinated, homogenized, pasteurized, and heavily sweetened. They are good illustrations of the old saying about “putting lipstick on a pig.” The clever parsing of historical facts thus produces the fanciful notion that Lyndon Johnson was a great and visionary leader who actually cared about the lives of people he privately derided and ridiculed, as he continued to do after becoming president. He routinely called black Americans the “N” word, even to their faces, as demonstrated in *LBJ: The Mastermind of the JFK Assassination* and as can be heard on a number of websites, including YouTube.*

The themes of this book do not comport with the artfully crafted books on the other end of the gamut, thus the “disconnect” between the opposite prisms can only be explained one way: Through omitting any issue that gets too close to the truth of Johnson—for example, anything about his Texas crony Billie Sol Estes (and the names of people connected to him, including several who were murdered), Madeleine Brown, Charles Crenshaw, Mac Wallace, Morris D. Jaffe; the real work of people like Ed Clark and Cliff Carter and the rawest facts about his close relationship as a mentor to, and partner of Bobby G. Baker and their mutual connections to Mafiosi—the “history” written about Johnson has been abridged. Robert Caro’s avoidance of all these names—other than the most benign comments about Baker, Clark, and Carter—or even Johnson’s highly placed mole in the Justice Department, US Attorney Barefoot Sanders (later a federal judge) was an effective way for him to stay away from Johnson’s “darker side.” All of these names will be primary subjects in the pages to follow, as any detailed book on Lyndon B. Johnson must include if it is to have a scintilla of credibility.

Robert Dallek did devote three paragraphs to the shadowy background and irregularities related to Johnson’s “unsavory” connections, the “particularly suspect” Senate victory in 1948 and the phenomenal growth of his wealth during all those years in Congress; he added another three paragraphs on the Billie Sol Estes scandal and a few more to the Bobby Baker scandal. However both the Estes and Baker cases seemed to take much less space in his book than far more mundane matters were given. Despite noting the death of one (of at least five) murder victim related to the Billie Sol Estes scandal, the story was otherwise given only perfunctory coverage; only the most basic facts are presented and the entire matter is closed with a most curious observation about how the grand jury “found no corroboration of Estes’s charge” against Johnson, yet “concluded that those responsible for the slaying were dead.” He did not mention that the grand jury implicitly meant that the dead people who they had heard Estes testify against were named Johnson, Carter, and Wallace. With that, he closed this line of inquiry with the statement that “Estes’s allegation against Johnson had no more credibility than all the rumors about Johnson and Estes; the FBI’s investigation of these charges turned up nothing.”¹ That

Robert Dallek made a presumption that left the issue of the FBI's credibility as a given—despite the, by now, generally acknowledged proven lack of credibility of the people involved in running the agency in the time period involved—suggests that it was used as a way to put the matter to rest and become merely a segue into the next sub section. This point will be the subject of a little more scrutiny in [Chapter 1](#), where the Texas Ranger who knew better will finally be heard.

Texas Ranger (later US Marshal) Clint Peoples was one of the most honored, truly heroic figures in the annals of Texas law enforcement history, yet despite his having spent more than thirty years investigating Johnson's crimes he has been ignored by all of Johnson's biographers. Peoples's investigation was constantly impeded by the power that Lyndon Johnson held over the judicial and law enforcement bureaucracy within Texas. It wasn't until 1984 (eleven years after Johnson died) that Peoples was able to have the "suicide" cause of death on Henry Marshall's death certificate corrected to "homicide." Clint Peoples set out to correct that error though it took him twenty-two years to accomplish it. That lengthy task was a direct result of the corruption surrounding Lyndon Johnson throughout his career.

Books on the opposite end of the gamut from this one, and *LBJ: The Mastermind of the JFK Assassination*, temper the truth of Lyndon Johnson's imprint on the United States, then and now. Each of them, to a varied extent, are written to support the original lies about Lyndon Johnson, specifically his methods or means to an end, and put them into the context that Johnson had framed it originally. Their authors, and generally all of "Officialdom," prefer to censor facts and adopt the lies originally fabricated by Lyndon Johnson himself, as being the "truth." Because what may have started out as boldface lies, through retelling them from one person to another—and from generation to generation—they have become accepted as legitimate, politically correct myths that must not be doubted. It is just as Johnson had anticipated: Over enough time, memories fade, people who know differently die off, and the lies become accepted as "truths" to those too preoccupied to care about conducting their own rigorous search for actual truth.

Specific examples of these issues will appear in the following pages. Moreover, we will expose how Johnson planted those lies, knowing that if done well, they would grow to become "truths" through future books written initially by the very authors he personally selected, even though these "truths" were mostly conceived within his delusional mind. There were many instances of this and a select few, having the most importance to the immediate subject, have been cited accordingly throughout the book. Those lies grew larger and larger during his presidency; they finally caught up with him and forced him to walk away from the very office that had been his life long quest, his "destiny." He had achieved his goal just before the jaws of justice began to close shut around him in what he believed was the only way possible to assure that his dream would come true: Cross-fire in Dallas that he—with the help of the intelligence and military connected renegades and some mob-connected thugs he brought together, as previously examined—supervised, planned, facilitated, and covered up. It was his meticulous planning ability, combined with the persuasive powers he had perfected to the point that they had been given a name—arguably even a trademark, the "Johnson Treatment"—that morphed into the "driving

force” required for such an enterprise. He knew that the enormous power he would acquire over the entire federal bureaucracy—the three branches of government, legislative, judicial, executive, as well as the “back channels” into the military and intelligence departments and agencies—was what would finally ensure success.

Another manifestation of this mythmaking phenomenon is the paradox that, though approximately 80 percent of the American population believe the Warren Commission Report was a sham, about the same number seem to accept the contradictory position of the contemporary mainstream news media, in support of the government’s highest military and intelligence dictates and organizations like the Council on Foreign Relations (CFR). Their mission seems to be to denigrate those who wish to discuss the real historical issues while supporting books like Bill O’Reilly’s, *Killing Kennedy*, written to represent the politically correct “truth.” A cynic might conclude that the initiation rites for new members to this “club” includes, as part of the ceremony, a solemn oath to accept the conclusions of the Warren Commission as originally written, to never doubt even the most absurd of them, not even the “magic bullet” story that has been conclusively debunked by everyone who has ever studied it objectively, even on the most cursory level. It is no accident that CFR members generally accept the inane account of *Killing Kennedy* rendered by Bill O’Reilly as the last word, despite its obtuse logic based on clearly fabricated ballistics and autopsy “evidence” and reliance on the most incredible witnesses, just as the Warren Commission originally wrote that same account. For reasons that can only be attributed to the “dumbing down” of the American culture, that book immediately rose to the top of the best-selling “nonfiction” books in America. But before he decided to take “the company line,” Bill O’Reilly had been a more inquisitive, critically thinking television news reporter who covered a number of stories that pointed toward a conspiracy in the JFK assassination. One of them (which can be viewed on the referenced YouTube video) revealed that the CIA had planted nine agents inside New Orleans district attorney Jim Garrison’s investigation to monitor the information Garrison was discovering in “real time.”² Left unsaid in his reportage, but implicit nonetheless, was “Why would the CIA, which led the way in sabotaging and ridiculing the Garrison investigation as being groundless, have invested so much in destroying not only his ability to conduct that investigation, but even his credibility?”

The LBJ Library, adjoining the campus of the University of Texas in Austin, publishes the “approved” biographies of Johnson in its “Biographical Directory.” The list totaled roughly seventy-five books or significant articles and other documents recently, including all four (so far) of Robert Caro’s series, the last of which was published in May 2012. The list includes a number of unpublished PhD theses, but it omits any mention of Jeff Shesol’s notable book *Mutual Contempt: Lyndon Johnson, Robert Kennedy, and the Feud That Defined a Decade*. Also missing was any reference to J. Evetts Haley’s bestselling (almost 7.5 million copies) 1964 book *A Texan Looks at Lyndon: A Study in Illegitimate Power*.^{**} Even the mildly critical book by Eric F. Goldman, *The Tragedy of Lyndon Johnson* is not listed, probably due entirely to the provocative title. Of course, my own previous work, *LBJ: The Mastermind of the JFK Assassination* was not included for the same reason, just as Craig Zirbel’s (*The Texas Connection*) and Barr McClellan’s (*Blood, Money, and Power*)

are not listed. Naturally, the book by Joachim Joesten, *The Dark Side of Lyndon Baines Johnson*, originally published in the United Kingdom in 1968 when Johnson was still president (and republished in 2013 by Iconoclastic Books) was not included. It came to essentially the same conclusions about Johnson's character as this and *LBJ: The Mastermind of the JFK Assassination*, and did so forty-two years earlier, describing him as a man "unmoved by any principle" who "would never for one moment hesitate to crush underfoot anyone who got in his way" and "whose political career is built on the use of 'The Big Lie' and organized fraud" and finally, a man "who callously sacrifices millions of lives in order to win the most senseless war in history."³

Joesten went on to compare Johnson with Hitler and Mussolini, then concluded that people had been "beguiled" by the horde of "professional sycophants, parasites and mythmakers" who were engaged in remaking his image, which is essentially the same theme as this book, written forty-six years later. All of this suggests that the administrators of the LBJ Library have been instructed on how to continue LBJ's patterns: Only "yes" men work for him even today, forty years after he died. The rules he laid down when he was alive, that he wanted to hear only "good news," still apply. The portrayal of the LBJ Library's listing of his biographies as "complete" evokes the rules that ran the White House from 1964–69. No other president in the history of the United States can come close to the breadth in scope of the biographies left in his wake: from the most obsequious of those written by his former aides (e.g., Jack Valenti's *This Time, This Place: My Life in War, the White House, and Hollywood* and Horace Busby's *An Intimate Portrait of Lyndon Johnson's Final Days in Office: The Thirty-First of March*, for example) to the most critical, such as this one and the others of the same genre noted previously. The many varied stories about several key events in Johnson's life story are the clearest proof that some of the people who have previously written books about him were of the same obsequious genesis. In his case, however, the process was further polluted by the repeated lies and deceptions that were originally planted by Johnson himself to guide that process. This pattern was described in the earlier work and will continue to be revealed in descriptions of other such incidents. It was the multiple occurrences of this device by Lyndon Johnson that make it one of the central, most compelling themes underlying both books: That Lyndon Johnson, ever conscious of attaining his life long goal of achieving the presidency of the United States, realized early in his career that certain key stories about him would have to be revised, accepted by default and repeated by his own associates and contemporary journalists; by doing this, he could ensure that, for many more decades, future bewildered "historians" would be enlisted in the creation of an effusive but faux "legend" for the thirty-sixth president of the United States.

An early example of that was how he had become a sycophant to the Southwest Texas State Teachers College president, Cecil "Prexy" Evans, in order to leverage his power for Johnson's own benefit: His use of Evans to assign a few faculty members and administrators to take control of practically all copies of the 1930 college yearbook so they could cut out a page that ridiculed Lyndon Johnson. He knew it would eventually be a serious embarrassment when he ran for president of the United States in thirty or so years and he couldn't let that stand. The clarity of this early event in Johnson's mastery of the art

of manipulation would portend ever greater, even much more highly sophisticated, repeats in the course of his career. He planted those seeds and they proved to have been very fruitful in keeping the worst truths buried and the lies that replaced them becoming accepted as proxy for those truths. His hand picked early biographers repeated them with fawning alacrity, such that many people now believe, for example, that Johnson was JFK's first and foremost choice for the vice presidency (this despite the documented evidence that Kennedy had practically begged Missouri Senator Stuart Symington for weeks to accept that position, and had formally offered it to him, before Johnson, Speaker of the House Sam Rayburn, and FBI Director J. Edgar Hoover threatened to blackmail Kennedy if he didn't give it to Johnson), and that Secret Service agent Rufus Youngblood flung himself over the seatback of the Lincoln convertible at the first gunshot in Dealey Plaza (which, as shown in *LBJ: The Mastermind of the JFK Assassination*, was not true if one believes the credible Texas Senator Ralph Yarborough, rather than the pathological liar Lyndon Johnson, the men who shared that backseat in the Dallas motorcade). Both of these deceptions were among the many sewn by Johnson and were critical in his plan to take over the presidency after spending a few grudging years as vice president.

Knowing that a lot of bullets would be flying around Dealey Plaza as the presidential limousine approached the "kill zone," he had begun hunching over repeatedly during the motorcade,⁴ and by the time the car turned onto Elm Street, his companions in the backseat (Lady Bird and Senator Yarborough) had become accustomed to him being in that position, using the pretext of either listening to the car's radio or agent Youngblood's "walkie-talkie." Johnson knew that by remaining close to Youngblood in the front seat, his ducking lower at that point, then pretending that it was Youngblood who thrust him onto the floorboard of that car, would become his reason for his otherwise strange behavior. That explains his absence in the famous photograph, taken by the Associated Press reporter James William "Ike" Altgens, a crystal-clear photograph that showed both Yarborough and Lady Bird, but no sign of Lyndon. Some people claim to see him in the "dark blotchy area" while others see his profile in the "whitish area," but to make those cases, the purveyors of the canard have taken some liberties to "enhance" the photo to make their point: Such photographs must be compared to the original, unretouched photo that appears in *LBJ: The Mastermind of the JFK Assassination* to determine whether they have been retouched. (Any evidence of having been "enhanced" renders the photograph suspect and that detracts from the seriousness, as it enhances the speciousness, of such an argument.)

Most of the other books written about him don't go near the dozen or more unsolved murders of people who, uniquely, had gotten themselves in the way of Lyndon Johnson on his quest to become president, which he considered his natural destiny. While he was alive, as some people who knew Johnson (or whose family members did) have independently told me, people were generally too afraid of him to talk about anything that they thought might get back to him. They were simply too scared of the possibility it might spark his retribution. Eventually, people who knew his darker side came forward, each alone and independent of the others, and they collectively revealed long-hidden truths that cast Lyndon Johnson as being in the center of multiple criminal acts, including ten (10),

possibly up to seventeen (17), murders as claimed by Billie Sol Estes, dating back to at least 1951. Among them, the people who had gotten caught in the web he created and lived long enough to write about their experiences, were Billie Sol Estes, Madeleine Brown, and Barr McClellan. All three have published their own accounts of those experiences, and French author William Reymond teamed up with Billie Sol Estes to write another book, *JFK le Dernier Témoin: Assassinat de Kennedy, Enfin la Vérité* (*JFK the Last Witness: Assassination of Kennedy, Finally the Truth*), published in France in 2003. Reymond wrote, on November 29, 2004, that: “*JFK, le dernier témoin* was published in France (and available in Belgium, [sic] Switzerland [sic] and Quebec), Spain, Japan, Estonia and Bulgaria, but not in the States or the UK. And to be very honest, I don’t think that it will happen soon.”⁵ A video *JFK—Autopsie d’un complot—John Fitzgerald Kennedy* also emerged about the same time (2003), done only in French and sold for a short period on the Internet before disappearing until November 2013, when it reappeared for free viewing on the website Dailymotion.com.⁶ That video was based on a fifty-two-minute version, done in the original English as spoken by the people interviewed. This video was shown at the Conspiracy Museum in Dallas in 2003 but never offered for sale.

The 2003 French Connection: Billie Sol Estes talks to William Reymond

Since the publication of *LBJ: The Mastermind of the JFK Assassination*, as noted previously, I obtained the French book that Billie Sol Estes coauthored in 2003 with William Reymond, *JFK le Dernier Témoin*. I had the book translated from the original French and re-edited only to change sentence structure to conform with English while retaining the original intent. Reference to this book was not made in the original work because it was not available in English and the idea of translating it was too daunting a task at that time. I had also been told that it did not differ substantively from what was written by Estes in his own book, *Billie Sol Estes, a Texas Legend* in 2005, though he had supposedly become less critical of Lyndon Johnson. That point is difficult to defend, given Estes’s numerous assertions of Johnson’s multiple crimes, including his description of a meeting in Bryan, Texas, in May 1961, with Cliff Carter, who, he wrote, “stated that Johnson was concerned about [Henry] Marshall and had asked him to ‘take care of it.’”⁷

Having now compared the books, I found that they both contain a wealth of additional information, independent of each other, though there is some expected redundancy between the two. Yet there is much information to be found in either of them that is not repeated in the other. They are both quite substantive and, combined, they provide strong evidence of Johnson’s manic drive to become president and his long history of criminal activity, including the murder of John F. Kennedy. References to both of these books have been made at several points within this book. Among the other revelations in the Reymond/Estes book, one of the most critical points relates to the intensity of Bobby Kennedy’s pressure on Billie Sol Estes to cooperate with him in his investigation of Lyndon Johnson during 1961–1962. Throughout that period (even before Captain Peoples had Henry Marshall’s body exhumed for a reexamination of the fatal wounds), Bobby had already collected much information on the questionable business practices of Estes and Johnson. Indeed, that book states that Robert F. Kennedy secretly met with Billie Sol

during Estes's trip to Washington in January 1962 for the first anniversary of the inauguration, when he invited Billie Sol to talk to him voluntarily, suggesting that he could get him immunity for his testimony against Johnson. That was a very difficult period financially for Billie Sol, after having invested nearly \$2 million for "greasing the machine" and for the lobbying work that Cliff Carter and Walter Jenkins had helped with, and he was facing bankruptcy by then.⁸ But he also knew that cooperating with RFK would be like signing his own death warrant, once Johnson found out about it.

Estes stated that Henry Marshall was supposed to go to Washington to meet with Robert Kennedy personally and that prospect frightened Johnson and led to Marshall's murder. Estes further stated that he suggested that Johnson give Marshall an offer of a sizeable bribe and a promotion as a way to change his mind that would also bring him under Johnson's control and make sure he didn't talk. But Marshall's integrity was not for sale, which made Johnson furious and the situation intolerable, so the only alternative, as Johnson saw it, was that Henry Marshall, "would have to go." Marshall's was just the first of a series of "suicides" of people who could have connected Johnson and Estes, as detailed in *LBJ: The Mastermind of the JFK Assassination*. The only reasons that Estes himself didn't get "suicided" were, first, that it would have been too obvious after all the national attention he had received and Johnson knew that Bobby Kennedy would be all over the consequent investigation; and, second, Billie Sol had become known for secretly taping his most private conversations and he had made it known that, if anything happened to him, they would be publicly revealed. Moreover, he decided that he had to stick with Johnson because he knew how dangerous it was to cross Lyndon; his penalty would have to be limited to prison time for all of those reasons. For Johnson, this outcome came with the additional benefit of ensuring that Estes's credibility would be forever compromised, and therefore he would become "unbelievable" as an ex-con. So for more than a decade after Johnson died, he didn't talk.

But Texas Ranger Clint Peoples got to know Billie Sol personally and understood that his biggest fault was his naiveté and his willingness to associate with men who could bend rules to their benefit. Estes eventually wound up being convicted for crimes that involved massive government frauds, for which he was only one of the many partners in crime who were put in legal jeopardy—because he happened to be the one in the spotlight. But it was his primary partner in crime, Lyndon B. Johnson, who profited more than Billie Sol did from their criminal enterprises; yet Johnson was slick enough to have protected himself from being caught, only by the slimmest of threads and those threads are laid bare in the pages to follow.

Ranger Clint Peoples trusted Billie Sol Estes, and gave his testimony the credibility he thought it deserved. Peoples's confidence in Billie Sol's credibility imbued his courtroom testimony with the long-suppressed truth that finally exposed the real Lyndon Johnson. That grand jury finally gave the case against LBJ a complete hearing and it found him guilty; unfortunately for the cause of justice, he and his key lieutenants were already dead and the case was seemingly put to bed for another thirty years. It is now time to revisit that courtroom and form a final verdict.

When Billie Sol failed to respond to RFK's invitation to cooperate, Bobby Kennedy unleashed federal agents to arrest him, on April 5, 1962. The frauds being perpetrated by Johnson and Estes were detailed in the Billie Sol Estes book named after him and subtitled *A Texas Legend*, and summarized in *LBJ: The Mastermind of the JFK Assassination*. Newly revealed in the Reymond/Estes book and the video sold by Reymond in France were the facts regarding Robert Kennedy's indictment of Estes. The charges against him went well beyond the cotton allotment transactions and were centered on the fertilizer tanks that were being built "on paper" in order to construct a portfolio of chattel mortgages on non-existent tanks. This scam allowed him to use the credit of his customers to finance his operations; once he had a million dollars' worth of chattel mortgages, he sold them in bulk at a discount to the finance companies so he could continue his expansion. This technique allowed Estes, working with the Walter E. Heller Company of Chicago (no relation to Walter W. Heller, Kennedy's chairman of the Council of Economic Advisors), Pacific Finance Company, and other financiers, to generate the funds he needed to keep paying his "skim" to Lyndon Johnson.⁹

In the Reymond/Estes book, Estes also cast considerable additional light on the mysterious 1962 meeting between Lyndon Johnson and Billie Sol Estes at the Midland, Texas, airport, previously described in *LBJ: The Mastermind of the JFK Assassination*, which occurred just three weeks after the murder of Estes's accountant George Krutilek. Unfortunately for him, Krutilek knew all the details of the Johnson/Estes frauds against the federal government and that knowledge led to him being killed immediately after being interviewed by FBI agents; his body was found two days later in West Texas, already significantly decomposed.¹⁰ Estes stated that when Johnson went to Austin for Mayor Tom Miller's funeral, Cliff Carter called Estes to arrange that secret "emergency meeting" with Johnson at the Midland, Texas, airport. When Estes and his lawyer arrived, they were escorted to Johnson's airplane by two Secret Service agents.¹¹

The Reymond/Estes book confirms that the two discussed the various legal problems caused by the federal investigation being carried out on Robert Kennedy's orders. But the larger purpose, according to Estes, was that Johnson wanted Estes to give him a list of everyone else connected to the operation, especially every person who had any knowledge of Johnson's relationship with Estes. As Estes discussed each of these people, Johnson's assistant Cliff Carter, taking notes, acknowledged Johnson's reactions, including those communicated only through body movements (e.g., head, arm, hand and finger pointing, or similar motions) and eye contact and, on several occasions, "only silence." (Based on the tone and hidden meanings of their communications as described by Estes, this implicitly meant that those people's fate would either be tabled for a later, private, discussion between Johnson and Carter, or there was already an understanding in place as to the disposition of people in certain categories.) The fact that five people on those lists wound up dead (all "suicides") over the next two years indicated as clearly as possible which list they were on.

Estes also said that Johnson made it very clear that he, Billie Sol, would have to go to court and try to fight the charges, using the lawyer, John Cofer, who Johnson had retained

on his behalf, purportedly for a payment of \$75,000.¹² Above all else, Johnson told him firmly that he would have to “keep his mouth shut” about the facts related to their relationship and everything related to the details of the frauds they had conducted.¹³ Billie Sol knew that if Johnson ever got even a hint that he had said too much, his own name would be erased from the “prison” list it was on and put on the “suicide” list.

The Reymond/Estes book also explained how, as noted previously in *LBJ: The Mastermind of the JFK Assassination*, the FBI was called in personally through J. Edgar Hoover to block the editors of *Farm & Ranch* magazine, which had printed allegations of the Johnson-Estes direct connection, from continuing to do so. This was in the middle of a six-month period (from late March to September 1962), during which the Billie Sol Estes scandal had been covered on the front pages, at one time or another, in practically every newspaper in the country. So far, there had been mostly speculative charges, based on telephone records showing that Estes had several conversations with Johnson aide Cliff Carter as well as an “unpublished” telephone number in Washington. No written communications between the two had been maintained. This was consistent with Johnson’s long-practiced dictum against such records on all of his most illegal, unethical, or even merely outrageous actions. Johnson’s name didn’t always explicitly appear in the articles, yet there were enough questions raised to assure that the reader couldn’t help but draw such an inference. It was enough for a Republican congressman from Florida, Bill Cramer, to begin preparing impeachment documents against Johnson based on all the conjecture, until Hoover sent agents to his office to intimidate him and convince him to cease and desist. Likewise, Hoover sent agents to the editors of this Midland, Texas, magazine to intimidate them as well. It worked, because when the “truncated” article was published, neither Estes nor Johnson were named in it. The ambiguities became clearer after that and by August, even the *New York Times* reported that “the name of Vice President Johnson ... figured in testimony before two congressional subcommittees investigating the Billie Sol Estes case.”¹⁴

As noted in *LBJ: The Mastermind of the JFK Assassination*, all records of the flight logs at the Midland airport where Johnson met with Estes and his attorney John Cofer were confiscated by the Defense Department at Johnson’s insistence and, according to the Reymond/Estes book, they were then destroyed after Johnson became president, making it impossible to prove this meeting occurred. However, as detailed in the earlier book, Johnson had a bit of bad luck when he then flew on to Dallas and the airplane skidded off the runway, an incident that confirmed the fact that the aircraft had flown there from Midland.

In the meantime, Johnson used an associate, San Antonio Sheriff Owen Kilday, who had assisted him in stealing the 1948 senatorial election, to bug a hotel room in which a Congressional investigator, Lee Potter, was to interrogate Estes. Johnson wanted to monitor that meeting to find out exactly how much Estes would reveal. But Estes, having a premonition of Johnson’s running all of it from “the back rooms,” decided not to show up for the meeting, because he knew that any sign of real cooperation would “be tantamount to a death warrant.”¹⁵ Another investigator, Robert Manuel, went to Dallas to interview a

US Department of Agriculture (USDA) employee, Carl Miller, who supervised the grain storage program in Texas. Manuel knew that Miller was the main contact for Cliff Carter (ergo, Lyndon Johnson) in the transfer of grain into the Estes-owned storage facilities. After Manuel confirmed with Miller how grain was diverted to Estes's facilities, Miller was brought to Washington to testify. However, he was obviously threatened by Johnson or Cliff Carter at some point in between, because when he did testify, he changed the name of the senator who was behind it from Johnson to Ralph Yarborough, stunning Manuel; Carl Miller would not say another word after this. Manuel later leaked these records to the press and was fired from his position.¹⁶ By then, he finally understood the power that Lyndon Johnson wielded throughout Washington, especially in the House and the Senate of the United States.

That “change” of testimony by Carl Miller—substituting Yarborough’s name for the real culprit, Johnson—was not unique to this particular incident. Estes said in his own 2005 book that Johnson gave him a new assignment in the mid-1950s: to become the primary backer of Yarborough in his campaigns. They even decided to send Yarborough to Washington as the “other senator” from Texas, knowing that Johnson, as the majority leader, could control him there by burying him with unimportant committee assignments.¹⁷ Billie Sol liked the idea of having access to two senators, and soon became the leading contributor and fund-raiser for Yarborough as well as Johnson. At one such event, he “barbecued enough beef to feed more than 2,000 people.” In fact, Estes claimed, and Yarborough agreed, that he was the one who delivered the West Texas votes that put Yarborough into the Senate.¹⁸ After Yarborough went to Washington, Cliff Carter would work with Estes to set up meetings with Agriculture Department employees or officials for the two of them, although that changed in due course as Estes got to know the “right people” and Estes would then just give the names to Yarborough and used him to arrange the meetings.

In the meantime, as Robert Kennedy investigated Lyndon Johnson’s criminal associations during the 1961–1962 period, preparing to close in on him in 1963 with an indictment that would assure he was off the ticket in 1964, both he and his brother President Kennedy grew increasingly interested in Johnson’s dealings with Billie Sol Estes. With this realization, JFK asked key Johnson aide and ally Bobby Baker a question on one of his White House visits: “Bobby, how about this damned Texas tycoon, what’s his name? Billie Sol Estes? Is he a pal of yours?” [Implicitly denying that, Baker responded]: ‘Mr. President, I thought I knew every thief who’d ever crossed the Potomac with his hand out. But we got lucky on the Estes thing. He’s in the political camp of Senator Ralph Yarborough.’”¹⁹ He then explicitly lied, denying that he ever had an association with Estes, and doubled down, saying, “He was never an LBJ man.”²⁰ Obviously, one of Johnson’s most cunning, near-genius maneuvers was in getting Billie Sol to become a financier to his greatest Texas rival, as demonstrated in this single illustration.

After he was indicted, Estes would say, “Yarborough suddenly forgot my name. He told the press, ‘I met him a couple of times.’” Estes got even with him afterward, saying, “We

spread a few rumors in the right places.”²¹

A Confluence of Voices from Lyndon’s Past (Including Some Still Resonating from the Grave)

No other president has endured such widely based assaults from numerous people who each independently admitted knowledge of their participation in the crimes planned and executed by Lyndon Johnson. Moreover, the one common denominator was that they were all witnesses who had been too frightened to come out of the shadows while the president was still alive. Not until they felt safe from Johnson’s assured retaliations would they begin coming forth, as though guided and synchronized by an invisible hand. Never before or after have so many people told such seemingly unrelated stories about so many events, from so many different perspectives that, when combined, become woven together like a tapestry that reveals an enigmatic story about a “colossus” individual. That story blends perfectly with historical facts, and in doing so, melds into a comprehensive real history that conforms to those known facts, traces of which can still be found in old newspapers and magazines, despite the fact that those contemporaneous articles were ignored by other historians or biographers.

Was it simply serendipity that each came forward to tell their story about witnessing various crimes committed by or on behalf of Lyndon Johnson, ranging from election stealing to campaign finance frauds and racketeering schemes all the way up to and including multiple cases of murder? Why has this happened uniquely to Lyndon Johnson if there is no merit to the accusations? Could it have been merely the fickle finger of fate that caused the artifacts of so many unsolved crimes to randomly spill out from this mixing bowl and then magically align with documented points on a straight line leading to LBJ’s doorstep? The points to be summarized next were covered in detail in *LBJ: The Mastermind of the JFK Assassination*, so these will simply serve to refresh the memories of those who read that book, and inform other readers who did not, of the basis for the conclusions drawn from them.

Just a few examples will do here, since many others were either previously revealed, or whose revelation awaits. The assertions made by Billie Sol Estes and Johnson’s lover Madeleine Brown, echoed in each case by several others, have provided corroboration that Johnson was in complete control of the trial of Malcolm Wallace for the 1951 murder of John “Doug” Kinser, an Austin golf pro who had simultaneous romantic relationships with Wallace’s wife and Lyndon Johnson’s sister. Johnson had used his political influence, along with help from his key attorney, Ed Clark, to “fix” that murder trial even before the stacked jury was seated and turn it into an exercise that not only freed the killer, but gave him a permanent “license to kill” all while attaching him for life to Lyndon Johnson as his personal hit man. To top it off, and to illustrate his power over the federal, state, and local political machines, Johnson used his political muscle to arrange for the convicted killer, Mac Wallace, to walk away a free man after the conviction and, subsequently, to be given high-level security clearances that allowed him to work for decades in classified positions for defense contractors. Another illustration of the same point was when the juror D. L. Johnson (no relation to LBJ), decades later, finally admitted to being the “sinker” on the

jury that convicted Mac Wallace of murder; but to avoid a hung jury, a compromise was reached by recommending that the sentence be suspended, presupposing that the judge would ignore such an absurd result. It soon became apparent that it was not merely the jury that had been tainted, when the judge and prosecutors decided that only a perfunctory case would be presented, and the defense team rested before even presenting its case. The independent admissions of several jury members of being threatened, either themselves or their family members, demonstrated how thoroughly the case had been rigged from the start. The totality of the methods used to bring about a five-year suspended sentence, with merely a sentence of probation, for a man convicted of first-degree murder, is stunning. At this point, it is instructive to note that he was in only his second year as a US senator, having been sworn in to the stolen office in January 1949. The many redundant devices used to assure that Wallace would escape punishment for his crime adds to the accumulated evidence list of all the crimes Johnson routinely committed, yet had avoided ever being charged for because of the power he commanded.

Cumulatively these and many other autonomous, random threads inexorably combine into a single strand of evidence that blends perfectly together. Remember that it was not unusual that so many of these early murders remained “cold cases” for decades. There are many such crimes that occur throughout the country every year that are never resolved because the perpetrator(s) managed to evade justice. These crimes were made possible by Johnson’s and his surrogate Ed Clark’s long reaches into local Texas law enforcement and judicial power: The fact that the murders were systematically ruled “suicide” by those officials put them out of bounds for the customary criminal investigations. The story of JFK’s assassination is similar, but “lone nut killer” was substituted for the official cause of death. It is merely the most notorious and arguably the nation’s biggest example of an unsolved “cold case”: It was the coup de grâce of a long-term plan that came to fruition in 1963, when it produced a coup de grâce in the United States of America.

Billie Sol Estes admitted that Johnson had also ordered the murder of Johnson’s own sister, who, Johnson thought, could no longer be trusted to keep the family secrets. But his sister Josefa was not the first of the 1961–62 series of murders. That was Henry Marshall, just five months into the new Kennedy-Johnson administration. Then within months, there was a succession of murders of five other men (and a woman, the secretary of Harold Orr), all connected to Estes, whose legal problems made front-page headlines throughout the country in 1962. Their individual or collective vulnerabilities to being put at risk for murder are based on historic fact, as shown by the numerous contemporaneous newspaper and national magazine articles, (including two major articles in *Life* magazine, in the editions of November 8 and, ironically, November 22, 1963) all of which conform not only to the Estes and Brown accounts, but also those of many other researchers and authors who have studied the subject intensively.

While it is true that Billie Sol Estes spent several years in prison for his involvement in fraud against the government, that very fact proves his veracity about how his criminal acts were carried out under the direct supervision of Lyndon B. Johnson. It can be posited that the fact he served that time in prison vindicates the truth of his story. And the reason he lost his court case was because he accepted Johnson’s own lawyer as his counsel. John

Cofer (appointed and controlled by Johnson himself), the same attorney who had kept Mac Wallace from going to prison, cooperated with prosecutors to ensure that Estes served time in prison—as a long-term reminder for him to “keep his lips sealed” and to attempt to destroy his future credibility. Billie Sol knew, and stated it publicly, that if he had cooperated with Bobby Kennedy’s efforts to testify against Lyndon Johnson in 1962 that he would have been dead within twenty-four hours.

There is a seemingly endless list of other “random coincidences” that will emerge within the pages ahead, with stunningly clear arrows pointing in that singular direction. The old adage, “Where there’s smoke there’s fire” may be a useful guideline in judging this otherwise inexplicable situation. Another pertinent maxim called Occam’s Razor also applies: “Other things being equal, a simpler explanation, one making fewer assumptions than the alternatives, is better than a more complex one.” There is but one assumption required in this case: Lyndon Johnson was guilty of the crimes previously outlined. And there is a substantive reason that this is not even an assumption: Even though Texas Ranger Clint Peoples was never able to prove it in court while Johnson was alive, he did convince a Texas grand jury of Johnson’s guilt in 1984. Ranger Peoples was the man who “made the case” that we are merely summarizing and bringing up to date with additional facts that have since become public.

Examining Lyndon Johnson’s Psycho-Historical Imprint

The evidence and conclusions already described and the descriptions of Johnson’s essential character in *LBJ: The Mastermind of the JFK Assassination* form the baseline for this book. In the remaining pages, if the narrative seems to become more assertive, the tone more tendentious, it is because we have merely returned to the same style with which the previously proved contentions were presented in the original book. Among the points that have been conclusively proved in the earlier work—and form the starting point for this one—we can summarize the most pertinent and thus reduce them to the most elemental of his characteristics. From there, as we progress into the key facets of his being, we can outline a psychological profile, and from that paint a psycho-historical portrait, with the help of two experts in that field, Hyman L. Muslin, MD, and Thomas H. Jobe, MD. They are authors of the book *Lyndon Johnson: The Tragic Self*, and their analytical and scholarly work examined his persona in depth. They concluded that, “Johnson’s decisions as the identified leader, and hence his leadership, were not merely flawed, they were not decisions befitting a leader of a democratic nation.”²² In layman’s terms, this can be interpreted as an assertion that the president of the United States during the period November 22, 1963, and January 21, 1969, was a despot; that President Lyndon Johnson was an irrational man who was not in complete control of his psychological/psychiatric “issues” and this caused him to act more like a dictator than the leader of a modern democracy. In fact, as we shall see, he seemed to believe that in achieving his lifelong dream, he had indeed become “King of the World.”

The most elemental facets of a person include descriptions of how he or she generally adapt(ed) into the culture into which they were born, especially with respect to his or her interactions with fellow human beings. One such example of this as it pertains to our

subject was furnished by his friend John Connally, who described Johnson's unorthodox eating habits: "He ate in a hurry. He wolfed his food. Most of the time, he had no manners. He'd eat off the plate of either person on either side of him, if he ate something that he liked and they hadn't finished theirs. He'd reach over with his fork and eat off their plate."²³ Bobby Kennedy made a similar observation when he was famously quoted as saying that Johnson behaved "like an animal in many ways." Other insights into his persona are noted next.

Whiskey and Cigarettes

There are numerous stories in many books about Johnson's exceptional capacity for the consumption of alcohol; unfortunately, most of them are passed off as harmless and amusing anecdotes without further comment. For example, a former chief of the White House Secret Service Uniformed Division said: "He is the only person [president] I have seen who was ["often" is implicit in the statement] drunk."²⁴ Johnson himself recognized his addiction to alcohol once as he relaxed with aides, holding up his whiskey glass: "'You know,' he said, 'every family has a certain thread that runs through it. In the Kennedys' it was women. All those townhouses and all those women ... like an animal need, the need for women ... For other families it's money, or skiing, or meat. In ours it was alcohol.'"²⁵ From everything we've seen, or will, it would seem like a more complete list of Johnson's "threads" would have included alcohol, women, slaughtering wild animals for no good reason, wild rides in his Lincoln convertibles driving over pastures or country roads at high speed with a beer or scotch in his hand and other reckless behavior, financial corruption and "pay for play" sales of political influence. A few examples of these will illustrate the point:

- Robert Dallek wrote that, during the 1960 campaign, Johnson's anger at not being the nominee for his party's presidential candidate caused him to drink more than ever before, to the extent that his staff had to pull him out of his bed and exercise his arms and legs to wake him after days and nights of drinking himself senseless.²⁶
- Air Force One steward Gerald F. Pisha said that Johnson often became obnoxious after a few drinks, on one occasion throwing a drink on the floor because he didn't like the way it was mixed. Johnson then ordered the steward to throw away the remaining soda water. "He said, 'I want fresh soda water each time.'"²⁷ Johnson's liquor consumption was called "prodigious" by author J. Evetts Haley, who also noted that, "He has been seen to drink three double-shots of Scotch on the twenty-minute flight between Austin and his ranch, and is inclined to a mean and truculent humor when drinking."²⁸
- According to Bobby Baker, "He would eat his dessert, Lady Bird's, Lynda's, and those of my daughters, too. I'm telling you, he was a big man, but he could handle two fifths of Cutty Sark every night and that's not good. And he smoked cigarettes like a crazy man till he had his heart attack."²⁹

- His press secretary and long-time aide, George Reedy, who had worked for him in the Senate before moving with him to the White House, said he would often go on drinking sprees, especially on visits to his ranch, drinking constantly for day after day. Then, just as others might think he would never get sober, it would stop. Once, while in Taiwan, he had already gone through all the scotch he had brought with him, so he ordered a military plane to bring him a case of Cutty Sark from Hong Kong.³⁰

Women and a Succession of Affairs, Assaults, Abuses, and Assertions of Incest

A number of men who worked for him, as well as his prominent biographers, wrote candidly of Johnson's insatiable, or "compulsive" need of sexual conquests among the women he employed or used for other purposes:

- In his memoirs, Johnson's aide George Reedy described the president's preferences for women whom he considered for employment: "They had to be young, they had to be cheerful, they had to be malleable... . He dearly loved to convert an anti-Johnson liberal with a slightly plump figure and a dowdy wardrobe into a lean, impeccably clad female whose face was masked in cosmetics and who adored [him]."³¹
- One early mistress, society hostess Alice Glass, remained a closely held secret, probably because her husband, Charles Marsh, was a rich and influential supporter of Johnson. Another affair, with Helen Gahagan Douglas, a congresswoman from California eventually defeated for re-election by Richard Nixon, was very public, with Johnson seemingly wanting everyone to know about it.³²
- Robert Dallek wrote that one journalist who knew Johnson from 1937 likened his women to a harem, using the analogy of Lady Bird playing the queen in *Anna and the King of Siam* "where she sits at the table with all the babes—Lady Bird was the head wife."³³
- Though it is not clear which lady on his staff a Secret Service agent claimed was still accommodating Johnson sexually after she married, as reported by author Ronald Kessler in his book *In the President's Secret Service*, she had gotten the permission of her husband to continue having sex with Johnson.³⁴ There were rumors at one time or another that it involved Mathilde Krim and her wealthy and influential husband Arthur Krim, the head of United Artists; other rumors claimed it was with his former secretary, Mary Margaret Wiley, who had suddenly married Jack Valenti in 1962. It's possible, of course, that the same arrangement was set up for both of these ladies, accommodated by both of their husbands. His relationships with both of them will be examined in more detail in later chapters.
- One woman journalist with whom Johnson had had an affair, named by Captain Ralph Albertazzie in his book *The Flying White House*, was Nancy Hanschman

(later Dickerson) a CBS television reporter who later moved to NBC. Albertazzie overheard Johnson's telephone conversation with her on his flight back from Sweden, as Johnson begged her to meet him in Paris, where he would entertain her; she demurred repeatedly because she was on vacation in Vienna and couldn't leave. Though they didn't get together on that trip, it was clear from the twenty-minute conversation over an open channel, during which he repeatedly begged her to join him, that it was probably for more than dinner or "coffee and croissant(s)" as glibly suggested by her son John Dickerson, in his own book *On Her Trail*. As for Captain Albertazzie's comment that "What surprised me was how public he was about it," suggests that he had no choice but to keep his radio dialed into that particular channel.³⁵

- William F. Cuff, an executive assistant in the White House military office, stated that Johnson "was a horny old man" but he had very loyal staff who protected his secrets because they were afraid of him.³⁶

At Least Once, It was NOT "Consensual"

There were many other reports of Lyndon Johnson having sex with an assortment of women in his Senate office, which reporters had begun calling the "Nookie Room" (not to be confused with the "Throne Room"). But there was one in particular that was not of the "consensual" type, so it is not merely another bullet on the previous list. A personal friend of mine, a man known for his integrity and impeccable reputation, told of how a friend of his, the late John "Jack" Stack, working as a Capitol Hill lobbyist, gave him a first-hand account of hearing a woman screaming late one evening in the Senate offices. Upon tracking her screams through the congressional corridors, Stack opened the door to Johnson's office, found Johnson completely naked except for his shoes and stockings, complete with garter belts, "with a bottle of whiskey in one hand and his penis in the other" attempting to rape an eighteen-year-old woman, probably an intern or office worker, in his own office. Mr. Stack told his friend that it was clearly a case of attempted rape because the screaming young lady had tried to lock herself into a closet to try to stop the attack. Of course the story was never written up or made public, given the "leader's" position and power over both of them. The unquestioned integrity of my friend, and his absolute belief in what his credible friend had contemporaneously told him, considering the numerous similar accounts of Johnson's general behavior, give this story a high degree of credence. The gist of this account is that the famed majority leader had attempted to rape a young lady, a lady so young that she was barely old enough to even grant him "consent." It causes one to wonder how many others were similarly treated, and that begets the next question: How many times did he go beyond "attempted" rape to "actual" rape?

An Accusation of Incest with his Grandmother

A longtime, well-known Houston activist named Ray Hill has stated that, while attending classes at Indiana University in Bloomington, Indiana, in 1965, he worked at the Kinsey Institute there. Alfred Kinsey had made national headlines in the 1950s for his trailblazing

research into the sexual histories of American citizens. In 1948, Kinsey published his first book, *Sexual Behavior in the Human Male*, which documented much more frequent (and variations of) sexual behaviors among the population than anyone had ever expected. One biography stated that Kinsey interviewed over ten thousand people, male and female, of all ages, to probe their sexual behavior. The book sold almost one-half million copies and he used the royalties from that to write a second book in 1953 titled *Sexual Behavior in the Human Female*.³⁷

Some of those interviews were conducted on “famous” people, but all files were coded to hide the names of these individuals. These were known as the “Deep Files” and all interviews were conducted personally by Dr. Kinsey. Ray Hill stated to me that he discovered the procedure used for masking the names of the people Kinsey interviewed: The first part of the code was simply the three digit sequential number of the interview; the last were alphabetic characters beginning with the last letter of the last name, followed by every other letter of the name, working backward. For Johnson, Hill explained, that part of the code was “NSHJ.” Hill found that the file on Lyndon Johnson’s interview indicated that he had admitted having had sexual intercourse with his grandmother. Johnson’s grandmother who was still alive when he was about fourteen years of age was Ruth Ament Huffman, who would have been in her early sixties. Although it is impossible to verify Hill’s assertions through a second source (Kinsey’s files are accessible only to officials of the Institute, who will not verify their contents) they are credible because of the trustworthiness of Mr. Hill, who personally saw those files. Ray Hill was given greater access to the “Deep Files” because of his position as assistant to the late C. A. Tripp, a colleague of Kinsey and author of two significant books: *The Homosexual Matrix* and *The Intimate World of Abraham Lincoln*, which was completed shortly before he died in 2003.

From all of these statements—all made convincing by the greater credibility of those making the accusations than the numerous doubts already identified regarding Lyndon Johnson’s complete absence of that element—one can deduce that forcing his will upon others was manifested in many ways. But the common thread was his chronic abuse of the power he held over others, and the higher the office he attained, the more he could intimidate or charm—depending upon his latest target—other people to do what he wanted of them. It was his most used technique with subordinates, just as it had been since his college days, then throughout his congressional and vice presidential years.

Mental Health Issues

Regarding the thirty-sixth president’s mental state, Robert Dallek, while acknowledging the difficulty of measuring a president’s psychological weaknesses, observed, “Johnson’s paranoia raises questions about his judgment and capacity to make rational life and death decisions.”³⁸ Dallek also suggested that Johnson’s anger at protestors affected his decisions regarding the conduct of the Vietnam war. Even people without advanced psychology degrees understand—having only read of his insecurities, his delusions of grandeur and persecution, his dismissive arrogance of subordinates—that Lyndon Johnson was what his own grandmother had observed when he was a child. Ruth Baines saw traits in her grandson that she feared would grow to eventually produce an amoral

megalomaniac and deceitful man.³⁹ Lyndon Johnson was clearly a man who should have never been allowed near the Oval Office.

Johnson's psychiatric issues were left untouched throughout his political career and he was never treated for any of them until two years after he left office, in 1971, continuing until his death two years later. These have been described previously at length. A typical example, from Robert Dallek's *Flawed Giant*, was described by Bill Moyers, worried about Johnson's depression and paranoia: "He would just go within himself, just disappear—morose, self-pitying, angry... ' While lying in bed with the covers pulled over his head, the President said that he felt he was in a Louisiana swamp, getting sucked under."⁴⁰

Johnson's Narcissistic, Sociopathic Personality

Lyndon Johnson's amoral sociopathic and narcissistic personality was well established by the time he was five years old, when his own grandmother Ruth Baines predicted that he would wind up in the penitentiary. This was well before the worst of his deceptions were manifested. Her prognostication was followed by many years of unsavory conduct and criminal acts, all practiced from his earliest years and perfected while he was still in college. Johnson was consumed with his single-minded obsession to become president, at any cost and regardless of any consideration of such mundane issues as ethics, morality, legality, or the niceties of due process at election time. His mania to acquire more power, all to advance his rise in the political world—and, as Robert Caro phrased it, "for power not to improve the lives of others, but to manipulate and dominate them, to bend them to his will"⁴¹—extended his reach into all levels of the federal government even before his rise to majority leader of the US Senate. Traces of how Johnson exercised his power can be seen throughout news accounts and books referenced previously:

- His many associations with known criminals—from the previously obscure Billie Sol Estes, to New Orleans don Carlos Marcello and other Mafiosi—led him to attempt to keep some "distance" between himself and them by conducting these operations secretly and vicariously, through his protégé, Bobby Baker, who had secured his connections with the underworld throughout the nation or through his senior aide Cliff Carter and his designated hit man, Malcolm Wallace.
- His deep reach into the highest levels of the military and intelligence communities, which started in his congressional days, rose higher when he became senator in 1948 and ultimately manifested itself with close friendships with Allen Dulles, Richard Helms and James Jesus Angleton in the CIA, and to many at the Pentagon through his military aide, Air Force Colonel Howard Burris, who would become a very wealthy man shortly after the assassination of John Kennedy.

Into the mix of these fundamental character traits and stories about his use of power, the fact that Lyndon Johnson uniquely had the motive, means, and opportunity for the criminal acts previously outlined, as well as the complete disregard of laws meant for everyone else, must be added. The fact that all along the way he had engaged in numerous, increasingly serious crimes, and had gotten away with them, gave him the resolve and confidence to participate with a number of others previously named in committing the

“Crime of the Twentieth Century.” The facts have been distilled and the conclusions formed on the basis of behavioral patterns established by Lyndon Johnson for decades prior to JFK’s assassination. The overall picture that emerges in stark relief is the result of linking multiple “dots” on a vast 3-D historical matrix. The conclusions drawn from the analysis of logical interpretations of his previous actions will then be extrapolated to explain the many presidential actions that are otherwise inexplicable.

The resulting picture is no longer an abstract charcoal sketch. It will become clearer as one progresses through this book so that, by the end of the last chapter, it should become as clear as a high-quality, precision photograph. The emerging truth being revealed in that picture is that Lyndon Johnson’s real legacy was defined not by “the good things” amply heralded by the LBJ Library in Austin and by many of his biographers, but by the actual imprint he made through his criminal acts to achieve his high office as well as his treasonous activities throughout his term as president. The early crimes he committed, whether directly or indirectly, were simply the cost of his achievement of his goals: becoming a senator through a stolen election, the murders of people for the singular purpose of the perpetration of fraud against his own government, the “pay for play” manner he sold his political influence, the bribes, blackmail, and murders, and finally the assassination of the president who stood in his way were only the beginning. The worst part of the picture being revealed came after he achieved the presidency: When he contrived to enter a civil war on the other side of the world just so he could be a “wartime president” like Lincoln and Roosevelt, a war he thought he could manage to ensure more wealth for himself and his similarly invested friends. Within four days of becoming president he started down the road to Americanizing the Vietnam War by reversing Kennedy’s plans to withdraw from it by 1965; then, all during this period, he steadily increased US military presence and commitments as he publicly lamented how he had “inherited” the mess and had become drawn into the quagmire he said had been started by his predecessors. For his narrow, self-centered political objectives, and, he thought, the creation of a grand legacy for himself, he exploited the patriotism of American youth. The last strokes of the brush finish the background of the picture we have drawn: The Vietnam Veterans Memorial on the Washington Mall, to honor the more than 58,000 names engraved thereon.

There exists, within that picture, features represented by the “good things” he accomplished as president, some of which had languished in Congress for decades as he awaited the “right time” to get behind them. Yet it must be tacitly understood that these achievements are mitigated by the fact that they were done “not to improve the lives of others, but to manipulate and dominate them, to bend them to his will,” to repeat Robert Caro’s most illuminating description. Those “good things” were practically all stolen from John Kennedy’s agenda, which Johnson had cunningly stalled for three years. In some cases (e.g., Medicare) they had been on the Democratic platform since at least 1948, and were not created by him as much as suppressed by him when he had the power, as majority leader of the Senate, to push them through Congress if he had wanted to. Instead, if one looks at his overall legislative accomplishments during that period, despite his reputation as the “Master of the Senate,” he accomplished very little. As investigative

journalist Robert Sherrill observed, “After twenty-three years in Congress, Johnson left not one progressive piece of legislation with his name on it, not one piece of legislation that measurably advanced the nation beyond the stage in which he discovered it at the time he entered Congress in 1937.”⁴²

This book will focus on Lyndon Johnson’s conduct of the presidency from the moment he became president on November 22, 1963, through his fifty-nine months in the office he had always expected would eventually be his. It will continue to the period of his retirement after one elected term in office and follow on to the final forty eight months of his life, before his death on the eighth anniversary of his inauguration as the elected thirty-sixth president. Many of the issues to be explored in these pages will not be found in any of the other prominent biographies of the thirty-sixth president, yet they have been discovered in other sources, which described specific, discrete events unconnected to anything else related to Johnson’s sordid past and flawed character.

One example of this, among many, is the rather obscure book *How CATV Came to Texas* by John Campbell, whose company was trying to compete with Johnson’s broadcasting empire. Though the title of the book does not suggest much of interest to those studying Lyndon Johnson, that is incorrect. A significant part of the book relates to how Johnson, through his power over federal bureaucracies, was able to acquire illegal monopoly power over radio and television broadcasting in the Austin area and maintain it for decades, even up to and beyond the point when he became president of the United States. This insightful account is further affirmation of the “above the law” mentality with which Johnson operated his entire lifetime; it provides insights into how he manipulated the federal bureaucracy (in this case, the Federal Communication Commission [FCC]) to acquiesce and even facilitate his illegal enterprise, all while he kept the Justice Department’s Anti-Trust Division at bay. John Connally, in one of his oral histories, also explained how Johnson had manipulated the FCC from the early 1940s, through ingratiating himself with each of the commissioners and intensely studying each of them until he knew all of them by their strengths and weaknesses. He did this as part of a meticulously laid design on “how to approach them, how to talk to them, how to deal with them, who to stay away from.”⁴³

In his “special interview” with John Connally for Connally’s oral history, Robert Dallek noted that the FBI, having already begun an investigation of FDR’s son, Elliott Roosevelt, for using his position to obtain special favors, and had started to initiate another one on Lyndon Johnson, related to the radio and television properties. There were discussions about having the IRS conduct the initial investigation, in 1955, until J. Edgar Hoover stepped into the matter and “tells them to cut it off.”⁴⁴ The syndicated columnist Drew Pearson had tried to call attention to this “insider fraud” in January 1958, as he recounted in his personal diary, which was later compiled into a book, *Diaries: 1949–1959*. His diary entry referenced a congressional committee that had begun investigating corruption at the Federal Communications Commission (FCC) as a result of a column he published the week before. Speaker of the House Sam Rayburn, a mentor to Johnson since the 1930s, who initially wanted the investigation, had suddenly gotten cold feet. The resulting

recriminations upset many people and it now appeared to Pearson that the investigation would be superficial, probably only examining small corruption, such as improper gifts to commissioners, not the larger examples of brazenly illegal, long-term, major issues, which led him to write, “*They will not look into the grants of TV licenses worth millions of dollars given to people like Senator Lyndon Johnson and the newspapers.*”⁴⁵ [Emphasis added.]

Lyndon Johnson’s vise-grip hold on the hearings into the scandals at the FCC ensured that they would remain superficial and would not go near the most serious breach of ethics and illegalities being perpetrated against the federal government, ergo the taxpayers of the United States. While much of the story regarding Johnson’s broadcasting business was finally reported in a June 1964 *Wall Street Journal* article and the August 1964 two-part *Life* magazine expose (detailed in *LBJ: The Mastermind of the JFK Assassination*), that publicity didn’t affect the continuing, shamelessly unscrupulous and illegal operations of Johnson’s business empire throughout the rest of his presidency. The public simply gave him “the benefit of the doubt,” ignored the sordid details of his shadowy business affairs, and allowed him to continue his presidency only a few months later, when he won the 1964 landslide election over Barry Goldwater despite these revelations.

According to John Campbell’s personal account of Johnson’s corruption, his company had to file suit against the LBJ Corporation in 1966, in the middle of Johnson’s presidency, to collect the balance due on a legal settlement from two years earlier. Campbell’s book also provided revealing insights into the characters of certain Johnson acolytes such as Donald Thomas, a partner of Johnson’s primary personal lawyer and bagman Ed Clark. He described a meeting in the conference room of attorney Thomas’s office, as they prepared for Thomas to take a deposition from Campbell: “he kept hounding and probing me to acknowledge whom he represented. Clint Small Jr., our attorney, finally said, ‘Don, we will acknowledge that you are indeed the personal lawyer of the president of the United States of America.’”⁴⁶ Anecdotes like that provide profound insights into the arrogance, and the obvious, ironic smallness, of the men who used the firm’s ties to Johnson to bolster their own insecurities: They were essentially demanding that “lesser” attorneys acknowledge the inherent superiority of the Clark and Thomas law firm; it was the kind of behavior one might expect on a junior high school playground. Campbell also related the laconic comment of a Texas state senator, who explained how Lyndon Johnson operated: “You just don’t understand—LBJ owns this part of Texas and we were trespassing on his territory, so don’t expect any favors or fair play from him... . This is just the way they do business.”⁴⁷

LBJ Intervenes in Military Procurement: Creates the “Flying Edsel”

The controversy over the TFX (the acronym meaning “experimental tactical fighter jet”) scandal lasted throughout the Kennedy administration and for years beyond, but somehow the single man most responsible for it, then Vice President Lyndon B. Johnson, escaped the brunt of the criticism for it because he ran the entire operation from “behind the scenes.” Indeed, it could be argued that this historically unparalleled “high crime” was personally managed by Johnson from start to finish. He appointed those who would

control the decision (except Defense Secretary Robert McNamara) and then controlled—through these same men—its execution and even received at least one suitcase full of cash (\$100,000, as described by insurance salesman Don Reynolds in *LBJ: The Mastermind of the JFK Assassination*), as his pay-off for getting that contract redirected, from the Boeing Corporation to General Dynamics Corporation, which was but one example of his most outrageously successful influence peddling frauds. He must have considered this as his crowning achievement under the category of “financial frauds against the federal government.” The most astonishing aspect of the enterprise, however, was that it was accomplished while he was vice president. While journalists were telling each other a litany of “LBJ jokes,” often with a punch line of “Lyndon Who?” he was busy setting up what had to be one of his greatest criminal accomplishments, certainly during this period of time, all while he attempted to separate himself from Billie Sol Estes in 1962 and Bobby Baker in 1963, saying he “hardly knew them.”

To do this, he had forced JFK, while maneuvering his way onto the 1960 ticket as the nominee for the vice presidency, to give him power to make patronage appointments over certain military-related positions (as illustrated by the appointment of John Connally as secretary of the Navy, for example) and all appointments of federal officials within Texas (an example of that being the appointment of his sycophant Barefoot Sanders as a US attorney to the Northern District of Texas), a perk that would have normally gone to the senior party senator from that state—in this case Ralph Yarborough, who always resented Johnson’s stealing this plum, considering it, as they say in Texas, “a burr in his saddle.”

As previously noted, Robert McNamara—who had fallen under Lyndon Johnson’s mesmerizing “Treatment” to go along with him on a number of questionable ventures—technically made the decision to take the TFX fighter jet contract away from Boeing (based in Washington and Kansas) and award it to General Dynamics (based in Texas) and its partner, Grumman Aircraft (based in California). But McNamara was pushed into a decision already initiated by Lyndon Johnson, from behind the scenes. Three weeks after JFK was assassinated, a headline “TFX Inquiry Seems Ended as McClellan Delays Hearings Indefinitely” appeared in the *New York Times*. On December 15, 1963, the paper announced that “Senator John L. McClellan (D-Arkansas) has indefinitely postponed hearings on the TFX airplane contract.” What was left unsaid is that Lyndon Johnson pressured McClellan, undoubtedly with either bribes or blackmail, to table that investigation and that is exactly what he did, almost immediately.

Those hearings would not resume until 1969, after Johnson had left the presidency. By that time, the question had become moot, since the TFX had morphed into the “F-111” and had been in production for two years by General Dynamics. The May 19, 1967, issue of *Time* magazine reported on the latest development in this aircraft in an article titled “Aircraft: Take-off for the F-111” referring to the highest cost government contract in history at that time, and how the military chiefs were still upset with McNamara:

Air Force and Navy brass bridled at Defense Secretary Robert McNamara’s 1961 decision... . Congress, too, filled the air with investigations over what critics called “the flying Edsel.”

The Edsel was one of the biggest automotive failures of all time. Ford Motor Company, then headed by Robert McNamara, spent hundreds of millions dollars on manufacturing and marketing that were never recouped. It all came to a complete waste after only two years of production because it was just another oversized behemoth, not unlike many other cars of the late 1950s. The total losses to Ford amounted to \$350 million (\$2.8 billion in 2013 dollars).⁴⁸

The irony of that failure was that, despite the blemish on McNamara's résumé—which occurred at the very same point in time that John Kenneth Galbraith was writing *The Affluent Society*, decrying the implications of such “conspicuous consumption”—JFK appointed McNamara as secretary of defense while Galbraith became one of Kennedy's top advisers and was eventually named to be the ambassador to India. Galbraith arguably really was one of the true “best and brightest” of Kennedy's aides, while McNamara was best known for the disasters that seemed to follow him around, even though the press treated him at the time as one of the most brilliant and erudite men in the country.

In a *Washington Post* article dated September 18, 1966, headlined “Twining's Book Backs McClellan on TFX,” a former chairman of the Joint Chiefs of Staff, Air Force General Nathan F. Twining was quoted: “our Air Force would have possessed better all-around fighting capability across the spectrum of war if the \$8 billion to \$9 billion slated to go into the TFX went for two different aircraft: (1) a relatively simple and inexpensive direct support aircraft tailored specifically for support of our ground forces; (2) a modern bomber to follow the aging force of B-52s and B-58s.”

General Twining's 1966 book, titled *Neither Liberty Nor Safety: A Hard Look at US Military Policy and Strategy*, outlined precisely the albatross that Lyndon Johnson, through his own appointees in the Defense Department, together with McNamara, had accomplished. Twining stated that a long-standing military protocol for contract awards designed to ensure fairness and prevent fraud and excessive costs was breached during the process of awarding that contract to General Dynamics of Texas and Grumman Aircraft of California. His concern was that once that is done, it could be repeated until all of the controls to avoid these risks were compromised. His concern was with the integrity of the procurement system and he felt strongly that the TFX award breached that integrity:

When the highly competent technical and operational staffs of the United States Army, Navy and Air Force are overridden by civilian management, what does this do to the military values of integrity? How will such procurements affect US combat teams who may be required to defend this nation with equipment obtained on political merits?⁴⁹

General Twining minced no words in describing the costly, overly complex design created because of the “dual use” rationale for an airplane that would be suitable for both carrier-based and land-based operations, describing the redesign as an attempt to combine the objectives of the navy and air force into a single machine and thereby becoming “all things to all people.” In attempting to satisfy the wishes of all the people involved, the design became unsatisfactory to most everyone. The complexity of such a design, Twining

explained, made it much more costly than the alternative of creating two separate fighter jets and, paradoxically, rendered it much less desirable to either service, especially the navy, which has to be more concerned with the size and weight of carrier-based airplanes. General Twining pointed out, with succinct clarity, that the end result was an extremely expensive airplane that would be very difficult, if not impossible, for effective use by the navy. The risk, as he put it, was the potential loss of a \$6 million (1966 cost) airplane to small-arms ground fire; this concern was shared by many of the military officers at the time, up to and including General Curtis LeMay, who remained furious at Robert McNamara and his “whiz kids,” who he blamed for the decision, not realizing that it emanated from Lyndon Johnson, pushing his surrogates for the change from the back rooms.

After problems became apparent in the testing of the aircraft, a year after General Twining’s prescient warning, in 1967 the navy cancelled its part of the contract, so the resulting, extremely expensive aircraft wound up being used only by the Air Force, completely undermining the supposed cost advantage of trying to combine two fundamentally different aircraft into one. The worst part of this experience, however, was the disingenuous, clearly fabricated reasoning for proceeding with a design that neither the navy nor the air force wanted in the first place. One of the most obvious of the lies put forth to justify this decision was, according to General Twining, when Congress later investigated the TFX contract process, one of the excuses used was that Boeing had used more titanium, which was said to be an “unproven metal” despite the fact that it had been used, satisfactorily, in the design of an earlier aircraft, the A-11. He stated that in his opinion, the Congress of the United States “was given misleading information.”⁵⁰

What Twining did not understand was that the decision was borne of intentional deceit and was not really merely the incompetence of anyone at the Pentagon, or Robert McNamara, the top most man there. It was traceable to a man who had worked “behind the scenes” on behalf of his friends at General Dynamics to get this contract: The then current president of the United States, Lyndon B. Johnson, was responsible for that breach of protocol that so upset General Twining.

Lyndon Johnson had administered his famed “Treatment” to Robert S. McNamara shortly after the inauguration (the fact that it took him longer than practically every other Kennedy administration holdover to figure out how unbalanced Johnson was is sufficient proof of his complete deliverance). It must first be understood that McNamara’s reputation at the time was that of a man on the “fast track” whose face appeared regularly on the cover of national news magazines, often touted for his superior intellect and command over his domain, be it Ford Motor Company or the Department of Defense.

As will be further demonstrated in the pages that follow, McNamara was not nearly as brilliant as his reputation suggested. After all, he was the same man who brought forth into the world the aforementioned 1958 Edsel. McNamara is seldom remembered for the Edsel, because that was outmatched by his failure to understand, in real time, the horror that was unfolding before his eyes as Lyndon Johnson decided to make Vietnam his last stand. The two of them had fallen under the same illusion, and decided that the US military was so

strong that they could do just about anything they wished to do, the public (both in America and Vietnam) be damned.

It is clear now, in retrospect, that one of the most scandalous military contracts in history had Lyndon Johnson's name all over it and the result was a far cry from the original request of the Air Force for a new fighter to replace the aging fleet of F-100s and F-105s. When the longest-lasting bomber aircraft, the B-52 is taken out of service (now scheduled for 2035), it will mark a total of ninety (90) years since it was originally designed and subsequently flown reliably ever since, compared to a life-span of less than thirty years for the TFX/F-111, an airplane that was widely referred to in 1960s military jargon as the "LBJ."

Johnson's Priority No. 1: Divert Public Attention

Lyndon Johnson's defenders, including many ex-sycophants whose selective memories are clearly biased toward the "good news"—as they had learned at the knee of Johnson decades ago—cite his list of major accomplishments, never tiring in their efforts to rehabilitate Johnson's tainted legacy. The soaring rhetoric used to describe new biographies of the man—paean to the creator of a lofty agenda he had secretly planned for decades, especially in the immediate three-year period prior to his ascendancy—are paradoxical to the very thesis they extol: how a demonstrably amoral and unethical "flawed giant" can be portrayed as the opposite of those attributes. In a more accurate, albeit ironic, context, they actually help to prove the thesis of this book. An illustration of this was provided by a new book, *Indomitable Will: LBJ in the Presidency*, by Mark Updegrove, the director of the LBJ Library, published in March 2012. Updegrove's commentary regarding the number of laws passed under Johnson's presidency as "testaments to the triumph of his will" ignores the underlying mania that led him to finally act aggressively toward passage of legislative initiatives he had previously ignored, even impeding nearly all of Kennedy's initiatives for nearly three years before this, when JFK had counted on Johnson's support to get them through Congress. Where was his triumphant will during that entire period?

Updegrove noted Johnson's "braggadocio claims that his forefathers were teachers and lawyers and college presidents and governors when the Kennedys of this country were still tending bar ..." ⁵¹ yet he did not correct the record. Juxtapose that narrative to what Ronnie Dugger, the publisher of the *Texas Observer*, wrote in his book, *The Politician—The Life and Times of Lyndon Johnson: The Drive for Power, from the Frontier to Master of the Senate*, regarding what the father of a girl who Johnson was dating, had said about the Johnson family: "Everyone in Blanco County knew that Lyndon's grandfather Sam had been 'nothing but an old cattle rustler' ... 'that no-account Johnson family, one generation after another of shiftless dirt farmers and grubby politicians.'" ⁵² Though Mr. Dugger was skeptical of Johnson, he was apparently not sufficiently so, because he failed to see that his own description of him, "The pulsing ... energy ... [the] daring, guile and greed for power and money," driven by his basic character traits, including his being "rude, shrewd, vindictive, volcanic and cold, vicious" ⁵³ was a description of a colossal maniac. And

Dugger clearly did not see that the legislation Johnson pushed through Congress was all part of his grand plan for a massive cover-up of his crimes, including his involvement in JFK's assassination. The passage of the legislation Johnson swept through Congress had the effect of diverting attention and "changing the subject" from that awful business in Dallas as well as becoming the centerpiece for his grand legacy. Furthermore, he knew that it would keep the skeptics at bay for decades. It is clear now that history textbooks were written to establish it as fact, and so indoctrinate the children who, in time, would help most in papering over the vestiges of old crimes, just as Johnson had always planned.

Updegrave's book is a perfect example of how Lyndon Johnson, throughout his lifetime, had planted small and large lies willy-nilly along the paths he took and the people he interacted with, knowing all the while that in due course people would one day be paid to repeat those very lies and let them grow and flourish, until they became the established "truths" for others to consume. Had there been a course offering back in San Marcos for "Mythology 101," he probably would have been the best teacher available for it.

Bill Moyers offered this commentary about Updegrave's book:

This book throbs with voices from an era that proved to be a hinge of American history. Their recollections become a chorus of insight into Lyndon B. Johnson, the colossus of his time, whose personality, politics, and policies are getting a much deserved second look.

Moyers's use of the term "colossus" appears to be a euphemism for Johnson's manic obsession to become president, first, and then "one of the best," presidents of all time, just like FDR. The phrase "hinge of American history" actually serves to remind the reader just how "unhinged" that period was and the "throbs with voices" phrase reminds one of the most used examples: The young protestors across the street from the White House, shouting, "Hey, hey, LBJ, how many kids did you kill today?" Of all the subjects Bill Moyers has discussed in the last four decades in his newspaper or radio commentary, there is very little about his most intimate insights regarding Lyndon Johnson. In fact, he has been one of the few once-close associates of Johnson to have refused to talk to Robert Caro, for nearly four decades.⁵⁴ He did share some of his most intimate and innermost thoughts about Johnson, but only privately with a few of his contemporaries. Certain of them reported some of those thoughts and for that reason, they can be summarized here and contrasted to what he said about the "colossus of his time" previously.

JFK's in-house historian and adviser Arthur Schlesinger Jr. unsurprisingly kept detailed daily notes and would usually record them before he retired every evening. At the end of his life, in 2007, his last book *Journals: 1952–2000*, was published and some of those very revealing diary entries were printed. The gamut of those entries ranged from the mundane, through many degrees of "interesting but not particularly pertinent" to "profoundly important." Some were downright troubling, because they suggested that his closest associates in the White House knew that the then president of the United States, Lyndon B. Johnson, was regularly experiencing mental breakdowns of a psychotic nature.

In one entry, dated March 13, 1968,* Schlesinger's notes inform the reader that Bill

Moyers had told him that “LBJ is now well sealed off from reality,” and stated that the atmosphere in the White House is “impenetrable.” Moreover, the entry states that Moyers had characterized Johnson’s mental state as being “paranoid” and that “four more years of Johnson would be ruinous for the country.”⁵⁵ It must be remembered that, by this point in time, Moyers had been out of the White House for well over a year and it was generally known that the parting was kept under the radar and little is known about the related causes. What is known is that Johnson had a “canned” letter prepared to give to Moyers, but had it retyped to delete the phrase “I treasure the past.”⁵⁶

Another entry made just a week before Johnson left the White House for good indicated that Schlesinger had talked to Bill Moyers and Richard “Dick” Goodwin about the problems with anyone ever trying to write a book about Johnson, because “no one would believe it.” He also wrote that Moyers had said that Johnson was “a sick man” and that both Moyers and Goodwin read up on mental illness, Goodwin tackled the paranoia issue and Moyers studied up on manic-depressive cycles.⁵⁷ Moyers also appeared in a later note, dated November 11, 1971, when he made a comment about how Johnson thought that his “manhood” had been tested during the period of the escalation of the Vietnam War.⁵⁸ This was a particularly insightful point because it runs parallel with an incident that occurred during that very period of the escalation, in a 1965 press conference held at his ranch. A reporter had asked him to explain why we were at war with Vietnam and President Lyndon B. Johnson, in response to that question, unzipped his pants, withdrew his penis and, holding it so that all the reporters, male and female, could view it clearly, exclaimed “This is why!” And with that, the press conference ended and everyone walked away, so stunned that the original question was soon nearly forgotten.⁵⁹ Naturally, this incident was not widely reported in the press by those same reporters, who were more concerned with protecting the president from such knowledge becoming public. Fortunately, there were a few brave souls who made sure the record was duly noted.

Evidently, Mr. Moyers has changed his attitude between these earlier observations and his unqualified use of the word “colossus” in the description he used when writing his review of the Updegrove book. Another entry in Schlesinger’s *Journal* (from December 7, 1967) indicates the attitude of Henry Kissinger (then a foreign affairs consultant working for Nelson Rockefeller), who had concluded that Johnson’s resistance to peace negotiations “*verges on a sort of madness*” and that Dick Goodwin (who had left the White House in 1965, out of disgust with Johnson’s Vietnam efforts, to become a professor) had felt the same way: “his sense that the President was governed by *motives so personal and irrational that his continuation in office would be disastrous.*”⁶⁰ [Emphasis added.]

Schlesinger then lamented that three of the major leaders in the world in 1967 (Mao Zedong [sometimes spelled Mao Tse-tung], Charles de Gaulle, and Lyndon Johnson) were “slightly crazy.” Apparently he had not yet realized that the adjective he used in the latter case was not nearly adequate. The most telling and succinct description of Lyndon Johnson that I’ve come across came from a man who knew him on a close personal level, Secret Service agent Richard Roth, who once stated that “If Johnson weren’t president,

he'd be in an insane asylum.”⁶¹

Johnson's Presidential Model: Richard III or Macbeth?

Authors and psychiatrists Hyman Muslin and Thomas Jobe wrote that, “Johnson, like Shakespeare's Richard III, seems more a caricature of a man than a real-life person,” whose mania propelled him to conduct himself such that he was constantly seeking satisfaction for his self-centered appetites, “activities that would keep him in equilibrium.”⁶²

In comparing Johnson to the Machiavellian and murderous Richard III, Muslin and Jobe described the same behavior we have seen, and will further observe, but their descriptions affirm many of the points we have made in more mundane style; for example, regarding Johnson's treatment of peers and subordinates, generally stated to be of a condescending, belittling nature, were characterized by these authors as his not recognizing the special qualities of other individuals, their styles or interests, other than what he perceived as their strengths and weaknesses that may someday be useful to him, in a way that could be used to his own advantage.⁶³ Pulitzer Prize-winning author David Halberstam described that same unique capability: Johnson “could catalogue the strengths and weaknesses of every man [in Congress]. The strength of a man put him off, but his weaknesses attracted him; it meant a man could be used... . [Another man's weakness] to Johnson there was a smell of blood, more could come of this.”⁶⁴

Unfortunately for Johnson, and the country, during this time in Washington he never had the benefit of a consultation with a psychologist or psychiatrist about his own feelings of emptiness and loneliness precisely because he had had such a successful career. It wasn't until he left Washington for good and returned to more loneliness than ever back at the ranch that he agreed to seek professional help for his psyche. While it is generally agreed that true sociopaths cannot be “healed,” they can be treated and counseled, and usually their condition never manifests itself in such a manner as to harm others.

One of Shakespeare's other plays, *Macbeth*, about the killing of a king, was parodied in 1967 by playwright Barbara Garson and writer/director Roy Levine in their play *MacBird!* at the Village Gate theater in New York. The obvious and explicit comparison to the murderous Shakespearean character Macbeth was walked back by Ms. Garson in 2006 when she replied to a question about whether Johnson had killed Kennedy by saying, “I never took that seriously. I used to say to people, if he did, it's the least of his crimes.”⁶⁵ With that, what was once a radical, chic, and iconic work has now apparently descended into a politically incorrect, embarrassing, and outdated polemic, something the opposite of the iconoclastic work that its creator now denies. These Shakespearean characters represent the worst abuses of power known in the sixteenth century, though none of his subjects could compare to the twentieth-century Colossus, in terms of LBJ's worldwide reach of treachery and treasons. This charge will be demonstrated fully in the chapters to come. Irrespective of Ms. Garson's motives or objectives, the caveat she clings to is a disservice to JFK: An iconic figure whose inspiring persona stood in stark contrast to his successor, the guilt-ridden, shrewd and cunning *MacBird*. That contrast becomes clearer

as one comes to accept the truths of real history and reject the myths put in place to assuage the senses of the masses. The revelations contained within these pages should begin a process of re-examination that may one day recast the thirty-sixth president much more accurately for what he was: A president who evoked the darkness of both Richard III and Macbeth, in dramatic contrast to the sunny, halcyon days of *Camelot* that preceded it.

* See "President Johnson using the "N" word," <http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=r1rIDmDWSms>

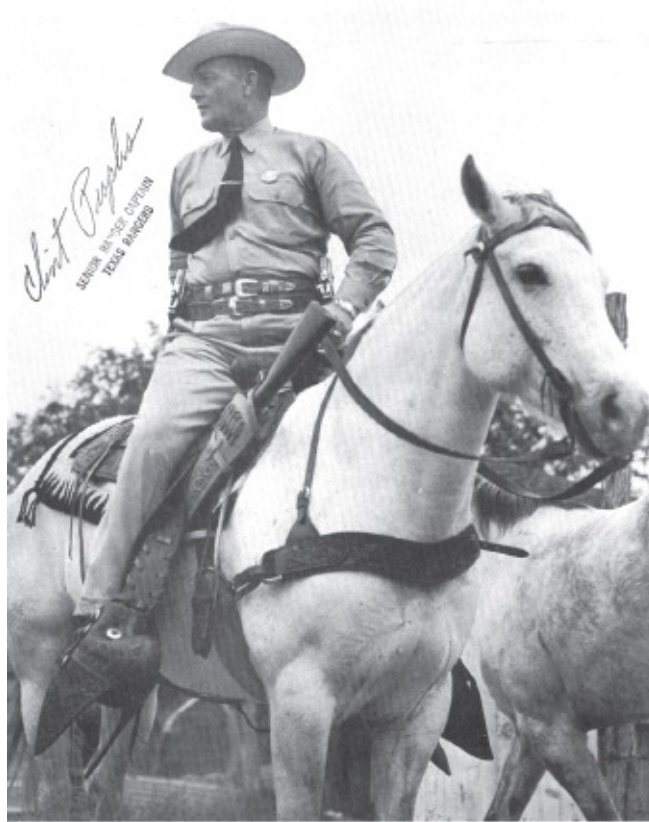
** William M. Adler, "A Texan Looks at Lyndon," *Texas Monthly*, September 1987 (p. 114).

Chapter 1

THE (REAL) “LONE RANGER”: A LIFELONG QUEST FOR JUSTICE

Before I die, there will be one of the most jarring international scandals that has ever been as a result of this investigation. A lot of people take the position, oh well, he's already dead, or well they are already out of the office. The hell with that. Those people that got by with that need to be ... if they're dead now, they still need to be exposed as a deterrent against future things like this.

—US MARSHALL CLINT PEOPLES, NOVEMBER 1984



Clint Peoples on his horse Chico Courtesy of Texas State Library & Archives Commission

The Original, Most Important “JFK Researcher,” Whose Investigation of LBJ Started Even Before JFK Was Assassinated: Texas Ranger Clint Peoples

Most of Lyndon Johnson’s biographers have chosen to disregard the charges originally made by Billie Sol Estes and Madeleine Brown, apparently based on their tainted pasts, with scarcely a footnote about Johnson’s own inglorious history. But Billie Sol’s and Madeleine’s veracity was vindicated by many other credible people who knew them personally, including especially Texas Ranger Clint Peoples, whose impeccable credentials and long history of law enforcement eventually made him a Texas legend. Captain Peoples was later made a US Marshal, and was a man who received multiple awards over an unblemished lifetime of law enforcement (eventually appearing on Johnny Carson’s *Tonight* show as a consequence).^{*} Captain Peoples had worked on his case against

Malcolm Wallace, and his direct ties to Cliff Carter and Lyndon Johnson, for over three decades. It wasn't until the director of the Texas Rangers assigned him to examine the death of Henry Marshall in 1962 that Captain Peoples formally began his investigation, but he had an earlier, peripheral involvement in the 1951 investigation of the murder, by Malcolm Wallace, of Doug Kinser. He had also been aware of the many anomalies in the judicial handling of that case, and the resulting "sentence" of five years for first-degree murder (with "malice aforethought"), that was then suspended. Mac Wallace was immediately set free and only put on probation, which required him to keep out of trouble for the next five (5) years. This "justice" for Kinser was directly due to Johnson's, and his attorney's, ability to either blackmail, bribe, or threaten the prosecutor and judge (and at least one juror) to let a convicted murderer (Wallace) be set free, under five years probation, after which his record would be wiped clean.

The sordid history of Lyndon Johnson's involvement with Billie Sol Estes in defrauding the US government, and thereby every taxpayer in the country, of tens of millions of dollars in the late 1950s and early 1960s, as detailed in *LBJ: The Mastermind of the JFK Assassination*, can be reduced to the following summary of events as compiled by John Simkin in his UK website *Spartacus Educational*:⁶⁶

In 1960 a US Department of Agriculture (USDA) agent named Henry Marshall was asked to investigate the activities of Billie Sol Estes, who had purchased 3,200 acres of cotton allotments from 116 different farmers. Marshall wrote a report on August, 31, 1960, stating that: "The regulations should be strengthened to support our disapproval of every case (of allotment transfers)." Upon hearing this news, Estes sent his lawyer, John P. Dennison, to meet Marshall in Robertson County. Just days before the new Kennedy-Johnson administration was inaugurated, on January 17, 1961, Marshall told Dennison that Estes was clearly involved in a "scheme or device to buy allotments, and will not be approved, and prosecution will follow if this operation is ever used." Marshall was disturbed that as a result of his investigation, he was then bribed with an offer of a promotion to a high position in the USDA in Washington and that this was a result of Billie Sol Estes's ties to Lyndon B. Johnson. He refused the offer.

Shortly after Marshall refused that offer, Estes's manager A. B. Foster wrote to Clifton C. Carter, a close aide to Lyndon B. Johnson, complaining about Marshall's zealousness and how he was impeding the continuing frauds that were so lucrative to the swindler Estes and his facilitator, Senator Lyndon B. Johnson. Foster wrote that "we would sincerely appreciate your investigating this and seeing if anything can be done."

On January 17, 1961, Estes took this problem personally to Washington to discuss it with Lyndon Johnson on the evening before the inauguration, with LBJ's aide Cliff Carter and a man who had become the vice president's official hit man, the aforementioned Mac Wallace. On that snowy night as they stood on Johnson's back patio, his code words for what would happen to Mr. Marshall if he didn't accept one last chance to look the other way and allow the frauds to continue, were succinct, deadly, and shrouded in euphemism:

“Get rid of him.” And so it was that on June 3, 1961, Henry Marshall was beaten so fiercely that one of his eyes hung out of its socket and his blood was found on both sides of the dented truck. He was then forced to breath carbon monoxide from his own truck and finally shot five times by a long barrel rifle within a four-inch circle on his left chest. Sheriff Howard Stegall, a long-time friend of Cliff Carter, pronounced it “death by suicide” as he had apparently been instructed to do by Carter, or possibly his cousin Glynn Stegall, who also worked in the Executive Office Building within Vice President Lyndon B. Johnson’s suite of offices, next door to the White House.

For three decades, Ranger Clint Peoples worked the Marshall case as hard as he possibly could. His investigation lasted from 1962 until his mysterious one car “accident” in 1992, an incident that will be examined in detail shortly. His knowledge of Lyndon Johnson’s deep tentacles into, and corruption of, the Texas judicial system was even longer, having spanned forty-one years: 1951–1992. His knowledge of the crime spree he watched unfold before his eyes, knowing that the vice president of the United States was behind it, must have been immensely frustrating for him.

It is Clint Peoples’s unquestioned professionalism that imbues truth to his belief in Billie Sol Estes’s and Madeleine Brown’s accounts and injects both with the essential credibility that now demands our attention: Clint Peoples’s career ambition and his fight against the political machine of Lyndon B. Johnson cannot—must not—be ignored. It is the voice of this man, still resonating from his grave as you read his words next, that must be heard now, a man who had investigated many of the other crimes that constituted the case against Johnson. It was his unimpeachable forty-year record that must be factored into this metric; to ignore it is to reject arguably the most credible and important witnesses to the crime of the century. The same point applies to the hundreds of others who either never gave testimony or whose testimonies were ignored by the authorities for fear of getting too close to the truth. To suggest that these assertions are “speculative” in nature and not factual because they were never heard in a court of law (which is the very reason most other authors use in deciding to avoid the subject) is specious reasoning and indeed, untruthful. Clint Peoples finally succeeded in convincing a 1984 grand jury that Marshall had been murdered at the hands of Lyndon Johnson, Cliff Carter, and Mac Wallace. The only thing missing were the guilty parties, because they were already officially dead. It was probably not coincidental that they would all die before Johnson, given their knowledge of the worst of his criminal activities.

The biography of Clint Peoples, *Captain Clint Peoples, Texas Ranger*, by James M. Day chronicles his fifty years in law enforcement, first as a Texas Ranger and later as a US Marshal, and the numerous accolades, awards, “Ambassador of Goodwill” certificates, and so forth that he collected over those years.** He eventually chaired the Texas Ranger Commemorative Foundation, which built an addition to the Texas Ranger Hall of Fame. Historical monuments were built for his memorial, one at Fort Fisher and another, a wax life like statue of Captain Peoples on his horse, was installed at the Southwestern Historical Wax Museum in Grand Prairie, Texas (which, unfortunately, mysteriously burned to the ground in 1987). For the Sesquicentennial Celebration of Texas, and to provide funding for the “Sheriff’s Association of Texas Clint and Donna Peoples Scholarship Foundation,”

artist Cary Clawson was commissioned to cast 150 copies of a 16 -inch × 13½-inch bronze sculpture of Clint on his horse “Chico.” Senator John Tower, on October 8, 1984—clearly in response to the fuss Peoples had created with his victory in getting the grand jury to agree that the cause of death (COD) of Henry Marshall should be changed to “homicide” just before that—honored him in a Senate speech stating, “his professional ethics and personal integrity are unquestioned, indeed a legend in his own time.”

This distinguished lawman—one of the most honored law enforcement officers in Texas history—had long suspected Lyndon Johnson’s involvement in multiple murders but could never muster the power to find the evidence while Johnson was still alive. His attempt to do that in 1962, after calling a grand jury to hear the results of an autopsy done on Marshall’s body that had been disinterred for an examination, which should have been done the year before, was viciously sabotaged by Johnson, as we will demonstrate shortly. It wasn’t until Johnson was dead that Captain Peoples was able to prove it because the many murders he was attempting to investigate had all been ruled “suicides” or “accidents” by people owing Lyndon Johnson a favor. But he finally did manage, in 1984—eleven years after Johnson died—to persuade a second Texas grand jury of that essential truth.

Twenty-two years earlier, as Estes left that first grand jury hearing, Clint Peoples approached him and said: “Billie Sol, I know most of the real story and so do you. Some day you will tell me the whole truth.”⁶⁷ In 1979, Peoples personally escorted Billie Sol from Dallas to the federal prison in Big Springs, Texas, so he could discuss the Henry Marshall murder with him, asking him to “set the record straight,” for the sake of the Marshall family’s peace of mind. Peoples continued visiting Estes in prison; Estes grew to like and respect Peoples, and trusted him implicitly to treat him fairly.⁶⁸ Estes made a promise to Peoples to tell the truth about his experiences but not until he was released from prison; that would not occur until 1983. Had Peoples not spent so much time with Estes pursuing this case, it would have truly “died on the vine;” but he did just that, and it was enough to keep these “cold cases” open for investigation.

Only by focusing on these events through the eyes of Ranger Captain Clint Peoples can we understand the arc of Johnson’s crime spree that he witnessed in real time, beginning in 1951. He saw how Johnson had applied his “Treatment” and manipulated—through a combination of threats, intimidation, blackmail, or bribery—the judge, at least one and probably more members of the jury, the defense attorney and the prosecutor into getting his hit man Mac Wallace freed from jail and merely put on probation for five years after having been convicted of first-degree murder. If the general population of Austin, Texas, was shocked—as newspaper accounts at the time showed was true—one can only imagine how the politicians and news reporters of the day must have reacted. Captain Peoples, within whose jurisdiction the crime had occurred, had assisted in the investigation of the 1951 murder of Doug Kinser, the 1952 murder of Sam Smithwick (whom Johnson was accused of having had killed by then Texas governor Allan Shivers in 1956⁶⁹) the 1961 murders of Henry Marshall and Johnson’s own sister Josefa, and the subsequent murders in 1962 of George Krutilek, Harold Orr and his secretary, then Howard Pratt and Coleman

Wade.

The 1961–62 series of murders (except Johnson’s sister Josefa’s) were all done to keep the lid on Johnson’s involvement with Billie Sol Estes, who was then under investigation for fraud by state and federal authorities, including Robert F. Kennedy. It was a growing scandal during that period, reported on almost daily by many newspapers throughout the country at the time. The story took a long time to make the news, but once it did, it was practically ubiquitous in newspapers all over the United States through the spring and summer of 1962, before Johnson’s friend Morris D. Jaffe,^{***} stepped up to buy the Estes assets for pennies on the dollar. That took the story off the front pages and left it open for future historians to note in detail if they chose, yet practically all of them ignored the details of those news stories as if they carried a plague of some sort. But before the story was swept away into the dustbin of history, in September 1962, the trial of Billie Sol Estes commenced, after a change of venue from Reeves County to Smith County, five hundred miles to the east. The move was intended to dampen the publicity and ensure a fair trial for the defendant. That was woefully ineffective, as the Supreme Court found three years later, when it threw out Estes’s original conviction due to the circus atmosphere of the courtroom, which included live newscasts by both radio and television as well as throngs of reporters and photographers in attendance representing national newspapers. Indeed the Supreme Court, in its review of the case, noted the fact of “Massive pretrial publicity totaling eleven volumes of press clippings ... *had given it national notoriety*. All available seats in the courtroom were taken, and some thirty persons stood in the aisles.”⁷⁰ [Emphasis added.] It is stunning how practically every major biographer of Lyndon Johnson was able to ignore all of that, and his ties to Billie Sol Estes, or brush them away with a perfunctory wave of the hand and the comment that Estes wasn’t “credible.”

The excuse, of course, was that Johnson was never actually charged and found guilty in a court of law of being involved with Estes in the performance of his crimes. Yet that was merely due to his expert manipulative skills of secretiveness, his rules to everyone involved to never commit anything to writing about any of it, handling such matters through one or more layers of aides to do the “dirty work,” and allowing only untraceable cash in the transfers, transported and delivered by his most trusted aides. Johnson’s well practiced techniques protected him exquisitely, and the only books to include these mentions of a “darker side” are those that refrain from participating in the Orwellian remake of the real persona of the Svengali-like^{****} thirty-sixth president into a respectable, honorable, and trustworthy man, which was essentially the opposite of the person he really was. Yet that is the “official image” as sanctioned by the mythmakers that one is supposed to have of Johnson. The lesson to be learned is that if one truly masters the art of criminality, and becomes so good at it that they’re never caught, that is as good as being completely innocent.

Ranger Clint Peoples knew how the Senator, and subsequently, Vice President Johnson had kept himself above the fray, through his wide-ranging political influence into the law enforcement and judicial systems—and other state and federal agencies—of nearly the entire state of Texas in addition to Washington, DC. That influence was demonstrated again a year after Doug Kinser’s murder and Wallace’s sentence of probation, when Sam

Smithwick—a former employee of “The Duke of Duvall,” George Parr, who was preparing to “spill the beans” on the fraudulent US Senate 1948 election that Johnson won—was killed while a prisoner inside his jail cell by well-compensated guards, thanks to the connections directly into the state prison bureaucracy of Ed Clark, Johnson’s lawyer who had been so helpful in many other criminal activities. Johnson’s clout with even the most sensitive of government agencies was proved again when he had his hit-man Wallace, a convicted murderer, approved for employment in highly classified positions in the defense industry. This story was picked up by the *Dallas Morning News*, on May 14, 1984, in an article about Wallace’s background (coincident with the second grand jury proceedings initiated by Clint Peoples). The article noted that Peoples was “furious” that they would give Wallace clearance to work in a classified job in the defense industry and that Peoples stated that the navy intelligence officer who investigated Wallace had told him that Lyndon Johnson was behind getting him those jobs:

“I asked him [the intelligence officer] how in the world Wallace could get the security clearance and he said ‘politics,’” Peoples said. “I asked who could be so strong and powerful in politics that he could get a clearance for a man like this, and he said ‘the vice president.’”

In an interview by Gerald Saxon completed in November 1984, Clint Peoples explained how Johnson had assigned his own lawyers, John Cofer and his son Hugh, to “represent” Estes: “his lawyers, when they came up for Billie Sol Estes’s trial, you know, his lawyers didn’t even put Billie Sol on the stand or put one bit of evidence in. They just rested their case, and Billie Sol was convicted. Government conviction, and they just arrested him. No evidence, and you know why! Billie Sol told me that the reason why they didn’t want to put any evidence in was because it would open up Pandora’s box.”⁷¹

Johnson’s Behind-the-Scenes Criminal Defense Attorney: His Appointee as US Attorney (Later Federal Judge) H. Barefoot Sanders

Still another example of Johnson’s political connections throughout Texas was evident in 1962, when he managed to kill the attempt by Captain Peoples to convene the first grand jury to investigate Henry Marshall’s murder, to have it reclassified, from “suicide” to “homicide” so that Peoples could continue his investigation. Marshall’s family was convinced that he had been murdered and Clint Peoples agreed, writing a thirteen-point report categorically stating that it would have been impossible for Henry Marshall to have killed himself. Even the head of the Texas Rangers, Colonel Homer Garrison, stated that the suicide determination was false and severely criticized the sheriff’s handling of the crime scene, which had been examined after dark and after several men, including the sheriff and coroner, had driven their own vehicles through it and walked around it before testifying that they had not seen evidence of any other people at the crime scene.⁷²

Captain Peoples also explained, in his oral history interview with Gerald Saxon, that when Colonel Garrison heard that the case was being investigated by Senator McClellan’s committee (undoubtedly prodded into doing so by Bobby Kennedy), Garrison told Peoples, in early 1962, to go down to Bryan, Texas, and investigate it. Peoples stated:

I ran into a brick wall right away there. That [murder] had happened one year before, and the more I looked into it, the more it looked like something had gone awry, something misleading or something. So I couldn't get any cooperation out of the justice of the peace because the justice of the peace had called it suicide as a result of what the sheriff told him to do. So I went and sought out Judge John M. Barron, the district judge... . I prevailed upon Judge Barron to order an autopsy, I mean an exhumation of the body, and then an autopsy ... [right after the murder, one year before this], the undertaker in Bryan called attention to the justice of the peace and sheriff at Franklin and told them, "This man is not a suicide case. This man has been murdered." Told him his eye was split open, flesh was out of his arms, his hands, his leg, and different things that way. But they still maintained it was suicide. So the deeper I got into it, the more I knew it wasn't suicide ... the physical evidence on the body was that it was the use of a bolt action .22 rifle. And in order for Henry Marshall to have killed himself, he had to rebolt that gun every time... . Shot five times in an area about the size of a four inch circle ... Also had a lethal dose of carbon monoxide in his body.⁷³

According to Captain Peoples, the motive behind the murder of Henry Marshall related to the cotton allotment program, which was being used by Billie Sol Estes and Lyndon B. Johnson to defraud taxpayers of millions of dollars per year. He established that Henry Marshall was killed because he was "blowing the whistle on Billie Sol Estes" through his insistence that he follow all the rules. In doing this, Marshall was simultaneously blowing the whistle on "some big politicians," who had collaborated with Estes to set up the massive fraud against the very government whose interest they (i.e., Johnson) were supposed to protect. The fact that all of this was being widely reported in the news media of the day, and followed closely by President Kennedy and Attorney General Robert Kennedy, was what caused the Senate to create sub committees to investigate the TFX scandal and the Estes scandal.

It was the latter, focused on the financial frauds involving Billie Sol Estes and Bobby Baker, that started to unravel the sexual scandals involving President Kennedy through the Quorum Club set up by Lyndon Johnson and his pal Bobby Baker. Those committees were still conducting their investigation when Kennedy was assassinated, and they then became Johnson's immediate priority—to terminate their existence—when he became president. He had clearly become frenzied by how close they were in exposing his massive criminal ties not only with Estes but with Mafiosi throughout the country. These matters had been hinted at and reported on the front pages for far too long and his first priority was to take them off not only the front pages, but every other page as well. Captain Peoples stated that "Marshall had to have been murdered as a result of his strong opposition to Billie Sol Estes in the cotton allotment program. That was a millions and millions of dollars program, you know. So that was the thing I continuously worked on, and I knew I never could get any of the information out of Billie Sol Estes with what he knew about it... he never talked to anybody before. No. Until he talked to me [coily in 1979 and in a more brutally candid fashion in 1983–1984]."⁷⁴ Billie Sol Estes finally told Captain Peoples everything he knew about the murder of Henry Marshall, as Peoples noted in his oral history interview with

He [Estes] told me that he had a meeting with Cliff Carter, Lyndon Johnson and Mack Wallace [sic: This spelling of Wallace's name was used by Mr. Saxon]. Now this is what he told me. He said that they had that meeting together and they discussed the facts that there wasn't any way that they could hush Henry Marshall up. Henry Marshall was blowing the whistle to the degree that it was going to involve everyone of them, and they all were going to the penitentiary. That's what Estes told me... . They knew that Henry Marshall had arrangements made, and the two days before Henry Marshall was killed, I found a letter saying that he was going to Washington. He had a meeting of his people down there in Bryan or somewhere, and he was going to straighten it out the following Monday, but he never made it to Washington. He didn't make it any further than that ranch... . Estes told me that Johnson said, "Get him promoted. Give him a big job in the Agriculture Department. Get him out of there." They tried it. They wrote him letters, but he turned them down. He wouldn't accept it. It's in my files. He wouldn't accept this promotion, you see. And so then, when this meeting came about, they all decided that the "fat's in the fire." Then Estes said that Johnson ... said this, "He has got to go." And I even made a release to the press that that's the way he told me. He didn't say that Johnson said, "Kill him, assassinate him, or anything." He said, "He's got to go." He tried to transfer him. I got the evidence that they did. They tried to transfer him, but he wouldn't accept it. Offered him a big job in the Agriculture Department; he wouldn't accept it. That's physical evidence. So this concludes, pretty well, that all of this stuff is right.

The juxtaposition of those words, by Captain (later US Marshal) Clint Peoples as he described the "physical evidence," with the fact that this evidence was part of a set that implicated the vice president of the United States, Lyndon B. Johnson, in first-degree murder, is a surreal, stunning statement, but that is precisely what Clint Peoples was stating: Johnson ordered the murder (however he might have couched the words), consistent with his past and expected future behavior, as only someone accustomed to the use of highly formed secrecy protocols and such devices as code words and body language would, for the special means of communication invoked for such clandestine, murderous activity. He had practiced these skills for decades, running the "White Stars" secret fraternity from behind the scenes, then the "Little Congress" in Washington as a congressional aide and throughout his years in the House and Senate of the US Congress. He was helped along by the person who he admitted having more influence on him than any other man, Alvin Wirtz, who taught Johnson all he knew about secrecy and the nuances of how every device in his own vast repertoire worked. Alvin Wirtz will be scrutinized in considerable depth in later chapters.

It quickly became obvious that the 1962 grand jury had been "stacked" by the sheriff. The tampering of the grand jury was confirmed by the son of Henry Marshall: Donald Marshall told researcher Stephen Pegues that the sheriff, Howard Stegall, had "hand-picked the grand jury" including "three or four members" of the Stegall clan.⁷⁶ According to Billie Sol Estes, although the jury foreman was Goree Matthews, the person who took

charge of the proceedings was Sheriff Stegall's son-in-law Pryce Metcalfe.⁷⁷ Metcalfe went to considerable length to argue details with Colonel Homer Garrison Jr., head of the Texas Rangers, and Dr. Joseph Jachmczyk, the Harris County coroner, asserting in a letter such things as that the laceration and protruding left eyeball described in Col. Garrison's report might have been caused "*from falling or agitation of the body during the process of dying,*" and that "*the angle of entry of each of the shots and acts of reloading and firing are not difficult with either the left or right hand.*" The coroner responded to this by noting that the severity of the head wounds could not have occurred from a simple fall, that it could have only been a result of a severe blow to the head, "from some type of instrument other than a human hand or head."⁷⁸ The second part of Metcalfe's claim was even more ludicrous, since all five shots were fired from the same angle with a long rifle, all hitting him within a four-inch circle in his chest, at least three of which would have been immediately fatal. Despite that terminated condition, he would have had to reload and rebolt the rifle for each shot even though he had also suffered having one lame arm from a previous accident.

But Sheriff Stegall's connections didn't end with the stacked jury: He was also a personal friend of Johnson's highest political aide, Cliff Carter,⁷⁹ and two members of the Stegall clan, Glynn and his wife Mildred, worked for Johnson in his Washington offices,⁸⁰ undoubtedly helping to run the Robertson County grand jury from their desks in the back rooms of Johnson's Executive Office Building (EOB) office suite next door to the White House. The grand jury, after having had Henry's body disinterred and examined by the Harris County Coroner, Dr. Joseph A. Jacimczyk, heard him testify, "Based upon my preliminary autopsy examination, *I believe that this was not a suicide.*"⁸¹ [Emphasis added.]

The grand jury issued a subpoena to get access to the October 1961 Department of Agriculture file on Billie Sol Estes. Those files were turned over to Barefoot Sanders, who had been appointed as a federal district attorney by JFK at Johnson's recommendation—and who would later be named a federal judge—with the understanding that anything presented to the grand jury would first be cleared (censored) by Sanders. Barefoot Sanders was still beholden to Lyndon B. Johnson. In Clint Peoples's November 1984 oral history interview, he commented on that very point:⁸²

[After Marshall was murdered in June 1961] The sheriff got the undertaker and the justice of the peace and went out there ... his comment was, "If he committed suicide, he was a glutton for punishment because of all these severe wounds on him." He told the undertaker, "Load him up." *So that was the extent of the investigation he made.* Then the chief deputy went out, looked around a little bit later, and found an empty shell or two. But they stuck with the thing that it was suicide, but then after I got into it, of course, I found it definitely wasn't suicide. I ran into a lot of obstacles on it. I asked the district judge to call a grand jury. Of course, the district attorney was supposed to ask for that, but he wouldn't do it. So I called a grand jury, and submitted a tremendous amount of evidence to this grand jury. They had some relatives on the grand jury of the sheriff, and so they never could reach an agreement on account of

this grand jury influence ... they brought the grand jury report down to Franklin, the Agriculture report took a good while to get there, and they played “ring around the rosie” all these years with that report. *They censored it every way in the world. They did then, and they didn’t bring the names out and so forth, and the present federal judge, Barefoot Sanders, was a United States Attorney in the northern district of Texas. I didn’t know he was down there until ... [after a] couple of days, it came out in the newspaper.* [Emphasis added.]

He went down there with an FBI agent out of Waco to find out something about it. I understand he appeared before the grand jury in Franklin; as I say, I didn’t know that until just a few months back... but I have real concern as to why he was down there, and I don’t think he [Barefoot Sanders] should have been. *He shouldn’t have been down there.* Of course, he is the United States Attorney in the northern district of Texas, and he was down there as the US Attorney in the western district of Texas. He was sent down there by Bobby Kennedy and Lyndon Johnson to look into this thing, and to try to get this thing cooled. [RFK wasn’t interested in having it “cooled” of course, he was working hard to get the fire stoked, but Sanders worked primarily for Johnson, only nominally for Bobby.] And they flat did get it cooled because the district judge down there right away after that excused the grand jury. *So you see, I had considerable problems trying to make an investigation on a murder case with opposition to it, including that little FBI agent down there trying to say it was suicide. He never even investigated a murder case in his life. And he knows it; he never investigated one. He had no jurisdiction there. That was simply my jurisdiction.* [Emphasis added.]

The fact that Peoples is telling us that an inexperienced FBI agent was down there trying to derail the investigation and obstruct the grand jury deliberations can only mean that Johnson had enlisted Hoover’s assistance in working toward that goal. We may deduce that Sheriff Stegall had been drafted into the project as well, either by his friend Cliff Carter or his cousin Glynn Stegall. That leaves Johnson’s acolyte Barefoot Sanders, who would have been enlisted by Johnson himself to take over the conduct of that grand jury. Billie Sol Estes affirmed this in his book, noted previously, with French author William Reymond, stating that Barefoot Sanders had “skillfully maneuvered” himself into the middle of the grand jury proceeding on behalf of his benefactor Lyndon Johnson, for the purpose of censoring any pages that would implicate Johnson or his aide Cliff Carter as he had been personally ordered to do by Johnson himself. Sanders’s function was to review all documents submitted to the 1962 grand jury to ensure that they saw nothing that implicated Lyndon Johnson or his aide Cliff Carter or his hit man Malcolm Wallace. It was, Estes said, “a technique that allowed him to paralyze the process of the grand jury’s deliberations.”⁸³

In their plainspoken, clear words noted previously, Billie Sol Estes and Clint Peoples were telling us that Sanders was censoring anything that might lead to a connection to Lyndon B. Johnson, and that the “little FBI agent” was also working on behalf of Johnson and Hoover, to get this case re-buried and out of the newspaper headlines. Barefoot Sanders had been instructed by Johnson and Cliff Carter, despite all the evidence of

homicide, to make sure that the “suicide” verdict stood, and it did, for twenty-two more years. It is important to understand that, though Sanders’s nominal boss was Attorney General Bobby Kennedy, he really answered to the man who had put him into his position, Lyndon Johnson. And he knew that those same hands would control his future. It is certain, given Barefoot Sanders’s long history—continuing for over three decades after Johnson’s death—of loyalty to Johnson, that his mentor had coached him well about the need to protect both of their reputations. That necessarily meant that Sanders would have to act as if he supported the Kennedys while secretly ensuring that Johnson’s interests came first. Johnson must have trained him on the finer points of duplicitousness before he agreed to submit his name as the nominee for the position of US attorney.

A flurry of stories on the grand jury hearing hit all the major newspapers, and many of the local papers throughout the country as well, during the spring and summer of 1962, some carrying the story of how President Kennedy was following these news articles. According to Billie Sol Estes, Robert Kennedy called Judge Barron every evening to get a first hand report on the day’s proceeding and that altogether, he spoke to President Kennedy once and RFK at least ten or twelve times. All during this period, the FBI had over seventy-five agents working the other Estes fraud cases in Pecos. At the same time, Judge Barron had also become squeezed between RFK and LBJ, as both of them closely monitored the proceedings that only Johnson knew were being controlled by Sanders, with the help of the “stacked” grand jury and Sheriff Stegall, all of whom were determined to keep Marshall’s death labeled a suicide, because they were all afraid to cross Lyndon Johnson. Judge Barron, caught in the middle, said both Johnson and Cliff Carter were in direct contact with him about getting the matter settled. He also said that Johnson “put on a good act.”⁸⁴

Unsurprisingly, the grand jury, with the help of a lot of people in Washington, Austin and Bryan, Texas, did not change the verdict from suicide in 1962, despite the enormous amount of evidence to support such a change. The jury, in accordance with the sheriff’s instructions to the “insiders” he had put there, and the “outsiders” actually calling the shots, decided that the “evidence is inconclusive to substantiate a definite decision at this time or to overrule any decision heretofore made.”⁸⁵ Barefoot Sanders’s purpose in exerting complete control over the 1962 Texas grand jury was not to help his nominal boss Robert Kennedy but to assist Johnson in making sure that the tainted grand jury verdict would stand, and the finding of “suicide” would not change. This was precisely what happened, and the cause of death remained classified as “suicide” for over two decades, until the 1984 grand jury finally overturned that always ridiculous verdict and declared it to be what it had always been: a “homicide.”

Meanwhile, Captain Peoples was stymied by that lie in his attempt to investigate the obvious murder of Henry Marshall until 1984, when he personally initiated a new grand jury that was not under the control of Sheriff Stegall and Barefoot Sanders. By then Sanders had been appointed by President Jimmy Carter as a federal judge in the Northern District of Texas, though he still attempted to act out his role as Johnson’s surrogate nine years after he died, to continue to undermine (now US Marshal) Peoples, as we will shortly

see.

The 1984 grand jury heard US Marshal Peoples lay out his case, which was heavily based on the testimony of Billie Sol Estes, whom Peoples had determined was a credible witness despite his previous convictions for fraud. This untainted grand jury concurred that Peoples had not only proved that the cause of death had been misstated for twenty-three years, but that Lyndon Johnson, Cliff Carter, and Mac Wallace should have been prosecuted for the crime when they were still alive; unfortunately, it was too late for that and the grand jury decided “that the parties named as participants in the offense are deceased [i.e., Johnson, Carter, and Wallace], and therefore it is not possible for the grand jury to return an indictment.”⁸⁶ We will examine this proceeding in detail within this chapter and it is the first time that any book on Lyndon Johnson has taken the time to do so.

One reason for the lack of close scrutiny of that trial is that, despite the epigraph on the first page of this chapter, where Clint Peoples said “*Before I die, there will be one of the most jarring international scandals that has ever been as a result of this investigation,*” he later decided that the continuing threats on his life, as well as his wife and daughter, were too great to allow the truth to be told until they had all passed away. This change probably saved those files from destruction, since they remained closed at the Dallas Public Library until April 2012, when his daughter died. At that point, the remaining pages of his oral history, which had been closed until then, were opened to the public. They are available now at the Dallas Public Library in the Clint Peoples collection. It should be noted here that those threats on his life were real; as it will become clear, his life was in jeopardy because of his continuing investigation of Lyndon Johnson’s crimes and in fact it eventually cost him his life. At some point, between 1984 and his death in 1992, he changed the conditions for the release of his “closed files” to include not only his own lifetime but those of his wife’s and daughter’s, and that prevented even Judge Barefoot Sanders, who died in 2007, from having access to them since Peoples’s daughter outlived Sanders by five years.

It was his testimony that finally makes this case, one that he was prepared to doggedly pursue in 1962, and—had he not been impeded time after time by Lyndon Johnson’s tentacles into practically every precinct in Texas—it is possible that Johnson would have been in prison by November 1963 and John F. Kennedy would have lived out his life to a more natural end.

At the 1984 trial, when his attorney asked, “What was the conclusion or opinion you reached [in 1962] as to Mr. Marshall’s death?” Peoples stated in plain country English under oath that, “I reached without a doubt after exhumation of the body and all the other evidence that I had, I reached without a doubt there was no way on God’s green earth that this man could have possibly committed suicide.”⁸⁷ Then he was asked if, in his opinion, the cause of death listed on Marshall’s death certificate was incorrect, and his answer was “Yes, sir, that is incorrect, very definitely so, sir... It should be listed as homicide.” Asked about what the basis of his opinion was, he stated, “I base that opinion on all of the physical evidence, the way the man was shot in the side and all of the things that happened

in and about the pickup truck, how his things were placed systematically on the front seat of the truck, the blood on the truck and the dents on the truck, and I found, by myself, and I had one Ranger with me, I found a plastic bag after Dr. Jachimczyk had said he had carbon monoxide in his body. I had to conclude by evidence where this particular instrument or instruments, whatever it may be, or materials, came from in order to establish where this carbon monoxide came from. Some hundred yards out into the bushes, so to speak, in the area out around this particular area where Mr. Marshall was left, there was a clump of trees and bushes and I found a white plastic bag stuffed under a bunch of bushes and things and it was—without a doubt had to be placed there by someone.”⁸⁸

Peoples was then asked whether the Robertson County Sheriff’s Department was incorrect in deciding that Mr. Marshall had killed himself; his answer was “Yes, sir, very definitely so. They were very definitely incorrect.” When asked how the conclusion was reached, Peoples said, “I later find out that he ... didn’t say he committed suicide. But then the conclusion was that whenever the sheriff and the undertaker and the justice of the peace put Mr. Marshall in this ambulance at the time the sheriff stated, ‘If he committed suicide he was a glutton for punishment, load him up.’”⁸⁹ And with that obtuse comment, the conclusion was formed that Henry Marshall committed suicide. It is conjecture of course, but one explanation of why that conclusion was reached so quickly, even before any real investigation had begun, was that Sheriff Stegall had already been given a “heads up” from someone in Washington that a suicide had just been, or was about to be, committed in his jurisdiction and he had best cooperate with the “higher-ups” in declaring it as such. It is conceivable that his cousin Glynn, working in Lyndon Johnson’s back offices at the EOB might have been the source for such a call but there is no proof of that. Indeed, it is just as likely that the call was made by his wife Mildred, one of Lyndon’s secretaries, or by Johnson’s close aide, Cliff Carter.

The 1984 grand jury finally and definitively changed the cause of death to homicide. To call it an “uphill fight” for Ranger Peoples to seek a criminal indictment justice for a man of Johnson’s enormous political power (both “locally” and nationally), with only a measure of success over a decade after Johnson’s death, is the epitome of “understatement.” Unfortunately, in the intervening twenty-two years, time had marched on, Johnson and his henchmen were all dead and nothing else came of the legal issues involved. The results of the grand jury proceeding were reported in the *Dallas Times Herald* (an evening newspaper) on March 23, 1984, in an article written by Charlotte Anne Lucas titled “Taking Care of Business—Lawman Solves Mystery After 23 Years of Trying” and the following day in the *New York Times*, in an article titled “Estes Links Johnson to Plot” by Wayne King. The short *Times* article referenced John Paschall, the Robertson County district attorney, who “said he had no plans to pursue the matter further: ‘Why should I spend my time and the taxpayer’s money investigating three people Billie Sol Estes has named, who are deceased.’ ... As to the allegation that Mr. Johnson participated in a murder plot, Walter Jenkins, a former aide to Mr. Johnson, said, ‘It’s just so farfetched it’s sick.’”

The matter was then filed away by this newspaper and all other organs of the mainstream media. The story was now “old news” and was put back to bed at this point, while the results of the trial were seemingly chalked up to Johnson’s eccentricities and Billie Sol’s lack of “credibility.” With that, the matter was left for the world to ponder forevermore, with the inherent assurance of a steady decline every succeeding year in the numbers of people having even a passing interest in the case. Only those people who had always suspected that Lyndon Johnson had been much more involved in Billie Sol’s frauds against the government and a series of related, unsolved cold case murders would maintain any interest in it; by 1984 even their interest had waned. It is a number that grows smaller each year as those who lived through it die off and younger people were fed a steady diet of official myth. Johnson probably anticipated this very phenomenon, knowing that it would ultimately ensure his eternal success at this particular “shell game.” He probably even knew from the start that he would have to die an early death to ensure the case would remain cold for at least a century and by then, no one would care anymore. So far, at the half-century mark, that phenomenon seems to be ahead of schedule.

This story has been so effectively ignored or completely misstated by other biographers that the name Billie Sol Estes has been almost universally excluded from even the most detailed books on Johnson’s real history; this, despite the historic fact that, for several months during the spring and summer of 1962, as noted earlier, the Estes name was practically ubiquitous in every newspaper in the country and often reported on in the evening television news broadcasts. The sole reason for this was due to his clear connections to Vice President Lyndon B. Johnson. Estes’s face graced the cover of many news magazines as well, for the same reason. Yet despite all of this, readers would never know any of it if they assumed that the “major” biographies of Lyndon Johnson have thoroughly covered all of the most egregious instances of Johnson’s documented criminal history. It suggests that the protectors of Johnson, and his “colossus secrets” have gotten the word to those biographers, either consciously or sub consciously, to stay as far away from this story as possible.

This miscarriage of justice was made possible through Johnson’s ability to control that 1962 grand jury as described previously, through Barefoot Sanders and through Johnson’s ability to plant lies to replace truths by way of his connections to newspaper reporters and key figures he knew would eventually write his earliest biographies, people like Harry Provence and Merle Miller. Had Captain Peoples been able to have the cause of death changed to “homicide” in 1962 he could have aggressively pursued his investigation of Johnson and probably brought an indictment and if that had happened, those biographies would have never been written because the name Lyndon B. Johnson would have been lost in the dustbin of history as just another dirty politician who spent his last years in the penitentiary, just as his own grandmother had predicted would occur.

Had Captain Peoples been successful in 1962, it follows that John F. Kennedy might have remained president for another five years and the 50,000-plus American men and women killed in Vietnam during the Johnson-Nixon years would have also lived on. The millions of Vietnamese and Cambodians killed during those years would also have been able to continue living their lives, for the most part, as peaceful peasants. For those killed

in the civil war, at least it would not have been by the crusading Americans, but by their own tribe, and in much smaller numbers. There would have been many other changes if Johnson's war had never occurred, so many that it is impossible now to comprehend the "what-ifs" of a culture undamaged by the Johnson presidency. One thing is clear though: The magnitude of that difference would have been "colossal" in the most literal sense.

The Clint Peoples/Barefoot Sanders Courtroom Confrontation

Consider which of these two men, Clint Peoples or Barefoot Sanders, was the more credible, honest, independent, and believable man in the following description of a clash between the two of them: Years later, after Clint Peoples's strange one-car accident, to be reviewed in depth in a subsequent chapter, his assistant, known as Georgia, told William Reymond that Clint was furious one day after meeting with Barefoot Sanders. Georgia was terrified of talking about this subject, but agreed to meet Reymond in a suburb of Fort Worth. She remembered an episode of the 1984 grand jury, when one day Barefoot Sanders personally met with her boss and she recalled his state of mind after discussing a confrontation between the two. Reymond said, "She had never seen Clint in such a state of rage. When I asked him what was happening, he barely loosened his jaws to answer: 'Sanders! He just called me a liar!'" Earlier that day, Sanders had "asked US Marshal Clint Peoples to stop accusing Johnson of crimes."⁹⁰

In his oral history interview conducted by Gerald Saxon, previously noted, Clint Peoples had a lot more to say about that incident with Barefoot Sanders. Peoples was furious over the way he had been treated by Johnson's key man in the US judiciary. Mr. Saxon asked him about the "repercussions" he had to endure as a result of his belief in the testimony of Billie Sol Estes—implicitly meaning that, as an ex-convict, his credibility would become automatically suspect, just as Johnson had ensured would be the case. Clint Peoples realized he had put his own personal credibility on the line through his support of Estes and retorted to Barefoot Sanders in what was undoubtedly one of the most enraged, brutally shouted reactions ever made to a federal judge by a US Marshal (which he had become several years earlier) that has ever occurred in a US federal courtroom. The pertinent parts of that exchange follow, however it is important to understand the stunning context of what Peoples stated regarding this part of the interview: He said, "I think this particular part of it [the oral history record] *should be closed until a later date—on the federal judges, but I do want it in the record. I want it to be right.*"⁹¹ [Emphasis added.]

PEOPLES:

They called me down to the office of Judge Robert Hill, who is now on the Fifth Circuit, and started criticizing me for the fact that I was working on this case, which I was working on the murder case, nothing else. I was working on it as a result of the instruction of the US Attorney, who is my attorney, and also the fact that it was a murder case, and I was the only one who had any involvement in it. I was duty bound. And so the chief judge made a statement to the effect that he didn't want me to embarrass his judiciary, and also the fact that I was getting a lot of publicity. Also

he wondered if I wasn't trying to sell books. I let him go ahead and talk

SAXON:

That was ...

PEOPLES:

Judge Hal Woodward, the chief judge, federal judge, which was way beyond the call of duty. Judge Hill did not open his mouth. Judge Hill sat behind his desk when they asked me these questions and shook his head. Judge Hill knew they weren't right. But, anyway, when I got through I answered all of his questions very pointedly. Oh yeah, he asked me, he said, "If the newspapers are bringing out stuff that somebody leaked something to the grand jury, I just wondered if it was you?" Of course, that made me pretty furious. And I answered his questions in a very firm manner. I told him, first of all, I didn't appreciate the questions he asked me. They were beyond the call of duty. And also he asked me, "When I got here, and I found out everybody here knew I was coming. Did you tell them?"

[Peoples, responding to that question, continues] "In the first place, I didn't know if you were coming or not, and didn't care if you were coming or not. It had nothing to do with that." I talked right back to him about it because I don't owe him anything. I was going to investigate a murder case, and they're involving themselves in something here that's more or less obstruction of justice. They're the ones that should be taken to task for it. But I haven't said anything to the press or anybody else, on account that I work here, and I want to make the rest of my time here if I can. But every dog will eventually have a chance to wag his tail. On this one, I'm going to wag my tail because this wasn't right. But again, I do want this portion of it closed until after my tenure here.

And so it came to this fellow, Judge Barefoot Sanders, and he came out with some very pointed things. He says to me, he says, "Running around with ol' Billie Sol Estes, you opened this whole case up. You opened this murder case up. You are believing what he said. You did this and you did that." And he says, "I'm ashamed of you." And he said, "You're not fit to be United States Marshal of the Northern District of Texas. I think you ought to resign." When he got through I said, "Are you through?" He said, "Yes."

I pointed my finger in his face and pointed over to Judge Woodward too, and I said, "I want to tell both of you something, if you weren't hiding behind these black robes you got, I'm seventy-three years of age, and I've never been talked to this way in my life. If you weren't hiding behind these black robes, you wouldn't get by with it. And I'm not too sure you're going to get by with it anyway."

And I turned to Sanders and I said, "Let me tell you something. I'll put my credibility up against yours any day in the week." And I said, "Another thing, don't you ever again call me in like this and start reprimanding me over something because you all are wrong as you can be about this and you know it. And don't you ever do this again. Now you're a federal judge and all this, but you went beyond the call of

duty here.” And they wouldn’t even let me... . I had my attaché case with a Billie Sol Estes tape in it, and I had the records, and I was going to show them why I was working on this case. They wouldn’t even let me take my attaché case inside the judge’s chambers because they thought that maybe I’d be recording what we were saying. And I guess one of the biggest blunders I ever did was not putting a body microphone on when I went in there and talked to them. I wish and pray to God now I had.

But, anyway, I caught a lot of heat. Then the press comes out and says that three judges chastised me. Well that’s a reflection upon my integrity right then and there, and I thought I suffered mental anguish over that thing. I really had anguish over that thing because I’d never been criticized publicly or criticized other than what I was doing was right. And I told him, “The next time that you ever want to talk to me about anything like this, you go and open your courtroom up there, and let’s call them all in so everybody could hear what I’ve got to say to you.” And so it got hot, and he didn’t open his mouth after that. And like I told him, I said, “I’m not too sure you are going to get by with it. You are mistreating me for no reason on Earth [sic]. I was investigating a murder case, and you haven’t done right a bit about it [sic]. And someday my time will come.”

And so Judge Woodward, all of a sudden, starts smiling and says, “I’ve got to go. I’ve got to catch an airplane, gentlemen. I’ve got to catch an airplane. I got to get out of here, I’ve got to get an airplane.” And he jumped up from there and shook hands with me and said, smiled to me and said, “Marshal, thank you for coming. I appreciate very much your frankness in this.” Judge Hill got up, bless his heart, came around the desk, put his arm around me and thanked me, and he told me, “I appreciate you Marshal.” I told [Barefoot Sanders] too, I said, “I’ll tell you one thing. I’ll never resign. I’ll tell you that! And I’ll tell you something else. I told you I’d put my credibility up against yours any day in the week, and I’m going to tell you something else, there’s a lot of people in this building who don’t like a bone in your body. That’s the very words I said to him. It’s pretty pointed to a federal judge.

Saxon then asked Peoples about how the story of this meeting was leaked to the press, and Peoples stated that it was Sanders’s staff: ⁹²

[H]is people leaked it to the press that they had me down there. They did it purposely. I’ve never said anything. I’m going to get a chance to say something some of these days. But I never said anything about it, but the next morning I went down to see Judge Hill... . I went down to see Judge Hill because I knew he didn’t particularly like this situation. They could see him shaking his head just like “what in the world are you all doing this to this person for? Why are you doing it?” ... He said, “Marshal, I’m really sorry about this. You’ve done a good job as Marshal here. And I’m really sorry about this.” And here are the words that he used, he said, “Hal and Barefoot both are wrong.” Judge Woodward, I think, was brought into this situation because of the influence Sanders has over him. He was brought into it. Judge Woodward, I give him the benefit of the doubt. I didn’t like what he did, I don’t like it now. *Sanders was the*

one that caused him to get into it, and I didn't figure out at the time why he was ... except for the fact that I knew he and Lyndon Johnson were real close. Lyndon helped him on every turn he made. [Emphasis added.] But, anyway, I couldn't figure out why he'd been so damn interested in this thing. Two days later, the press comes out and says that he went before that grand jury, and then this brought it to my mind.

The leak to the newspaper reporters that he referenced above resulted in a newspaper article titled "Judges Reported Upset about Estes Comments" and was circulated in late March 1984 to newspapers around the country by the Associated Press (AP). The opening sentences said,

Three federal judges have chided US Marshal Clint Peoples for his handling of swindler Billie Sol Estes's claims that Lyndon B. Johnson ordered a murder in 1961, the *Dallas Times Herald* reported Thursday. The newspaper reported that Peoples was summoned behind closed doors this week for a meeting, during which *the judges expressed concern that Peoples's involvement in the case could lend credibility to an otherwise unsubstantiated story.* [Emphasis added.]

That part of the story was certainly true, not only then but now. But the fact that the story was written with a bias toward the judges, not Peoples, says all that needs to be said about who might have leaked that information to the reporters. The 1984 article went on to state:

The judges—Barefoot Sanders and Robert Hill of Dallas and Halbert Woodward of Lubbock—refused to comment on the meeting or confirm that it took place, the newspaper said.

Sanders, who was Johnson's legislative counsel from 1967 to 1969, was reportedly more upset about the situation than the other two judges. *In 1962, when he was the US attorney for North Texas, Sanders balked at giving a Robertson County grand jury documents relating to the case, the newspaper reported.* [Emphasis added.]

The article continued on, stating that Estes had asserted that Johnson had directly ordered the killing of Henry Marshall, because of his fear that Marshall would reveal details about Estes's connection with himself, which would inevitably end his political career and lead to a prison sentence. About two weeks later, Captain Peoples rebuked that statement, as reported on April 11, 1984, in the *Waco Tribune-Herald*, in an article titled "Peoples Says Estes's Words Misconstrued," by reporter Mary Ann Kreps. Peoples insisted that Estes never stated that Johnson had ever used such direct and explicit orders to kill Marshall or anyone else; they were always shrouded in code words, or often simply body language. These highly secretive communications were always made through his aide Cliff Carter, and passed on down to the hit man, Mac Wallace. Clint Peoples stated that Estes did not say that Johnson used words like "Kill him." He did say that "they discussed the facts that there wasn't any way that they could hush Henry Marshall up. Henry Marshall was blowing the whistle to the degree that it was going to involve every one of them, and they all were going to the penitentiary." After trying to give him a promotion to Washington, but failing because Marshall would not compromise his integrity, Johnson simply said, "He's got to go."⁹³ The fact that Clint Peoples was very concerned with the precision of

those words, and had the newspaper correct the earlier article, speaks volumes about his strength of character, his integrity as a law enforcement officer, and his credibility as a man: Essentially the opposite of that criminal-coward he had devoted a good part of his life to expose.

Regardless of the subtle words, the message was the same, and Mac Wallace, a fellow sociopath who spoke the same language, carried out Lyndon Johnson's order. But the man in the middle, Cliff Carter, was not a born sociopath, he had to train himself to ignore his own conscience as he tried his best to please Johnson; that would come back to haunt him in later years, and by 1971 send him to an early grave at the age of fifty-eight.

The reference in the previous article to how federal judge Barefoot Sanders had "balked" at giving the 1962 grand jury access to all the documents related to the case, one that it was charged with resolving, which was a clear tie to his unstated mission in that trial: To censor any information that might legally link the name of his mentor, Lyndon B. Johnson, to Billie Sol Estes. The fact that Sanders, as a US attorney in the North Texas jurisdiction, somehow showed up in the Western Texas district to control that jury, is itself an anomaly that befuddled Captain Peoples. That was a highly unusual practice and suggests that it was an assignment from Johnson himself, knowing that it would enable future historians to find it easier to avoid the Estes/Johnson connection (despite all of those "mean" newspaper and magazine articles noting the linkage) if his relationship to Estes was not documented in writing in this or any other legal proceeding.

This assertion was validated contemporaneously, in a May 30, 1962, news article written by Thomas Turner in the *Dallas Morning News*, titled "US Yields to State on Estes File Fuss." In that article, it was reported that the US Department of Agriculture maneuvered to avoid a confrontation between itself, a federal agency, and a Texas state judge on an "executive privilege" debate, conceding to allow the Robertson County judge access to its complete file on Billie Sol Estes's cotton acreage manipulations:

Federal Dist. Atty. Barefoot Sanders of Dallas, representing the USDA, Monday had given the jury investigating the strange death of USDA official Henry Marshall a 22-page "excerpt" of the Estes file. Sanders said the remainder of the 175-page report had nothing to do with Marshall's death and would not be disclosed to the grand jury.

Despite the fact that the grand jury wanted to see the *entire file*, Sanders refused to allow that, knowing that it would reveal the Estes-Johnson connection. That is why he finally agreed to let only the judge have access to it, while he undoubtedly coached, or otherwise persuaded him not to let anything in those other 153 pages be revealed lest the "innocent" LBJ be injured because of his association with Estes, even though the grand jury was sworn to maintain secrecy regarding that evidence. But even before he finally allowed the judge (but not the jury) to see the remaining 87 percent of the file, he had another lawyer, Robert J. Rosthal, who had accompanied Sanders to assist him with the deception, issue a verbal assault on Texas Attorney General Will Wilson in an obvious attempt to intimidate him and force him to back down. According to this newspaper article, Rosthal's words were: "I wouldn't want to characterize my opinion of your attorney general right now. I don't believe any grand jury ever got anywhere trying cases in the headlines. Some officials here

don't believe in the secrecy of a grand jury, something I've been brought up to believe.”⁹⁴

Clearly, Mr. Rosthal was merely parroting the taunts and hyperbole of Mr. Sanders, who was himself following the marching orders issued to him by his mentor Lyndon Johnson, then the vice president of the United States. To publicly accuse the attorney general of Texas of advocating or condoning such a brazenly illegal practice in advance of his even having had a chance to do so, says more about the bullying tactics of the Johnson/Sanders/Rosthal juggernaut than it does about the head of the Texas judicial system's aptitudes (who was obviously not a man Johnson viewed as being in his camp).

For readers who like to look at things mathematically, it might be of particular interest to ponder the question of the odds of having a file of 175 pages from the USDA's investigation of the Henry Marshall murder, which was obviously focused on his own investigation of Billie Sol Estes, though only 13 percent of the file supposedly related exclusively to this subject and none to any other party. The remainder, therefore, obviously focuses on others—meaning by definition, his cohorts—the ones who, also by definition, had been declared out-of-bounds by Johnson's acolyte Barefoot Sanders. Using basic deductive reasoning processes, one can reasonably conclude that the vast majority of this file (the remaining 87 percent) went beyond that narrow subject and therefore included the name of Lyndon B. Johnson and/or his chief criminal activities facilitator, Cliff Carter, or his personal hit man, Malcolm “Mac” Wallace, or “all of the above.” By similar processes, it can safely be concluded that any pages that made no mention of any of these men—or others who could be connected to them, yet include individuals whose names would not compromise the duty to protect his master—would have been included in with the rest of the files, which were turned over to the jury. Therefore, it can be reasonably deduced that only 13 percent of the file—the twenty-two pages handed over to the jurors—did not contain references to Lyndon Johnson or his cohorts. It follows, axiomatically, that the bulk of the USDA's file, which had been excised from the package sent to the jury centered on details pertaining to the frauds perpetrated by Billie Sol Estes, including his ties to others, such as Lyndon Johnson and/or his henchmen. As the maxim “Where there's smoke there's fire” states so plainly, it can likewise be deduced that “Where there are missing files after being handled by a ‘Johnson man,’ it is most likely because they were cleaned by that same man.” And that they are missing because they are incriminating to Lyndon B. Johnson.

About the credibility of Billie Sol Estes, Marshal Clint Peoples stated:

It all fits together. You see, the Mack Wallace involvement in Austin [his conviction of Doug Kinser's murder], the Mack Wallace composite down here [the sketch of the suspect in Henry Marshall's murder, which was unmistakably Wallace] and the justification for the murder and the extreme suspicious circumstances, and then the people that were trying their best to cover the situation up. It all points up to what he said was right. I mean all the evidence points that way... . It's absolutely logical that Estes could never have gotten all of the money out of the federal government that he got out of there without having help. It had to be big help... . I believe lots of the things he says... . The reason I believe a lot of the things is because the evidence will

point in that direction... . I've never done anything for him in my life, except treat him nice. And convicts like honest officers, they like people with integrity. I would never double-cross Billie Sol Estes, no more than I would ever double-cross anybody else. I hate a cheap double-crossing officer. I don't do that. I've got many death penalty statements from people who got the death penalty. But I never double-crossed them. I've got people I sent to the penitentiary for years, and hell, I don't pay attention to whether or not they are going to shoot me in the back. I don't do it. I handle my business on a high plane—my investigation on a high plane. I handle them by being truthful... . I like to be professional, but if I get out of here and lead somebody into a situation that double-crosses them, I'm a bigger, low-life crook than he is himself... . I started out in this business fifty-four years ago as being fair, and I never did like to put my work into personal things. I want it in an official capacity. I want it to be where I can live with it. I want it to be where I don't have to look back, or I don't have to apologize to somebody for my official actions. And that's my life, that's my life. And when I leave this earth, the people are going to be able to say that because they have never caught me double-crossing anybody.⁹⁵

With those obviously sincere, deeply held sentiments, spoken in the autumn of 1984—but withheld from the public until he and his family had passed, out of fear for his and their lives, knowing the potential repercussions to him and his family—US Marshall Clint Peoples proved his own integrity. And with the following words, he demolished the credibility of Lyndon Johnson and Barefoot Sanders:

My situation is—I don't care who they are, a federal judge or anybody else—anybody that comes in here and tries to impede a murder investigation is wrong. Mrs. Marshall and her little eleven year old boy that had to live under a situation where his father was accused of committing suicide, which actually wasn't true, and the cheap politicians and these cheap people that will get in and try to cover it up in order to protect a low-life politician, I don't like it. I don't like it now. This is not protecting society ... [He told Billie Sol], "you couldn't have done what you did as far as getting all this money out of the federal government unless you had help in the high ups... . As [a] result of it, you're getting it and you know it," and he said, "That's right. [Peoples responded] And as a result of you getting it, you wouldn't have been in trouble if those politicians had been honest rather than a bunch of thieves."⁹⁶

Without question, the only honest and honorable man in the above narrative is clearly Clint Peoples, literally the "Lone Ranger" in this sorry story. His words to those three federal judges caused one to excuse himself, leaving the room as soon as he could do so, another to apologize to him, and the third to "shut his mouth" as directed and back off from his scurrilous attack on US Marshal Peoples, whose personal credibility and integrity is reflected in his own words. The contrast in the individual character traits of the three judges is stunning, as shown by their different reactions described above, just as it is transparently clear that Barefoot Sanders's actions were a direct reflection of the fact that he was being guided by orders from Lyndon Johnson, the "cheap politician" referred to by Clint Peoples.

It was Clint Peoples who pursued this case courageously and vigorously, but frustratingly and unsuccessfully, in 1962, when the guilty men were still alive. Barefoot Sanders repeatedly stood in his way, protecting Lyndon Johnson from his long history of criminal activity. We see again and again that Lyndon Johnson used the same tools of absolute secrecy, as he worked from the shadows and manipulated very high-level people into helping him achieve his criminal agenda, undoubtedly using every tool he had available to coerce, bribe, blackmail, or physically threaten people to obey his commands. Those who didn't wound up like Henry Marshall and all the others who turned up dead, generally in homicides made to look like suicides, or untimely "accidents."

Did Captain Peoples Predict THIS BOOK? "One Day the Truth Would Come Out"

Toward the end of his oral history interview with Gerald Saxon, Clint Peoples made the following statement: *"And whenever I leave here, you all can use this any way you want to because this is the true facts in there."*⁹⁷ [Emphasis added.] He also said that he wanted to see "this whole thing unravel" someday and that the people who don't want it unraveled are "missing the boat." Moreover, he stated, "A lot of people take the position, oh well, he's already dead, or well they are already out of the office. *The hell with that. Those people that got by with that need to be ... if they're dead now, they still need to be exposed as a deterrent against future things like this.*"^{98*****}

The plainspoken Captain/US Marshal Clint Peoples was also a patient and stoic, albeit irrepressible, lawman of the "old school." He left that courtroom with complete satisfaction with the results, even though his "win" was merely correcting the twenty-three-year-old record of how Henry Marshall had died. An article by Scott K. Parks, in the *Dallas News* dated November 28, 2012, regarding the auction of much of his memorabilia twenty years after his 1992 death, stated the reasons for his satisfaction:⁹⁹

After the hearing, Peoples said he was satisfied with the ruling—even though no one was ever charged with the murder. *One day, the Ranger added, the truth would come out. "It's going to have to be some changing of the guard in some places," he said cryptically. "You have to read between the lines."* [Emphasis added; this statement explains why this book is dedicated to his memory.]

At the conclusion of the 1984 grand jury trial, the *Dallas Times-Herald*, on March 23, 1984, had printed an article by reporter Charlotte Anne Lucas, titled "Taking Care of Business," which further described his happiness with the results of that trial—that a twenty-three-year-old death certificate would be reissued and corrected, to state that the cause of death of Henry Marshall was not suicide, but "homicide." For this, US Marshal Peoples stated, *"I feel more relieved now than I've ever felt in my life."* [Emphasis added.] The article went on to say that, "For 23 years solving the murder of Henry Marshall was lawman Clint Peoples's No. 1 piece of unfinished business." The reason for his relief was that he knew then that this story would not go away forever—as would otherwise undoubtedly happen—no matter how hard the "protectors" of Lyndon Johnson tried. That Clint Peoples felt the greatest sense of accomplishment of his career with the final closure

of this case could only have been due to the fact that this change in the cause of death would open the way for the case to (using his word) eventually “unravel.”

There is considerable irony in a statement within the article attributed to “Former aides to LBJ” who said that they “denounced Estes as a pathological liar and unrepentant schemer.” Those aides would have undoubtedly been led by Jack Valenti, Barefoot Sanders, and Walter Jenkins, probably together with all the other most dedicated sycophants still alive in 1984, and this would not be the last time they came out of the woodwork to keep the lid on Johnson’s secrets. They certainly knew that precisely those very attributes that they ascribed to Estes (*pathological liar and unrepentant schemer*) applied a million times over to their former “chief.” But they apparently realized, in their pitiful attempts to continue their Johnson sycophancy for the rest of their lives, that they had to apply their boss’s traits to the man who had finally, and courageously, come forth, under the prodding of Captain Peoples, to tell the real story. It was just as Johnson had trained them to do decades before: Replace truth with lies and repeat the lies often, using blue smoke and mirrors if necessary, to obfuscate the truth.

Clint Peoples, in the oral history interview previously referenced, discussed the anomaly of Mac Wallace, whose criminal record—despite having a history of being a convicted murderer, and of having been arrested for public drunkenness and being accused of incest with his daughter—did not impede his ability to find work in highly classified positions within the aerospace industry working for Defense Department contractors through his security clearance. When asked how he could have obtained such clearance, Peoples answered: “Politics!” And when asked who could have been so politically powerful to get that done, he said, “The vice president.”¹⁰⁰

The last interview of the series conducted by Gerald Saxon was conducted on August 15, 1989. In it, Peoples elaborated on his long fight to right the wrong that had been done by the 1962 grand jury, in not changing the “suicide” finding for Henry Marshall to “homicide,” which would have enabled him to pursue it while the murderers were still alive:¹⁰¹

[The Marshall investigation was] so deeply involved in the cotton allotment, and of Billy [sic: This spelling of his name was used by Mr. Saxon] Sol Estes thing, and all the big politicians allegedly getting all the money and all of this that I knew that this man had to be assassinated for the fact that he was involving himself in this case... . I knew in my own mind that the key to the situation was with Billy Sol Estes. I didn’t know how I was going to get to him because we had him before the Grand Jury down there twice and he took the Fifth Amendment right away. I figured that my time would eventually come and I watched for it. Every move I ever made I watched for it. All the time I was marshal, I was trying to figure out how I could get further on clearing this case because it was deeply infested with politics all on the national level... . One day, they revoked Billy Sol Estes’s parole in there in the federal courthouse there in Judge Hill’s court... . I arrested him right there in the federal courthouse. Put the handcuffs on him. So, it was time to move him to El Paso. That was my time and I was talking to Billy Sol on the plane. Billy Sol was upset because he figured a lot of these big

politicians didn't come to his rescue like they should [after having made empty promises to him to protect him.]. And so on the way to El Paso to Latuna penitentiary up there I said, "Billy Sol, I've been looking at you a long time on that Henry Marshall murder case." And he said, "Well, I figured you'd already come and got me before now... .When I get out of the penitentiary, I will tell you what I know about it." Well, I went on and when Billy Sol got out of the penitentiary, he called me and you all have got a tape recording of it, he called me and told me that he was ready to talk to me. I went up there and talked to him about this thing. But he told me on the plane going out there, he said, "I can tell you for sure it wasn't suicide. You may put that down in your Bible. It wasn't suicide." He said, "You're looking in the wrong direction." I said, "Where?" He said, "You need to be looking in the direction that they have the most to lose." That's his words. I said, "Washington, I waited till he got it ... he got it." He said, "I can't tell you about it now; I can't tell you while I'm in the penitentiary. But when I get out, I will tell you." And when he got out, he did tell me. He gave me information enough that we went down before that grand jury in Franklin and got the verdict changed to homicide, which it should have been at the beginning and then he was out on parole. Well, then was when the heat started coming down on me. That's when the big heat started coming down on me. But then I didn't quit. I didn't quit. I went to Austin... . I called this Mrs. Marshall and told them and they had an attorney and he wanted to know how they could get the verdict changed and I said, "You'll never get that verdict changed down there in that county." I said, "File a civil suit against the State of Texas and the Bureau of Vital Statistics. That is the way to do it. And I'll come to Austin and testify in the case." Okay. I went to Austin and I took my evidence to Austin ... well, first of all, they had the case set up before Judge Coker [sic—"Cofer"], which was a district judge who was a close friend of Lyndon Johnson... . His daddy is the one ... that represented Billy Sol Estes and also Lyndon Johnson in Box 13 down there in Duvall County where it was a landslide victory ... you know, 87 votes. And so I just kept on like that... . [apparently, hearing this news, Marshal Peoples arranged to have the court venue changed from Judge Cofer to another courtroom, that of a district judge named Peter Lowry, but this part of the interview is unclear] We got that verdict changed. Judge Lowry ... it didn't take him any time to change that verdict and told the state of Texas to issue a verdict of homicide. That's exactly how it was changed.

[Saxon then quoted a comment that Peoples had made in 1984]: "Before I die, there will be one of the most jarring international scandals that has ever been as a result of this investigation." Do you want to elaborate?

[Peoples]: That is exactly the quote I made ... that's exactly the quote I made and the evidence and information ... the information to get the evidence will be available.

[Saxon]: But you're not going to elaborate on it today?

[Peoples]: I don't think I want to elaborate on it today, because this other oral interview that I did with you, Jerry, that we have not released. That we will release later. It takes in part of this. And I don't want to. This can be partially tied to it here in

this one. But you know the whole thing in the nutshell is that the day that I got the verdict changed in Austin; Judge Lowry changed... . That day they arrested Billy Sol Estes in Abilene for rape. It was just a coincidence, but it's an ironic coincidence, isn't it? And so any rate, there were a lot of things that went on about that didn't meet the eye. But any rate, you know they dismissed the case against Billy Sol Estes and you know what he had done to himself down there. You know.

[Saxon]: No.

[Peoples]: They took this Mexican girl right on down and she said that he'd raped her, his housekeeper. And she was the woman that they found out later had pulled three or four more things like that on others at other times and had three or four kids and they took her down there and made an examination and they found that she had been involved sexually, but it couldn't have been him. See the point?

[Saxon]: Yes.

[Peoples]: But he was smart enough not to even say a thing in the world about his operation. He knew it couldn't have been him; he knew it wasn't him. Soon after she was supposedly raped by him. Well, now he let it ride because he knew that somebody was trying to do something to him. He knew this wasn't going to stand up. That somebody leaked something to somebody out there and they just dismissed the case right away now.

The allegation of rape that had been made was proved baseless since the alleged "evidence" against him was a semen sample collected from the "victim." The woman who made these assertions was procured by a man who Billie had considered a friend, Steve Eleftheriades, to work for him as a maid. After the charges were made, his "friend" Steve disappeared and it appeared that the charges would be dropped, but they were not. Billie simply produced proof of his having had a vasectomy (unbeknownst to anyone else other than his wife and the doctor who performed it), which suggested that someone went to a lot of trouble to set him up for still another prison term, to further discredit him in the future.¹⁰² After the charges were dropped, Billie Sol stated, "the lady and Steve were never located after that. There were rumors of them being murdered in Mexico."¹⁰³

In his final interview, August 15, 1989, Peoples told Mr. Saxon that "There are other cases that he was going to help me clear up. Murder cases ... besides the Henry Marshall murder case. There are other ... other cases ... other things that he was going to try to lend a helping hand on (now I'll put this on here. This is going to jar you). *There were other cases that he would have been in a position to help on—the Kennedy assassination. Does that shake you?*" [Parentheses in original document; emphasis added.]

Saxon then asked, "You are implying there was some connection between Estes knowing about the JFK assassination?"

Peoples responded "I think he knows a lot about it."

Saxon: "Does it lead in the same direction as the Henry Marshall case?"

Peoples: "No question about it. Yeah."

Saxon: "And that would be Washington?"

Peoples: "Sure. Sure. No question about it. Yeah."

Saxon: "Do you think Billie Sol Estes will be a credible witness?"

Peoples: "Like I said, he has to establish his own credibility. I have got mine established. But everything he's ever told me has been right about this thing... . He's told me things that if they hadn't happened that way, I had the records on it, I had all the information ... if it hadn't been what he told me, it wouldn't have been right, I'd have said, 'Billie Sol, you're lying to me.' He never lied to me about anything."

Peoples then discussed how he needed to tie up "some loose ends," then proceeded to state that one of them was "the background investigation that Naval Intelligence and the FBI did on Mac Wallace, they did it, they did the background on Mac Wallace because, see, Lyndon appointed him to the Agriculture Department out there and Lyndon and Mac Wallace knew each other... . *I don't care what anyone says ... they knew each other and knew each other well.* He knew him when he was in the University of Texas. Mac Wallace was going with Josephine [sic: Josefa] and you know what the story was with all of that... . That's why Doug Kinser was killed in Austin... . He was going with Josephine [sic] too ... and Mac Wallace didn't like that ... Mac Wallace's own wife, Andrea, told me 'Mac Wallace didn't kill Doug Kinser over me,' she said 'I was going with Doug Kinser, too, [he] didn't kill him over me ... *[he] killed him over her* [Josefa, Lyndon's sister. Emphasis added.] ... because of the fact that she was with him... .' You go back and see the investigations, it's a matter of record ... Polk Shelton and Hume Coffey [sic: Hugh Cofer] represented Lyndon Johnson in the Box 13 case. They represented Billy [sic] Sol Estes ... they represented Mac Wallace when I had him there in Austin over Doug Kinser. They represented him. Billy Sol Estes told me exactly how much that that bunch paid them to represent him [Wallace] in cash money ... told me exactly how much ... \$50,000."

The fact that Johnson hired his own legal team to represent Mac Wallace in the 1951 murder trial was actually for the primary purpose of keeping Johnson's sister's name (and therefore his own) out of the legal record cannot be overemphasized. That fact has never previously surfaced and it proves that the murder was done on his behalf, for his own purposes, and not for Wallace's as the supposedly distraught husband of an unfaithful wife. This is a stunning fact, unequivocally stated by Marshal Peoples in his 1989 oral history interview, and it removes any doubt as to what Doug Kinser's murder was about: to protect Lyndon Johnson from embarrassment caused by his promiscuous sister and the fact that he had commissioned it vicariously, through his lawyer Ed Clark using Mac Wallace as his personal hit man.

Peoples then spoke of Walter Jenkins, Johnson's highest-level aide for decades, including the entirety of his vice presidential years, at the very time when Johnson has been accused of having ordered at least eight murders (Henry Marshall, Josefa Johnson, George Krutilek, Ike Rogers and his secretary, Harold Orr, Howard Pratt, Coleman Wade). Clint Peoples, not unlike most people of that time and age and region, was not fond of

homosexuals and stated that Jenkins “was nothing but a queer” who died of AIDS. He also said that Jenkins had made most of the statements calling Billy Sol a liar. But then, when “things began to come down pretty hard, well, then he backs off ... he backs off ... the press asks me about it ... and I say ‘Listen, I can’t vouch for Billy Sol’s credibility, but I can vouch for mine, and I can tell you one thing. I’m not taking up for him ... I’m just saying the facts ...’”

Mr. Saxon then asked Peoples, “Well, now that you are out of law enforcement, can you still pursue it?” Peoples said, “I sure could. I sure could. I can pursue it better now. I am not tied to anything. That’s the reason that as long as I worked for the federal government, I was not going to talk too much about it. Not that I was afraid to. But it was just a case, well number one *they would do anything in the world they could have to hurt me. I won’t call any names ... some people would have done anything in the world they could have to have gotten Billy Sol back in the penitentiary on revocation of his parole.*” [Emphasis added.] While he didn’t want to name names in 1989, three years before his death, based on everything we know now, it can be presumed that the “some people” who Marshal Peoples referred to as wishing him the worst might include his long-time nemesis noted earlier, federal judge Barefoot Sanders. Clint Peoples had managed to avoid harm to himself or his family until then, but his dogged pursuit of the crimes committed by or on behalf of Lyndon Johnson was not over. Three years after this interview, his car was run off the road and into a culvert and a pole, killing him instantly; this incident will be examined more closely in a later chapter.

Clint Peoples’s testimony vindicates the credibility of Billie Sol Estes just as it casts grave suspicion on Federal Judge Barefoot Sanders, formerly one of Lyndon Johnson’s most loyal and devoted sycophants. Sanders was merely one of many known for their willingness to subvert justice and conduct the most illegal, unethical, and immoral acts, all for the purpose of propping up the faux legend of the man who had given them their high-level positions within the federal government.

Billie Sol Estes died in his sleep at the age of eighty-eight at his home in Granby, Texas, on May 14, 2013. An AP article published about him on the *Houston Chronicle*’s Internet site stated:¹⁰⁴ “Estes’s name was often linked with that of fellow Texan Lyndon Johnson, *whose associates said their relationship was never as close or as sinister as the wheeler-dealer implied.*”

The familiar declaration of his former aides that “their relationship was never as close or as sinister as the wheeler-dealer implied” stands in stark relief to everything that we now know about how long and deep, sinister and sordid that relationship was. And it is not merely speculation: It is proven by what the lone investigator of this despicable affair had claimed, as summarized previously. The credibility of Clint Peoples has been proved beyond a shadow of a doubt, and it is the same standard that has been used to prove Lyndon Johnson’s intrinsic dishonesty, his cunning guile, his manic ambition to become president at all costs, the repeated criminal activities that defined his life, and, above all, his being the ultimate “*pathological liar and unrepentant schemer.*” For his defenders to continue the pretense of his “greatness”—after one of the most honored lawmen in Texas

finally succeeded in proving his guilt to the 1984 grand jury—either means they are extremely credulous or that they are merely pursuing an old assignment: to keep his secrets hidden, for fear of what the truth might bring.

A Review of Barefoot Sanders's Obfuscation Efforts: Teaming Up with Ramsey Clark in 1967 to Alter Evidence of Treason?

The previous narrative details how two grand juries were called to study the evidence of Henry Marshall's murder: How the first one, in 1962, was a successful attempt by Lyndon Johnson and Barefoot Sanders to control a grand jury in Franklin, Texas, to ensure that it did not change Marshall's official cause of death from suicide to homicide, and how that result impeded Captain Peoples's investigation of the murder. It remained unchanged until a new, untainted, grand jury did make the change in 1984, too late to prosecute anyone. But, in the meantime, in 1967, Barefoot Sanders would make another appearance in support of Johnson's continuing cover-up activity, in this case, the medical evidence related to John F. Kennedy's autopsy.

The effort to finish what had already begun—the switching of autopsy evidence that began immediately after the assassination with the confiscated films and photographs, including the Zapruder film and the Nix film, which was also doctored according to Orville Nix who stated that it had included much more footage than that which was finally returned to him after having been confiscated by the FBI—was prompted by the transfer of materials from the Kennedy family's control to the National Archives on October 28, 1966. Just as this transfer was being completed, on October 29, 1966, a further complication in the normal "chain of custody" processes and protocol occurred, when a man who also possessed autopsy-related film and photographs, Lt. Cmdr. William Bruce Pitzer, was found dead by a single shot to his head in his office at the National Naval Medical Center in Bethesda, Maryland.

The photographic evidence he had, according to his friend Dennis David, who saw it, showed Kennedy's head wound before the final modifications had been done to make it look as if the wounds were from shots from the rear, and was therefore inconsistent with the photographs taken later, which were to become the "official" evidence. Pitzer's death, officially ruled a "suicide," was highly suspicious because everyone close to him, including his family and his friend Dennis David, as he recently personally verified to me, considered that highly improbable. I have found Dennis David to be an honorable man of great integrity who measures his words carefully. The only point of confusion in his testimony was related to his inference that Pitzer was left-handed because he had seen him deal bridge hands with his left hand, something not unusual in my opinion, as that is exactly how I deal cards even though I am right-handed for everything else. Pitzer's family confirmed that he was right-handed, yet somehow his left hand was damaged so severely in the process of his "suicide" from a shot to the right side of his head, that his wedding ring could not be removed. It is reasonable to conclude that this injury was caused from his having tried to defend himself, or shield himself from a gunshot fired by someone else. This was always a relatively small point but some people have used it to obfuscate the matter, just as they did with the side-show related to whether or not a Special Forces

officer named Dan Marvin was being completely truthful, or not, in claiming that he had turned down a CIA request for him to assassinate Pitzer months before he was shot (which was one of the subjects of Episode 7, “The Smoking Guns” segment of the video *The Men Who Killed Kennedy*, which can be found on the Internet). There is considerable evidence that indeed Pitzer was murdered, not the least of which was a complete absence of gun shot residue on his body, which would have been there if he had shot himself.

A few days before the Kennedy family’s transfer of autopsy records, including supposedly JFK’s brain, back to the Archives as noted previously, on Monday, October 24, 1966, David Lifton—a researcher who would write *Best Evidence* in 1981, generally recognized as one of the most important books on the JFK assassination—had met Wesley Liebeler, former counsel to the Warren Commission, to discuss his discovery that an astounding revelation was inadvertently released within the Sibert-O’Neill FBI report. This report was named for the FBI agents, James W. Sibert and Francis X. O’Neill, who had been in the autopsy room just as JFK’s body was brought in prior to the autopsy. Their report, which Arlen Specter—a future senator from Pennsylvania, but then an assistant counsel to the Warren Commission—had withheld from the original twenty-six volumes and had just been released two years after the report. A stunning statement was made within the Sibert-O’Neill report that it was “apparent that a tracheotomy had been performed, *as well as surgery of the head area, namely, in the top of the skull.*” In Lifton’s presence, an astonished Liebeler called up a pathologist friend of his in Long Beach, who (not knowing the identity of the victim), after hearing the description of the “surgery,” said “it sounds like he [the victim] was hit with an axe.”¹⁰⁵

As a result of these events, Liebeler subsequently wrote a thirteen-page memorandum, dated November 8, 1966, which was then sent to J. Lee Rankin, the former chief counsel of the Warren Commission, titled “Autopsy Photographs and X-rays of President Kennedy,” which outlined the questions and issues related to this subject.

Shortly after this, in a conversation between Harrison Salisbury, a columnist for the *New York Times*, and Wesley Liebeler, Salisbury told Liebeler that the *Times* was planning a series of articles on the criticisms of the Warren Report and complained that their reporters had met resistance to getting information out of the Justice Department from assistant attorney general Burke Marshall. Noted author Harrison Livingstone described the confluence of these events in a 1996 essay titled “Barefoot Sanders, Ramsey Clark, and the Dallas Invasion of Washington: The Later Cover-up of the Medical Evidence.”¹⁰⁶ The general confusion created by Marshall’s behavior at this time—his resistance to criticism of the Warren Report in this case—must be considered in the context of other events that were simultaneously overtaking Robert and Jackie Kennedy, including Bobby’s attempts to walk a very fine line in trying to maintain a cordial relationship with the president while simultaneously planning to succeed him, and he did not want to overplay his hand. Robert Kennedy knew that Johnson would not react well to any indication that his own administration would cooperate with any newspaper to criticize the Warren Report, reopening all the files for the purpose of dismantling that which he and Hoover had worked so hard to lock away.

Also, for her own reasons, Jackie felt that William Manchester—who had been commissioned by her and Bobby to write a book of the assassination, called *The Death of a President*—had gone too far in his suspicions regarding Lyndon Johnson’s possible culpability in the assassination and wanted him to retract certain passages of his book. In fact, that battle was among the other concurrently unfolding events that also involved Burke Marshall—who was one of several Kennedy loyalists recruited by Bobby—in RFK’s and Jackie’s quest to force Manchester to make major revisions to his book, even deleting entire passages that were critical of Lyndon Johnson out of fear of provoking the president’s revenge. Burke Marshall’s actions to resist criticism of the Warren Report undoubtedly mirrored the signals he was receiving from Bobby Kennedy. This reticence to displease the president explains other actions of Robert Kennedy, including what would shortly become his apparent efforts to discredit New Orleans District Attorney Jim Garrison’s investigations, which were aimed at exposing real culprits while exonerating Lee Harvey Oswald from any culpability in the assassination.

The paradox created by the need to add new material received from the Kennedy family to the archives, evidence and materials that had never been reviewed by the Warren Commission, compounded by the newly discovered Sibert-O’Neill statement casting doubt on the original autopsy findings, was described by Liebler: “There is strong feeling that the Commission should have examined them in connection with its investigation. This is particularly true because of the importance of the autopsy findings in determining the number and direction of shots which struck the President. The availability of these photographs and X-rays provides an opportunity to verify the autopsy findings and the conclusions which the Commission reached on the basis of those findings.”¹⁰⁷ That comment implicitly covered the larger issue of the need for an authority to review *all* the new material, but it did not explicitly include the Sibert-O’Neill statement Liebler had just reviewed. That critical issue, and others such as the question of where the brain was at that point as well as the reference to the Humes testimony, were all deleted in the final draft of Liebler’s memorandum. Lifton wrote: “As to the surgery quote in the Sibert-O’Neill report, Liebler said: ‘There is nothing we can do about it. If it comes out, it comes out. But I’m not talking.’”¹⁰⁸

The fact that Liebler had tempered his views about pressing for a resolution to the dilemma presented by the Sibert-O’Neill comment about evidence of unexplained surgery to JFK’s skull—from the initial presumption of its accuracy to one of doubting its veracity, or at least aggressively pursuing a resolution of the question—caused Lifton to question him further about his reasoning. Liebler reacted defensively, claiming that, “I don’t give a goddamn about the Johnson administration, or Earl Warren, or the Establishment. I owe them no allegiance, for Christ sake! They’re so unalterably opposed to me at this point—I mean, my God, how simple-minded can you be?”¹⁰⁹

Within Liebler’s own words lies a subtle but clear indication of what caused him to soften his original views, and the lack of boldness with which he would convey the most important questions to be raised about the Warren Commission’s report. Only by conducting an investigation that included the issues already raised could a thorough

reinvestigation be completed and a final determination made of the validity of the original “findings and conclusions.” Liebler had made it clear that he would not be the one who would push hard for a completely new reinvestigation based on all the new evidence being uncovered by Lifton. Unfortunately by then the original “authority”—the Warren Commission—had come and gone, so it would be up to an ad hoc, self-appointed subcommittee without a mandate from a higher authority to make that determination.

On November 16, Liebler’s memorandum was sent to the Justice Department, to all the former Warren Commissioners and a copy was sent to President Johnson. A few days after its receipt at the Justice Department, former Warren Commission lawyer David Slawson (then working under Assistant Attorney General Barefoot Sanders) wrote a letter to Attorney General Ramsey Clark, which stated, among other things, that “There is still a reasonable chance of spiking this thing by a re-investigation limited to aspects of the autopsy, but if public opinion continues to develop as it has over the past few months we may soon be faced with a politically unstoppable demand for a free-wheeling [i.e., honest] re-investigation of all aspects... . The lunatic fringe already allege, or broadly hint, the involvement of the highest echelons of the Government [sic] in the assassination, and the Government’s [sic] participation in the ‘hiding’ of the photographs and X-rays dangerously lends creditability to their hints and allegations ...”¹¹⁰ As David Lifton also noted, “Slawson never once mentioned the page in the memo devoted to the FBI report of head surgery.” Coincidentally, about the same time this was going on, Johnson requested that the FBI investigate certain Warren Report critics (Edward Epstein, Sylvan Fox, Joachim Joesten, Penn Jones, Mark Lane, Richard Popkin, Leo Sauvage, and Harold Weisberg).¹¹¹

The resulting multi level, compound paradox—further complicated by the knowledge of the highest level plotters about the explosive evidence that Lt. Commander Pitzer was then holding, and of his plans to retire and leverage his knowledge into a broadcasting career—was apparently seen by them as an opportunity for a “sleight of hand” operation to make further adjustments in the fabricated evidence. Moreover, it provided an additional opportunity to destroy the last true evidence from either the Kennedys or the photographs and X-rays that were being held by Pitzer. This evidence would have conclusively proven that the other photographs and X-rays were phony, so the need to destroy them would have been factored into the matrix as well. As David Mantik and others have repeatedly demonstrated, the photographs and X-rays that are now in the archives were fabricated.¹¹²

In fact, Mantik stated on the video “The Smoking Guns” (Episode 7 of *The Men Who Killed Kennedy*) that the autopsy photographs were shown to sixteen Parkland Hospital doctors who had seen Kennedy’s head wound and every one of them said that the photographs did not correspond with the wounds that they witnessed first hand.¹¹³

On the same day that the materials held by the Kennedys were transferred to the National Archives—and the same day that William Bruce Pitzer was killed at the same National Navy Medical Center Hospital in Bethesda, Maryland, where John F. Kennedy

received his infamous “autopsy”—a storage trunk was opened in the Archives and it was found that numerous items were missing, including sets of JFK’s tissue sections, his brain, and slides of his blood smears.¹¹⁴ This would be the first step in a process of evidence manipulation not merely of the public murder of a president, but of the simultaneous, secret treason related to the fabrication of the nation’s permanent records intended to keep the 1963 coup d’état a state secret.

Coincidentally, but not randomly, just a few weeks after the above events, in January 1967, Ramsey Clark and Barefoot Sanders came to the aid of Lyndon Johnson, undoubtedly at his behest, to put additional new closure on the case. It was, evidently, also done to help Johnson and his CIA enablers fight the maverick district attorney Jim Garrison’s nascent efforts to bring a New Orleans businessman, Clay Shaw—who Garrison suspected was involved in the pre-assassination conspiracy—to trial. At the time, that was a major leading news story every evening on all three of the television networks, and a lot of people in Washington were becoming very worried about what direction Garrison might go and how close he might come to exposing some of the darkest secrets of the pre-assassination plotting.

The evidence to be reviewed now, in summary form, shows that Barefoot Sanders, apparently acting directly on behalf of Lyndon Johnson himself, became involved at this juncture in replacing true autopsy photographs and X-rays with the fabricated versions that have been completely discredited by numerous researchers including David Mantik, MD, PhD, and Doug Horne, author of *Inside the Assassination Records Review Board*. His apparent objective in doing so was to create a false “chain-of-custody” trail that enabled fabricated evidence to be substituted and accepted into the archives as being the original. Moreover, it was decided that certain doctors who were involved in the processing of JFK’s corpse had to be re-interviewed to create this new record. One of the Bethesda doctors, Pierre Finck, had to be summoned from his duties in Vietnam in order to help “paper the files” just a few weeks after the photographs and X-rays were received from the Kennedys. On January 19, 1967, Finck flew from Saigon on a military Boeing 707, to San Francisco, where he caught a commercial flight to Dulles airport outside Washington, DC. He met with Drs. James Humes and J. Thornton Boswell, the partners in the original autopsy, a lawyer named Carl Eardley, and Dr. Robert H. Bahmer, the US Archivist in the offices of Barefoot Sanders and subsequently in the office of Dr. Humes at Suburban Hospital in Bethesda. This is what Finck said about that experience, which validates the key role Barefoot Sanders played in this vignette, after which Finck was immediately returned to Vietnam:¹¹⁵

I went to Justice, 9th & Pennsylvania Ave NW, where Barefoot Sanders expected me. He was Assistant Attorney General, Civil Division. He told me that I had to examine the photos taken at the autopsy of Kennedy that I had never seen.

Finck stated that they examined the photos and X-rays of JFK’s autopsy, which consisted of 8-inch × 10-inch color prints and 4-inch × 5-inch color positive transparencies showing the back entry, the back (scalp) of the head, and photos of the scalp and bone exit wounds. Six days later, they met again when they signed the statement: “My conclusion is that the

photos and X-rays of the autopsy of President Kennedy do not modify our conclusions stated in the autopsy report.”

When all of these events are juxtaposed and put into context, it clearly becomes evident that someone took advantage of this unique opportunity to achieve multiple objectives, undoubtedly someone highly skilled in manipulative techniques and gifted with the aptitudes of secrecy, cunning, and guile. The net result achieved was to permanently paper the archive files with falsified evidence and documents that supported the official findings of the President’s Commission. Between the missing real artifacts and the fabricated materials added to the collection, there will forever be the doubtful reliability of anything in the archived materials.

Fooling Dr. Finck—Twice, in Three Years

According to Douglas P. Horne, in *Inside the Assassination Records Review Board*, ten days after the original autopsy, on Monday, December 2, 1963, (and one week after the first brain exam on November 25, which Finck had *not* attended), a second brain exam was conducted, at which a brain other than JFK’s was substituted.¹¹⁶ Finck noted that this brain didn’t even look like the same brain removed at the autopsy since half of JFK’s brain’s mass and weight had been missing whereas the one presented at this point was the same size and weight as a complete brain. It was photographed by a different photographer than the real brain was and its color and texture was that of a brain that had been preserved in formaldehyde for a week.

Finck’s report noted the discrepancies, implicitly acknowledging his suspicions, yet he proceeded to sign off on the documents anyway, suggesting that he had been misled into doing this by the other doctors and/or his own superiors, all as prescribed by Barefoot Sanders. As a means to consider which of the doctors acted most suspiciously, consider our findings in *LBJ: The Mastermind of the JFK Assassination*, where we observed that (1) Dr. Humes admitted burning his original notes in his fireplace; (2) his less than candid interviews with the ARRB, which he treated in an adversarial tone; (3) his loss of the lawsuit filed by Dr. Crenshaw, whose credibility had been savagely attacked; and (4) his “in your face” display of gold presidential cuff links given to him personally by President Johnson (clearly intended as a reward for “going beyond the call”) during his Warren Commission interview.¹¹⁷ Moreover, the overall competence of Humes was rendered suspect by his findings during the autopsy, the most important being his denial of the existence of bullet entry wounds in the front of Kennedy’s skull (or neck) and any exit wounds in the rear,¹¹⁸ clearly the opposite of the opinions of every one of the doctors from Parkland Hospital.¹¹⁹ Add to that the following statement made to me by the very credible Dennis David, who was both a friend of William Pitzer as well as being the most important witness of the Bethesda “autopsy” on JFK, and who exposed the incongruity of the official account of that event: “Dr. Humes was a sniveling minion to those senior [to him] and a little Adolf Hitler to his juniors. He did what he was told.” Contrast that with what Mr. David said about Dr. Boswell: “[He] was gracious to all he worked with and was generally very friendly to everyone, prior to the JFK post-mortem. Afterwards he became

distant and less outgoing (almost as if he felt guilty about something). He retired a few months after the events of 22 November 1963.”

Mr. David did not know Dr. Finck well enough to comment on him, however, others have said he seemed to be an honorable man who had become ensnared into events having a preordained result over which he had no control. Consider also that all of them were sworn to absolute secrecy on the orders of President Johnson, which extended at least in the case of Dr. Humes to a prohibition of ever talking about any of it.¹²⁰

Author Horne concluded that Doctors Humes and Boswell (the latter having been directed to do so by his superior officer, Dr. Humes) contrived to fool Dr. Finck into thinking the review he had attended was the only one done, since he had not been invited to the first one because, according to the navy photographer John Stringer, “he caused too much trouble at the autopsy.”¹²¹ Now, a little over three years later, he signed off again on a document that stated that the photographs and X-rays he was called to Washington to review would not have changed the conclusions of the original autopsy. Given the conflicting statements versus conclusions of the original report, the statement may be accurate in a very narrow sense, but, more importantly, it was clearly misleading. Taken as a whole, some might even consider it “obstruction of justice.”

After inspecting the photographs, and meeting for instructions and guidance with Barefoot Sanders, all the Bethesda doctors, including Pierre Finck, signed the statement on January 26, 1967, for a report prepared by lawyers working under the direction of the Johnson sycophants Ramsey Clark and Barefoot Sanders at the Justice Department, stating that “the photos and X-rays did not modify their conclusions stated in the autopsy report.” This was more than a non sequitur, it was disingenuous double-talk, intended to further obfuscate the evidence trail by avoiding real analysis with an infusion of ambiguous verbiage. A year later, on Johnson’s order, Ramsey Clark formed an “independent panel of experts” to review all of this same “evidence” and, to no one’s surprise, found nothing to change the “verdict” that Oswald murdered JFK. Interestingly, Clark released his report on his (and LBJ’s) last day in office, January 20, 1969, just as Clay Shaw went on trial in New Orleans. Assistant D.A. James Alcock “branded Clark’s action in releasing the report just as the case was about to go to trial and just as Clark was about to leave office as ‘unconscionable’ and ‘not in keeping with his high office.’ Alcock said it ‘could not help but influence jurors.’”¹²²

A Summary of the Aberrant Behavior of Barefoot Sanders

Johnson’s acolyte Barefoot Sanders had made appearances at numerous key points on the previously noted timelines: He was there in all the right places and times, starting with the original Texas hearings in 1962 to impede a correction in the “status” of Henry Marshall’s cause of death, thus ensuring that it would not be investigated as a homicide.

Barefoot Sanders had also been in Dallas protecting the Johnson interests in November 1963, as the US attorney in Texas, to declare the murder of the president a local crime. This was his attempt to help Johnson keep the investigation within the purview of the local officials they controlled, until Johnson changed his mind and put his friend J. Edgar

Hoover in charge of the investigation, feeding official disinformation to the Warren Commission, which he knew he could also control. There was great irony in that, since the murder of the president was not a federal crime in 1963. Only by invoking the potential “conspiracy to murder” charge could they make it a federal crime, despite the fact that that very element had been jettisoned when Oswald was declared the “lone” assassin.

Sanders had even met Lyndon Johnson’s airplane when Johnson arrived at Dallas’s Love Field from his ranch on November 19, 1963, to speak the following day at the bottlers’ convention, which was just one day before Kennedy’s arrival. A reporter from the *Dallas Morning News* saw Sanders sitting in the back of a limousine sent to pick up Johnson and reported seeing the two engaging in “a highly animated discussion ... two or three times Johnson leaned over to shake a finger in Sanders’s face. Whatever the point [that Johnson was making], it seemed to bring appropriate political anguish to the younger man’s face.”¹²³ It will never be known just what was so critical that Johnson was explaining to Sanders, but the timing of this incident raises suspicions that it was all part of the choreography that Johnson had been working on at his ranch for nearly a month in preparation for the “Welcome to Dallas” event he was planning for JFK. It suggests that it was not mere coincidence that Barefoot Sanders had become deeply involved in the Kennedy trip and was helping Johnson plan the trip.¹²⁴ Barefoot Sanders had also played a central role in the choice of the Trade Mart as the venue for JFK’s luncheon, and therefore the route of the motorcade.

Sanders inserted himself again on Johnson’s behalf to help guide the Warren Commission proceedings, when he volunteered his censorship expertise. Commission attorney Leon Hubert wrote to Rankin on May 11, 1964, stating that Sanders had told him, in effect, that the evidence being presented to the Warren Commission needed to be screened first. Hubert’s letter noted that “I spoke to Mr. Barefoot Sanders only casually ... Sanders took occasion to say to me that he had a great deal of concern about the publication of some of the depositions. He had reference to those in which the witnesses being deposed made derogatory statements against other people and particularly those police officers who criticized their superiors. He told me that there was concern in Dallas about these matters.”¹²⁵ A reasonable interpretation of Hubert’s comments is that Sanders and certain senior officials of the Dallas Police Department, had great concerns that certain police officers would not go along with attempts by their superiors to subvert justice—to “get along by going along” to use the common vernacular—and he took steps to ensure that the earnest policemen would not jeopardize the official findings.

Sanders had also insinuated himself into the conduct of the trial of Jack Ruby, as US attorney there in protecting the FBI’s interests. According to the research of Harrison Livingstone: “The FBI gave Sanders 18 reports which had been given to Herbert Miller, who censored them. They removed the records of the Bank of Dallas with regard to Ruby’s finances. Sanders also called [Leon] Hubert at the WC to say that Judge Joe Brown [who adjudicated the Ruby trial, and had given permission to well-known newspaper columnist Dorothy Kilgallen to interview Ruby] wanted to testify, but they did not want him,”¹²⁶ another pattern that would be repeated numerous times by the Warren Commission,

which suggests that it was a standard device used to avoid “difficult” witnesses. He was also present for the 1967 “shell game,” culling the autopsy evidence to be submitted to the National Archives and again in 1984, when he lost the final battle over Henry Marshall’s cause of death, when it was finally changed to “homicide,” though it was a battle fought too late to be of consequence, at least until now.

Given the long, close and obviously secrecy-shrouded relationship between Lyndon Johnson and Barefoot Sanders, one can only wonder how much he knew, three days before it happened, about the pending assassination of President Kennedy. Harrison Livingstone asked insightfully, in his 1996 essay previously noted, “Was the bottom line that someone owned Sanders and Clark?”¹²⁷

The Return of Jack Valenti, LBJ’s Appointed “Chief Censor”

On multiple occasions, as summarized next, Lyndon Johnson’s remaining loyal aides, wife, and other sycophants, all led by Jack Valenti from his posh Hollywood offices, made clear that books, videos, or movies attempting to reveal Lyndon Johnson’s history of crimes would not be permitted.

One of these instances occurred during the four years after the 1984 grand jury trial—at which Clint Peoples was finally able to get the death certificate for Henry Marshall changed from suicide to homicide—a number of proposals for movies and a “mini-series” on television were proposed, all of them based on Clint Peoples’s role in the investigation. Up to four different projects had been started, then suspended for unknown but obvious reasons. Among the titles for these works were *The Quiet Man*; *The Legend of the Quiet Man*; *Quiet Power: The Making of a Lawman*; and finally, *LBJ, Accessory to Murder*. Letters found in the Clint Peoples collection at the Dallas Public Library indicate that these proposals had been under development between 1984 and 1988. One of these letters (see [Appendix A-1](#)) stated the producer’s intent to get started on this after the settlement of the writer’s strike then in progress. Moreover, it indicated that the would-be producer wanted to proceed “with great vigor” toward making a four-hour television mini-series. I contacted that producer, Diane Walsh, to determine the reason(s) the proposal was apparently dropped, as if it were a “hot potato.” She told me that she had left her position at that company shortly after that exchange of correspondence and did not know how it was resolved. Another employee of that company, Robert Greenwald Productions, did call back to state that neither he (who had been employed there since 1985) nor the owner/director of the company, Robert Greenwald, had any recollection of that incident, though he did remember Ms. Walsh. He did not deny that it occurred, but could not explain what had caused the project to be terminated.

The fact that all the correspondence stopped after this letter, with nothing further in the file to indicate the reason it was dropped, leaves open the reasonable conclusion that the project was discontinued because a third party’s determined effort to make it stop. Otherwise, had it been pursued at all, it is reasonable to assume that a stream of further correspondence would have ended up in Clint Peoples’s files. It should be noted that there are other indications that in the intervening years since his 1992 death, those files have been cleansed of certain materials (other than the ones that had been “closed” per his

instructions). This is admittedly more speculative than having a “smoking gun” letter laying it all out, but one must remember that Lyndon Johnson had trained all of his aides that the first rule of secrecy was to avoid such correspondence in the most “delicate” matters: The most unethical, immoral, and criminal activities would never be committed to paper. Even the 1980s movie deals were not the first of these; ten years earlier, the same thing had occurred, in 1974, before Captain Peoples resigned from the Texas Rangers to become a US Marshal. That incident was noted in an earlier footnote referencing how other Rangers were jealous of Peoples’s popularity (as recounted in the book by Robert M. Utley, *Lone Star Lawmen: The Second Century of the Texas Rangers*).

Moreover, the same thing happened again, nearly three decades after the 1984–1988 incidents: We know now that, after the Nigel Turner project *The Men Who Killed Kennedy* came out with three new episodes in 2003, including one aimed directly at Lyndon Johnson’s involvement, that an immediate major effort was conducted to shut that down. The History Channel had cooperated with Turner in getting these three additional episodes added to the existing six-part series by that name. The last of the new three parts (Episode 9: “The Guilty Men”) was the primary one that caused the last of the Johnson sycophants (Jack Valenti, Bill Moyers, Lady Bird Johnson, aided by ex-Presidents Gerald Ford and Jimmy Carter) to wage a full-bore assault on getting The History Channel to agree to *never* broadcast those shows again (as they had planned to do every November, just as they had done with the first six parts). Thankfully, all three can be seen on YouTube, but the problem is that they can no longer be broadcast, by anyone, because of the “secrets” they reveal about Johnson’s past and their use to reach big audiences has thus been destroyed.

There is ample reason to conclude that the same fate happened to the 1984–1988 proposals: The correspondence, in each case expressed in a highly excited fashion, suddenly stopped, without explanation. It could have all been a coincidence, but as noted previously, too many “coincidences,” at some point become less and less likely, until the totality becomes obvious: “Enemy action.”

The Murder of Clint Peoples

By 1992, Clint Peoples, previously a captain in the Texas Rangers, had become a US Marshal. As he continued his investigation of the Henry Marshall murder he discovered explosive new evidence that a previously-unidentified fingerprint found on a box in the “sniper’s nest” on the afternoon of the John Kennedy assassination was a match to the 1951 fingerprint of Malcolm Wallace, Lyndon Johnson’s hit man. Marshal Peoples planned to announce this finding at a press conference and intended to explain to the world the significance of this finding and how it proved Johnson’s involvement in the assassination.

By this point, Lyndon had been dead for nearly twenty years, yet his deadly reach was still very much still functioning. He had placed different aides in key positions around the country with the understanding that their long-term mission was to protect his image, reputation, and “legacy.” In the case of Clint Peoples, who had been the bane of their existence for as long as they could remember, the plan to finally shut him up would have

been an adaptation of one of their “off the shelf” methods of a guaranteed “accident.” But in this case the event was inadvertently witnessed by someone who instinctively, and immediately, knew that what she saw put herself in jeopardy, as another person “who knew too much” and was thus afraid to show herself publicly.

Clint Peoples’s assistant, a lady named “Georgia,” decided to cooperate with French researcher William Reymond for his 2003 French book and video referenced previously, though she was clearly scared of publicity and refused to allow her full name to be revealed. As the interview progressed, she proceeded to make a startling statement about the purported automobile “accident” that took Clint Peoples’s life just a few days before he planned to conduct a press conference announcing his discovery of Mac Wallace’s fingerprint. She stated that when she went to the funeral home for the viewing, a woman came up to her and told her not to tell anyone else, but that she had witnessed the entire incident; she said it was no “accident,” because Clint’s car was pushed off the road from behind by a “big red truck” and the weather was clear, the road was dry. The driver of the truck did it intentionally, she said, and then left the scene.¹²⁸ Georgia continued the interview, admitting that she was too afraid to go look at the car in the salvage yard to see if the back bumper showed any evidence of being scratched or dented by the red truck. She ended her statement by saying she didn’t want to get involved in it, because, “Too many people have been killed.”¹²⁹

The discovery of the fingerprint that Peoples intended to announce at the press conference apparently was acquired subsequently by the late Austin, Texas, researcher J. Harrison, whose records were given to Walt Brown; Brown announced the finding in 1998 after the analysis was certified by Nathan Darby, a fingerprint expert retired from the Austin police department. Some researchers, whose objectives may be influenced by ulterior motives, have questioned the competence of the late Nathan Darby, stating on certain Internet venues that he “wasn’t certified.” However, as Barr McClellan took the trouble in his book to demonstrate, Travis County district judges Mace B. Thurman Jr. and Tom Blackwell, in recommending Mr. Darby for certification as a fingerprint expert in 1978, stated that he had testified in their courts “numerous times” and, “With his vast experience in fingerprints, there has never been a question as to whether he could qualify to testify as an expert... I sincerely feel that he should be certified as a fingerprint expert.” He was subsequently given the honor of being certified by the International Association for Identification on November 6, 1978.¹³⁰ Evidently, some people believe that once such a person retires from their profession, their knowledge immediately stops and such certifications are declared null and void. Such profound analysis takes the concept of “critical thinking” skills to new (albeit lower) levels.

Nathan Darby’s expert opinion on that fingerprint was that it matched that of Mac Wallace on at least thirty-four points; according to the statements proffered on the video “The Guilty Men” (Part 9 of the series *The Men Who Killed Kennedy*), matching only six points can be sufficient for conviction. Mr. Darby’s part of the video can be found on many websites, including the video “The Guilty Men.” As noted elsewhere, this video was immediately banned from further rebroadcasts by The History Channel after being

attacked by Johnson's ex-sycophants.

Though this segment is now well known to many researchers, as well as the many viewers of it since it first aired in 2003, it was stunning news at that time; eleven years earlier, in 1992 just as the movie *JFK* was being promoted, it would have been even more shocking, and certain people did not want the persistent Clint Peoples to make this finding public. Based on this eyewitness testimony and the most elemental "common sense" intuition of most rational and objective observers, it is hard to deny the probability that someone ordered Mr. Peoples eliminated by "extreme prejudice." If the testimony of this eyewitness is true—a conclusion that is really the only realistic explanation, with the possible exception that the pickup driver who ran him off the road was just another drunken redneck (which does evoke images of the ghost of Lyndon Johnson himself)—the only plausible explanation is that LBJ's unknown secret "protectors" made a decision that was identical to Johnson's when he ordered the murder of Henry Marshall back in 1961: "He's got to go."

It is the totality of all the anomalies identified throughout these pages—from the original, absurd, and outrageous 1961 finding of "suicide" in the case of Henry Marshall, to the stacking of the 1962 grand jury by Sheriff Howard Stegall, and Barefoot Sanders's cross-jurisdictional involvement in that jury for the purpose of evidence censorship and jury manipulation—that explains why Johnson was so desperate: He went to such great lengths for the singular purpose of keeping the cause of death of Henry Marshall a "suicide." His maneuver obviously worked because it impeded Captain Peoples's investigation and bought Johnson enough time to live another decade and complete his dream of becoming president. Justice would eventually come for Henry Marshall's family, but it would not be in time to save John F. Kennedy and thousands of other Americans. And the untold millions of people in other parts of the world.

* It should be acknowledged that Peoples's growing popularity in the 1970s and 1980s caused some of his peers to become jealous of the attention he received, as noted by Robert M. Utley in *Lone Star Lawmen: The Second Century of the Texas Rangers*, New York: The Berkley Publishing Group, 2008. What the author left out, intentionally or not, was that his irrepressible pursuit of the Henry Marshall murder case, clearly aimed at exposing Lyndon Johnson's criminality, also engendered a degree of hate among his peers, for reasons of jealousy or envy, or because they wanted to be politically correct and not make waves. They seemingly had "given up" any interest in finding the murderers of Henry Marshall et. al., while wishing that the embarrassment of Peoples's actions, in dogged pursuit of the murderers, would just "go away." The fact that he spent twenty-three years in his quest to solve the case might have put many of them to shame as well. Mr. Utley also neglected to note Captain Peoples's fortitude and courageousness in pursuing a case against the powerful, formidable Lyndon B. Johnson. Moreover, Utley tried to advance the notion that there were many other Rangers who also had access to records, who complained because they were not included in a deal for a film: "Peoples had obviously lied to the producers by presenting himself as the only one who could provide the services needed" (p. 258). Utley might have also observed that, if they did have such knowledge, perhaps they should have come forth with it, that might have saved him a lot of time and ensured an earlier successful verdict, instead of him having to work it for nearly a quarter century. If they had done so, they might have even been able to arrest the murderers in 1962, thereby saving JFK and the resulting turmoil visited on the world by Lyndon B. Johnson. But, none of them carried on that fight, because they lacked the moral strength and determination that was within only one of them: The "True" Lone Ranger, Clint Peoples.

** Unfortunately, author Day chose a man who has been identified within these pages, and the previous work, as having been a key facilitator of Johnson (Edward A. Clark, "Former Ambassador to Australia") to write the Introduction to the book, which may explain why the name Mac Wallace was not included in the following sentence of the book: "As Peoples thinks back, he believes he questioned the person involved in murdering Henry Marshall, but, without concrete evidence, he will not be able to prove anything. It rankles him." (p. 135)

*** A Johnson “business associate” who made millions off Johnson’s “insider information” about what tracts of land held the most uranium deposits, as we will examine in detail in Chapter 2.

**** Svengali was a fictional character in George du Maurier’s 1894 novel *Trilby*. According to Wikipedia, the term has come to refer to a person who, with evil intent, controls another person by persuasion or deceit. The Svengali may feign kindness and use manipulation to get the other person to yield his or her autonomy.

***** This book is dedicated to the memory of Captain/Marshal Peoples, and is a tribute to his selfless, long and lonely, unsuccessful pursuit of justice (but not completely futile, given that his records and recollections form the foundation upon which the assertions made about Lyndon Johnson within this book are based). Lyndon Johnson proved to be beyond Peoples’s reach and it took courage for him to even investigate Johnson and Estes; in the end, his courage was not enough to save his life. The man he was up against, as Bobby Kennedy once said, was “the most formidable human being I ever met.”

Chapter 2

LBJ: MASTER OF MANIPULATION

I sat next to Mac Bundy and we discussed, among other things, the Khrushchev memoirs. I remarked on the curious resemblance between Khrushchev's account of the life around Stalin—the domineering and obsessive dictator, the total boredom of the social occasions revolving around him, the horror when invited to attend and the even greater horror when not invited—and Albert Speer's account of the life around Hitler. Mac said, "When I read Khrushchev, I was reminded of something else in addition—my last days in the White House with LBJ."

—ARTHUR SCHLESINGER JR., QUOTING MCGEORGE BUNDY AT A DINNER PARTY, JANUARY 14, 1971

I hope that someday someone will write the true story of the Johnson White House.

—ARTHUR SCHLESINGER JR., *JOURNALS* (2007)

How LBJ's Lies Continue to Be Perpetuated

The implication left by Arthur Schlesinger's second comment above was that, of the dozens of books already written about Lyndon Johnson's White House when his own last book was published in 2007, none had captured the essence of what he referred to as the "true story." The epigraph above is an explicit expression of doubt that the complete story would—or even whether, conceptually, it could—ever be written and accepted given the government's attempts to keep presidential criminality hidden from public view. It is generally acknowledged that Schlesinger hated Johnson. According to author Victor Lasky, author of several books, including *Robert F. Kennedy: The Myth and the Man*, he "despised Lyndon Johnson with an irrational passion ill-befitting a two-time Pulitzer prize winner."¹³¹ The lies that help to form the facade that left Schlesinger exasperated are still being repeated in other more devolved books about Lyndon Johnson, some of which rank consistently high on the *New York Times* listing of best sellers among "nonfiction" books, precisely what Schlesinger feared would impede the emergence of the truth for the rest of eternity.

In fact, practically all the Johnson biographies—by ignoring the lies and deceit, the arrogance and conceit, especially the treasons committed—have distorted the real history of the Johnson administration. That has been done by portraying with lofty words and soaring rhetoric what was, in reality, a facade of grandiosity that mirrored the building in Austin, Texas, named after him. The Johnson Library evokes images of a giant's mausoleum more than it does a museum/library (probably the effect intended by the designer at the request of the president). The legacy that has become the conventional wisdom about Lyndon B. Johnson was designed to extol his legislative successes while minimizing his excesses and ignoring his intrinsic criminality. A small portion of that disingenuous veneer—having been constructed originally by LBJ himself—will be dissected and closely examined within these pages as we look behind the hyperbole to

expose some of the worst of the truths Johnson tried to keep hidden. Although the murder of his predecessor to facilitate his elevation into the highest office in the nation was certainly the pinnacle of his criminal record, it didn't end there. That was merely a major "milestone" in the lengthy list, the total length of which would vary by how one counts crimes repeated many times and the different degrees of criminality. The lists of people killed needlessly in his Vietnam misadventure is probably indicative, and a good place to start, as it is at least a seven-figure number. It is an abomination, and arguably an intentional corruption of American history, that so many books by so many authors have portrayed Lyndon Johnson as a tragic figure caught haplessly in serial dilemmas. Ironically, they were mostly of his own making—though purported by him to be the impossible situation he had "inherited." Take Vietnam: hadn't he merely continued the policies—albeit, on steadily increasing levels—of Eisenhower and Kennedy? He doubtlessly made himself believe just that, and made sure all of his potential biographers believed it too, despite the fact that both of his predecessors did *not* commit combat troops there, and vigorously resisted doing so. Kennedy had already taken steps to immediately reduce by 1,000 the 16,000 "advisers" there by the end of 1963 and planned to have all the rest out of the country by 1965. Johnson on the other hand, from the start of his presidency, aggressively steered the country toward increasing the troop levels and making them combat troops, eventually "Americanizing" that civil war.

In the years since Arthur Schlesinger Jr.'s last book, *Journals*, was published in 2007, numerous paeans to the Johnsonian legacy have been written that systematically ignore the intense mania and deceit—and the crassness, arrogance, condescension, mean-spirited, bullying atmosphere—of the White House during Johnson's reign that Schlesinger implicitly referenced as noted in the Epigraph of this chapter. It was those attributes—along with the series of senseless escalations of military support, followed by the complete assumption of the absurd task of winning what was a civil war on behalf of the corrupt South Vietnamese regime—that eventually caused Johnson's popularity to take a record-breaking fall. In less than four years that popularity descended from its highest point, when he was elected in a landslide in 1964, to its lowest point, when he decided not to run for reelection to the office he had considered his destiny since his childhood: It had become clear to him that he would be rejected by the voters. It had also become clear to him that Bobby Kennedy's decision to run for the nomination represented a major risk that could not stand. That bombshell will be considered fully in [Chapter 6](#) and other possible motives for his decision to retire from the presidency will be evaluated in later chapters.

Throughout this book, references will be made to some of the latest biographies of Lyndon Johnson as a means to reexamine the methods that have been employed to reshape his historical imprint. The following example of this phenomenon will illustrate the point of how Johnson's family history had been recast: Mark Updegrove, in his recent book *Indomitable Will: LBJ in the Presidency*, wrote that Johnson's "great-great-grandfather had not fought at the Alamo as Johnson had *once* claimed (straining his presidential credibility). The boast reflected less about Johnson's tendency toward mendacity than it did his yearning to claim a familial piece of Texas's most consecrated

chapter.”¹³² [Emphasis added.] This point about a “tendency toward mendacity” is then dropped—not elucidated, as it might have been, had the author wanted to fully and honestly describe his subject, “warts and all”—thereby side-stepping the wistful contemplation of Arthur Schlesinger and his reference to the element that he had found consistently missing from Johnson’s biographies. Moreover, Updegrove wrote that Johnson’s Alamo boast had happened only “once,” though it had occurred many times, even after he had been caught in the lie.¹³³ Then, within the same paragraph, Updegrove wrote that the town close to Johnson’s ranch “would become known eponymously as Johnson City.”¹³⁴ The implication that the town was named after Lyndon Johnson’s family, and the absence of a clarification, to explain this was not true, leaves the reader open to the suggestion that the story told by Johnson throughout his life—the lie that the town was named after his grandfather—was true. As previously noted, this was not the case at all, and the evidence suggests that his father only moved the family there, after losing his farm in Stonewall, for the very purpose of exploiting the name.

A few pages later, Updegrove repeats as fact that Johnson earned a Silver Star, and it was awarded to him by General Douglas MacArthur for his participation in a bombing raid.¹³⁵ That construct was based on another Johnsonian “whopper” as I fully described in *LBJ: The Mastermind of the JFK Assassination*; in sum, the men he “served” with disagreed vehemently with that statement, which was taken from a book that Johnson had commissioned in 1964 (just prior to the presidential election that year), to make himself out to be a war hero when all he had done was take a short ride on an aircraft that had to return within a few minutes because of a mechanical problem. The medal was the result of a political trade and was conferred on him by one of MacArthur’s aides in exchange for political favors he promised to seek from President Roosevelt.*

Lyndon Johnson continued planting multiple lies even as president, through intrepid White House reporters, earnest Texas newsmen like Merle Miller, newspaper publishers like Harry Provence, acid-tongue syndicated columnists like Drew Pearson, and future historians and authors like Doris Kearns. Johnson persuaded many of these “enablers” to replace truths with lies. Only Ronnie Dugger, the proprietor of the small circulation weekly, the *Texas Observer*, was known for refusing the conditions Johnson created for his cooperation.¹³⁶ One example of the most onerous of these deceptions was in the Merle Miller book *Lyndon, An Oral Biography* (1980): The lie that Johnson was first on JFK’s list for the vice presidential nomination. Numerous other people who were there—such as Evelyn Lincoln, Clark Clifford, Hyman Raskin, and Pierre Salinger—who knew that this claim was untrue were ignored. The truth is that not only was Johnson’s name absent from the short list, it wasn’t even on the “long list” of potential candidates. Yet, ignoring these facts in his latest book, *The Passage of Power*, Robert Caro devoted forty-four pages (the entire [Chapter 4](#): “The Back Stairs”) to a lengthy, but non sourced, argument that John F. Kennedy had long before decided that Lyndon Johnson should be his vice presidential nominee. Caro’s sources for accepting this myth as fact, apparently, were authors such as Harry Provence, who four decades previously took the bait that Johnson used and attempted to spread it further. Caro even defended the most obvious rebuttal of that,

which was the furious reaction to be expected of such a plan by his own brother, Bobby. This exercise in wordsmanship generally takes at least one re-reading to completely decipher, while the reader must simultaneously contemplate a seemingly endless series of “leaps of logic” that eventually lead to the desired result. After several pages devoted to describing this theory, Mr. Caro then summarized it by saying that the scenario he described would suggest that those purported actions of Jack Kennedy’s would have to be based on his “cold calculation.” He acknowledged that this explanation, and how it meant that it would have required that Kennedy keep his intentions secret from his own brother, was no more “definitive” than any other explanation.¹³⁷ Indeed, it is arguably much less so.

This explanation is tantamount to saying, “let’s just table that one for now and leave it for someone else to figure out after we’re all gone ... we’ll just settle it for now by a ‘flip of the coin’ and assume that JFK really wanted LBJ for his vice president—even though his name was not on anyone’s list of potential candidates, and the Clark Clifford/Stuart Symington story be damned—just as Johnson had always said.”

This stunningly arbitrary and incomprehensible treatment of one of the keystone events of his subject’s lifetime—after his painstaking research and intensive writing on some of the most minute, arcane details of Johnson’s life, after having already invested over four decades of his own to writing four volumes, as he now works on his fifth—suggests that Mr. Caro has effectively capitulated to Johnson’s lie on this singularly key issue. In fact, it was Lyndon Johnson, not Jack Kennedy, who was taking an action that was “coldly calculated” when Johnson forced his way onto the only path that would lead to his becoming president should JFK not survive his first term.

Advancing such specious arguments, of course, is precisely what Lyndon Johnson planned originally in 1958–1959, executed in 1960 (July 14, to be exact), and prepared to implement for the next three years. Harry Provenge and Merle Miller first took the baton handed off by Johnson and others picked up the lie from them, or directly from Johnson at the convention, and still other authors have repeated it, almost enough times to make it “real.” Lyndon Johnson was the last person whom John F. Kennedy wanted in the position of vice president; he was chosen under threats of blackmail, extortion, and the need to avoid the risk of having every piece of legislation he might ever push be shelved by Congress at the instigation of LBJ (which effectively happened anyway).

Robert Caro described Johnson’s resolve to become president very eloquently in his earlier volumes and proved it beyond a reasonable doubt. After having asserted that Lyndon Johnson’s hunger was “so fierce and consuming that no consideration of morality or ethics, no cost to himself—or to anyone else—could stand before it,”¹³⁸ Caro has apparently decided since then that, by 1960, Lyndon was no longer so hungry after all, that he reluctantly accepted the nomination that JFK had planned for months, having never discussed it even with his brother Bobby (with whom he shared every other secret of his life), even though both of them disliked and distrusted Johnson. According to numerous other accounts, neither of them wanted him on the ticket. Then, casting aside everything that Bobby Kennedy himself has written, or been quoted by others as having said, about

the stunning events that left them “hopelessly snarled by confusion, miscommunication, and murky, mixed intentions,” and ignoring everything written by other people who witnessed it the new scenario proffered only further muddies the water. This is not the only incident where major biographers of Johnson have chosen to accept the word of a compulsive liar—Lyndon B. Johnson—at the expense of far more credible witnesses.

JFK Wanted Stuart Symington to Be His Vice President

To ignore the statements made by Clark Clifford—arguably one of the most honorable, distinguished, and credible of aides to both JFK and LBJ, and Truman before that—in his 1991 memoir is more than just a disservice to the impeccable record and reputation of the late Mr. Clifford. It is tantamount to participating in the very phenomenon that Johnson had relied on to “correct the record” of his duplicitous behavior with lies that he knew would become accepted over time. In this instance, Clifford repeatedly stated that he had been given Kennedy’s nod the evening of his nomination to visit Stuart Symington of Missouri, to offer him the vice presidential nomination.¹³⁹

Symington had been at the top of JFK’s “short list” of possible appointees for weeks, and Kennedy had let him know that, at least a week, possibly two, before the convention started. After Clark Clifford conveyed Kennedy’s offer to Symington the evening, Wednesday, July 13, of JFK’s nomination, Johnson or Sam Rayburn called Kennedy to insist on meeting with him, either late that night or early the following morning to make his demands, as detailed in *LBJ: The Mastermind of the JFK Assassination*. As a result of that meeting, Clark Clifford had been called back to Kennedy’s suite the next morning for the purpose of rescinding the offer; Symington was then told that the deal was off, that Kennedy had been convinced during the night that Lyndon had to be on the ticket.¹⁴⁰ Yet all of this true history from a very credible source has now been thrown out the window by Mr. Caro in his attempt to synthesize an entirely new and most indefensible scenario: His construct was essentially the same as the lie that Lyndon Johnson had planted with many of the most obsequious reporters—that Kennedy wanted Johnson above all other possible candidates.

The key to the real story of how Lyndon Johnson maneuvered himself into the vice presidential nomination was the story told by the inimitable Clark Clifford in 1991, and his story was completely consistent with the chronicle previously described in 1976 by Nancy Dickerson, a former CBS Television reporter who had been following this evolving story on a daily basis throughout the spring and summer of 1960. Dickerson not only described the Symington offer but in doing so further revealed Johnson’s duplicity. According to her account, JFK had met three times with Clark Clifford, who was managing the campaign of Senator Stuart Symington in the weeks before the convention. All three times, Kennedy had made an offer of the vice presidency to Symington; the first two were conditioned upon all Missouri delegates voting for Kennedy on the first ballot, and these offers were turned down, presumably because it was felt that that result couldn’t be guaranteed. Ms. Dickerson said that the third time was at the convention, and there were “no strings attached” to that one, which was accepted by the candidate. Dickerson wrote, “he told me, ‘We had a deal signed, sealed and delivered.’” She further described

how JFK walked through a throng of reporters, about fifty of them, as he headed down the stairway to visit Johnson and, as he did, he appeared supremely confident and those reporters gave him a new level of deference as he passed them. She further stated that she “never dreamed that he was planning to offer the vice presidency to LBJ” because she knew that he had already offered it to Symington and because Johnson “had sworn to me a dozen times ... that he would never take the vice presidency.”¹⁴¹

Within the pages of Ms. Dickerson’s 1976 book, *Among Those Present: A Reporter’s View of 25 Years in Washington*, that piece of information, which she recalled from sixteen years earlier, is practically screaming off the page: John F. Kennedy not only wanted Stuart Symington to be his vice president on the *evening before* his nomination was submitted, he was practically begging him to consent to it *even weeks before the convention*. This account reinforces again the point that Clark Clifford, who had been in the middle of the negotiations, wrote in his own memoirs: Symington had always been number one on JFK’s list of possible nominees. It also touches on the trickery devised by Lyndon Johnson in plotting for his aides to let it be known to Kennedy that, out of due deference, he expected to at least be offered the nomination, though he also let it be known that he would, of course, decline it. In fact, according to Nancy Dickerson’s account, she, like the “fifty other reporters outside the [JFK hotel room] door,” said that Johnson had “sworn” that he didn’t want the position and would never accede to it,¹⁴² Meanwhile, in the Kennedy suite, a discussion continued between the family members, their aides, and others on the “team” as they debated the question of offering it to Johnson; finally it was decided to do so on the assumption that he would decline it. But when the coerced “offer” came, Johnson grabbed it and would not let go.

It was a trick that, ironically, was noted in some other books, then summarily discarded without comment in most of them as inconsequential. Yet it was really the most important factor in Johnson’s sinister plan to place himself into the position that would put him next in line to become president. By putting the story out that he would of course decline the offer, and making sure that it was widely circulated, Johnson had “hooked” Kennedy into making the offer, letting him know that if he didn’t, Johnson would be impossible to deal with as majority leader. Johnson must have planned this maneuver for months, knowing that he would have JFK boxed in, forcing him to make an offer that he didn’t want Johnson to accept. It must have been with some trepidation that Kennedy decided to assume that it was merely a pro forma exercise to keep Johnson happy as he made his way past the throng of reporters lining the hotel hallway that morning. Johnson had gone to great lengths to let many journalists, besides Nancy Dickerson, know that he would “never” accept an offer for the vice presidency, since that would have meant giving up his powerful Senate majority leader position.¹⁴³ His lies became the accepted truth even then, in 1960, despite the fact that most Washington journalists knew of his capacity for deceit.

After Johnson had out maneuvered Kennedy and accepted his reluctant “offer,” Ms. Dickerson reminded him that only hours before (continuing what he had repeatedly stated for weeks) he had specifically told her that he would never accept the office; his bland response was that he wouldn’t run *for* it, but would “run *as* the vice-presidential

nominee.”¹⁴⁴ [Emphasis in original.] Clearly, this was a distinction *with* a difference and arguably represents the pinnacle of political word parsing, even beyond the ersatz question of the meaning of “is.”

Nancy Dickerson’s 1976 account also stated that she had stationed herself right outside the door of Kennedy’s suite and that she was one of “more than fifty other reporters outside the door” when JFK left to walk down the stairway, in front of dozens of reporters.¹⁴⁵ Yet Robert Caro’s account specifically contradicts hers on this point because he maintained there were no reporters there.¹⁴⁶ This discrepancy leaves us with yet another inexplicable anomaly, among the many others, about whether the trip down the stairs was or was not noticed by any of the reporters gathered around the door of Kennedy’s suite. The two stories are mutually exclusive and cannot be reconciled, other than the fact that Ms. Dickerson was there and her account was published thirty-seven years before Caro’s and has stood the test of time.

The real story that was almost lost in this morass was about how Lyndon Johnson had muscled his way onto the ticket through threats and intimidation (as thoroughly examined in *LBJ: The Mastermind of the JFK Assassination*). It was Johnson’s highest concern that his secret, in this case his conniving methods to force his way onto the ticket as the vice presidential nominee, be carefully hidden from the reporters covering the convention. All of this maneuvering was really an extension of the larger Johnson strategy, that was the result of the fact that he had no real intention of running for the presidency in 1960 because he considered doing so would inevitably lead to a sure loss to Richard Nixon in the general election in November.

For at least two years, from when he had the Texas legislature pass “Lyndon’s Law” to allow him to run for national office simultaneously with re-running for his Senate seat, he had his eye on becoming the vice president that year, the most likely road to a successful election with JFK at the top of the ticket. In the event that the JFK/LBJ ticket lost in 1960, he would still be in a position to run again, at the top of the ticket in 1964 as a nationally known contender. His plans beyond 1960 were all contingent upon becoming the vice president; from there, he would maneuver himself, through other facilitators, into becoming president at a future time “to be determined.”

Robert Caro’s interpretation of how Johnson became vice president, one that had been contaminated by multiple Johnson lies from the start, in 1960, is but one of the disturbing indications that Mr. Caro has backed off considerably from earlier assertions. A few others of lesser importance have been identified below to demonstrate that this was not just some aberration, or an arbitrary choice made for the purpose of literary style or brevity. Perhaps they were the result of extended editorial license allowed to someone of Mr. Caro’s impressive accomplishments. In every historical account of important events (admittedly, even this one) the mix of documented facts versus theoretical conjecture must be considered in evaluating the merits of the arguments presented. Unfortunately, unlike most of the chapters in Robert Caro’s earlier works, the narrative of this seminal event is built on a foundation constructed of unwarranted speculation. It is at odds with the contemporaneous recollections of the credible witnesses noted, and consonant only with

the original lie perpetrated by his subject, Lyndon B. Johnson, known by all (thanks in no small measure to Mr. Caro himself) to be a chronic and pathological liar.

Every author of history must sift through mounds of raw data and previous research by others before choosing the facts he or she will present to make their case. However, when one purposefully chooses to ignore documented evidence, or even the generally accepted “conventional wisdom” of credible sources, in favor of dubious statements made by someone who has been proved by many, including that very author, to have been a chronic, pathological, and compulsive liar, it raises questions about the state of journalistic standards. The unfortunate result is that the entire book has thus become suspect and questions arise about whether other evidence has been similarly misstated or ignored. Moreover, it suggests that, in the process, the agenda of the powerful forces still at work to bury old “secrets” regarding President Johnson has been considerably advanced.

Further evidence of this in books that purport to be “thorough” is found when certain people, who were known to be key to Johnson’s rise in politics and his ability to conduct criminal actions, men such as Billie Sol Estes and Malcolm “Mac” Wallace, are not listed in the book’s index. This is true of all four of Robert Caro’s books and practically all other Johnson “biographies” except for a brief mention of Estes by Robert Dallek in *Flawed Giant*, but only enough to declare him not credible because of his prison term—precisely the result Johnson had planned decades before. The acknowledgment of their existence, of course, is not congruent with the tale of an innocent LBJ. Yet, during the spring and summer of 1962, Billie Sol Estes’s name was in practically every newspaper in the country, multiple times, always in relation to frauds committed in conjunction with his friend and benefactor, Lyndon B. Johnson (even where Johnson’s name was not printed, it was there implicitly: that was what made it the major story that it had become). By ignoring Billie Sol Estes, all of the names connected to the related scandals associated with him, through his association with Lyndon Johnson, including the murder of Henry Marshall and the many others committed by Johnson’s hit man Mac Wallace, can likewise be omitted from these renderings of “history.”

Dr. Charles Crenshaw, who made, and convincingly proved were true, statements about receiving a telephone call from President Johnson, as detailed in *LBJ: The Mastermind of the JFK Assassination*, is also not in Mr. Caro’s latest book. According to Dr. Crenshaw, President Johnson called the hospital to inform the doctors working on Oswald that he wanted them to make Oswald give an oral confession to an officer standing in the operating room at the very time he and Dr. Shires tried to save Lee Oswald’s life. These stories were important to the larger point about how Lyndon Johnson was trying to control all facets of the investigation and cover-up in the days following the assassination. In Robert Caro’s case, he stated that he could find no evidence of Johnson’s involvement in JFK’s assassination, yet despite his meticulous research in every other aspect of Johnson’s life, he stopped short of discovering important facts related to the single most important event of Lyndon Johnson’s life, his accomplishment of the very goal he had sworn himself to achieve for practically the entirety of the time he spent on earth.

In Caro’s latest book, *The Passage of Power*, he denied any evidence of even a conspiracy

in the JFK assassination—much less one engineered by the subject of four (soon to be five) books dedicated to Lyndon Johnson, totaling millions of words—without even a paragraph devoted to defending such a conclusion, other than a bracketed sentence in which he stated that he had discovered no evidence in all the documents reviewed or interviews he had conducted.¹⁴⁷ When juxtaposed to the fact that many people in America and around the world believed from the start that Johnson uniquely had the biggest motive, and the ability, guile, and chutzpa to have been involved, the too-easy dismissal of the notion begs further scrutiny.

Mr. Caro's avoidance of the mountains of evidence cited within this book, and *LBJ: The Mastermind of the JFK Assassination*, is at odds with a statement made by Douglas Caddy, an attorney who was indirectly involved with Texas Ranger Clint Peoples during the 1984 grand jury proceedings conducted in Robertson County, Texas, and later represented Billie Sol Estes in a failed attempt to pursue it further, at the federal level.**

Douglas Caddy's reputation for being a soft-spoken, non-flamboyant attorney known for choosing his words carefully, and avoiding hyperbole, imbues his words with great credibility. On March 3, 2012, he wrote on the Education Forum the following:

When Barr McClellan's book, [the theme of which was] *LBJ Killed JFK*, was about to be released in 2003, both Barr and I independently received about a half dozen phone calls from someone who was vitally intent in stopping its publication or limiting its impact. The person who called always remained unidentified and the phone number from which the call was made was later found to be non-existent. In one of the phone conversations with me, the person, in response to my bringing up Robert Caro hopefully covering LBJ's involvement in [the] JFK assassination, told me that "***We are not worried about Caro. He is on board.***" I was disappointed to hear this because I took it to mean that Caro may downplay LBJ's involvement in his forthcoming final volumes on the biography of LBJ. [Emphasis added.]

In 1985 or 1986, Robert Caro gave an address at the University of Houston on the subject of urban planning. I attended his speech accompanied by my father. After the speech I approached Caro, who was answering questions posed by about half a dozen attendees gathered around him. I decided to pose my own question to him, asking, "Do you plan to cover the role of Mac Wallace in your biography of LBJ?" Caro looked startled and shaken and grabbed me by the lapels of my business suit, saying, "Who are you? How can I get in touch with you?" I gave him my business card, which he examined on the spot and pocketed it. However, I never heard anything more from him.¹⁴⁸

Barr McClellan confirmed to me in an email dated November 6, 2013, that he had also received similar anonymous telephone calls pressuring him not to publish that book during the period in question (that caller was unaware of the equally—even more so—damaging production of "The Guilty Men" broadcast then being prepared as Episode 9 of The History Channel series *The Men Who Killed Kennedy*). The juxtaposition of these separate incidents, approximately eighteen years apart, suggests that the outline of the

series of Johnson biographies had already begun. The response to Caddy's question revealed that Caro knew all about Mac Wallace. While his first volume, *The Path to Power*, published in 1983, established his reputation as an objective biographer, each successive volume became a bit less critical, leading up to the complete absolution—that Lyndon Johnson had anything to do with the assassination of John F. Kennedy—by the fourth book of the series. In that volume, Johnson is portrayed as a man who had conquered the worst elements of his personality during the transition period, from the last month of 1963 through 1964.¹⁴⁹

The aggregation of all the various books on Johnson, including those written as personal memoirs, with references to Johnson by his associates, and from dozens of biographical accounts by other authors, has resulted in a set of myths written about him just as though he had dictated them himself. Indeed, Robert Caro described how Johnson's brother Sam admitted that many of the stories Lyndon told for journalists and would-be biographers were descriptions of a "mythical boyhood, a tapestry of anecdotes, told with the vividness and detail of a great storyteller, that, as his brother sums up, 'never happened.'"¹⁵⁰ The myth would replace the facts, the truths buried by the lies, becoming a continuation of precisely the way Lyndon B. Johnson had concocted them throughout his lifetime. And US history would thereby be rewritten to conform to that aggregation of the grander myth; the end result was also planned by him, to absolve himself of his provable complicity in a series of murders he choreographed, which inevitably led to the murder of a president. Lyndon Johnson must have considered it the *pièce de résistance*, the most important political achievement of his lifetime, yet many of those same authors missed that point, and in doing so, provided Johnson yet another "benefit of the doubt." There are numerous examples of how Johnson's lies were accepted and perpetuated by some authors despite the truthful accounts of others.

Probably the clearest of the examples of how Robert Caro gave Johnson an abundance of "the benefit of the doubt" in the newest book, *Passage of Power*, relates to how Johnson's Secret Service agent, Rufus Youngblood, supposedly reacted to the first shot(s) in Dealey Plaza, by jumping over the front seat-back and sitting on Johnson all the way to Parkland Hospital. That story came directly from Johnson (in his statement to the Warren Commission, and again in his book *The Vantage Point*)—a man known by everyone who knew him, and certainly known by Robert Caro, who previously documented it—who was a pathological liar, a man, according to Robert Kennedy, who would lie about anything, even when he didn't have to lie. (JFK also called him a "chronic liar [who] had been making all sorts of assurances to me for years and has lived up to none of them."¹⁵¹)

Mr. Caro apparently ignored the other man who shared the same seat in that car, Ralph Yarborough, who Caro admitted interviewing ("in five intensive discussions"¹⁵²). Yarborough had said repeatedly in other interviews (e.g., Jim Marrs¹⁵³) that Youngblood never even left the front seat; that he merely turned around and told all three (Johnson, Lady Bird, and Yarborough) to "Get Down!"*** The fact that Johnson is missing in the famous Altgens photograph, as demonstrated in *LBJ: The Mastermind of the JFK*

Assassination, showing the presidential procession moments after one of the first shots, is arguably the biggest proof of that lie. The other passengers in the same car (Lady Bird and Senator Yarborough) are shown clearly, they have not reacted to the shots at all, yet Johnson has apparently already removed himself as a potential target.**** That is the most compelling evidence of Johnson's foreknowledge of the assassination, and it is probably the very reason he came up with the lie and forced Youngblood to accede to it, as though he had anticipated the need to explain why he wasn't in that photograph. In fact, Youngblood himself hedged on this canard, when he told the Warren Commission that he didn't think he was "in the rear seat before the second shot, but thought it probable because of President Johnson's statement to that effect." Unlike Johnson, who refused to be deposed or to testify to his own commission, agent Youngblood was sworn to tell the truth and was undoubtedly afraid to perjure himself by stating that he did jump over the seat and sat on Johnson. He had also been awarded the highest medal available, and honored by the new president in a White House ceremony ten days after the assassination. This was one of the numerous techniques employed through his patented "Johnson Treatment," so elegantly described by Caro himself in earlier volumes, for ingratiating himself with his "target" in order to exercise control over him or her.

The Johnson Treatment

A news reporter for the *Chicago Tribune*, Willard Edwards, described the "Johnson Treatment" as "his most stirring performances. He whispers, he shouts, he gesticulates, rises up and down, strides, sometimes leaning over his listener and bruising their ribs with a ramrod finger."¹⁵⁴ Johnson's former mistress and mother of his only male child, Madeleine Brown—another name ignored by Robert Caro and most other biographers—described this as "a combination of empty flattery, insistent coaxing, arm-twisting, threats and solicitous wooing, all placed in motion by Lyndon with an endless succession of telephone calls, booze-saturated lunches, vulgar and shocking barnyard jokes, physical contact, compassionate arm-around-the-shoulder camaraderie—as well as the cold stare when crossed."¹⁵⁵

Robert Caro described many of Johnson's more troubling actions yet omitted other incidents that belied some of his most questionable actions. One such example of this was the credible report of Pat Holloway, an attorney in a law firm that assisted Johnson with his taxes and finances, who stated that Lyndon Johnson called the head of the firm, "Waddy" Bullion at 1:00 p.m. on November 22, 1963—just as JFK was being pronounced dead—and complained to him, saying "Oh I gotta get rid of my goddamn Halliburton stock."¹⁵⁶ But stories like that did not conform to the paradigm shift that major Johnson biographers have endeavored to portray.

Mr. Caro then stated that Johnson remained "calm" throughout this harrowing event. No mention was made of Johnson's dour and nervous mood all during the motorcade, or how he had hunched down at various times throughout, using the pretext of listening to a radio, as reported by William Manchester in his acclaimed 1967 book *Death of a President*. Nor was any comment offered about author Steven M. Gillon's discovery that Air Force

General Godfrey McHugh, a personal friend of JFK, after searching the entire plane twice, finally discovered Johnson in the powder room of the aircraft, “crying ‘they’re going to kill us all. It’s a plot. It’s going to kill us all’. Johnson was *hysterical*, sitting down on the john there alone.”¹⁵⁷ [Emphasis added.] Another report also noted by Gillon stated that McHugh actually had to slap Johnson to get him to snap out of his meltdown. These extraordinary, troubling claims have been ignored by author Caro, as if they did not exist. Yet they do, and they are not going away merely because they were not included in his book.

In all of these instances (and more, which have been omitted here for the sake of brevity), Caro decided to ignore highly credible people, men like the aforementioned Clark Clifford, Ralph Yarborough, Pierre Salinger, Kenneth O’Donnell, and numerous others including Robert F. Kennedy in the process of capitulating to Lyndon Johnson’s lies. But these were no ordinary lies, they were his most important, “keystone” lies, all of which became components of Johnson’s plan to become president. As we shall see within these pages, there were other occasions where Caro chose a path that would ensure Johnson’s legacy would be sustained. For example, his eloquent prose regarding Johnson’s achievement of Kennedy’s Civil Rights Bill was further evidence of him giving LBJ the trophy for its passage, even though Johnson had fought for two decades against every meaningful civil rights bill.¹⁵⁸ To support his belief that there was a “pure” element of empathy for the plight of minorities, Caro cited Johnson’s one-year stint as a teacher at a “Mexican school” during which he became the very first teacher who really cared about those students, even helping the illiterate janitor learn English. Given that there was nothing else for a compulsive-obsessive manic like Johnson to do in the desolate and dusty South Texas town of Cotulla, as he completed the requirements for his teacher’s degree, such a notation might have added some context as to why Johnson busied himself with pushing the students and the janitor there in much the same way as he pressed and cajoled everyone else he had ever come into contact with. In fact, author D. Jablow Hershman, in her study of Lyndon Johnson’s mental challenges, *Power Beyond Reason: The Mental Collapse of Lyndon Johnson*, observed that people who knew him there were astounded at his manic drive to accomplish a variety of goals, as though he had a checklist of “good things” to note for his college dean, including much of the school office work, organizing competitions with other schools in sports activities, spelling contests, and debate teams; of course, he was the debate team coach and started a PTA to get the parents and teachers to meet on a regular basis. Author Hershman also noted, “He also did what many dictators do when they establish their cults of personality; he wrote or commissioned a little worshipful song for the students. He required them to stand when he entered the classroom and sing it to him: ‘Is there anything that we can do for you? We will do it if we can, we’ll stand by you to a man.’ This is precisely the attitude he demanded from everyone who worked for him in later years. One of his fellow teachers admitted that while he had displayed much energy, he had a hair trigger temper that could explode quickly into uncontrolled rages. Johnson himself admitted that he was a strict and demanding teacher: “I disciplined ’em. I gave ’em hell. I’d drive ’em, whip ’em.”¹⁵⁹

Another fact that must be considered was that most of those stories about how great a figure he was in Cotulla came from Lyndon Johnson himself, knowing that he had a “legacy” to create. In that respect, it is much like all the other Johnson “whoppers” told in the few reasonably non-obsequious books ever written about Lyndon B. Johnson.

For the entire period of his vice presidency, from January 21, 1961, until November 22, 1963, (continuing his obstinacy about meaningful civil rights legislation for the twenty-three years before that), Johnson had impeded passage of JFK’s agenda, even as the protest marches and demonstrations escalated, Johnson had constantly urged Kennedy to continue waiting for the “right time.” During that period, the evening television news on all three networks routinely covered such outbreaks as the shooting of two people at the University of Mississippi, “Ole Miss,” in 1961 (which eventually required National Guard and other law enforcement organizations to accompany the first black man to enroll there, James Meredith), the continuing reporting on the evening television news of such incidents had become nearly a daily ritual. All during this period, Johnson kept advising Kennedy to hold off introducing any legislation until the “right time” was there. Above anyone else, Johnson, with his legendary political skills, might have been able to open a crack in the congressional stalemate if he had tried using the very same mix of persuasion, threats, and bribery that he was able to muster within months of JFK’s death to push the bill through; he didn’t do that, of course, because, “the time wasn’t right.”

A statement about Johnson made by the previously noted Nancy Dickerson in her 1976 book *Among Those Present: A Reporter’s View of 25 Years in Washington* was eerily prescient. On the Wednesday following the assassination, in a speech to a joint session of Congress, Johnson promised “to continue” JFK’s agenda, and specifically the civil rights bill that the Kennedys had prepared (without Johnson’s assistance) as a “memorial” to JFK. Ms. Dickerson said, “part of [LBJ’s] genius was *his ability to use any event, even an assassination, to get something done—a program started or legislation passed*. [Emphasis added.] Thus, Johnson used this occasion to pull out all the stops for a bill that had been floundering, largely due to his efforts ‘behind the scenes’ to impede its passage. He was acutely aware of the irony of a southern president pleading for the rights of blacks; it was high drama and he loved it. He also knew that it would be hard to turn him down, and it was.”¹⁶⁰ [Emphasis added.]

Threads That Reveal the Tapestry

Throughout this book, a careful reader will discover threads that are woven into the tapestry of this story that connect to similar threads from *LBJ: The Mastermind of the JFK Assassination*. These are simply connecting points, to bring the two works together so they read as one for people who have read that book; for others, they represent certain conclusions formed within that book that are summarized here and become the premise of this book. They are not redundancies as such, even though they may reach a similar point, which serves to bring it back to the forefront with a parallel thread from the previous book. It is simply a means to return to an issue previously covered, with an economy of words, in a way that strongly reinforces—or emphatically rejects, in some cases, weakly argued points since written by other authors—an argument that is essential to the overall thesis,

which is that Lyndon B. Johnson was the highest level “planner” of the assassination of John F. Kennedy.

This conclusion is shared—besides a number of other authors and credible witnesses previously noted—by none other than Roger Stone, a former aide to Presidents Nixon and Reagan and renowned for his sartorial taste and knowledge of how LBJ’s treacheries were known by his contemporary political opponents, the details of which he has laid out in his book *The Man Who Killed Kennedy: The Case Against LBJ*.

Obviously, there were many other high-level culprits, all acting on their individual interest in seeing Kennedy dead, and some believe that Allen Dulles was higher than Johnson in the pecking order as being the singular person who conceived of the original idea and was in charge of its execution. According to a new book by noted author Jerome R. Corsi, *Who Really Killed Kennedy: 50 Years Later*, that is his conclusion. More will be said in the final pages about why that predicate fails, but at this juncture it is sufficient to say that a man who is simply evil is not enough to empower him if he is a man without the “right stuff” to gather and execute power absent the inherent power of his office; in 1963, Allen Dulles was a man without office. He was also a man unfamiliar with the concept that Lyndon Johnson knew well: “Power is where power goes.” Dulles would have considered that to be an abstract and esoteric notion whereas for Johnson it would have been a daily mantra.

The dilemma, in my view, comes down to which of them had the power to manipulate a few dozen people across the governmental bureaucracy, all of whom were essential to the plot’s success. The “Driving Force,” that united not only the key individuals within the intelligence and military communities, but, just as importantly, the other key players throughout the federal bureaucracy as well as the Dallas officials who had to be brought into the planning and execution as well as officials at the state level of law enforcement and judicial powers within Texas. There was really only one man who could also guarantee the promise of life time protection (never mind that, for some, that period would be much shorter than it might otherwise have been) and that person, by definition, was a man who was driven by reckless abandon, with enormous charisma that could be turned on and off on demand; a person whose skills of people manipulation were incomparable to any other person, the kind who still played “King of the Mountain” and would, indeed, crown himself “King of the World” in due course: Lyndon B. Johnson.

For all of the above reasons, Allen Dulles was a very unlikely candidate; as horrid an individual as we now know he was, he was nonetheless a tweed-jacketed, pipe-smoking “thinker” from Princeton, a man who leaned toward introspection and introversion. Any charisma he might have had was rarely observed and would have derived only from the power he held over one agency, even though his tenure with that agency had ended two years previously, after he had been fired from it by JFK. He controlled a relative handful of people compared to (one of) his partners in the “crime of the century.”

It was essential that the Driving Force behind the assassination would know who could be trusted at the topmost levels of each of these entities, whose own connections were to the right actors in the middle and lower rungs who had to be trusted as well. Lyndon

Johnson could control any number of men, from pawing a single target's arms as he hovered over him, putting his face within inches of the other person, while using every tool in his massive bag of tricks to persuade or dissuade, threaten or cajole, bribe or simply demand his way. And he could do similar things to many thousands at a time. As president, he would manipulate millions into following him through some of America's most tumultuous and catastrophic years in its two centuries of existence, except for the Revolutionary War, the Civil War, and the World Wars.

The single most important individual to the enterprise, by definition, had to have been a man whose reach across all governmental agencies—from the FBI to the Secret Service and stretching across the Potomac to the Pentagon, the intelligence agencies upriver where Dulles had served, and other law enforcement and judicial entities whether federal, state, or local police and sheriffs—stretched far, wide, and deep. It required a “Driving Force,” someone like the man Bobby Kennedy once described as “the most formidable human being” he had ever met, to pull all the independent forces together, to function with unity of purpose under emergency conditions: The urgent purpose, Johnson would doubtlessly remind the others, was the continued survival of the nation: For him, and them, as deluded as they were, it was a case of “national security.”

It is axiomatic that the “Driving Force” could only be someone of a mighty and redoubtable character and a manic temperament. It was Johnson's “formidable” presence that was essential to bring all the interested parties together and, as powerful as they might have been, neither Angleton, Dulles, Rockefeller, Hoover, Nixon, nor anyone else was Johnson's equal in the larger political world where he reigned. Lyndon Johnson had practiced it his entire lifetime and had achieved not only similar connections to the Eastern establishment (specifically with Nelson Rockefeller, among others from that group) but with the Suite 8-F crowd in Texas, who were practically begging to handle the financing of the enterprise so they could retain their prized oil depletion allowance.

Johnson's Demons Cannot Be Overlooked

Yet another theme that must be included in this recap of previously established premises came from longtime Johnson aide George Reedy. In one of his observations not previously cited, he described LBJ's “demons” as observed by someone who worked directly with him for more than fifteen years. He explained that during his vice presidency, Johnson had very few substantive matters to attend to but even in those, it was difficult for his assistants to get him to make any decisions. This was due in part to the volume of booze he was consuming and partly because of the many hours he would spend in bed, staring at the ceiling and snarling at anyone who tried to come into his room. These demons, said Reedy, would possess him in any position he might have short of the presidency. His descriptions of Johnson's frame of mind during the mid-1960s period provide further validation of similar observations from many others, which blend together to clearly illustrate not only how Johnson had craved achieving the presidency, but the mania that drove him to acquire it. The most compelling of them illustrate the symptoms of his paranoia and bi polar disorders that combined to propel him to commit multiple murders and treasons.¹⁶¹

Reedy's stunning comment, as one of Johnson's highest level aides, deserves careful scrutiny: Reedy said there was a "demon" within Johnson driving him toward the presidency. Is it possible that Reedy also knew what had propelled Johnson into the White House? The reader may be consoled that, with enough time, all truths will be revealed, but not necessarily in our lifetime, as Earl Warren once admitted to a reporter who asked when the complete truth would be known, but: "Not in your lifetime."

In this case, the worst of the truths spilled out randomly, sporadically, and independently of each other over many decades, as a few examples will illustrate: One such example was Richard Goodwin's candid 1988 book *Remembering America*, about what he and Bill Moyers witnessed as Lyndon Johnson experienced multiple, apparently psychotic, breakdowns became one of the most important of these. Texas Ranger Clint Peoples's dedicated search for the truth about those unsolved multiple murders from 1952 to 1962 and his vouching for the credibility of Billie Sol Estes in 1984 regarding his charges against Johnson, which fully imbues the Estes story with that essential credibility, was another. Yet another was the experience of two previously honest businessmen—the insurance salesman Don Reynolds and the vending machine entrepreneur Ralph Hill—who were caught in the web of deceit woven by Bobby Baker and Lyndon Johnson for their extortion, which resulted in both men becoming furious with Johnson and Baker for destroying their businesses. The relentless 1963–65 investigation of Senator John Williams, the "conscience of the Senate" who nearly single-handedly pursued the criminal trail, was a most critical element. The perseverance of newsmen William Lambert, Keith Wheeler, and Clark Mollenhoff, whose reportage led to the crumbling of the Bobby Baker empire, further validates the overall scope of the Johnson lies. A final example of the many was Robert Winter-Berger's stunning 1972 account, detailed in *LBJ: The Mastermind of the JFK Assassination*, of the February, 1964, meeting in Speaker John McCormack's office where he witnessed Lyndon Johnson in meltdown, afraid his three months in the office he had craved for nearly five decades would soon come to an end, until he realized that Winter-Berger could solve his problem by getting Bobby Baker, with the promise of a \$1 million payoff, to "keep his lips sealed and take the fall."

These random events, each of which form a fractional part of the overall mosaic, fit together like a giant-sized but intricate jigsaw puzzle as they kept randomly spilling out over the last several decades of the twentieth century, now continuing into the third millennium. As they do, even more real truths will be revealed and future generations will finally understand what happened to us as a country.

In their work, *Lyndon Johnson: The Tragic Self*, psychiatrists Hyman L. Muslin and Thomas H. Jobe, based on an intensive study of all the known facts at that point in time, affirmed the conclusions of Roland Evans and Robert Novak, that Lyndon Johnson's guiding principles in all of his behavioral traits were:¹⁶²

1. Attention to detail;
2. Emphasis on secrecy;
3. Producing a crisis or a dramatic situation;

4. Whatever works, use it and ideologies be damned.

Much has been written already about items 1, 2, and 4. Regarding item 3 of this list, the authors wrote: “Johnson relished theatrical staging. He believed he was more credible if he headed a government that was in crisis or engaged in periodic dramatic moves.” (Precisely what Nancy Dickerson referred to in her previous comment about using JFK’s assassination for the purpose of getting “his” agenda for civil rights passed.) Furthermore, Muslin and Jobe pointed out how the announcements regarding not only the Vietnam escalations but the insertion of the US military into other countries such as the Dominican Republic (as examples of many others) were “shrouded in secrecy” and issued during the night in an effort to minimize their significance.¹⁶³ By setting up the Tonkin Gulf incident then—three months before the presidential election—he knew that the patriotic reaction to the “attack,” would ensure even more public support as he continued showing the world the “restraint” that he knew the public would also appreciate, especially when comparing this candidate with his opponent, a man properly characterized as rather militant and confrontational with other countries whose priorities did not mesh with his own. Oddly, even some contemporary authors and reporters noted this, yet the public remained in such shock that they still had not realized the real threat: David Halberstam said the Gulf of Tonkin incident “provided the factor of patriotism.” Popular columnists Evans and Novak called his retaliatory air strikes a “shrewd political act shoring up Johnson against the Republican campaign charge that he was soft on Communism.”¹⁶⁴ Author Joseph Goulden’s (*Truth Is the First Casualty: The Gulf of Tonkin Affair and Reality* [1969]) conclusion was that the Tonkin Gulf incident was a pretext developed in the White House designed to force Congress to adopt a resolution for Johnson to use to escalate the war without the need to get further congressional support after he won reelection.¹⁶⁵

This point will be referenced in the later chapters because it was central to his most crushing defeats and the nation’s greatest loss of life and treasury on a completely unnecessary war, one fought only to assuage the president’s own ego and vanity, and grow his personal wealth. And it is precisely what led to his falling popularity—a record high to a record low in record time—that forced him to withdraw from the presidential race of 1968, allowing Robert Kennedy an opening to run for the presidency. RFK’s campaign for the presidency was one of the fastest rising but shortest in history. His murder was timed to eliminate him as a contender before he had a chance to take the Chicago convention by storm in 1968, which would have been an enormous embarrassment to the sitting president.

Lyndon Johnson understood that his brand of politics, to play whichever side would ultimately benefit him—as he had done in 1940 when he and his key backers abandoned their long-time support for the titular head of the Texas Democratic Party, Vice President James Garner, when they publicly returned to FDR’s camp—required a unique set of skills and some temporary setbacks. He did the same thing again in 1949, when he set out an elaborate plan to destroy the career and reputation of Leland Olds, the force behind the Federal Power Commission who had practically single-handedly accomplished rural

electrification, something Lyndon himself took so much credit for with his Texas constituents. This cost him much support from the liberal wing of his own party, which happened again in 1957 when he pushed through a civil rights bill that they viewed as a sell out, a betrayal. He knew it would require something very special to buy that support back and he knew it would take years to accomplish: seven years in fact, from 1957 to 1964.

As noted in *LBJ: The Mastermind of the JFK Assassination*, that legislation also cost him much support from his base on the conservative side of the party as well: Noted columnist and television pundit James J. Kilpatrick wrote in *Human Events* that “however he may be respected on the Senate floor, [he] is neither liked nor admired below the Potomac... . In the South of 1960, as in the South of 1870, a carpetbagger may be bad, but a scalawag is worse.” Newspapers across the South carried headlines like the one in the *Augusta Herald*, “South Is Betrayed Again by Johnson for the Sake of His Own Ambitions” and “The Southern Benedict Arnold” in the *Jacksonville Times-Union*.¹⁶⁶ By 1957, Johnson’s routine of adopting conservative positions for conservatives, quickly followed by complete flip-flops to appease liberals, had come back to bite him; his influence in the Senate had begun to wane as a result and by 1960 he had used up most of his “bully pulpit” power in that body. As Johnson biographer Robert Dallek noted, by 1960 Johnson had lost any effectiveness he had remaining with northern liberals and there was bitterness in other quarters of the Democratic caucus; he had come to the end of his majority leadership as a result of how he had alienated so many within his party. Johnson had lost his position as the all-powerful leader of the Senate by 1960, and “Eliot Janeway [an influential economist and political analyst] stated that Johnson ‘was very bitter against a good third of the Democratic caucus’ and ‘very anxious to get out of the majority leadership. Johnson would have paid for the vice presidency.’”¹⁶⁷

Johnson’s Efforts to Reform His Image

Lyndon Johnson had long realized that his crude, boorish, and loud behavior might seem un presidential to some (perhaps he heard someone use the phrase “noise is golden” in reference to his style, which some on Kennedy’s staff had done on occasion).¹⁶⁸ Robert Caro’s latest work confirms much of what we’ve noted previously about the hateful relationship between Johnson and Robert Kennedy and even more about how so many of the “Kennedy people” throughout the administration treated Johnson with condescension or even contempt. One illustration of this was described by former US Treasurer Elizabeth Gatov: “Really, it was brutal, the stories that they were passing, and the jokes, and the inside nasty stuff about Lyndon. When he mispronounced ‘hors d’oeuvres’ as ‘whore doves,’ the mistake was all over Georgetown in what seemed an instant.”¹⁶⁹ Being the brunt of jokes throughout Georgetown (and, by extension, Washington, DC, and in every other city connected to the capital through their politicians), was not something Lyndon appreciated at all. He knew that people were calling him nicknames like “Uncle Cornpone” or “Rufus” or “Judge Crater” (the latter referenced a judge who disappeared and was never seen again, which, in 1962–1963 was a metaphor for how Lyndon Johnson had seemingly disappeared from public view altogether).¹⁷⁰

Admittedly, in the shadowy corners of his world, he was also a genius, albeit in only a Svengalian/Machiavellian context, and that was tempered by his other dominating character trait we have demonstrated previously: His cowardice. To counteract these negative perceptions, he attempted to use public relations campaigns to remake his image, which explains why he took Jack Valenti, a Houston advertising executive, back to Washington immediately after JFK's murder. That pattern started as early as 1930, when he pressured his mentor, Southwest Texas State Teacher's College president Cecil (Prexy) Evans, to have certain pages of the college yearbook excised, so that future researchers would not see how he had been mocked by his classmates, who referred to him as "Bullshit Johnson" for his ceaseless lying, his constant conniving, his secretiveness and manipulation of others, and the hyperbole he used about everything, leading many to refer to him in a uniquely Dickensian term: Uriah Heep—a fictional character meeting all of these descriptions and best known for his phony "umbleness."

A good example of one device Johnson had experimented with, at least briefly, in his search for new ways of people manipulation was described by his aide George Reedy, who said that Johnson had heard about the latest theories on "subliminal conditioning" and said he began to experiment with the concept on his own, often muttering the word "sincere" into his speeches even when it was completely out of context and had no meaning whatsoever to the message he was attempting to communicate. Reedy explained that this left his audiences bewildered for a while, until he stopped the practice before reporters started to question his sanity.¹⁷¹

Johnson assigned Horace Busby, among others, to work on improving his presidential image. According to biographer Robert Dallek, one suggestion Busby made was to have the presidential photographer take photos as he followed the president and Mrs. Johnson around the White House gardens, strolling hand in hand, or as they sat together reading books before retiring to bed. "A portrait of him bowling with one of his daughters would convey a wholesome father-daughter closeness."¹⁷² Even before that, he had also tasked his aide George Reedy, a former journalist, and Phil Graham, publisher of the *Washington Post*, to portray Johnson as a deep thinker, an idea that was intended to germinate over time, into the notion that this was a fundamental part of his make up.¹⁷³ Author Dallek did not speculate on how Reedy and Johnson might have approached this point, but it is not unreasonable to suspect that they shared a big laugh at the absurdity of the very idea. The notion of Johnson as "thoughtful man," juxtaposed to this description of the man by his longtime friend and associate, John Connally, should help to justify the use of the term "absurdity":

His whole life was politics. He didn't read books. I don't want to embarrass his family, but I might ask them if they ever remember him reading a book. I don't ever remember him reading a book ... he didn't have time to read books. He was committed to succeeding as a politician.¹⁷⁴

Johnson even admitted that he was never a reader. Author Philip Geyelin wrote in his 1966 book *Lyndon B. Johnson and the World*, "By his own account, he cannot remember having

read ‘six books all the way through’ since college ... his scholarship in history or philosophy or any of the arts and sciences is negligible; his learning lies largely in what he had managed to absorb in a lifetime of public service ...”¹⁷⁵ It can be safely assumed that if he couldn’t remember reading six books, it is more than likely that the actual number of books he might have even scanned is closer to zero. Of course, he had plenty of advisers who he could rely on to give him the answers for questions on anything that required reading, so that wasn’t a requirement for the job. But it did reflect on his general knowledge of the world and produced within him a very limited understanding of the culture and the nuances of life in other parts of the world.

By 1967, despite the pressure created by the Republican trouncing of the Democratic Party in the 1966 congressional elections, Johnson’s biggest challenges sprang from others in his own party. For over two years, Johnson was fully in command of every aspect of the federal government; that was weakened by the Republican gains in Congress but Vietnam had caused a split within his own party that portended even greater loss of power in 1968. He still planned to run for reelection throughout 1967 and nearly all the first quarter of 1968, yet he had lost the support of the party’s “intelligentsia” and even some of his blue-collar supporters. The big-city riots in the summers of 1965–67 (which would extend even more violently for several more years) had started in the inner cities, arguably sparked in part by some of the vitriolic comments he himself had uttered previously. The new militancy of black leaders who had become impatient with Martin Luther King’s wishes to remain non violent were part of the cause as well, ironically as it happened, in the period right after the passage of the long delayed 1964 Civil Rights Act and the 1965 Voting Rights Act. Although, in signing the first of these, he *publicly* said, “we have lost the South for a generation” he *privately* predicted at about the same time, “I’ll have them niggers voting Democratic for the next two hundred years.”¹⁷⁶

Johnson’s keen political eye had been more trained to follow polls than any politician before him, and by 1967, those polls told him the worst news possible. It was a nightmare for him to comprehend that it looked more and more likely that Robert Kennedy, of all people, increasingly appeared to be his putative challenger the following year. This was not his only worry during that period of course. Others loomed even more precariously: The worsening situation in Vietnam, and the anger it engendered in much of the population; the ongoing Garrison JFK assassination investigation in New Orleans that threatened exposure of secrets that could have brought him down; growing tensions in the Middle East that caused many of his top-level advisers to begin a series of “contingency plans” for US action during a potentially very lethal Arab-Israeli war that was brewing throughout the last few months of the year, continuing into 1968; and several new books and television documentaries that had cast a skeptical eye on the veracity of the Warren Commission Report. But his drop in the polls made his political future more than just problematic: the future course of his entire life now looked ominous, especially if Bobby Kennedy ever became president, regardless of which year that might happen.

Lyndon Johnson—ever conscious of his reputation, and enraged by anyone who had slighted him in any way (real or imagined)—had made numerous attempts to improve his

public relations skills. Practically the entire time (approximately six months) of his military “experience” was actually spent in Hollywood, taking lessons in public speaking and practice in sitting for portrait photography. Some of those five months—before getting his special trip to New Zealand where he was awarded a Silver Star for taking a twenty-minute airplane ride, never encountering the enemy¹⁷⁷—was consumed in making special “inspection trips” to military bases along the West Coast. Again and again, throughout his rise to the White House, and again after he achieved it, he would have his assistants working on different ways to improve his public image. Yet he knew all along that much of the public record actually exposed his intrinsic “phoniness.” He even admitted as much, according to the revealing colloquy below, part of those now-public records at the LBJ Library through an oral history interview with his long time aide Harry McPherson:¹⁷⁸

Johnson came in and he started looking through photographs, himself with various people. And he said, “God, look at that photograph.” And it had what I call his John Wayne look—you know, the smile as we look into the Western sunset with Old Paint.***** “Uncle Lyndon looks to the West.” And he said, “Have you ever seen anything phonier in your life?”

McPherson admitted that the phoniness was real and that Johnson even explained it away by saying that he didn’t want to be there with the photographer, and that he wasn’t interested in having the photo taken; it was for those reasons that his phoniness was on display and couldn’t be hidden.

Despite his intrinsic dishonesty—the phoniness he and his top aides knew was just beneath the surface, and which permeated his being, the contempt for the very people from whom he begged for votes, the condescension and meanness with which he treated them and the criminal acts they must have known he completed—many, if not most, of the assistants or high-level aides stayed with him for decades. Even then, they left “loving him,” just as Harry McPherson admitted, after working for him for thirteen years.

As noted earlier, only someone with the same level of ability as Johnson himself, who could see into the very soul of the people he surrounded himself with—or possibly someone with a PhD in psychology, a gifted hypnotist, savant, or magician—might understand that stunning contradiction. On the other hand, their loyalty might have simply been attributed to their own unbridled greed, ambition, and love of power—the very same things that drove their boss to such heights—and they just wanted to tag along with him for whatever purposes each had.

Some of Johnson’s former aides, lovers, and high-level associates are still alive, and if they dared speak publicly—but honestly and candidly—they might be able to explain the incoherence of the above dilemma. One clearly visible characteristic of Johnson’s that was probably the key reason for this anomaly was his ability to “compartmentalize” his involvements with men such as Billie Sol Estes, Bobby Baker, Malcolm “Mac” Wallace, Ed Clark, and Cliff Carter apart from most of the others like McPherson and Jack Valenti. Legend has it that certain of his top-level aides or lovers, to this day, still profess to feel this way about him, even knowing many of the truths as revealed in this book and *LBJ: The*

Mastermind of the JFK Assassination. From a distance, and a time in another age many decades later, this may seem a little odd, even unbelievable, but it is one of the key reasons his real “legacy” has not previously been completely revealed.

Johnson’s Manipulation of His Recruits and Fellow Conspirators

The premise of the book *LBJ: The Mastermind of the JFK Assassination* was that it was he, using his well-developed skills of subterfuge and deceit, always under a veil of secrecy, who brought together the high echelon men from the military and intelligence services, the FBI and the Secret Service, to carry out the mission. He had positioned himself into the office of vice president in 1960, with substantial help from his old friend J. Edgar Hoover, for the very purpose of using it as a springboard into the presidency upon the early demise of Kennedy; how it would be accomplished was left for future planning. Almost as soon as the new administration was sworn in, Johnson had already started quarreling privately—always privately, never publicly—with JFK about practically everything on his agenda, not least of which was the handling of the Bay of Pigs fiasco. Johnson took the side of the military and CIA planners against JFK, advocating to openly invade Cuba and eliminate Castro. Doris Kearns acknowledged this point: “Unable, then or later, during the miseries of his time as vice president, to express anger toward John Kennedy in public, or even in many private settings, Johnson projected his bad feelings onto the nearest target, and that was Bobby.”¹⁷⁹ Within four months of Kennedy’s inauguration, he had major arguments with the president about going—and then again upon his return—on a trip to South Vietnam. As Johnson’s influence with the Kennedys and their “New Frontiersmen” waned during 1961 and 1962, Johnson could see the handwriting on the wall: If something did not happen soon to change the natural course of events, he would be off the ticket in 1964 and lose all hope of ever becoming president.

By 1962, there were a number of men who came to share Johnson’s desire to replace Kennedy, but no one was more serious about it, or had worked toward that goal for years, even decades; and none were as resolute in their intentions. After the Cuban missile crisis in October of that year, coming as it did on top of the Bay of Pigs fiasco eighteen months before, the Berlin crisis and constant dissention over Laos and Vietnam in between—propelled in part by the many accounts of JFK’s personal indiscretions, unknown to the public at the time but not to the “insiders”—many other high officials, some having even more militant opinions on the subject of national security or more puritanical views on presidential conduct, became concerned about the potential risk of Kennedy’s exposure to blackmail by Communists of the Eastern Bloc. A plan for “executive action” directed toward President Kennedy was beginning to take shape in the winter of 1962–63, by the upper echelon (men such as Cord Meyer, James Angleton, Bill Harvey, and probably James Rowley or J. Edgar Hoover) who had begun working toward the goal that had been set by the genius of manipulation, the man who uniquely had the motive, means, opportunity, and the narcissistic, megalomaniacal, and sociopathic personality to carry it out. And the only man who could guarantee that they would not be caught and prosecuted for their treasonous acts.

By March and April 1963, many actions had already been taken to prepare for the

assassination, either in Dallas, Chicago, New Orleans, New York, or Miami. For example, on March 12, 1963, Oswald supposedly purchased a mail order rifle from Klein's Sporting Goods in Chicago, which was then shipped to "A. Hidell" at a post office box owned by Lee H. Oswald, which should have made it undeliverable according to postal regulations. On April 10, 1963, Oswald allegedly tried to use the rifle to attempt to kill General Edwin Walker in his home at 4011 Turtle Creek Boulevard in Dallas, although there is considerable doubt he was even involved in it (both of these events were most certainly performed by others to "frame" Oswald for future use).

On April 24, 1963, the same day that Oswald left Dallas for New Orleans, the *Dallas Times Herald* printed a story (which had been prematurely leaked by Johnson, without final White House approval) that announced President Kennedy's plan for visiting Dallas. During this period, CIA agent extraordinaire Bill Harvey, who was RFK's other nemesis from Operation Mongoose and ZR Rifle, as noted in *LBJ: The Mastermind of the JFK Assassination*, had been carrying on several meetings in Washington, DC, and Miami prior to his move to Rome. Having been fired by Bobby Kennedy, Harvey continued his series of meetings, in the spring and summer of 1963 with gadabout mobster and CIA-connected Johnny Rosselli, which apparently morphed the shelved plan to assassinate Fidel Castro into a blueprint for JFK's murder.¹⁸⁰

Johnson Knew He Was Being Dropped in 1964

Johnson was very much aware that Bobby Kennedy was already laying plans to have him dropped from the 1964 ticket, and this was a subject widely known throughout Washington at that time.¹⁸¹ According to the late columnist Robert Novak, among others, even Johnson himself knew, as early as the summer of 1962, that the Kennedys were planning to drop him from the 1964 ticket. Novak had just married George Reedy's secretary, Geraldine Williams, and spent a Sunday with her in the summer of 1962 at Johnson's Northwest Washington home called The Elms when he found himself alone with Johnson sitting by the swimming pool. The two of them sat drinking whiskey and Johnson began talking more and more candidly, telling Novak that the Kennedy administration was getting into serious trouble with the military and intelligence communities and was then losing the competition with the Communists called the "Cold War." This was an unmistakable hint of the trouble already brewing between Kennedy and his own military and intelligence officials. Johnson's comments were self-serving, but that was his mind-set regardless of whether they were true or not true: He told Novak that he had done "everything the Kennedys had wanted" but was treated with condescension by all of them, especially Bobby, who was intent on dumping him in 1964:

"But I'm going to fool them," he said. "I'm going to pack it in after the term ends and go home to Texas." ... Johnson's protégé, John B. Connally, had just won the Democratic nomination for governor of Texas, Talking about Big John in that summer evening in 1962 led Johnson into self-pity. "John has turned my picture to the wall," LBJ told me. "You know I would never turn *his* picture to the wall."¹⁸²

Robert Novak was not the only one to have heard these comments from Lyndon Johnson.

It is likely that he had similar, undoubtedly even more damning, conversations with men he was much closer to, such as the Texas oilmen and his “back channel” acquaintances: men high up in the military and intelligence hierarchies, his friend and neighbor J. Edgar Hoover, and his collaborator in Austin, Ed Clark.

Another example of the fact that the word of Johnson’s being dropped from the ticket in 1964 occurred on January 4, 1963, when Bobby gave a speech at the National Archives for the opening of an exhibition celebrating the centennial of the Emancipation Proclamation. The text was derived from a speech Arthur Schlesinger had written for JFK but not delivered on New Year’s Day because Kennedy was in Palm Beach, and he didn’t think such a speech would work if delivered in a very wealthy, white, and segregated city such as that. Bobby made some changes and used it as Schlesinger, along with Joe Rauh, the head of Americans for Democratic Action (ADA), watched in the audience. Schlesinger wrote in his book *Journals: 1952–2000* that Rauh passed a note to Schlesinger at the end of the speech that simply said: “‘Poor Lyndon.’ I asked Joe what he meant. He said, ‘Lyndon must know he is through. Bobby is going to be the next President.’”¹⁸³

Throughout the first eleven months of 1963, Johnson complained to many of his own aides—as well as Bobby Baker, until they had to stop speaking to each other after Baker’s troubles forced him to resign from his Senate position—that Bobby Kennedy was after him, trying to force him off the 1964 vice presidential ticket. One such account of this was written by George Reedy, who worked for Johnson for fourteen years. Reedy stated that Johnson had put the blame for the Bobby Baker scandal completely on the “constant pressure from Bobby Kennedy” who, he claimed was out to get him, and “knife him in the back.” Reedy simply blamed it all on Johnson’s paranoia, as he was undoubtedly used to doing out of habit.¹⁸⁴

Despite Reedy’s opinion that Johnson was being his normal paranoid self, it is clear that in this case, there was plenty of evidence to show that Johnson was correct: Reedy *was* naive, because—as demonstrated by the statements made by James Wagenvoort, an assistant editor at *Life* magazine in 1963, who said that Bobby Kennedy was feeding information to the magazine throughout the summer and early fall of 1963, for the very purpose of forcing Johnson off the ticket—there were many other indications of newsmen being encouraged to “go after” Johnson.¹⁸⁵

Another witness to Bobby’s plotting to “get rid” of LBJ from the 1964 ticket was journalist Phil Brennan, who in the 1960s and 1970s authored a column for the *National Review* magazine using the pseudonym “Cato.” For forty years, he held back the story of his personal involvement in the fight between Bobby Kennedy and Lyndon Johnson. Finally, in 2003, he published a column in *Newsmax* titled “Some Relevant Facts About the JFK Assassination” that described the background leading up to his sudden involvement in the brush-up between the two. He stated that the Washington press corps had buried the stories about the feud between the vending machine entrepreneur Ralph Hill and Bobby Baker, as they fought over the kick-back price Baker wanted to charge for his private handling of government contracts. Then, suddenly, word came that Brennan should tell Senator John Williams about the details, because he wanted to investigate the story. That

led to Senator Williams asking him to introduce him to Ralph Hill, which led to a full-scale Senate investigation, including all the ties to Lyndon B. Johnson.¹⁸⁶

A few days later, the attorney general, Bobby Kennedy, called five of Washington's top reporters into his office and told them it was now open season on Lyndon Johnson. It's OK, he told them, to go after the story they were ignoring out of deference to the administration.

Until November 22, 1963, according to Mr. Brennan, the Democrats on the hill were fully cooperating with the investigation. Immediately after Johnson became president, that cooperation stopped, and eventually both of the Senate committees stopped their investigation into the criminal past of the new president.

These independent, voluntarily proffered statements, from first hand witnesses having no apparent "axe to grind" about the behind-the-scenes skulduggery going on during 1963—documenting the fact that the Kennedys were out to destroy Johnson's political career and fully intent on seeing him prosecuted and imprisoned—provide ample proof of this point.***** All of the maneuvering by the Kennedys behind the scenes to "dump Lyndon" finally became widely known, through leaks by the many people involved, and thus became fodder for the Washington rumor mill. The sources for the "rumors" circulating throughout Washington by day increased geometrically at night, starting at Capitol Hill. They were repeated over cocktails and again at dinners in Georgetown. The "dump Lyndon" talk had sprouted during the early spring, bloomed in the summer, and, by the fall of 1963, had flowered into the ubiquitous talk of the town.¹⁸⁷

It was they—John F. Kennedy and Robert F. Kennedy—who instructed news reporters to "get" Lyndon B. Johnson. "All the really bad stuff" being revealed could be traced directly to him from his two close associates—Estes and Baker—and practically guaranteed that if the Kennedys had allowed Johnson to be on the 1964 ticket, it would be a time bomb that could have been set off by any number of people in Washington who also knew what was inevitably awaiting Lyndon Johnson if nothing intervened to change that outcome. As had happened time and again with the powerful Texas senator—his tainted election to Congress in 1937 at age twenty-eight; his ability to steal the 1948 Senate election; his becoming the youngest majority leader of the Senate in 1955; his forced "selection" as the vice presidential candidate in 1960—Johnson was in the "right place at the right time," in November 1963. He managed to become president at exactly the right time; and just in time to begin shutting down both of the Senate investigations into his corruption.

The official story advanced by the Kennedys and their acolytes, was that "of course" Lyndon would remain on the ticket. Because they were still working on their scheme to get rid of him, naturally they continued denying there was any effort to replace him in 1964 until they had the stage set. An admission too early would fly in the face of their public statements and they were not yet ready to acknowledge that they were working behind the scenes on several fronts to make sure he was not only off the ticket but that he would more than likely be in prison, or at least on his way there, by then. After the news media had

published the pending exposé about how he had accumulated his multimillion-dollar fortune, while further implicating him into the unfolding Bobby Baker scandal, they would simply let history “take its natural course” and let justice be done. Skeptics of this historical fact, apparently oblivious to the nuances of political realities and the prevarications of politicians, will point out that John Kennedy denied it then and Bobby Kennedy did as well, for several years afterward. Of course they denied it. Such a plan had to be based on the premise of “plausible deniability,” and, having failed to materialize before the assassination, could not be admitted after it, for many reasons.

Before the assassination, as they waited for the final *Life* article that would assuredly force Johnson’s resignation, or at least force him from the ticket, they needed to wait for the public pressure that would have inevitably been generated by a full exposé on Johnson’s crimes. Combined with the two Senate investigations that must have looked to Johnson like runaway trains heading toward an imminent collision, the possibility of an indictment before the end of the year had begun looking more and more certain. When the time was right, and Johnson was about to be censored, impeached, or indicted, the Kennedys had expected to react as surprised as everyone else, and act as if they were simply caught off guard by the depths of Johnson’s criminality, which of course they would portray as having been previously unknown to them. After JFK’s assassination, Bobby had ample reason to continue denying that plan for fear of LBJ’s predictable retaliation against him should he do anything that Johnson didn’t like. JFK’s secretary, Evelyn Lincoln, provided additional keen insights about Johnson’s behavior as vice president, explaining this was part of the reason for the growing chasm between them: that he talked too much during meetings, usually obstructing, rather than supporting, JFK’s agenda. Inexorably, the amount of time they spent together decreased every year during the Kennedy presidency as he increasingly became an irritant to JFK.¹⁸⁸

Immediately after JFK’s assassination, *Life* suspended further work on the article then underway that James Wagenvoord said was intended to end Johnson’s political career and possibly send him to prison. Subsequently, the story was put on hold as the publishers reconsidered the question of pursuing it further, given the potential for violent political insurrection if the story had been vigorously pursued as Bobby had originally intended. According to Mr. Wagenvoord, “On Kennedy’s death, research files and all numbered copies of the nearly print-ready draft were gathered up by my boss (he had been the top editor on the team) and shredded.”¹⁸⁹

By then, *Life* was not the only major news magazine on the trail of this story; in its December 7, 1963, story just two weeks after the assassination, the second most popular magazine of the era, *Look*, printed an article titled “Bobby Was the Boy to See,”¹⁹⁰ which detailed how Bobby Baker’s power and influence had ascended over many years working under Lyndon Johnson, then descended within weeks after the stories of his extortion, bribery, and, for lack of a better word, “pimping,” became fodder for the Washington scandal mill. The following excerpts of that very incisive article, considering its date, spoke volumes:

Sometime between January 3, 1955, when Bobby became secretary for the majority,

and September 9, 1963, when the Hill lawsuit started him tumbling down, his friends noticed that something was happening to Bobby Baker. Some of his oldest companions think, at least in retrospect, that this change began at the exact moment when it dawned upon Lyndon Johnson that he might become President of the United States.

The December 7, 1963, *Look* article goes on to cite several examples of how Bobby Baker's focus on attending to normal business as the secretary of the Senate was overtaken by absentmindedness and confusion, as though he had other things on his mind. It noted a number of those "things," such as the letter he had written to a business partner, Alfred S. Novak, acknowledging the receipt of his share of the sale of stock in the Mortgage Guaranty Insurance Company, which had been trying to get a favorable ruling from the government involving tax concessions; through the use of his insider connections, Bobby knew in advance that the government was going to give them a favorable ruling so he bought 3,000 shares of stock in the firm. His letter to Mr. Novak stated: "As you know, we received a total of \$66,889.86 from the sale... . This stock cost us \$4,905.00 each." Mr. Novak was also heavily involved with Bobby on other deals, including the development of the Carousel, the first "high-rise" resort hotel in Ocean City, Maryland.

The article then stated that his partner Alfred Novak died at his DC home in a rather mysterious way that just happened to be very similar to a number of other staged "suicides" during precisely the same period of time. These followed Henry Marshall's obvious murder (brazenly labeled "suicide" as previously described) by nine months and Lyndon Johnson's sister Josefa's by three months, and preceded a whole succession of deaths of Billie Sol Estes's associates (five in all) that started a few weeks later, mostly in Texas. George Krutilek was the first of this series, murdered immediately after being questioned by two FBI agents on April 2, 1962. The deaths of both Krutilek and Novak involved the use of carbon monoxide poisoning, although in Krutilek's case, that was not what killed him: In yet another parallel (to the beating and multiple shooting of Henry Marshall) the El Paso pathologist determined that he had actually been beaten to death. Alfred Novak died after being found unconscious in his garage, with his car's motor running.¹⁹¹ As described in detail in *LBJ: The Mastermind of the JFK Assassination*, coincidentally, Johnson's personal hit man, Malcolm "Mac" Wallace repeatedly tried to use "death by carbon monoxide" devices to kill his victims.

In the meantime, *Life* sent lead writer William Lambert and Mike Silvia, an investigative reporter, to Austin to continue their research. But before they left for Austin, Bobby Kennedy called Lambert and asked him to stop by his office so they could talk before Lambert and Silvia went to Texas. According to a highly credible, though little-known, book by John Campbell, *How CATV Came to Texas*, "*LBJ Country*," when Lambert arrived at RFK's office however, Bobby explained that he believed his office was illegally bugged and took him to another building and into a restroom so they could talk privately. According to Campbell, RFK wanted to know all about the reasons he was going to Texas and the details of what he had already learned about Johnson's financial schemes and asked him to give him further information after he had finished his investigation.¹⁹²

Lambert promised Kennedy to report upon his return, but the exposé on Johnson would be trimmed back substantially after the assassination, and delayed for nine months by the publishers of Time-Life, the chairman of which was Henry Luce and the managing editor of which was C. D. Jackson, both ultra-conservative Republicans with direct connections to Allen Dulles for at least a decade, since the earliest days of the CIA, through Operation Mockingbird.

After the assassination, it immediately became too late for Bobby Kennedy to carry out the original plan that he and his brother had put together to get rid of Johnson once and for all, through proper legal channels designed precisely for the purpose of keeping criminals away from executive positions within the federal government (though the record attests to its many failures). Now, the pendulum had swung completely to Johnson's side, where the niceties of due process could be recast more easily and quickly with a scene right out of the Wild West: an ambush in a "shooting zone," which had been set up for deployment within a "canyon" of sorts, having only one way out, the shooting executed by professionals recruited for the purpose.

Ultimately, substantive parts of the original *Life* article were cut. The worst of the allegations—multiple charges of murder involving Johnson's political enemies, employees of Billie Sol Estes whom Johnson distrusted, and even Johnson's own sister—were removed from the article "for political purposes."¹⁹³ Those deletions left only Johnson's dubious financial dealings and thus the article's title: "How LBJ's Family Amassed Its Fortune." It divulged Johnson's immense wealth, despite his having started with nothing and his living in Washington for over twenty-five years on a congressman's, then senator's salary. An excerpt from the series that was finally printed in August, 1964, describes how an Austin man, afraid to use his own name—someone who had known Lyndon closely for three decades by then—without using the clinical terms, talked about Johnson's mania in layman's language. Unfortunately, his eloquent though simple words, read by people still reeling from shock and terror of JFK's murder, were not persuasive enough to warn the world of the dangerous character traits their new president represented. The anonymous man from the Texas Plains described in the very plainest words Johnson's overwhelming ambitions and his insatiable appetite for power over everyone else in the world. These words from a contemporary magazine read by millions were some of the most revealing and startling, albeit ignored, words ever spoken about Lyndon B. Johnson. The Texan mulled over the question posed to him, "When will LBJ slow down." His answer was:

I'll put it this way: Lyndon will relax when he has it all—not before." All what? "*All there is of everything.*" He continues: "Now, when I say that LBJ wants it all and intends to get it, I mean something like this, he wants all the respect, all the admiration and all the love there is. He wants all the votes there are. He doesn't just want to win in 1964, he wants to win bigger than anybody ever did."¹⁹⁴ [Emphasis added.]

The Texan then said that Johnson wanted all the land, money, and power that he could muster and that he wanted historians to write not that he was as good as Lincoln as a president, but that he wants to be known as better than Lincoln. Not coincidentally, one of

Johnson's favorite tributes to himself, which he carried around in his coat pocket so he could show it to everyone he might come into contact with, was a letter from historian Allan Nevins, who wrote a lengthy note that compared him favorably to Abraham Lincoln.¹⁹⁵ (This suggests that Nevins himself was using his note as a way to ingratiate himself into Johnson's "inner circle.")*****

Bobby Kennedy probably read the *Life* articles and nodded quietly to himself when he read that paragraph; he might have even felt vindicated for having planned in 1963 to knock Johnson off the ticket. As demonstrated previously, Johnson knew that Bobby was behind the leaks and investigations, and repeated it to several people, including the aforementioned columnist Robert Novak, who wrote about it in his 2007 book *Prince of Darkness*.¹⁹⁶ Another example of this appeared in Drew Pearson's and Jack Anderson's 1968 book *The Case Against Congress: A Compelling Indictment of Corruption on Capitol Hill*, where it was stated that one of the senators firmly devoted to Johnson—and comparable to him, in many ways—Thomas J. Dodd of Connecticut, was also as loyal to him as a "toy poodle is to a woman with a large lap."¹⁹⁷ According to Pearson and Anderson, Dodd told his staff that "the Kennedy people were out to ruin [Johnson] completely by making him look like a 'crook' and forcing him out of the Vice Presidency in 1964... . The key to the Irish Mafia plot, as Johnson saw it, was the Bobby Baker scandal. Johnson believed it was put together 'to get him,' Dodd related."¹⁹⁸

It later developed that Senator Dodd, censured by the Senate, was found to have been guilty of misallocating campaign funds and other financial malfeasance including double or triple expensing his travel bills to his committee as well the organizations to which he spoke and from which he was reimbursed. (His own staff finally decided they had to report his brazenness in spending only \$250,000 legitimately, of the \$500,000 he collected for his 1964 reelection campaign.)¹⁹⁹ Ironically, Senator Dodd's abuses were paltry when compared against those of Lyndon Johnson's lifetime of such abuses, which were measured in magnitudes of tens of millions of dollars.***** The difference, of course, is that Tom Dodd was not as gifted a man as Lyndon Johnson when it came to "gaming the system." More importantly, however, was Dodd's relative lack of political muscle because he did not have access to the most secret files kept at the FBI, the ones in Hoover's suite of offices marked "Personal and Confidential," including the most deniable of all, those in the file drawers marked "Do Not File." Lyndon Johnson was able to evade atonement for his massive frauds because he had complete access to his friend Hoover's files on every member of Congress, which explains why he was so feared on both sides of the aisles, and within both houses of Congress.²⁰⁰

The following incidents illustrate how Johnson's power, as the majority leader of the Senate, allowed him to impede passage of any bills that might impinge on his own freedom to engage in unbridled corruption:

- In 1958, the idea of passing a campaign contributions bill was being advanced by Senator Richard Neuberger (D-OR). The bill would have strengthened rules for the collection and distribution of political campaign contributions. Drew Pearson

wrote, “He’ll never get anywhere if he proposes the bill in the Senate... Lyndon Johnson doesn’t want such a bill because he raises plenty of dough from the oil companies. After he raises the dough, he then controls the Senators to whom he contributes the oil money.”²⁰¹

- Drew Pearson also wrote that, in 1958, some in Congress wanted to have Senator Estes Kefauver’s antimonopoly subcommittee expanded into an investigation of “political wire-pulling and favoritism in the Justice Department,” because the existing antitrust investigation was not broad enough to encompass all aspects of the issue. Pearson observed that, “If he [LBJ] really wants to investigate he can investigate. I suspect he is coasting.”²⁰² Unsurprisingly, nothing was passed in 1958 regarding this initiative; in 1959, 40 percent of the attorneys in the Antitrust Division of the Justice Department were working on a case against General Motors. Again, the request for more resources to investigate smaller companies must have alarmed Johnson because the Senate turned that down.²⁰³ Johnson’s own radio and TV monopoly was doubtlessly one of the reasons for that, given that this monopoly was unique throughout the country, it could not have been reasonably avoided if the rules had been expanded into the broadcasting industry.

Both John and Robert Kennedy had known of Johnson’s deep connections to Mafia figures that led directly through Bobby Baker. They knew—just as practically everyone in Washington knew—that Baker was “Johnson’s man” and had been for over a decade. By the fall of 1963, there had already been many other articles in newspapers and magazines, even cover stories in *Time* and *Life* magazines about Johnson and Baker’s close relationship. It was widely reported that Johnson had even admitted on the Senate floor that if he had had a son “this [Bobby Baker] would be him.” But Lyndon Johnson had managed to convince himself that he could jettison those connections by simply denying them publicly; he even called a press conference to state this, assuming that would make it a fact. He admitted receiving a few gifts, including a stereo, but said he did not remember this man—“what was his name? Bakey? Bakerly? Beggerly? Johnson could not keep it straight.”²⁰⁴

Most people around the Capitol knew that Baker would not make a move without Johnson’s approval, sometimes implicitly assumed, but mostly explicitly given. The independent statements previously noted of James Wagenvoort and Phil Brennan, both of them unequivocally stating that Bobby Kennedy was out to have Johnson indicted, show that the Kennedys shared with each other everything they knew about Johnson’s criminal past, not just with Baker but LBJ’s previous criminal acts on behalf of Billie Sol Estes, which led directly to the murders of several people connected to that set of scams being run for the ultimate benefit of none other than Lyndon B. Johnson.

JFK probably didn’t realize, until it was too late, that allowing Johnson to make high-level military appointments (first John Connally and then Fred Korth, as secretaries of the navy) caused still another scandal, the TFX aircraft contract taken from Boeing and given to General Dynamics, which would remain as a top news item on practically every evening

television broadcast for weeks, even years, and headlined in most daily newspapers in the country (thanks to his intervention in the TFX contract award, according to the sworn testimony of Donald Reynolds, at least a \$100,000 kick back, all cash packed into a suitcase, was paid to Lyndon B. Johnson).²⁰⁵

Stopping the Senate Investigations of Corruption

Upon returning to Love Field in Dallas after the assassination and boarding Kennedy's airplane, Air Force One, Johnson began making a series of calls to Washington. One of the first was to Abe Fortas, taking him off the Bobby Baker case as the lead attorney and placing him in charge of leading the effort to have both Senate investigations stopped (Johnson was simultaneously being investigated for corruption in the TFX scandal by the McClellan committee as well as by the Senate Rules Committee investigating Baker's assorted crimes).

By the end of January 1964, Johnson had already begun to take matters back into his own hands with respect to the Senate Rules Committee, and the subcommittee headed by Senator Williams of Delaware, who was proving to be a much more tenacious watchdog than Senator McClellan, who had folded immediately under Johnson's pressure. The following transcripts of conversations between President Johnson and Abe Fortas, his attorney friend who had saved him so many times before during more than twenty-five years of association, provide enormous insight into how he finally managed to quash the Williams's investigation:²⁰⁶

PRESIDENT JOHNSON: Anything we say is going to be misinterpreted, misconstrued, and the least we say, the better. [Or, *be careful, this is being taped.*]

ABE FORTAS: Mm-hmm.

PRESIDENT JOHNSON: And I'd just give anything in the world if I could retract my statement the other day.

FORTAS: Mm-hmm.

PRESIDENT JOHNSON: And I thought it was the right statement, I thought I got by with it fine. I walked in the room, and stood there and talked to Helen Thomas. She said, "Are you going out to Liz Carpenter's party?" And I said yes ... and then the sons-of-bitches had me running out of the room. I was loping!

FORTAS: Mm-hmm.

PRESIDENT JOHNSON: And I just think anything you give 'em, there's trouble. The main thing you've got to do is use your power on 'em, and hope you got the votes. I wish you and Clark Clifford would spend your time on these six senators [the Democrats on the Rules Committee], instead of on statements.

FORTAS: Mm-hmm.

PRESIDENT JOHNSON: I just tell you, the smartest man I've met in this White House is [Ted] Sorensen.

FORTAS: Mm-hmm.

PRESIDENT JOHNSON: He told me tonight he just thought I was a big, fat, cigar-puffin', pot-bellied numbskull by following the advice to get out here in front of the press. That's all they want you to do.

FORTAS: Mm-hmm.

PRESIDENT JOHNSON: He said, "I told you that the other day, and I want to tell you that again."

FORTAS: Mm-hmm.

PRESIDENT JOHNSON: Now, maybe we got a hole; maybe we need to fill that hole. But I think we ought to fill it with those six votes up there.

FORTAS: Mm-hmm.

PRESIDENT JOHNSON: And maybe sit down with [Rules Committee Counsel] McLendon to work out a statement, and work it out carefully. But I sure don't think tonight's any night to put it out; I honestly don't.

The committee counsel mentioned by President Johnson, Lennox Polk "Major" McLendon, was so stunned by the level of criminal behavior that he confided some of it to a newspaper reporter, Cabell B. H. Phillips, who wrote an article, published by the *New York Times* on August 9, 1964, titled, "The Senate Shocks a Senate Prober" (Subtitled "A North Carolina lawyer named Major McLendon became the Rules Committee's counsel and found in the Bobby Baker case a revelation of the Senate's "blunted moral concepts"). In the wake of the Bobby Baker scandal, North Carolina Senators B. Everett Jordan, chairman of the Rules Committee, and Sam Erwin, the senior senator from North Carolina, persuaded McLendon, the distinguished seventy-four-year-old attorney from Greensboro, North Carolina, to conduct an investigation of the scandal; he found that the reasons behind the scandal had less to do with the greed and callousness of Bobby Baker than the "free-wheeling, laissez-faire, amoral climate of the United States Senate," and the virtual absence of any rules of conduct or ethics left in the wake of Lyndon Johnson's reign as "Master of the Senate."²⁰⁷

McLendon's investigation had just begun in November 1963 when the culmination of Johnson's criminality manifested itself in his most egregious criminal act. Unfortunately for John F. Kennedy, the Senate's efforts to restore the integrity of that body came too late and was ultimately ineffective. "Major" McLendon, according to the *New York Times* article noted previously, quickly found that, "while Baker occupied a position of great responsibility there were no rules, no regulations, no statutes—nothing—defining his duties and responsibilities. We searched every appropriation bill back to 1929, and the only stipulation we found was that the majority secretary was required to be on the floor when the Senate was in session ... I simply couldn't believe it!" The fact that there were no guidelines for what was acceptable, and each senator was supposed to "follow his conscience" led to the ambiguities, which McLendon said, "To me, this is just unthinkable in a civilized government."²⁰⁸ Clearly, the absence of disciplinary rules was what allowed

Lyndon Johnson and Bobby Baker to exploit their positions and commit the insider fraud that McLendon was investigating: He ultimately found that “twenty or more Senators had pretty full knowledge of Bobby Baker’s rapid rise in business” and his free wheeling, unconstrained, and unethical methods that led to the very conduct that caused the investigation. The proposals that Major McLendon submitted to the Rules Committee for establishing rules of conduct and accountability were later killed in the Senate committee that had requested them, a brazen act of cynicism and as well as a complete waste of time and expense; instead, the Senate voted to restudy the problem, effectively postponing any real action for future consideration, all of which shocked the North Carolina attorney who had worked so diligently to repair the damage wrought by the now-President Lyndon B. Johnson.

On September 1, 1964, just as Johnson began to think the matter had finally been “swept under the rug,” the issue was suddenly revived by Senator Williams’s allegations of a conspiracy between Bobby Baker and former Democratic National Committee finance chairman Matt McCloskey. This angle had grown out of the testimony of insurance salesman Don Reynolds. At this point Johnson was ready for a dirty fight, one that might mean the sacrifice of both his protégé Bobby Baker and another of his favored sycophants, Matt McCloskey, a contractor who had been favored with many government contracts (in recognition of his faithful financial support as one of the leading Democratic campaign contributors), including building new congressional office buildings and the D.C. Stadium (later renamed “RFK Stadium”). In fact, both of them would eventually be convicted for some of their criminal acts, and taking this tag for “the leader” would remove much of the heat that had been directed toward him, allowing him to finish his term in the White House, instead of the “Big House.” On that same date, Johnson had this conversation with his personal counsel, Abe Fortas:²⁰⁹

PRESIDENT JOHNSON: [*with Fortas assenting throughout*] My judgment—it’s going to be very ... They can’t run it on all three networks all night and all morning without it blowing up. Now, I just believe it will be, and I think it’s a question of who’s going to survive.

Whether [Matt] McCloskey survives. I think if McCloskey takes the position he *did* make a political contribution, why, he’s had it.

And I think the question is whether the *party’s* had it or not. Because he has been the national finance chairman of the Democratic Party in the United States. I think that’s number one.

I think number two, he is the Democratic Party in Pennsylvania, which is a very key state, and this gets back into a [Samuel] Insull deal, or Teapot Dome deal, in the state of Pennsylvania. Nobody will be—[Governor Bill] Scranton will be getting into it, and they’ll be destroying the Democratic Party there.

Now, it’s a question of who’s going to destroy who.

My judgment is that Bobby [Baker] has got some bad marks on him, so has McCloskey—but the two of them can probably show that this is not much of a, this

fellow doesn't have much character.

ABE FORTAS: Right.

PRESIDENT JOHNSON: And I think they can go back, and make 'em subpoena the records, and see what kind of a guy he is. And say, "Now what is his purpose in doing this? What is his motive? Is he just a good, clean citizen, or he is a fellow that's been abducting little 13-year-old girls?"

FORTAS: Yeah.

PRESIDENT JOHNSON: And this is what they're tied up with.

The paradoxical contrast in what Johnson says here should not be glossed over. He is stating that Baker and McCloskey (who would both serve prison time for their criminal acts) should be able to prove that the straightlaced Reynolds "doesn't have much character" and then suggesting, without a scintilla of support for making such a scurrilous statement, that perhaps he has a record of "abducting little thirteen-year-old girls"—and have a soon-to-be justice of the Supreme Court sitting on the other side of the president's desk, hearing him bloviate like this and responding with "Right" and "Yeah"—is quite farcical. Though even a screenwriter of Shakespearian talent trying to write this *actual* conversation into a fictional movie script might even balk at such a request from the producer by saying: "You can't make this up; it is too absurd ... suggesting that a president might make such idiotic statements in the Oval Office, to his nominee to be a supreme court justice." But it happened, as the referenced audiotope lays bare. Don Reynolds was an honorable man who had become caught up in the fraud being committed by Bobby Baker at the direction of Lyndon Johnson himself. The irony of this exchange is palpable, but it clearly reflects the situation between the White House and Congress that existed all during Johnson's tenure. Reynolds must have figured out how dangerous Johnson was, because he finally left the country, afraid for his life.

These were not the only one-sided conversations that Lyndon Johnson had with Abe Fortas, or any of the other men who became extensions of Johnson's reach into practically every department or agency of the federal government (which Johnson attempted to extend into the Supreme Court by first naming Fortas as a new justice, then attempted to promote him to chief justice, until investigators discovered some of Fortas's ethically challenged financial practices which then became public knowledge and forced Fortas to resign from his position. According to the *New York Times* obituary (dated February 16, 1998) for William Lambert—the investigative reporter for *Life* magazine who had been involved in the original 1963 investigation of Johnson—he was contacted by a government official in October 1968 who suggested that he look into a transaction by Abe Fortas with a businessman named Louis E. Wolfson. On May 5, 1969, Mr. Lambert reported that Fortas, then a sitting Supreme Court justice, had accepted a \$20,000 payment, held it for eleven months and only returned it after Wolfson was indicted on federal charges of stock fraud.

Until Fortas tendered his resignation, however, Johnson's routine use of Fortas became so entrenched and accepted as "normal" by some that in his book *Flawed Giant*, author Robert Dallek, describing how—in the middle of the 1967 Detroit race riot—Johnson tried

to embarrass Michigan governor George Romney by pointing out “how Michigan authorities had failed to anticipate and then deal with problems in their state,” he referenced Johnson’s statement that “I had the best damn constitutional lawyer in the country write that statement.”²¹⁰ One has to refer to the footnote Dallek used to determine that the lawyer was the sitting Supreme Court Justice Fortas; the strangeness of such a proposition, and the constitutional “separation of powers” questions this little vignette evokes, are not even acknowledged by the author. Lyndon Johnson’s associations, beginning with Justice Fortas, and extending into many others within the particular group he represented, are critically important to understanding the tragedies and treasons of the Johnson presidency; they will therefore be studied intensely, as the primary subject of [Chapter 4](#).

The second in priority for Johnson of the two Senate investigations, the McClellan committee—had it followed its natural course, without external manipulation—would have inevitably led to the discovery of massive payoffs. The insurance salesman Don Reynolds testified to having seen \$100,000 in one suitcase—to Johnson for his efforts to take the TFX contract away from Boeing and hand it to General Dynamics. McClellan’s committee—having been adjourned on the day before the assassination—was supposed to meet again the following week. It did not meet again until 1969, after Johnson left office. The prescient columnist Drew Pearson had predicted that result in his syndicated column published on November 23, 1963, the day after the assassination (Despite the date on the column, it appears to have been written on November 20; Johnson was still referred to as “Vice President”):

It will be interesting to see whether Sen. John McClellan, D-ARK, really tries to find out how much Bobby Baker knows about the TFX controversy. The stern Senate Investigation chairman has promised to look into published reports that Baker threatened to expose some TFX skullduggery if his own get-rich-quick activities are scrutinized too closely. McClellan’s investigators will have quite a trail to follow. But if they follow it carefully it will take them through the Quorum Club, which Bobby founded, and lead them in the direction of Vice President Lyndon Johnson.

Pearson also wrote that inside the Pentagon, the TFX airplane was referred to as the “LBJ,” which is proof enough of who was behind the effort to wrest the contract away from Boeing and give it to General Dynamics of Fort Worth, Texas. These stunning comments, printed in his column in newspapers around the country a day after the assassination, pointed directly to “Vice President Lyndon Johnson,” reflects Pearson’s own dark suspicions about Johnson’s connections to the TFX scandal, and assorted other campaign finance irregularities. It did not get the attention it might have otherwise, considering the saturation coverage given the assassination, but it demonstrates the imminence of Johnson’s growing troubles on the Hill. Pearson and his protégé Jack Anderson were among the relatively few journalists who attempted to keep Johnson’s long and sordid history of barely concealed criminal activities within the public focus, tepid as they might have been with respect to their perseverance in following the matter for a longer period of time after writing a column or two about it.

Clark Mollenhoff of the *Des Moines Register* also wrote many more columns devoted to exposing the truth of what was happening in the Congress of the United States all during 1964 and well into 1965, as an institutional paralysis began and President Johnson finally exercised his unique power over the entire government and beyond that into its military and intelligence apparatus and every governmental bureaucracy that had been created to support all of these functions. It was as if, due to all of Johnson's political patronage appointments throughout the governmental departments and agencies, his tentacles now reached through the minds, arms and fingers of those personnel, and became extensions of the will of the man who had given them their jobs, created their identities, empowered them in their little piece of the lumbering federal bureaucracy. And he knew that all of these people were "Yes" men and women.

Indeed, one of them was his personal hit man, Malcolm "Mac" Wallace. Johnson had, for decades, used his power to ensconce Wallace into well-paying jobs first at the Department of Agriculture and then within the defense industry. These jobs generated security clearance checks on Wallace that caused him to be unanimously rejected by the Office of Naval Intelligence (ONI) review board. Nevertheless, Johnson over rode the process and *forced* the agency to grant his hit man the security clearance so that he could essentially keep him occupied and on the government's payroll (a sort of "retainer") while he awaited the next "kill order" from his mentor, thereby reducing Johnson's personal expenses since he would only need to pay him an occasional "bonus" for his extra curricular assignments.

The details of how the new President Johnson tried to force Senator John J. Williams to stop his subcommittee's investigation can be sketched here by stating that they were the same illegal measures—wiretaps, bribery, personal threats, politically inspired IRS audits—as he had used innumerable times before to bend others to his will. In this case, they also included the unauthorized release of insurance salesman Donald Reynolds's military records, pressure against Republican congressmen to cooperate with Johnson or risk losing major federal investments in their districts to force congressmen to close the investigations into the scandals connected to Johnson. Ultimately, Johnson won the game as long as he lived. He knew that after his death, when people started to talk, that it would be too late to convict him, and his "legacy" would be burnished and preserved by the people he had put in place to do just that.

Let the Cover-Up Begin

As Lyndon Johnson choreographed the cover-up, he simultaneously did everything in his considerable power to "change the subject" by suddenly pushing social legislation that he himself had previously held back for years. Even as Johnson was making his empty promises, he immediately signed an executive order reversing JFK's intent to pull out of Vietnam. LBJ thought he could create a nice manageable war, in a third-world agrarian country 9,000 miles away on the other side of the world, under the guise of American "national security" to ensure that many of his friends, and himself, would become even richer than they already were. Meanwhile, Kennedy's interest in returning capitalism to Cuba, ninety miles offshore, died with JFK's burial. Lyndon Johnson, perhaps as the

ultimate put-down to RFK, never once attempted to assert American interests there or even communicate with Castro after he became president.

As previously noted, all during his vice presidency, Johnson was an impediment to Kennedy's ability to get his legislative agenda through Congress, knowing that he would need to bring it off the shelf—quickly rebranded with the LBJ logo—when he became president himself. This point must be examined a little more closely to understand how Johnson's meticulous planning, from the first days of the administration, had manifested itself even before the assassination of JFK. He knew that his long-planned efforts to push Congress into finally passing the civil rights legislation—along with a veritable boatload of assorted other long delayed progressive legislation—would provide him the ultimate “Get Out of Jail Free” card while also providing for, then protecting, his stolen “legacy.” He had cunningly, albeit correctly, gauged that the tendency among liberals would be to give him so much credit for their most prized legislative victories that it would create a natural resistance among many to harbor doubts about those rumors regarding his “darker side,” especially to the worst of his treasons that had unfolded in Dallas. Johnson also knew that his criminal past, and especially his involvement in one of the most outrageous crimes ever committed in the United States, would have to remain secret forever, or at least not be susceptible to complete discovery and exposure to the public. Others would be recruited, cajoled, persuaded, bribed, threatened, or simply ordered, to see to that.

Lyndon Johnson's conversion, from being the biggest impediment to meaningful civil rights legislation to its strongest supporter, occurred immediately upon becoming president after the murder of John F. Kennedy: Five days afterward, on Wednesday, November 27, 1963, in a speech before a joint session of Congress, he announced that it was now time to aggressively pursue this long suppressed legislation. This transformation was so remarkable that one would think it would have been reported as such at the time and would have been highlighted in many of his biographies; such was not the case, until now. But the assertion that Johnson worked aggressively with congressional leaders to suppress passage of legislation was affirmed, as luck would have it, in a UPI article printed, ironically, in the November 22, 1963, issue of the *Dallas Times Herald* (page A-3). The headline read: “Senior Senators Shrug Off Attack—Thwarting JFK, Liberal Charges”:

Sen. Joseph S. Clark's new charge that the “Senate establishment” [of which Johnson was still in control, having upstaged the shy and professorial Mike Mansfield] is staging a sit-down strike against major Kennedy legislation left the targets of his attack unruffled today.

The Pennsylvania liberal told the Senate that Democratic Leader Mike Mansfield, Mont. was not responsible for so many key bills still being in committees. *Clark said the impasse should be blamed on a “Senate establishment” of senior, conservative senators.* [Emphasis added.]

Despite Johnson's failed effort to continue his role of leader of the Democratic caucus of the Senate after becoming vice president, he was still closely tied to a core group of senators. They were the stalwarts of the “Senate establishment” referenced in the previous article by Senator Clark. This was the group that Johnson continued to lead vicariously

through key “establishment” senators. The conclusive proof of that is reflected in the fact that, throughout his vice presidency, Johnson still held “ownership” of the biggest and grandest office suite in the Senate, the “Taj Mahal,” as reporters referred to it. Both Senate Majority Leader Mike Mansfield and Speaker of the House John McCormack looked to him for guidance, along with many other stalwarts. It is undeniable that he led that “Senate Establishment” and it becomes axiomatic that it was none other than Lyndon B. Johnson who created that “sit-down strike” and “impasse,” which upset Senator Clark so much in the days leading up to November 22, 1963. The proof of that is right there in the UPI article that has been virtually ignored by other authors of biographies of Johnson: It was in the words “Senate establishment” and they were inseparable from Lyndon Johnson because he was still its leader and his aggressive actions in stalling as much legislation as possible should have not only been recognized by his other biographers and historians, but drawn in stark contrast to his equally aggressive actions after JFK’s assassination to immediately flush those dozens of pending bills through Congress. It is stunning to compare his actions in leading the Congress, from one extreme to the other, when the only thing that had changed in the plugged congressional pipeline was President Kennedy’s murder. Had he not been directly linked to the prior legislative constipation the point would be muted; but because he was still acting as the *de facto* leader of the Senate, he was clearly involved in managing its calendar.

Robert Caro, to his credit, did write about the stalemate,²¹¹ quoting a number of columnists and the historian James MacGregor Burns, but he did not adequately describe Johnson’s role in helping to create it. Rather, he blamed Kennedy for submitting the civil rights bill too early, in June 1963, instead of holding it back, as Johnson suggested, until the passage of other bills was completed. While this portrays the tactical issue in a more positive light, it neglects the fact that at least the “Establishment” segment of Congress was being led, on a *de facto* basis, by his own vice president. Had Johnson possessed the will and determination as a “team player” to help his president, and to do so before November 22, 1963—the two elements he suddenly acquired only after that date—he could have aggressively inserted himself into the morass that he had helped to create, pulled some strings, rattled a few cages, uttered a few “blackmail” threats, stroked a few egos, made big promises and empty gestures, just as he did in the months immediately after that date, and helped to remove the logjam.

But that is not what he did, though he did have a good excuse since he was “putting out fires” on Capitol Hill that threatened his political future. Sorting through all of this now, one is inexorably led back to the original question: What would prompt him to personally lead such an effort to impede the legislative process throughout his vice presidency, and especially at this point in time in the months leading up to JFK’s assassination?

A few months earlier, in the spring of 1963, Kennedy felt that the time had come, as a result of the rising level of violence throughout the south: The first incident occurred in April in Birmingham, Alabama, where Police Chief Bull Connor used German shepherd dogs and fire hoses to break up demonstrations while his police arrested thousands of protestors. Two months later, Governor George Wallace stood in the doorway of Foster Auditorium at the University of Alabama to keep two black students from registering,

after having vowed “segregation now, segregation tomorrow and segregation forever” in his inaugural speech. By then, Kennedy had apparently realized that Lyndon Johnson had no intention of assisting him in pressing Congress to pass a civil rights bill. It was only then that he had Bobby and his assistants in the Justice Department create the bill, without any input from Johnson. Kennedy had clearly decided by then that the best way to advance the legislation was to entirely exclude Vice President Johnson—the legendary “Master of the Senate” and now chairman of the Equal Opportunity Committee—from any involvement in the development of the landmark bill then being written.

Johnson’s opposition to real civil rights reform all during his congressional days, continuing through his tenure as vice president when he chaired the Equal Opportunity Committee, causes one to question who “we” were, when within a week after JFK’s assassination he addressed Congress, saying, “We have talked long enough in this country about equal rights. It is time now to write the next chapter—and to write it in the book of law.” The record shows that Johnson had purposefully dragged his feet in getting anything substantive passed on civil rights up until that time; it was no accident that he reversed course at that point so that he could take full credit for its passage. Yet it was Kennedy’s death, as a memorial to him from a Congress overwhelmed with grief, that was primarily credited for its passage.²¹² Johnson’s political genius paid off for him, helping him secure the support of leaders in the political, journalistic, and educational arenas for decades (at least nearly five, so far).

Johnson’s long history of blocking civil rights legislation was a pattern he adopted in his earliest days as a congressman, then continued as a Senate candidate in 1948, when he called President Truman’s civil rights initiative a “farce and a sham” and the beginning of a police state. As a senator, he ensured that any legislation passed by the Senate was stripped of any means of enforcement, right up through his tenure as vice president when he resisted Kennedy’s efforts to push Congress into passage of an effective piece of legislation. Author Rick Perlstein described the passage of the 1957 act, which had been stripped of its enforcement provisions:²¹³

[It was called] “The Miracle of ’57”—sold to Northerners as a tiger, to Southerners and conservatives as a pussycat, and passed thanks to an amendment stipulating that all cases that fell under the bill’s provisions were to be tried by local juries, cutting the bill off at the knees. He did it again in 1960—shepherding a law Pennsylvania liberal Joe Clark called “a pale ghost of our hopes”

Johnson delivered a speech on May 22, 1948, in Wooldridge Park in Austin, Texas. He repeated earlier statements attacking Truman’s civil rights program and proclaimed that he was against that program, admitting that he had repeatedly voted against legislation that would have repealed the poll tax and literacy tests, the anti-lynching bill and a bill to require equality in employment practices: “if a man can tell you whom you hire, he can tell you whom you can’t hire.”²¹⁴ Robert Caro, who found the original document in the LBJ Library, wrote that the speech would directly contradict the image Johnson tried to adopt after becoming president, “that of a man who had ‘never had any bigotry,’ who had been a

longtime supporter of civil rights.” He then described what else he found stapled to it:²¹⁵

DO NOT RELEASE THIS SPEECH—NOT EVEN TO STAFF, WITHOUT EXPRESS PERMISSION OF BILL MOYERS. As background, both Walter Jenkins and George Reedy have instructed this is not EVER TO BE RELEASED

As Robert Sherrill noted in his 1966 book *The Accidental President*, Johnson had consistently opposed civil rights reforms since he went to Congress in 1937. Once, while speaking in favor of the state’s rights to adopt poll taxes and literacy tests in the Senate, he said that he would “stand on the floor of the Senate as long as I have the will, the determination, and the breath to oppose ... the proposed anti-poll tax measures.”²¹⁶

Johnson took credit for passing the Eisenhower civil rights bill in 1957, but only after having watered it down and removing its enforcement teeth, such that the attorney general had no power to make criminal arrests or initiate lawsuits under it. Of it, Ralph Bunche, the first African-American Noble Peace Prize recipient in 1950 and civil rights activist, complained to Eisenhower: “It would better to have no bill than one as emasculated as that which has come out of the Senate.” Bunche wasn’t the only civil rights leader to think that: A. Philip Randolph, president of the Brotherhood of Sleeping Car Porters and a vice president of the AFL-CIO, also said it was “worse than no bill at all.”²¹⁷ Throughout the 1950s, as churches burned, “sit-ins” occurred to protest hotel and restaurant discrimination, and universities remained closed to black students, he continued support for such things as poll taxes and literacy tests, and blocked attempts at real reform. During his nearly three years as vice president, even as chairman of Kennedy’s Equal Opportunity Commission (EEO), he dissuaded JFK from pressing for the passage of the Civil Rights Bill that was submitted to Congress in June 1963 (saying the “time wasn’t right ... we have to wait until the timing is right”). Kennedy even excluded Johnson—the chairman of the EEO—from participating in the drafting of the bill because he regarded him as an impediment.²¹⁸

Yet by doing a complete reversal in 1964, he managed to erase this twenty-six-year history and replace it with a legend that still persists, giving him credit for the legislation that he had previously resisted so strongly. It should be clear to all by now that Johnson had always known that this would enshrine him with the legacy of a great progressive president, one that would put him into the same level as Lincoln and Roosevelt. For at least three years, undoubtedly even more, he had been stalling for time because he knew that doing so would provide him a unique opportunity to get it passed as his first major accomplishment as a new president, giving him the entree to become a “great president” at least in his demented mind. He knew that he would have the support of a newly unified country to get it done and he expected that it would be so unified for at least a year, a mourning period that he would exploit to “build his legacy” all while he enjoyed his “honeymoon” as a president on his way to the biggest election victory of any president in history.

Finally, after years of delaying any attempt at real reform, and repeatedly cautioning Kennedy to wait “until the time is right,” the timing was now right. And he took the credit

for it despite saying at the time that it was to honor JFK's presidency since he had created it and the new President Johnson pushed Congress to pass it on that basis. But the *New York Times*, in 1964, gave the lion's share of the credit for the passage of the Civil Rights Act not to Johnson but to Everett Dirksen, the Senate Minority Leader: "More than any other single individual ... [Dirksen] was responsible for getting the civil rights bill through the Senate"; Dirksen managed to get greater support from the Republican party than Johnson's own Democratic senators. The same was true in the House, where only 59 percent of Democrats voted in favor of the legislation, 78 percent of Republicans supported it.²¹⁹ Every Southern Democrat senator—except Johnson's nemesis Ralph Yarborough, who did vote for it—voted against one of the most important pieces of legislation of their tenure. It is an irony of historic proportions that such iconic senators as Albert Gore Sr. of Tennessee, J. William Fulbright of Arkansas, and Robert C. Byrd of West Virginia all voted against it. (Byrd even personally filibustered it for over fourteen hours.)

In an article for *The New Republic* (February 9, 2014), "The Shrinking of Lyndon Johnson," Clay Risen stated that Johnson's alleged role as the grand master of the Senate, in the passage of the 1964 Civil Rights Bill was a "myth."²²⁰

Even Humphrey, a Johnson partisan, conceded in a memo written shortly after the filibuster ended that the president did not play much of a role on the bill: "We did give him regular reports on the progress of civil rights over at the Tuesday morning breakfasts. But the president was not put on the spot. He was not enlisted in the battle particularly. I understand he did contact some of the senators, but not at our insistence."

Johnson's Power over His Sycophants

Johnson's ability to recruit very effective men, but men who were vulnerable to Johnson's manipulation—apparently through some custom-honed techniques he developed and practiced often to force sycophancy, even onto people who resisted it—was the essential key to his success. The exercise of these techniques, including forcing his subordinates to take dictation from him even as he defecated, was precisely what we observed that he had done with one of his first assistants, L. E. Jones,²²¹ and he continued using these techniques, specifically including that one, all the way through his presidency. Johnson doubtlessly looked for certain signs of their submissiveness to him as part of how he recruited people from the very beginning, and the key to that would be based on his determination that they were the kind of person who would feel so indebted to him for their job that they would put his or her career first, their skepticism minimized, their ethical and morality controls muted. He would select only those who fawned over him, "affirming, applauding, admiring" him. As Drs. Muslin and Jobe, professionals in the psychiatric field, concluded, Johnson had no empathy for the opinions and feelings of others because he considered both the people and their ideas "interchangeable," and could, and would, replace anyone who did not conform their opinion to his own; he wanted his aides and associates to bow to him, "affirming, applauding, admiring" him at all times.

Candid and objective biographies of him consistently show him as a “leader” who only wanted “yes men” around him, men who would cast aside any troubling doubts about the morality, legality—even constitutionality—of issues related to the decision-making, operational-level policies of his administration.²²²

There are numerous corroborations for these observations not previously cited. For example, one of Johnson’s longtime key aides, George Reedy, who had worked for Johnson from 1951 to 1965, said that there were certain traits, which defined his personality, that he could have never changed even if he had tried, admitting that “self-loathing” was one and that it caused him to take delight in humiliating most of his key aides. In purposely doing things that he knew would disgust others, he knew that this would force them to subordinate their own personal standards of decency and morality to conform to his, a method he used to communicate to them that there had to be something wrong with them, not him. Moreover, he came to enjoy his own successes at tormenting those who had given of themselves to him. Reedy said that Johnson, as a human being, “was a miserable person—a bully, sadist, lout and egoist. He had no sense of loyalty.” Moreover, Reedy even stated that Johnson’s poor manners were not just bad habits, but often “calculated to give offence.” According to Reedy, Johnson even “begrudged” another aide’s request to call his wife on their anniversary, as he toiled alongside Johnson at his ranch. To Johnson, loyalty was a one-way street: all take on his part and all give on the part of everyone else—his family, his friends, his supporters.²²³

The import of these claims of LBJ’s arrogance and condescension to those “below” him (i.e., everyone, by the time he became president) is that they lead inexorably to other charges of how he forced others to break laws on his behalf, both before and after the JFK assassination. The assertions come from the reflections of many, many others, men and women who knew him for decades, some intimately. The aggregation of these points forms the foundation for his treatment of all others under his command, specifically including intelligence and military officers who came under his command when he became commander in chief. They lead ultimately not only to the vindication of the accusations laid out in the earlier work, but the validation of those to be made in the remaining pages of this one.

Unbridled mania (usually depicted with great delight by other authors as charisma of such brilliance as to be almost magical—or “Colossal”) like Johnson’s, if untreated, can progress to become a dangerous, violence-prone mental derangement characterized by extreme excitement and delusion.²²⁴

Johnson’s Mania: The Colossus Is Born—Legislative Acumen as the New President

For the first two years after he became president, Lyndon Johnson constantly pushed Congress to pass dozens of legislative acts, until he began facing congressional opposition with a new and more conservative Congress in 1966. Many books on Lyndon Johnson’s early career wax eloquently about his skills of manipulation, especially of congressmen and their aides, and the denizens of the “federal bureaucracy” in Washington, such as this one

written by Bruce Schulman, in his 2006 book *Lyndon B. Johnson and American Liberalism: A Brief Biography with Documents*:

Johnson became a fixture in the offices of New Deal administrators and mastered the alphabet agencies that FDR established. He charmed everybody ... [he] would chat up the secretaries, clerks, and assistants, bring them little presents on their birthdays, ... Soon everyone in the office wanted to help him. Kleberg's south Texas district became a major beneficiary of New Deal largesse.²²⁵

Robert Dallek, one of Lyndon Johnson's most prominent biographers, noted in his book *Lyndon B. Johnson: Portrait of a President*, Johnson's paranoia when he stated that it: "raises questions about his judgment and capacity to make rational life and death decisions. I do not raise this matter casually. It is a frighteningly difficult issue, which the country has never seriously addressed. And for good reason."²²⁶

This conundrum was complicated further during the next several months after the assassination but before the 1964 elections, when there was no vice president. After raising the specter of an out-of-control president, Dallek then dismissed Johnson's tragic turn at the helm with a somewhat troubling comment about his being "largely in control of his faculties."²²⁷

As we have seen in the previous chapters, that assessment is arguable; in fact, it can be reasonably concluded that Johnson, on a number of critical occasions, took actions that were either unethical, immoral, illegal, unconstitutional, and even treasonous. And many of them were of an "all of the above," diabolical nature, possibly conducted concurrently with psychotic breakdowns. To dismiss all of these as "cranky nonsense," "distorted judgment," and "personal quirks" is being more than charitable. It is precisely what has occurred over the past half century and is the primary reason for the continuing fog of the presidential assassination, which had resulted in Johnson's ascension.

Other contemporary observers, such as Arthur Schlesinger Jr., often touched on small but revealing points that reflected the strangeness of Johnson's actions in the period immediately following the assassination, as illustrated in several passages from his book *Journals*, published shortly after his death in 2007. In one of these, he noted that as they waited on the tarmac in Dallas for the swearing-in ceremony, Johnson asked Kenneth O'Donnell to bring Jackie from the rear compartment of Air Force One on November 22, 1963, shortly after she had witnessed her husband's brains being blown out the back of his head, while she still remained drenched in his blood. O'Donnell hesitated for a moment, trying to comprehend the incomprehensible. Johnson then raised his voice a few decibels and said to him as icily as the words themselves attest: "When I tell you something, I want it done—and *fast*."²²⁸ [Emphasis in original.] As O'Donnell started to go to the stateroom to get her, Jackie suddenly opened the door and made her way toward Johnson's side.

Jackie's reluctance to attend Johnson's swearing-in ceremony has been recounted in a number of accounts, due to her continuing state of shock at what she had witnessed happening just inches away less than two hours earlier. She finally agreed to do that, but

not to change her clothes before doing so. George Ball, who met the airplane at Andrews Air Force Base, and accompanied Johnson back to the White House, had this to say in his oral history statement, regarding Johnson's claim that she had "insisted" upon standing with him.²²⁹

Bob McNamara, Mac [Bundy], and I went out to meet the new President. We met him; we got in the helicopter with President and Mrs. Johnson, and the five of us rode back to the White House together. We talked a bit. The President, of course, was enormously moved by the dreadful experiences he had been through. He talked principally of how gallant Mrs. Kennedy had been, *how she had insisted on standing with him* even though the blood was still on her stockings and dress and so on. [Emphasis added.]

The disconnect between how Kenneth O'Donnell described what happened and what Johnson told George Ball—as opposite as the telling of that single vignette could possibly be told—was a reflection of merely one of the many lies that Johnson inserted into the public record through others for the purpose of adjusting reality to better fit his contrived story.

That pattern would repeat itself over and over again, and must be factored into the overarching story because it is full of such contradictions, just as Johnson's rendering of numerous Dallas events—indeed his version of stories throughout his entire life—is replete with that same pattern. Schlesinger's account of this incident noted that General Godfrey McHugh had discussed, at length, the actions of Johnson on Air Force One, and told him how none of the Kennedy party even knew the Johnsons were on board that aircraft. He said that he and O'Donnell kept asking the pilots to take off and were finally told that Mrs. Johnson's luggage was still being transferred, which he felt was a "mysterious excuse."²³⁰ Actually, the issue itself begs the question, "why was it necessary to move her luggage at all," given that the flights were practically simultaneously completed and it is doubtful that she would be carrying any of it regardless. There is only one realistic answer to that question: Lyndon Johnson had planned all of this in advance and had anticipated that a number of excuses—including the supposedly urgent need for his own "swearing in"—would be used to delay the flight. They would all be used as reasons to keep the airplane on the tarmac at Love Field as assurance that it would not leave until Kennedy's body was removed from Parkland Hospital. Only after that had been accomplished—and the body of his dead predecessor was in his own custody and control—would Johnson let the aircraft depart Dallas.

The chaos on the tarmac was merely one of the many tasks that Johnson had already determined would be used to accomplish that mission, and they included an item for "transferring Mrs. Johnson's luggage." It was all a shell game, exactly as described by Harry Blackstone Jr.—Lyndon Johnson was a master of deceit, in the art of making people watch "A" while the dirty work was going on at "B."

The Oval Office: Strange Behaviors Multiply

During 1964 and 1965, increasing numbers of stories began appearing in various

newspapers and magazines that served up even more questions about the strange behavior of the president and commander in chief. These included driving his Lincoln convertible, filled with (usually female) reporters at high speeds across cow pastures or on state highways, up to ninety miles per hour, crossing double yellow lines on the highway, while drinking a beer. Other stories concerning his general lack of veracity and trustworthiness were accepted by normal people as merely the odd eccentricities of a loud Texas cowboy. This was the same president who, after all, had done so much in his first two years to advance what most considered a magnificent domestic agenda. Even Arthur Krim (whose closeness to Johnson will be described in a later chapter) witnessed Johnson's adventures in the pasture in his oral history document:

It involved his driving the Lincolns and punishing them. You know, that was when we first heard that the one thing you don't do in Austin is buy a secondhand Lincoln, because it may be one that he had driven as if it were a jeep, which he used to do. He'd run those Lincolns over the fields as if they were four-wheel-drive Jeeps, and used to love it. All through it all everything was laid on for comfort. There would always be a Secret Service car behind us with drinks for the asking.²³¹

President Johnson invited a number of reporters to his ranch in March 1964. But the "spin" described in the dispatches flowing in over the AP wires was a bit troubling. According to author Theodore H. White, the news from Texas being reported by the reporters was about how the president liked to drive his cars around the pastures and country roads holding a beer can in one hand with his hat placed over the speedometer as he and his captives sped at "75, 80—or was it 90 miles an hour?"²³² He must have been intensely manic that spring, four months after achieving his lifetime dream, as he roared down the road with four reporters, three of whom were female, while drinking beer, or at times a glass of scotch, passing on hills in the wrong lane and forcing other cars off the road.²³³

Another report on Johnson's recklessness as president came from an acquaintance of mine, a man who lived near the LBJ Ranch and personally witnessed one of the wildest of these "Lincoln rides through the prairie" incidents three years after the incident reported by Theodore H. White:²³⁴

As a lad of twenty-one in 1967 my interests were fast cars and faster women... . My "hot rod" was certainly not the one songs were written about. It was a 1961 Falcon that I fitted with a high performance V8 that I feel would have run 135 mph. It was in that car in 1967 my 65 year old father and I were returning from a family visit in Tucson.

The roads were good and the weather was clear. There was little traffic and even at 100 mph I found myself getting passed. We pulled out of Fredericksburg and were about half way of the 30 miles or so from Johnson City, Texas, on State Hwy 290. I was running about 100 mph when to my left across a prairie I saw what I felt was a tornado. As the "tornado" got closer I realized it was a black Lincoln driving at high speed across the prairie. We were traveling at the same angle and would have

intersected had I not slowed down. The Lincoln went through a barbed wire fence. The big car “rooster tailed” as it left the dirt and entered the highway slinging gravel and debris ahead of me. The black “tornado” pulled away from me at speeds well above 100 mph heading east on 290. In just moments it was gone. But for a glance I saw the driver looking as drunk as Hooter Brown. The prairie was the LBJ Ranch and the driver was LBJ.

We stopped in Johnson City for fuel. It was up to 35 cents a gallon. Seemed like only months before it was 27.9 cents. A little before that I had bought fuel for 7.9 cents in a “gas war.” I told the gas station owner I was young but realized 7.9 cents was too cheap. He just laughed and told me I had no idea what was going on. The drill was to put the independents out of business. He told me when I was grown I would not believe what gas would cost. At 35 cents a gallon I was starting to understand.

Pop asked where he could find the drug stores in Johnson City. The pump jockey (yes ... for 35 cents they filled the tank for you), laughed and said there are no “stores” ... just one of each. There was only one drug store in 30 miles ... left at the light and a few blocks up.

Pop asked the druggist a question about a medication and then asked what the chances were of the president coming in the drug store. The druggist’s answer was just what pop wanted to hear ... “not a chance in hell ... I barred the s.o.b. from my drug store”. Pop said you barred the president of the United States from his hometown drug store ... the only drug store in thirty miles? Yes ... that damned pillhead Lyndon comes in here with a list of drugs he wants. I tell him I need a doctor’s prescription. Lyndon explodes. Says there is no higher law in the land than a Presidential Order and he is ordering the druggist to fill the drug list. The druggist tells LBJ that he is not getting anything without a prescription from a doctor. LBJ explodes. The druggist tells LBJ he can have his goons take the druggist out back and work him over ... but he is not getting drugs. The druggist told LBJ to get out and not come back.

Apparently, not all the residents and shop owners of Johnson City had warm feelings for their president and neighbor. The people he surrounded himself with, of course, did not mind his strange antics, but it seems odd that they were also unaware of how others, who had known him better, and longer, felt about his “eccentricities.” If he needed a little more allowance than most people, then so be it; after all he was under a lot of pressure. After those first few years of “progress” it was as if the Texas Two Step dance had suddenly become the mien, only the two steps had now become solely backward ones.

How Lyndon Johnson managed to get away with the most outrageous behavior, practically on a daily basis, is difficult to imagine today but it is clear that newspaper and television reporters who reported it did so at their own peril. Eventually, the behavior was accepted as “normal” for him, by many of these reporters, having repeatedly witnessed his bizarre behavior it became expected, almost as though he had become the nation’s eccentric and drunken uncle figure.

LBJ Attacks Canadian Prime Minister

Prime Minister Lester Pearson of Canada gave a speech critical of the US Vietnam policy at Temple University in Philadelphia on April 2, 1965, calling for a pause in the American bombing of North Vietnam. To Lyndon Johnson, this criticism of his foreign policy in a major American city and college campus was unforgivable. Pearson was immediately summoned to Camp David to meet with Johnson. When he arrived, he was practically assaulted by President Johnson, who grabbed Pearson by the lapels and shouted, “Don’t you come into my living room and piss on my rug.” Pearson admitted that the meeting was acrimonious, but, eager to repair the damage his words had caused, stated that the meeting eventually ended cordially.²³⁵ Two years later, Johnson would visit Pearson in Ottawa, going there with “hat in hand” to attempt to garner Pearson’s support for a plan he had been cooking up to assist Israel in strengthening itself, through expanding its borders, a subject that will shortly be more closely examined. Evidently, Pearson was already more aware of how dangerous Lyndon Johnson was than anyone else back at the White House: Pearson turned him down flat. There were a number of other people in other countries—as will be demonstrated in subsequent chapters—as diverse as Great Britain, Israel, and China, who had recognized, between 1964 and 1967, that Lyndon B. Johnson was seriously affected by unknown demons. The Canadian prime minister was one who clearly knew all about that by the time of his visit with Johnson in April 1965.

Johnson Declares Himself “King of the World”

An incident on Air Force One soon after Johnson’s 1964 election victory, when he was still held in high esteem by much of the population, illustrated his propensity of believing that he was not only the president of the United States, but actually and uniquely the de facto leader of the world; perhaps even the most important and brilliant person in the universe. He had no doubt excelled as a young boy playing “king of the hill” with the other children and decided somewhere along the line that he should be the “king” of larger and larger geographic areas, beginning with a plan to become president of the United States.

One day when he was in flight on Air Force One, the captain of the airplane, Ralph Albertazzi, recounted in his book *The Flying White House: The Story of Air Force One*, that Johnson invited four reporters from the press pool to share cocktails with him in his quarters. They were flying high above his domain, which was now the entire world, he was in a very buoyant mood, and this phase of his mania was strengthened with each drink. As he sat in his elevated, custom-designed chair, with the reporters arrayed around him in their smaller seats, he decided to remind this select group of reporters about how fortune had smiled on them that day, to be in the presence of the single most important person in the world. Suddenly, Johnson said, “Look around the world: Khrushchev’s gone. Macmillan’s gone. Adenauer’s gone. Segni’s gone. Nehru’s gone. Who’s left—de Gaulle?” AP Reporter Frank Cormier said that Johnson sneered as he uttered the French president’s name, “*Then, leaning back in his massive ‘throne chair,’ as the crew dubbed it, LBJ thumped his chest in Tarzan fashion and bellowed, ‘I am the King!’*”²³⁶ [Emphasis added.]

Lyndon Johnson, unlike most people with major inferiority complexes—as most of his

aides and associates agreed he had—was never subtle about what he professed to think about himself. The implications of his knowledge that he had achieved his lifetime goal of becoming the president of the United States—considering that it was the most powerful country on earth, within his deluded mind his own eminence was obviously unequaled by any leader within the world, especially de Gaulle—ergo, he had become the *de facto* “King of the World.” This leads inexorably to the conclusion that, as the most powerful, albeit delusional, man on earth, he thought that he could do anything he wanted to do and no one could stop him. The evidence of this being a true characterization of his attitude about his own sense of self-importance was left in his wake, and its proof will surface repeatedly in future chapters.

Because I am not a psychologist or psychiatrist, or possess any other medical experience of any type for that matter, it is appropriate to offer a more scholarly comment about the point being made here, one written by the two experts noted previously in the fields of psychiatry and psychohistory, Drs. Hyman L. Muslin and Thomas H. Jobe. They wrote that Johnson’s need for approval and acceptance invoked a rage reaction to those who did not accept that premise, and, having put himself into the leadership position of the country, his lifetime goal brought him that very exposure. The inner conflicts and frustrations must have seemed unbearable to him:

Here at the conclusion of our study of Lyndon Baines Johnson, the tragic self of Johnson can be seen with more clarity, as can the impact of this self on the country as he initiated and maintained and could not end the Vietnam war ... The tragic self of Johnson—the unfulfilled though ever-clamoring, perpetually lonely persona—we have examined in sufficient depth to show his deficits and strengths and his inability to be a genuine leader of the country.²³⁷

Before we leave this topic, it is important to consider what authors Ralph Albertazzie and J. F. terHorst wrote in their book *The Flying White House* about the subsequent events that followed the “I am the King” incident. After Air Force One landed, George Reedy explained to the reporters as they deplaned that they had been Johnson’s social guests and not their normal roles of newsmen at a press conference: “*Gentlemen, Reedy solemnly intoned, ‘you did not see the President of the United States tonight.’*”²³⁸ [Emphasis added.] There is no question that this was not the first, nor the last, time that George Reedy and multiple others would give that admonishment to the press corps. Yet these kinds of moments were the ones that need the most focus for those now studying the real character of this man—those who never knew him, but are now trying to understand the essence of his persona: Who, and what, was the real Lyndon B. Johnson? How many more such incidents that provided such profound insights into his soul were never reported due to such hushed warnings? The reports of these most revealing incidents are hard to find because, naturally, the reporters were instructed not to write about them, and they didn’t. Fortunately in this instance, the pilot did.

Indeed, had Captain Albertazzie also ignored this strange performance of President Johnson, we would have never been able to observe him through this particular prism, one of hundreds from which we have collected the most incisive observations. Evidently, Mr.

Reedy had neglected to give that same admonishment to the pilot, so perhaps it was mere serendipity that caused the pilot to make at least a mental note of the incident, then later decide to include it in his book about all the various, mostly humorous, incidents that happened during the course of his career flying Air Force One with a number of presidents. He probably thought that including it wasn't a "news" report as much as an amusing anecdote. Perhaps he was simply not aware of the tremendous importance, the psychic gravity and deeper meanings of something he undoubtedly regarded as an innocuous, even humorous, event. Yet his reportage of what was supposed to be kept secret gives us a deeper understanding of what Lyndon Johnson believed, in moments when he uttered his inner-most, deeply held, albeit furtively told, beliefs—thoughts that he would not have ordinarily expressed, at least when he was sober, and when he did so inadvertently, were assuredly never reported—as this very incident so thoroughly demonstrates.

As usually happens in the course of doing business or running bureaucracies, despite all the training Johnson had given his staff, sometimes errors are made and the truth seeks its own release—much like floodwaters flowing randomly, unimpeded by anything until each drop of water eventually finds its lowest point, when physical gravity cannot move it to a lower point, and the flow finally stops. In this case, Captain Albertazzie just happened to be there, having found the airport runway with the help of the same kind of gravity. His report of this incident, and the second part of it on the airport tarmac as Reedy pleaded with the reporters to "forget" what they had witnessed, is far more important than has been previously recognized, because it was not merely another exemplar of the eccentricities of an old man: This seemingly amusing incident, which was recalled by the pilot when he wrote his memoirs, revealed more than entire books by many of his biographers about the person who was Lyndon Johnson, and what he thought of himself and his position in the world relative to everyone else. Furthermore, it explains why he considered the voters as his "subjects," why he called everyone "pissants," and why he felt he could do anything he wanted to do, anywhere in the world, and how he tried to do just that. The belated recognition of that demonstrates the veracity of the Shakespearian maxim, from *The Merchant of Venice*, that "The truth will out."

It was ultimately the manipulations—the cumulative effect of replacing many real truths with lies and myths to support the cover-up—engineered by Lyndon Johnson, that have caused the mysteries of the JFK assassination to remain hidden. But there was an even larger, final element that caused the murder to remain unresolved: the fear of the unknown and the inherent risk to the country itself if the citizens were to realize what had happened to the nation. Many people around the world—and an overwhelming majority of Americans—did not, and still do not, believe the ludicrous "official story." But most don't know what to believe because of the multiple deceits and omissions of the Warren Report. The one most promising thing that does remain—despite the realization that the government has lied to its citizens for nearly half a century about it already, fearing the reaction that might ensue if the truth be told—is that most people do know there is much more to the story. This conundrum—the fear of confronting the obvious fact that a coup d'état occurred on November 22, 1963, one that clearly changed the course of the United

States—will eventually be reconciled by the continuing release of more documents proving that fact, and the momentum will gather until, in due course, the real truths will gradually replace Johnson's planted lies. The nation will eventually recover, but the sooner the full truth is "out" the greater the chance that confidence in the government might be restored.

* It should be noted that the top military intelligence aide on General MacArthur's staff during this period was Charles Willoughby, the chief of intelligence, who got that appointment, according to author David Halberstam in *The Coldest Winter* (2007) due to the sycophantic way he treated General MacArthur; his military history was blemished badly for not having accurately assessed the size of the Chinese forces arrayed against them in Korea. Some have even asserted that "he intentionally distorted, if not out and out suppressed, intelligence estimates showing that the Chinese were massing at the Yalu River. Willoughby allegedly did so in order to better reinforce MacArthur's (mistaken) assertion that the Chinese would never cross the Yalu, and allow MacArthur a freer hand in his drive to the Yalu." (See Wikipedia: http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Charles_Willoughby_%28general%29)

Willoughby's extreme right-wing views, reflected in his continuing devotion to the "motherland" where he was born Adolph Karl Weidenbach, was described in detail in *LBJ: The Mastermind of the JFK Assassination*, including details on his probable complicity in JFK's assassination.

** [I received the following email from Doug Caddy on November 6, 2013]:

"I was the emissary from a trustee of the Moody Foundation who wanted to fund Estes's writing a book about his life and what he knew about LBJ. We had worked out a tentative agreement with Abilene Christian University [ACU] under which that institution would receive the Moody Foundation grant and then employ Estes to write his book using a portion of the grant to pay him. ACU is a Church of Christ institution and Estes was a lifelong member of the church. After Estes testified before the grand jury, the resulting publicity was so intense that ACU made the decision that it could not participate in the Moody Foundation grant. So that ended Estes's chances of receiving Moody Foundation money to write his book and he was embittered by it. I had been working closely with Marshal Peoples on the Estes matter before the latter's grand jury appearance. I do not know why Peoples did not inform me of the upcoming testimony but it may have been based on his belief that he should guard the testimony project carefully so that nothing could go wrong with it before it actually took place. If this is true, then he was right because had Estes known the Moody Foundation grant might be a casualty of his testimony, he might have backed out from going before the grand jury.

I am not attempting in any way to second guess Marshal Peoples because in my opinion he was a great man and most of what has come out about LBJ can be traced to his years of investigation and research into that evil man."

*** Caro admitted interviewing Senator Yarborough five times, in the Acknowledgements to "*Master of the Senate*." David Lifton has stated that he interviewed Yarborough in 1980 and found him to still be "furious" that Johnson had the conceit and arrogance to make a statement that he knew to be false. Yarborough also stated that he felt that he had been treated shabbily by the FBI agents who had requested his signature on a statement of what he had seen; it appeared to him to be a very perfunctory and generalized statement, ending with "This is all I know about the assassination." He refused to sign it but later, under pressure, typed up a statement that pointed out how the motorcade stopped, explaining that was not how they should have responded. The fact that he doesn't address Johnson's lies about Youngblood's actions in his affidavit only means that he was not aware at that time, July 10, 1964, that Johnson was going to write up his own falsified version of the account, which introduced that canard.

**** Readers who believe they see Johnson in photos they have viewed over the Internet should compare those photos to those printed in *LBJ: The Mastermind of the JFK Assassination*, which are certified to be accurate and unretouched; in many cases, that cannot be said about photographs of this scene found scattered around the Internet.

***** The photo being described appears to be the same one used by Richard Harwood and Haynes Johnson on the cover of their book *Lyndon*, which is accessible via [Amazon.com](https://www.amazon.com).

***** Further confirmation of these statements was made by Burkett Van Kirk, chief counsel for the Republicans on the Senate Rules Committee (see *LBJ: The Mastermind of the JFK Assassination*, p. 256).

***** Nevins wrote a number of books, the most prominent of which was a three volume biography of John D. Rockefeller. According to the Wikipedia entry for Allan Nevins, his contemporary fellow historian, Ferdinand Lundberg, felt that Nevins portrayed men who others referred to as "Robber Barons" as though they were "in fact American heroes, builders of the American civilization and democracy. I have given writers like Nevins the sobriquet of 'counter-savants'.

A savant, or man of learning, is devoted to increasing knowledge. And knowledge has the function of deepening understanding. A counter-savant, however, is a man of knowledge who uses his knowledge, for reasons known only to himself, to obfuscate understanding, to confuse readers. The fact is that Nevins's corrective portrait of Rockefeller is not only false with respect to the central character, but frustrates understanding with the unsophisticated reader." (*The Rockefeller Syndrome*, New York: Lyle Stuart, 1975, p. 145.) This calls to mind other "historians" who share this description of a "counter-savant."

***** The four Dodd staffers proceeded to report his malfeasance despite their knowledge that they would have to endure some harassment for their efforts, though they never dreamed that they would be reviled by the press and Congress, rather than being thanked by them. Dodd tried to turn the investigation around, into "a merciless probe of his former staffers." Most of his sordid affairs were ignored by the Senate, and the Ethics Committee even attacked the staffers who brought his acts to the public's attention. The Senate, apparently "cornered" into having to do "what's right," finally voted 94 to 5 for censure on the misuse of campaign funds, but swept numerous other charges of betrayal of the public trust "under the rug." (See Pearson, pp. 97-99).

LBJ'S TEMPLATE: KEEPING THE SECRETS AND PLANTING LIES TO REPLACE TRUTHS

If you tell a lie big enough and keep repeating it, people will eventually come to believe it. The lie can be maintained only for such time as the State can shield the people from the political, economic and/or military consequences of the lie. It thus becomes vitally important for the State to use all of its powers to repress dissent, for the truth is the mortal enemy of the lie, and thus by extension, the truth is the greatest enemy of the State.

—JOSEPH GOEBBELS, NAZI MINISTER OF PROPAGANDA

Lies and Deceit: Johnson's Mastery of Subterfuge

A cloak of secrecy enveloped the nation within hours of the assassination of John F. Kennedy. In the weeks, months, years, and decades since, it has not fully receded despite the official finding that the perpetrator was merely a “lone nut” without any connection whatsoever to other plotters—this despite many facts and witnesses pointing in the opposite direction. The fact that all military personnel who were in any way involved in the post-assassination events, especially those involving the handling of JFK's body, were sworn to secrecy and then all evidence was ordered to be locked away for seventy-five years despite the Warren Commission's finding that the crime was committed by a “lone nut” did nothing to assuage the public's suspicions of a massive cover-up of the basic question: What really happened? Earl Warren revealed more truths in one sentence than his commission's entire findings when he told a reporter that the complete truth would not become known in the reporter's lifetime.

Secrecy was Lyndon Johnson's most prized skill; he had always worked certain activities—the ones he knew were immoral, unethical, or illegal—under the cloak of utmost secrecy. An early example of this occurred when he was still in college and involved the way he took control of the secret campus organization called the “White Stars,” and how he used that organization to take over the student government of Southwest Texas Teacher's College. He did so because the ruling clique of the campus before his arrival, the popular “in crowd” group called the “Black Stars” comprised of campus athletes, did not respond to his entreaties to join them. They “snubbed” him—despite the backing of one of their members, all the others voted “No” when he tried to join. But it wasn't just the “in crowd” who disliked him. The “White Stars,” which was the polar opposite (the “out crowd”), also did not immediately accept him either. Both its leaders disliked Lyndon for many reasons, but finally yielded to three students who Lyndon pleaded with to sponsor his membership. He wound up using the White Stars to put the Black Stars out of business, using techniques to rig elections and steal votes that he would repeat again and again throughout his lifetime.²³⁹ Even Johnson himself would eventually describe his actions as “vicious” when he and the other “White Stars” ran a slate of candidates and took over the class

offices and student council seats: “*It was a pretty vicious operation for a while. They lost everything I could have them lose. It was my first real big dictat—Hitlerized—operation, and I broke their back good. And it stayed broke for a long time.*”²⁴⁰ [Emphasis added.] That comment, about an event of which he clearly remained very self-satisfied, showed how he even garrulously reminisced about it when he was interviewed over forty years later.

Among the rules Johnson introduced to the White Stars was that of absolute secrecy. The organization was unknown to anyone on campus other than the young men personally recruited to become its members. A number of rules were adopted to enforce secrecy. One that typified them prohibited more than two members ever meeting in public: If three or more found themselves together, one of them would have to excuse himself after eye contact and head movements of the most senior of the others decided which one must leave. Another was a rule requiring a member to deny his membership if ever asked about it; the lapse was only temporary though, because the member would be automatically reinstated at the next meeting; the rule merely made lying a little easier for those who found difficulty with that. Lyndon Johnson’s White Stars, using various forms of skulduggery to allow themselves the opportunity of voting multiple times, stole the class representative elections and secretly took over the entire student government.²⁴¹ He worked on these skills during his college years and honed them thereafter, perfecting them by the time he reached the position that propelled him into the presidency of the United States.

Years later, when he began recruiting young college men to come to Washington, he would start with members of the Friars Club at the University of Texas. Similar to the Skull and Bones club at Yale, everything was done behind closed doors and kept absolutely secret. These secret societies were exactly what Johnson himself created with the White Stars at his own college so it was a natural fit. One of those young Friars graduates was named Malcolm (Mac) Wallace, Johnson’s future hit man, who later was given the incredible sentence of five years for first-degree murder in 1951. That sentence was immediately suspended by a judicial system that had been tainted by Lyndon Johnson and his chief attorney, Ed Clark, whose tentacles reached into a number of courtrooms throughout Texas and he was then merely put on probation. That result spoke volumes about Lyndon Johnson’s political power in 1951. In the decade after that incident, his power grew, exponentially; it is precisely what put him into the vice presidency, from which he was catapulted into the office of the president with the murder of John F. Kennedy.

Many of the men who would later play prominent roles in his ascension up the political ladder—men like Alvin Wirtz of Sequin, Texas (until he was “thrown out of town” by its citizens), and Lew Wasserman of Hollywood, California—became his closest friends or associates and shared this trait of conducting business in absolute secrecy. Descriptions of their own habits relating to this trait can be found elsewhere within these pages, but the point—the essential importance of this particular characteristic—was that it was always used in the conduct of their most nefarious activities. It was manifested in a number of ways, but the most common of them was the strictly observed tenet of avoiding written

documents, which might one day be discovered, should someone ignore the instruction to “burn” it after reading it to avoid such a risk. It meant that communications in these schemes could only be conducted through spoken messages; often, not even by telephone, if there was any possibility that a telephone might be tapped. This explains why Johnson purportedly hated the fact that wiretaps were ever used, unless of course they were done at his behest, or he indirectly benefited by them. It also explains why some of Johnson’s telephone calls, even from the White House, were never recorded. He controlled which calls were, or were not, recorded through a button on his desk.

According to Robert Caro, Johnson wanted to make calls to whomever he wished, at any hour, without going through the White House switchboard, calls that his secretaries would not even know about.²⁴² Given this option, one can be certain that, when he did use the White House switchboard, he was very careful about ever discussing anything on his “special” agenda, ever mindful of the need to sound “presidential” for the official record when putting calls through the normal channels (even while ordering special pants for the presidential testicles, which is now preserved on YouTube recordings²⁴³). Anything on the special list that he did not want to be preserved for the historical record would be saved for his “secure” personal telephone lines.

Billie Sol Estes emphasized Johnson’s reliance on absolute secrecy in all of their dealings, afraid of anything substantive ever being found to connect them as business partners, even though they had moved to that level from the time Estes moved to Pecos, Texas, when Estes called Cliff Carter, with whom he had previously collaborated in the purchase and reselling of old barracks buildings. Estes stated in his book *Billie Sol Estes: A Texas Legend* that Johnson and his top aide Cliff Carter were his secret partners “in everything,” explaining that the reason this was hard to prove was due to Johnson’s dictum that there be no paper trail on any of their dealings, that “Most of our conversations were over the telephone or in person,” and if any such written communications were ever made, they were always in their secret coded wording. “We transferred the money in cash. The reason the IRS could never find my ‘hidden’ money was because most of it was in Cliff Carter’s or Lyndon Johnson’s hands.”²⁴⁴

An illustration of this appeared in a letter on the stationery of “The Vice President” dated January 21, 1962, which was really a “thank you” for the receipt of more cash from him, but stated it as though it was for the “products” of Pecos, Texas, perhaps a crate of cantaloupes, one of the only products, other than cotton, known to be produced there:

Let me say again how wonderful it was of you to think of me at Christmas. Pecos has carved a niche for itself—at least so far as I am concerned—by the quality of its products. Many, many thanks, my friend. It was good to get a chance to see you this weekend and I’m so glad you could take the time to come out for a visit with Lady Bird and me.

Given that cantaloupes are not generally harvested in the middle of winter, even in Pecos, the “products” was undoubtedly code for the other commodity it was famous for: cold, hard cash. It was the bounty collected by Lyndon Johnson for the sale of his most valued

commodity: political influence, sold to the highest bidder for the lowest, most sordid frauds against the taxpayers he worked for, whom he referred to as “pissants.”

Johnson’s insistence on absolute secrecy, strengthened by his preference for running all the most important illegal/unethical schemes with two or more levels of “staff” between himself and the dirty work, became the primary skill he used throughout his life. All of his base skill sets—the conniving guile, trickery, and duplicitousness—were evident in his college years, as fully described by Robert Caro in *The Path to Power* and summarized here. Johnson honed these skills throughout his lengthy career. The earliest examples were the infamous stolen 1948 Senate election, which required massive and brazenly executed fraud, followed by his behind-the-scenes manipulation by blackmail, extortion, and bribery during the 1952 trial of his apprentice hit man Malcolm “Mac” Wallace, resulting in a suspended sentence after having been found guilty of first-degree murder. That was quickly followed by the death of Sam Smithwick in his jail cell, after he threatened to reveal his involvement in the stolen 1948 election.

In the late 1950s Johnson’s very lucrative association with Billie Sol Estes produced millions of dollars for their partnership gained through multiple frauds against the federal government before leading directly to the murders of several people by Mac Wallace, none of which were ever solved, thanks to the help of local sheriffs in pronouncing them all accidents or suicides. Finally an even more complex, multi-faceted criminal association with Bobby Baker produced ever greater governmental frauds and corruption, with the help of a number of mobsters and tainted lobbyists. After all of that, with all the chutzpa he could muster, he would finally deny that he even knew these men.

Even his reign as “Master of the Senate” was an illusion, or, in the lexicon of a magician, a “shell game” he played, as he portrayed his accomplishments as being almost majestic; this despite little in the way of notable legislative accomplishments during that entire period. Indeed, through his entire tenure in Congress, first in the House and then twelve years in the Senate, five as the majority leader, there is not one substantive bill for which he bore primary responsibility. Except, of course, for the wholly inconsequential Civil Rights Acts of 1957 and 1960, as previously noted. His work in impeding any meaningful civil rights reform until November 27, 1963, should serve to reinforce that point. All during the late 1950s and early 1960s, as churches burned, “sit-ins” occurred at segregated restaurants and hotels, and fire hoses and German shepherd police dogs were turned against black protestors throughout the South, what exactly was the “Colossus” of civil rights up to? He was stretching the problem as far as he could without solving it through effective legislation; he was “waiting until the time was right.” He wanted it passed under his inevitable reign, certainly not that of the temporary resident of the Oval Office, whose fate was determined in Los Angeles, on July 15, 1960.

Planting Lies to Replace Truth

Johnson’s most useful, repeatedly employed technique was planting lies and myths to replace real truths; of rewriting history. Indeed, his mentor, Senator Richard Russell, once said, after hearing Johnson embellish his personal role in the creation of NASA and the decisions that led to landing a man on the moon in 1969, “That’s the joy of being

president; you get to rewrite history.”²⁴⁵ Lyndon Johnson had gone to great lengths to ensure that “history” would be written in future decades in a way that embellished all of the “good things” that he would be memorialized for, and assured that the “bad things” would be swept under the rug.

Another example of Johnson’s proclivity of “rewriting history” with invented truths, came from Nicholas Katzenbach, the attorney general after RFK resigned, who was later moved to the position of under secretary of state. In this case, it was a story he told about how Johnson completely misrepresented the origin of a piece of legislation that he had initiated. Johnson had asked Katzenbach and, independently, another adviser, Professor Richard Neustadt of Harvard, to draft a bill to change the two-year term for House members to a four-year term. Neither of them favored such a change and when—after it was announced—the criticisms of it poured in, Johnson said, “I knew that four-year proposal was a mistake, but I let these two professors talk me into it. These academic types just don’t understand the real world.”²⁴⁶ The fact that Katzenbach included this little vignette in his memoirs is particularly interesting when one considers the implications of what he described as Johnson’s tendency to believe what he had to know was not the truth; his invented lies, to him, became the truth and his absolute belief that they were fact convinced others around him that the lie was truth:

Yet many times I saw similar instances of statements that were not true, statements one would normally call lies. When things did not work out as he had thought they would, he was able to conjure up an explanation that had little or nothing to do with fact and then become convinced that that was how it had happened.²⁴⁷

Katzenbach’s description matches exactly what we have previously observed: Johnson’s propensity to become convinced that the lie was the truth, no matter what, would manifest over and over throughout his career. It was described by George Reedy and others, as previously noted; once he had convinced himself, then the lie to him had morphed itself into truth, and he expected that everyone else would see that. These contortions of lies versus truths, fantasy versus reality, seemed to grow throughout his rise up the political ladder, such that his internal conflicts and contradictions might have produced some of the psychic damage that had remained off the public radar until after he left the White House (actually, as we will see, there were apparently many people who had quietly suspected it, as it seemed to explain a lot of otherwise inexplicable events during his reign).

As a person of these aptitudes, Johnson would have factored in the public’s short memory for the “bad things” and long memory for the “good things” into all his planning for his own eventual legacy. He doubtlessly referred to it as the “PR” work that needed to be done to ensure an epic, grand legacy, one which would assure that his name would be right next to Franklin D. Roosevelt, Abraham Lincoln, and George Washington in the pantheon of “Greatest Presidents.”^{*} His former aide and speechwriter—Richard Goodwin, whose gift for writing soaring oratory generally seemed a bit out of tune with the man mouthing his words—affirmed this in his memoir, when he stated, “I sensed the enormity of the man’s will, the intensity of his intent, not just to pass the Kennedy programs, but to go far beyond his predecessor’s reach, to leave a mark on the country that would equal,

even surpass, that of his youthful hero, Franklin Roosevelt. He wanted to out-Roosevelt Roosevelt.”²⁴⁸

Changing the Subject: Forget About Dallas—Johnson Tries to Manipulate the Rest of the World

In the first months after he became president, Lyndon Johnson pulled strings on every available front, continuing his efforts to distract the attention of everyone away from that bloody scene in Dallas, toward his many other initiatives on the domestic front. Though many of his manipulations during this period were openly publicized, for maximum effect, many others were being conducted secretly, the device that he had always used for his most audacious and cunning actions. His earliest, “behind the scenes” endeavors involved secret plans to “Americanize” the Vietnam war, while keeping the military and intelligence agencies busy planning a number of other contingencies. That subject will be explored in detail in a later chapter. Others involved his meddling in the affairs of countries around the world under the same secrecy veil.

Assisting a Military Coup d’état in Brazil

An example of that was his then-widely suspected involvement in a Brazilian coup d’état in March 1964 that was not officially acknowledged until forty years after the fact, when the National Security Agency released previously classified documents in 2004. These documents showed that Johnson, with help from US Ambassador Lincoln Gordon in Brazil, forcefully pressed the CIA and US military to facilitate the overthrow of President Joao Goulart by backing the Brazilian military forces that were planning to do just that. Johnson said, according to those national security documents: “I think we ought to take every step that we can, be prepared to do everything that we need to do.’ President Johnson instructed his aides regarding preparations for a coup in Brazil on March 31, 1964.”²⁴⁹ Ambassador Gordon wrote a cable to Washington saying, “If our influence is to be brought to bear to help avert a major disaster here—which might make Brazil the China of the 1960s—this is where both I and all my senior advisors believe our support should be placed.” To assure the success of the coup, Gordon recommended “that measures be taken soonest to prepare for a clandestine delivery of arms of non-US origin, to be made available to Castello Branco supporters in Sao Paulo.” Gordon later suggested that these weapons be “pre-positioned prior any outbreak of violence,” to be used by paramilitary units and “friendly military against hostile military if necessary.” To conceal the US role, Gordon recommended the arms be delivered via “unmarked submarine to be off-loaded at night in isolated shore spots in state of Sao Paulo south of Santos.”²⁵⁰

Gordon’s cables also confirm CIA covert measures “to help strengthen resistance forces” in Brazil. These included “covert support for pro-democracy [in name only] street rallies ... and encouragement [of] democratic and anti-communist sentiment in Congress, armed forces, friendly labor and student groups, church, and business.” Four days before the coup, Gordon informed Washington that “we may be requesting modest supplementary funds for other covert action programs in the near future.” He also requested that the United States send tankers carrying “POL”—petroleum, oil, and

lubricants—to facilitate the logistical operations of the military coup plotters, and deploy a naval task force to intimidate Goulart’s backers and be in position to intervene militarily if fighting became protracted. The audio tapes, released in 2004, show that Lyndon Johnson was briefed at his Texas ranch, while the Brazilian military, led by Chief of Staff General Humberto Castello Branco, mobilized against Goulart. Johnson said, “I’d put everybody that had any imagination or ingenuity ... [CIA Director John] McCone ... [Secretary of Defense Robert] McNamara” on making sure the coup went forward. Johnson is heard to instruct undersecretary of state George Ball. “We just can’t take this one,” the tape records LBJ’s opinion. “I’d get right on top of it and stick my neck out a little” he intoned, authoritatively demonstrating his resolve yet again to replace a democratically elected official in a sovereign country with someone more closely aligned with his brand of governance.²⁵¹

It seems clear now that Lyndon Johnson, in his zeal to finish the shell game now being played throughout the world and irrespective of whether real US national security issues were at stake, wanted to leave a global imprint of his reign of power and would stop at nothing to make that happen. As the NSA documents attested (the CIA has yet to release its records of the same event): “Such US military support for the military coup proved unnecessary; Castello Branco’s forces succeeded in overthrowing Goulart far faster and with much less armed resistance than [sic] US policy makers anticipated.” On April 2, CIA agents in Brazil cabled that “Joao Goulart, deposed president of Brazil, left Porto Alegre about 1pm local time for Montevideo.”²⁵² According to Wikipedia, “The coup installed successive right-wing hardliners as heads of state who suspended civil rights and liberties of the Brazilian people. They abolished all political parties and replaced them with only two, the military government’s party called the National Renewal Alliance Party (Aliança Renovadora Nacional—ARENA) and the consented opposition Brazilian Democratic Movement (Movimento Democrático Brasileiro—MDB). However, MDB had no real power, and the military rule was marked by widespread disappearance, torture, and exile of many politicians, university students, writers, singers, painters, filmmakers and other artists.”²⁵³ Having served in the Peace Corps in Brazil five years after the coup, I can personally attest to the continued presence of soldiers being stationed at key positions in major cities and especially at airports. Their duties by then were simply to present an intimidating presence, standing in position with assault rifles ready for any uprisings by “the people.”

The Invasion of the Dominican Republic—April/May 1965

The official end of Johnson’s “honeymoon” period with Congress occurred when he dispatched marine contingents into the Dominican Republic on April 28, 1965, against the recommendation of every one of his White House advisers. The impetus for this mini-invasion was a period of political instability that had begun with the assassination of the dictator Rafael Trujillo in 1961, followed by a military coup d’etat in September 1963, two months before President Kennedy was assassinated. A Triumvirate was installed to run the country after that but for the next two years, clashes, conflicts, and strikes were the routine and political instability was both the cause and effect. The sporadic fighting between the

“Loyalists” (to the military junta) and the “Constitutionalists” (who wanted to restore power to the Dominican Popular Movement) grew during April and Johnson, afraid that it would result in a “second Cuba” ordered the US Marines, Army, and Special Forces in to restore order, and the “unannounced mission” of preventing it from becoming Communist.

Apart from the negative reaction this action received on Capitol Hill, his announcement of this action at a presidential news conference on May 5, 1965, that it was actually to assist the little old ladies in that country, became fodder for an increasingly critical press: “It has been necessary for a few marines to go out and take an old lady and her little belongings and with a crippled hip, carry her down through the streets where the firing is taking place ...” The exercise was also purportedly for the purpose of protecting US citizens, even though there were no known threats caused by the civil insurgency then in progress, because, he said, “There has been almost constant firing on our American Embassy. As we talked to Ambassador Bennett ... we heard the bullets coming through the office.”²⁵⁴

On June 17, he elaborated further, saying that 1,500 people had been murdered and shot, and their heads cut off, and 1,000 other Americans were holed up in the American embassy being shot at as the ambassador was pleading for their president for help to save their lives. The entire story that Johnson told to the reporters present, therefore to all citizens of the United States, was a complete lie, none of it was true. The president of the United States just made it all up on the fly at his news conferences, though he might have deluded himself into thinking it was true. The ambassador there, William Tapley Bennett Jr., said later that he “could not recall any bullets coming into his office, nor did he take cover under his desk.” The beheadings were imagined. No US citizen was harmed and none was even threatened. (Two newsmen were shot by US Marines, though.)²⁵⁵ Johnson made it up extemporaneously and was never called on it, as he was never called on many of his prevarications.

Instigating a Military Coup d'état in Indonesia

Still another long-delayed report (thirty-four years after the fact) implicated Johnson in helping General Suharto** of Indonesia conduct the military coup he staged on October 1, 1965, which eventually resulted in the massacre of up to one million of his own citizens in that country during 1965–66. In a news article dated July 19, 1999, journalist Mike Head reported that “Western powers urged the Indonesian military commanders to seize upon false claims of a coup attempt instigated by the Indonesian Communist Party (PKI), in order to carry out one of the greatest civilian massacres of the 20th century and establish a military dictatorship.”²⁵⁶ Between 500,000 and a million people of Chinese origin were murdered, and tens of thousands more were imprisoned or moved to concentration camps. For the ensuing year, US and Australian officials monitoring the genocide reported to their highest officials that the forces they supported were working together to “shoot, hack or club to death at least 1,500 suspected PKI sympathizers per day, sometimes parading their heads on sticks.”²⁵⁷ The first two words of that quote, “Western powers” meant, intrinsically, the then-current president of the United States, Lyndon B. Johnson,

whose grand plans to “Westernize” the entirety of Southeast Asia had only begun to materialize.

Triggering the Cambodian Genocide

Yet another tragedy (as great as Vietnam itself, in terms of human lives lost) caused by Johnson’s militaristic policies—though incorrectly assigned to President Nixon because the catalyst was delayed until his presidency and the subsequent 1975 US withdrawal from Vietnam—under the Cambodian dictator Pol Pot and his Khmer Rouge regime. It came a decade after Johnson’s original instigation and was one of the worst human tragedies in history, eventually costing the lives of 1.7 million people (21% of the country’s population). In a paper published on the Yale University website by Taylor Owen and Ben Kiernan titled “Bombs over Cambodia,” it was reported in 2006 that “New information reveals that Cambodia was bombed far more heavily during the Vietnam War than previously believed—and that the bombing began not under Richard Nixon, but under Lyndon Johnson.” Here we see still another pattern of Johnson’s presidency: His cowboy approach to intervening anywhere in the world, where he did not like how another country was being managed, was demonstrated again, though it took nearly four decades for it to be acknowledged and for the news to be reported. The bombing of Cambodia begun in 1965 by the Johnson administration had, by the end of his regime, dropped over 475,000 tons of ordnance on Cambodia, which had until then been a neutral kingdom. The “Menu campaign” was begun on border areas within Cambodia—labeled Breakfast, Lunch, Supper, Dinner, Dessert, and Snack by American commanders [based upon code words, that may have been coined by Johnson himself]—concluded in May, 1969, shortly after the coup.” ²⁵⁸

As the authors of this paper noted, the Johnson-initiated bombings caused such enormous casualties in Cambodia that they drove the “enraged populace into the arms of an insurgency that had enjoyed relatively little support until the bombing began.”²⁵⁹ That resulted in the Vietnam War expanding into Cambodia and a subsequent coup d’état; the growth of the Khmer Rouge followed and ultimately one of the worst genocides of recorded history occurred, for which President Johnson should be given appropriate blame, with another bullet on his official legacy list.²⁶⁰

Belated Lessons Learned

This was yet another tragedy that can be placed, belatedly, into Lyndon Johnson’s hidden legacy; it has heretofore been missing from the debate about Johnson’s presidential footprint, just as the others were, as enumerated previously. Until now, the blame for the Cambodian genocide has been misplaced and put on Richard Nixon’s list of ignominious achievements. It should now be clear that its linkage to US policies in Indochina began not in 1974–75, but ten years earlier, under Lyndon Johnson, in 1964–65. Simultaneously with his manic efforts to recast the rest of the world to conform to his “vision,” he began planning to implement the sweeping changes that he himself had kept on the shelf for several years, as he waited until “the time was right.” Now that he was president, the time was, finally, “right.” The fact that so many highly credentialed historians, sociologists,

political scientists, and journalists pay homage to his ability to move mountains of populist legislation through Congress in the first two to three years of his administration is ample proof that his plan worked, since it appears that none of them, despite the fact that many of them lived right through it, ever saw this facet of his manipulative power.

Lyndon Johnson's favorite slogans probably revealed more of his character, and his dominance over others, than anything else. He liked to say, for example, "I never trust a man unless I have his pecker in my pocket," and, "Give me a man's balls, and his heart and mind will follow." Throughout this narrative, other pithy comments he liked to make about his power over others will appear; their commonalities were usually the references to his manipulative skills, the element of deceit or his cunning and guile. But the most important of them—Johnson's central guiding philosophy of life, had he ever been introspective and candid enough to reveal it—would probably have been close to the cynical, ersatz view of governance as depicted by Joseph Goebbels: That a well told lie, repeated often and with authority, could be made to become the "truth." The examples of contemporary authors and journalists noted previously give new evidence that the credo developed over many centuries by the worse despots of every age, then articulated by Goebbels, was perfected by Lyndon Johnson in 1964–1965.

Unfortunately the fascination of his biographers with his efficacy in achieving the "good things" that Johnson managed to push through Congress ignores the reality of how and why he did it. Almost immediately upon taking office, he "jump-started" politicians on both sides of the aisle—finally flexing long-dormant political muscles to kick the shins of Congress, through exploiting the national mood of shock and remorse for JFK's murder—into passage of a plethora of "Great Society" legislation during his first year as the "Accidental President," and the following single term he was then elected to. These "good things" have been written about in near nauseating detail in giving him the credit in practically every Johnson biography, just as they consistently kept the darkest secrets well hidden.

If the passage of the progressive domestic legislation had simply been to fulfill the noble purposes described by the political rhetoric, this exercise would be unnecessary. But there are clear and unambiguous signs that there were other, unstated, hidden agendas propelling the mania of the new president to effect his hugely ambitious programs. It is important, therefore, to examine his motives and methods for doing anything that may have the appearance of altruism; in nearly every case, it can be shown that his own hegemony, specifically related to how he had planned his "legacy" even before he became president, was the primary motivation.

The plethora of bills Johnson would push through Congress once he became president served two purposes: first, they would "change the subject" from that unfortunate bloody incident in Dallas, while secondly and simultaneously, they would establish the basis of his future legacy as one of the greatest presidents of all time. And he would do it as he loudly proclaimed that it was all for the glorification of the dead president, knowing, of course, that—since they would be passed on his own watch—the credit would ultimately be apportioned to him and him alone.

The anticipation of how he would take the reins quickly, in order to ensure that the world knew he was now the president, was clearly and meticulously planned well before the event. In the aftermath, relying mostly on his own and Lady Bird's version of events—through a succession of willing journalists and credulous biographers—the foundation for the grand design planned long before became the base that led to his portrayal of greatness, thereby ensuring that the myths would become the truth.

A good example of how his lies would replace truths is the story of Johnson's behavior during the assassination as told by Robert Caro, who described his behavior as "coolness and decisiveness under pressure,"²⁶¹ as though he had been completely surprised but not so shocked that his poise and firm control were affected by the shots in Dealey Plaza. But this story is at odds with the one told in 1967 by William Manchester, who wrote in *The Death of a President* that before the assassination, according to Ralph Yarborough, who shared the same rear seat, that Johnson "wasn't enjoying" the motorcade event. In fact, Yarborough described Johnson's demeanor as "[He] stared glumly ahead;"²⁶² and "he was hunched in the convertible on Harwood Street, listening to the Dallas radio."²⁶³ Moreover, wrote Manchester, "he was far readier to take orders than to issue them. His poise had dissolved."²⁶⁴ These descriptions by William Manchester, of Johnson both before and after the assassination, written just a few years afterward, are diametrically opposite of how Robert Caro portrayed Johnson nearly five decades later.

How does one evaluate the veracity of these two mutually exclusive versions of Johnson's demeanor? The independent, truth-seeking William Manchester in 1967 described Johnson as having his "poise dissolved," his legendary self-assuredness completely gone, a description irreconcilably opposite of that written forty-five years later by Robert Caro. The only plausible reason was that Mr. Caro ignored Manchester, just as Johnson attempted to do, and chose to write his story on the basis of the myth that Johnson himself had planted with other aspiring authors. One of the many reasons Johnson did not like William Manchester's story was that he knew he had no markers to call in the case of Manchester: no "dirt" from the FBI's files; no scuttlebutt from his old college friends—nothing to use for extortion—and of course he knew that Manchester had been chosen by Bobby Kennedy to write his book.

Johnson knew that the seeds of his myth would not be congruent with the truths revealed by Manchester's work, and relied on future authors to accept his own version of those events. Johnson's answer was to commission his own personally chosen author, Jim Bishop, to write a book, *The Day Kennedy Was Shot*, that would conform to his own story and portray himself as the victim of the Kennedy's vanity. Bishop wrote that the Kennedys regarded Johnson as crude and crass: "Lyndon Johnson must be charged with a lack of understanding of the Kennedy mentality. They required a villain for their rancor... They had no standing anymore, no prestige... Many of them held Johnson in such contempt that they could not endure his offer of resurrection."²⁶⁵ It is curious now that Mr. Caro, among many others, has chosen Jim Bishop's tome over the much more contemporaneously acclaimed book of William Manchester. It appears that, in his fourth

and penultimate book on Lyndon Johnson, *The Passage of Power*, Robert Caro chose to reference Bishop's stilted book to portray Johnson's actions that day as being bold and decisive, while ignoring Manchester's seminal work that portrayed accurate history. Bishop's book was filled with the "little myths" that Lyndon Johnson had planted, and those seeds have flowered again in the Caro work, fulfilling the plan that Johnson knew would eventually blossom with even grander myth. It has become the largest tree in a forest that grows ever larger with each additional paean to the "Colossal" Lyndon B. Johnson. Bishop's version of history conforms with that myth, not the historic truths of that day, which were beautifully and thoroughly described in Manchester's work. A short but revealing snippet of his eloquent description of Lyndon Johnson deserves repeating here:

When the circus catch was made, [Johnson] wanted the fans to note the LBJ brand on the fielder's glove. They noted it ... Yet the feeling persisted that ... the play had been set from the start. It was only a feeling. Nothing was ever proved.²⁶⁶

Manchester's suspicions about Johnson could not have been clearer. He left that piece in his book—despite his having deleted at least 207 other pages that were so brutally revealing that they could be described as "explosive," under pressure from Bobby Kennedy to save his own political future—for a reason, and it must have had something to do with the events in Dallas and how rumors of Johnson's involvement were ubiquitous there for months and years afterward.²⁶⁷ The rumors about what was in Manchester's book that was so damaging to Johnson would have been fully known by him from what he experienced on board Air Force One. Since the extracted material was sealed for 100 years after the flurry of lawsuits between Jackie Kennedy, *Look* magazine and Manchester, the precise details will not be known until 2067, therefore all we can do for now is to quote author Victor Laskey: "Indeed, some incredible stories were circulated."²⁶⁸ According to James Reston, a syndicated columnist for the *New York Times*, Bill Moyers, the former press secretary for Johnson, read the most offending passages of Manchester's book and, Reston stated: "no doubt the President [Johnson] has been told what he already knew or suspected before Mr. Manchester ever got involved ... What [Mrs. Kennedy] is faced with is the death of Camelot, the killing of the myth. It is intolerable but also inevitable, and the lawsuit is only going to make the inevitable even more intolerable ..."²⁶⁹

What is clear is that both Jackie and Bobby were aghast that Manchester's first draft used much of the worst commentary about Johnson's actions on Air Force One. They had a team headed by Arthur Schlesinger Jr., Richard Goodwin, Edwin Guthman, John Seigenthaler, Pierre Salinger, Ted Sorenson, and Burke Marshall combing through the manuscript to decide what should be changed or deleted entirely. According to Lawrence Van Gelder, author of *Why the Kennedys Lost the Book Battle*, "In the first installment, the Kennedy strategists sought changes affecting 288 words; in the second, 270; in the third, 2,737; and in the fourth, 3,177. It was clear that the deletions sought were proportional to Lyndon Johnson's mounting prominence in the narrative."²⁷⁰

Constructing a Legacy for a Colossus

Everything about Lyndon Johnson was grounded in his innately acquired ability to create meticulous plans. And everything about him—his body (evidently, including his penis, “Jumbo” he called it, which he liked to show to other men, and certain ladies, in the White House pool), his ego, skills, methods, aspirations, all of him was metaphorically, if not literally, of gigantic proportions, just as Bill Moyers has described him: A “Colossus.”

Johnson knew years before he captured the White House that his eventual “legacy” would depend on his ability to ensure that major legislation, previously kept in a state of endless gridlock, was pushed through Congress as soon as possible after he became president. The best way to ensure that would be to create a backlog of pending legislation, bills that were pending in Congress, but vetted through the lengthy legislative process and all temporarily “shelved.” He created this political impasse behind the scenes to assure that, for one reason or another, they were simply deferred to another time. His powers of persuasion with the congressional leadership, aided by the exercise of his long-held political muscle, his detailed knowledge of the personal “quirks” and skeletons in practically every congressman’s and senator’s closet and his knowledge of “where the bodies were buried,” enabled him to keep them shelved until “the time was right.” All during his vice presidency Johnson had feigned progress on a number of fronts, but failed to deliver on any of them: Bobby Kennedy once said that Johnson “very rarely helped when he could help when we were trying to get votes in the Senate. He was against sending any civil rights legislation up [to Congress].”²⁷¹ As noted previously, JFK had once complained about how Johnson had made “all sorts of assurances to me for years and has lived up to none of them.”²⁷²

Given his lack of cooperation during the entirety of the Kennedy administration in pitching in to get any significant legislation through Congress—and his complete and aggressive turnaround within days of Kennedy’s burial—one can see retrospectively the degree of cunning, guile, and manipulation behind the avalanche of laws that came about, almost perfectly on schedule. Within two years, he had accomplished his lifetime plans to remake himself. There are many elements to be explored which affirm his strategy, and the results that Johnson had envisioned all along. The existence of these multiple examples of “truths” built upon a foundation of lies and deceit, forces us to use forensic processes to examine them as we focus on exposing the real legacy of Lyndon Johnson. In doing so, it will become apparent that Johnson’s real motive had less to do with helping minorities, the poor and elderly, or other groups, as it did with building monuments to himself, designed in advance. He knew that moving populist legislation, some of which had been stalled for decades due to his earlier efforts, would establish him as a popular leader; he also had counted on exploiting the nation’s agonizing sorrow over the late departed president as a way to force congressional action on that legislation; it would require a transformational swing, after three decades of wobbling between both ends of the political gamut. In the days after November 22, 1963, he took an undeniably gigantic leap, from the right on most domestic issues to left of center, after he became president. The astonishing thing about it is how quickly that was accomplished, almost as if someone had hit a light switch, illuminating the way for the hundreds of congressmen and senators seeking a way to pay proper tribute to John F. Kennedy, following the new president and giving him major

doses of “benefit of the doubt,” as illustrated by the way he got the Senate to stop both of the on going investigations into his criminal past.

President Johnson Recognized as “Liar in Chief” by Sigma Delta Chi Journalism Society

People who knew Lyndon Johnson in his college years have affirmed, and a number of his aides and associates in Washington have confirmed, that “*he could make himself believe anything.*” That stemmed from his inability to even tell the difference between truth and lies; it was as if he felt that he could deem any proposition to be the “truth” and honestly expected that others would accept it as such. Ultimately, most people just didn’t believe him because he was a man who could just not tell the truth.²⁷³ Yet it went beyond that. Because, as demonstrated multiple times throughout this book and its predecessor, many of his aides, associates, journalists, pundits, and colleagues in Congress continued to believe his lies even when they should have known that they were not based in truth. The only reasonable explanation for their credulity was that they *wanted* to believe him, especially after he had become president; with that title, he was automatically imbued with the authority of that majestic office—a position as high in the world’s hierarchy as one could aspire to, in his mind—one he considered to be on the level of a deity.

Within two years of his becoming president—after being deceived a number of times on everything from the gradually escalating Vietnam intervention to embarrassing debacles with foreign leaders—White House reporters, upset with his prevarications, exaggerations, subterfuges, and tactical reversals finally figured out the essential character of the new president and created a term to describe the chasm between real truths and Johnson truths: “Credibility Gap.” A joke that was often told around Washington bars about this time went like this.²⁷⁴

How do you know when Lyndon Johnson is telling the truth? “Well, when he goes like this”—finger beside nose—“he’s telling the truth. When he goes like this”—pulling an ear lobe—“he’s telling the truth. When he goes like this”—rubbing the chin—“he’s telling the truth. But when he starts moving his lips, that’s when he’s lying.”

In the 1966 congressional elections, Republicans gained three seats in the Senate and forty-seven in the House due largely to a backlash against Johnson personally, just two years after his landslide victory against Barry Goldwater. Much of the “personal backlash” was caused by the growing public sense of Lyndon Johnson’s innate duplicity and his inability to be honest and truthful. The Republican victory made it virtually impossible for Johnson to pass any significant additional Great Society legislation and reinvigorated the conservative base of the Republican party just two years before the looming 1968 presidential election. When asked to explain why he was unpopular, Johnson responded, “I am a dominating personality, and when I get things done I don’t always please all the people.” Johnson also blamed the press, saying they showed “complete irresponsibility to lie and misstate facts and have no one to be answerable to.” He also blamed “the preachers, liberals, and professors” who had turned against him.²⁷⁵

Johnson's well-earned reputation as a liar—and for being the inspiration for the Sigma Delta Chi journalism society to create a new term, *credibility gap*, to describe the suspect veracity of anything he might say—had many origins. One good example was in his press conference of April 27, 1965, when he stated, “I have always opposed the poll tax.” In fact, he had consistently supported the poll tax and literacy tests, voting at least a dozen times between 1942 and 1960 to keep and strengthen them.

Hugh Sidey, a syndicated columnist, reported that Johnson gave a speech to troops bound for Vietnam in which he talked about the importance of patriotism, how young men had a duty to honor their country and their president, to fight when the country's freedom is imperiled. That, to him, included sending millions of American boys to the other side of the world to fight in the civil war of a small third-world country (which he once referred to as “that ‘raggedy-ass little fourth-rate country’”).²⁷⁶ In that speech, he noted how his own great-great-grandfather had died at the Battle of the Alamo, a story he had fabricated years before and had repeated so often that he apparently came to believe it, despite the fact that none of his forebears was among those known to have been there (the only two Johnsons killed there were not related to him: Lewis was from the Illinois territory and William was from Philadelphia).²⁷⁷ In any event, Johnson took umbrage at even being called on it, saying, “Oh, these journalists, they're such sticklers for details.”²⁷⁸ Other authors went even further into this particular statement and found that he had made the same slip more than once, and then said it was just a slip of the tongue, that he meant the battle of San Jacinto. Later he denied that he had even said it was the Alamo. Ultimately, it turned out that his ancestor had not been in either battle and had merely devoted his life to real estate deals and eventually died in bed of old age.²⁷⁹ It is yet another example of how Lyndon Johnson had not changed from his younger days, when, after being caught in a lie, he would rationalize it and then quickly return to the same lie, unable to recognize the difference between what was truth and what had originated within the deepest recesses of his own mind.

Claiming That JFK Insisted on the Texas Trip

As one of the original young Texans recruited by Johnson to come to Washington, John Connally had unwavering loyalty to Lyndon Johnson, despite the occasional tiffs noted elsewhere. That he was widely called LBJ Jr. (Lyndon's Boy John) spoke more than other mere words could describe. In 1967, undoubtedly at Johnson's behest, Connally wrote an article for the November 27 edition of *Life* magazine titled “Why Kennedy Went to Texas,” that contained a number of false statements about that trip, all meant to deflect attention away from the role he and Johnson had played in luring Kennedy to Texas. Among other lies, Connally claimed that JFK was the one who had pressured Connally and Johnson to make the trip. Other authors of recent books, such as Randall B. Woods's *LBJ: Architect of American Ambition*, credulously assumed this version to be true. As previously demonstrated, this was yet another carefully placed lie that Lyndon Johnson wanted in the official record, despite the fact that it was Johnson who had repeatedly pressed Kennedy to come to Texas. Woods cited the June 1963 meeting between JFK, LBJ, and Connally at the

Cortez Hotel in El Paso as the point at which Kennedy “refused to take no for an answer.”

Yet Johnson had already announced Kennedy’s pending visit, through a leak unauthorized by the White House to Texas newspapers that Kennedy would visit Texas later that year. An article had been published to that effect, based on Johnson’s leak, on April 24, 1963, in the *Dallas Times Herald*. Johnson had plotted carefully for at least a year, ostensibly to ensure that Kennedy would make the trip in order to begin fund-raising for the 1964 campaign; another given reason was to quell the disunity within the party caused by a famously persistent enmity between Senator Yarborough and John Connally and Lyndon Johnson that, for some reason could not be resolved any other way. Planting the newspaper story was one way that Johnson ensured that Kennedy had committed to make the trip to Texas; the meeting two months later in El Paso was merely a planning session—to get an agreement on specific scheduling and an itinerary for the trip.

In an oral history recording for the JFK Library, George Smathers, a Florida Democratic senator, described a conversation he had with President Kennedy. It becomes grimly clear that JFK himself settled the question of who was pressing whom, when he told Smathers the week before the trip that he had never wanted to even make the trip to Texas in the first place:²⁸⁰

[Smathers, quoting JFK]: “Well, you know how Lyndon is.” Lyndon was Vice President. “Lyndon wants to ride with me, but John Connally is the governor and he wants to ride and I think that protocol says that he’s supposed to ride and Johnson wants Jackie to ride with him.”

[Smathers’s own words]: And Connolly was, at that time, a little bit jealous of Lyndon and Lyndon was a little jealous of him, so it’s all these fights were going on. He [JFK] said, “I just don’t want to go down in that mess. I hate to go. I wish I could think of a way to get out of it.”

A cynic reading that colloquy between JFK and his friend George Smathers might be forgiven if he or she concluded that Johnson was probably the key instigator of this on going battle between the three Texans, based on JFK’s comments, which reveal that he was already at his wit’s end trying to force them to make peace within themselves. All of this begs the question of whether Johnson purposely perpetuated the fighting for the very purpose of forcing Kennedy to make the trip, through an incentive that he could not resist and a challenge that he could not responsibly ignore.

The Motorcade Route and Bubbletop Distortions

It has long been established that the decisions to set up the motorcade route, and the insistence of having the limousine bubbletop removed during that same motorcade, were driven by Lyndon Johnson. His coterie of cronies and aides had become strident in their insistence on the Dallas Trade Mart for the luncheon, battling Kennedy’s advance man and many of his senior staff. The only alternative under consideration, the Women’s Building at the fairgrounds on the other side of the city, would not be conducive to the motorcade route that required a slow zigzag trip through Dealey Plaza, even though it was the site unanimously favored by Kennedy’s advance men (However, it would have been

compatible with a speedier trip through the plaza going in the opposite direction, from the airport into downtown via Stemmons Freeway). To those who claim that it was Kenneth O'Donnell who made that decision, that lie is not supported by his testimony to the Warren Commission:²⁸¹

Mr. [Arlen] SPECTER [a Warren Commission lawyer]. One other detail, Mr. O'Donnell. Did you have occasion to deal with any particular individuals from the city of Dallas itself during this trip, or in preparation for this trip?

Mr. O'DONNELL No.

Mr. SPECTER Were there any factors peculiar to Dallas which delayed the determination of the motorcade route?

Mr. O'DONNELL The only factor that really did hold up a final decision was we had not been able to finally agree on where he would end up and where he would deliver the speech. There was a controversy between the Governor, and between some of the local [D]emocratic figures, and between our people, as to whether the place finally selected was the best place for the President to give the address. *The Governor felt very strongly on it. And we finally acquiesced to his views. But I would think that came rather late in the game, and it would have altered the route quite dramatically.* [Emphasis added.]

Kenneth O'Donnell stated that John Connally, together with "other Johnson men," were responsible for selecting the Trade Mart as the venue, and therefore the motorcade route as well. Moreover, as previously documented,²⁸² it was also Johnson's representatives who made certain that the bubbletop was removed from the limousine. In direct contradiction to both of these proofs, Johnson's long-time aid Horace "Buzz" Busby would write a manuscript (subsequently published by his son Scott Busby) that stated the opposite, that "Buzz" Busby's wife had questioned him about why the Secret Service had allowed Kennedy to ride in an open car and he talked to Walter Jenkins about it, who told him that Johnson had cautioned him against not only taking the bubble-top off but even having a motorcade in Dallas. This should be considered as yet another proof of how Johnson, working through his aides, purposefully replaced truths with the most brazen lies:

[Horace Busby]: Governor Connally, Cliff Carter, and *all the Johnson men participating in plans for the Kennedy visit were counseling against the Dallas motorcade.* [Emphasis added.] But our interests and the interests of the Kennedy people were hopelessly at odds ... The politics of John F. Kennedy overruled the politics of Lyndon B. Johnson in the decision to send the young president through the streets of downtown Dallas.²⁸³

This story stands apart, and towers over, all the other lies invented by Johnson or his minions in order to hide the real story of Dallas. In fact, it was he and his cronies and staff assistants who had insisted on the Dallas stop, planning the entire motorcade: the destination, the route, the sequence of cars, the assignment of photographers to vehicles beginning six cars back from Kennedy's limo, putting the presidential physician on a bus

at the end of the motorcade, along with his military escorts, all of whom usually rode close to the president. As if to add more emphasis to the lie, the publisher stated with great irony, on the inside of the book cover: *“Here is Johnson the politician, Johnson the schemer, Johnson advising against JFK’s choice of an open limousine that fateful day in Dallas ...”* In fact, it was Bill Moyers, acting at Johnson’s behest, who had left instructions to “get that God-damned bubble off unless it was pouring rain.”²⁸⁴ Johnson was indeed a ruthless and fanatical politician and schemer and evidently remained so four decades after his death, given that such a lie—that it was Johnson who advised against an open car—would be made by the author, Horace Busby, and publisher of his 2005 book.

This blatantly absurd account—entirely opposite of known factual evidence even from the highly skewed Warren Commission hearings, as well as additional sworn statements taken during the House Select Committee on Assassination—clearly shows how Lyndon Johnson attempted to sew disinformation and confusion into the record for future historians to untangle (which has only now begun to “unravel”—to borrow Captain Clint Peoples’s term). As in so many of his other schemes described earlier, Johnson planted transparently obvious lies among many people to replace the truths he had to contain. Here, the son of one of his top aides—nearly forty years after Johnson’s death—attempts to rewrite history again in order to present the “Johnson side” as being that which was blindsided by the, allegedly, unfortunate selfish decisions made by JFK and his aides, decisions which in fact were forced on them by Lyndon B. Johnson himself.

Johnson’s Efforts to Manipulate Gullible Historians (And Those Who Facilitated the Success of the Mission)

Another troubling aspect of Lyndon Johnson’s legacy was his ability to manipulate professional military officers, high-ranking senators and congressmen, journalists, young historians, and civil servants into doing whatever he wished them to do, regardless of ethical considerations, never mind issues of legality or morality. But it was even more insidious than that: he wanted them to follow his orders uncritically and without question; it was as though everyone working for him had to check their own principles at the door. He clearly went to great lengths to find people who would ensure that future historians had a great amount of fodder from which to pick favorable references to his version of his life story.

Johnson had already let it be known to potential biographers, in order to be allowed to have personal conversations with him, one must agree to write “a friendly book.” When *Texas Observer* publisher Ronnie Dugger was given that opportunity, his response was that it would be “fair and accurate, but my opinions are in it.” That response ended the interviews Dugger had with LBJ.²⁸⁵ But many other contemporary authors acceded to Johnson’s demands, even those who never met him, in order to present him in the most positive, favorable light. It is not surprising that the reality of Johnson’s actions—his methods of attaining his power, including his criminal conduct in stealing elections and becoming a multi-millionaire while “serving” in government through selling his influence and misappropriation of (illegally acquired) campaign funds—is not reflected in many of the books purporting to describe his career in politics. The fact that most of his

biographers choose to highlight a relative handful of “good” legislation passed during his tenure (for which, as previously explained, his support was either unnecessary or his motives were suspect) and mostly ignore his questionable methods—while willfully ignoring his most monstrous actions—allows his contrived legacy to continue being the “conventional wisdom,” to borrow a phrase from John Kenneth Galbraith.

This was similar in pattern to how Johnson later demanded that his aides only inform him of “good news.” As one illustration of this, several books were published about Johnson in 1964, including a book written by Harry Provence, editor of the *Waco News-Tribune*. The book’s dust jacket stated that the author had been writing this “biography” of Johnson “for the past two years,” which meant that he started it before JFK’s assassination and finished it just in time for the 1964 election. That dust cover has only a photograph of its subject on the front, the title being relegated to the spine. It is arguably the most cringingly obsequious, toady book about Johnson ever written (which, considering all the others, was quite an accomplishment). Within its pages, for example, a man admired how Lyndon Johnson was “able to be at complete ease with every kind of person: *He has respect for human beings and sympathy for them. He has no awe of people in high places nor contempt for those in lower stations.*”²⁸⁶ [Emphasis added.] This must have amused anyone on Johnson’s staff who might have read it. The book was one of several that printed the lie that Lyndon Johnson was always Kennedy’s first choice for the vice presidential slot; that lie still persists, as evidenced in the earlier discussion of Robert Caro’s latest work.

The Provence book, like another from that same time written by Merle Miller, *Lyndon: An Oral Biography*, contains the seeds of lies sowed by none other than Lyndon B. Johnson, which suggests that Johnson was the catalyst behind both of these books as well as another one, *The Mission*, which was published in 1964 by Martin Caidin and Edward Hymoff. All these books portray Johnson’s airplane ride during World War II as heroic—though that was entirely debunked by the men who were there and who have now devoted a large section of the B-26 Marauder Historical Society website to explain how it was a lie. Moreover, the website stated that the award to Johnson of a Silver Star—which had been unknown to them until the Caidin/Hymoff book was published just in time for the 1964 presidential election—was an insult to every man who had ever earned the medal before.²⁸⁷

Some of the books in this fawning and gushing genre, ironically, were written by other former aides, who wrote paeans proclaiming his greatness (e.g., Jack Valenti and Marvin Watson), probably under Johnson’s own instructions. Some preferred, like Bill Moyers, to say virtually nothing publicly about Lyndon Johnson’s White House, even though, for a time, he was playing at the center of the post, the key pivot man, and was an extension of Lyndon Johnson’s will. (Moyers announced in 2004 that he was retiring from his PBS job to write a chronicle of his days with LBJ, however, as of this date nearly a decade later, that has yet to materialize). The soaring descriptions of Johnson’s accomplishments as a “champion” of poor people, the “architect” of great legislative accomplishments (even, despite plenty of evidence to the contrary), an architect of “American Ambition” ignore

the premise of this and the earlier book that, during the nearly three years of his vice presidency, Lyndon Johnson was actually the biggest *impediment* to Kennedy's getting legislation through Congress.

It wasn't until Kennedy was dead that Johnson—shamelessly using JFK's memory as a cattle prod to get his Great Society program through Congress—after twenty-six years of fighting meaningful reform, finally got behind the Civil Rights Act and pushed congressmen to pass it.

Lyndon Johnson in retirement had many moments to think back on his actions during a lifetime spent constantly groping for a higher rung, willing to suspend his inhibitions and the legal niceties related to “fair play” to advance his personal goal that he had repeatedly striven for since his childhood days. His memory was very selective, and he would repeat only his fondest stories, however dishonest or self-serving they might be. He often crossed over the fine line between simple self-aggrandizement and a complete suspension of honesty, truthful reflection, and humble introspection. Yet somehow, he had managed to continue coercing others to perpetuate the myth of his “greatness” for many years after his death.

Johnson's Relationships with Key Aides, Reporters, Citizens

Lyndon Johnson liked to say that, “he wanted men around him who were ‘loyal enough to kiss my ass in Macy's window and say it smelled like a rose.’”²⁸⁸ He proved repeatedly that there were plenty of men who would willingly do exactly that, figuratively or not. As difficult as it may be to comprehend how Johnson could control other men so completely, one need only reflect on the fawning sycophancy he expected from his associates or subordinates, especially after becoming president, when practically everyone was considered his subject.

As will soon become apparent, similar strains (mercifully, not nearly of the same degree as applied to Johnson) of this attitude permeate much of the Washington bureaucratic culture, from the president on down, traceable downward through the hierarchy of practically every government agency or department. Below, we will trace examples of this phenomenon through one such agency, the FBI. The examples cited are merely random events that happened to have been routinely recorded and preserved for future archeologists to study—or, in our case, contemporary citizens trying to determine the realities of how the 1960 Washington political bureaucracy worked, and how that culture caused the detour we collectively took as a country during those years. It is reasonable to speculate that, in times of crisis, similar rules of hierarchical deference, and rigid obedience to higher authority, apply to an even higher degree. In our example, Cartha “Deke” DeLoach, one of J. Edgar Hoover's top assistants, wrote the new president a rather gushing letter shortly after being appointed as the FBI's White House liaison.²⁸⁹

Dear Mr. President,

Thank you for allowing Barbara and me to have a “moment of greatness” with the world's number one family yesterday afternoon. The informality, yet quiet dignity

you possess, never ceases to inspire me... . The telecast was excellent... . I received a call at 9:00 PM last night from my elderly Mother ... to report that “Mr. Johnson is the best thing that has ever happened to this Nation ...”

Sincerely,

Deke

The line between expressing a gracious “thank you” and the toady, fawning comments about the “moment of greatness” as written by “Deke” to Lyndon Johnson is not fine or subtle. It is more like the line between true and sincere as opposed to false and obsequious. But in this case, the toady approach clearly worked, because that is exactly how Johnson expected to be treated by his underlings (who were amply rewarded, and became examples for others to follow). William Sullivan, a former assistant FBI director, said that DeLoach remained one of Johnsons “inner circle” after he had assumed the presidency, often visiting the Johnsons in the White House and Camp David and had even gotten a prized direct telephone line from the White House installed in his own bedroom.²⁹⁰

DeLoach, like all of J. Edgar Hoover’s highest level assistants, had learned early on the same advice that Bobby Baker used to explain how Washington worked with new senators: “You get along if you go along,”²⁹¹ an expression that both had learned from the master mentor, Lyndon B. Johnson. This facet of the Washington culture is based on the premise that the higher the level of office one holds, the greater the level, and the more automatic the deference. Irrespective of its ethical, moral, legal, and constitutional implications, one was (and still is) expected to bow—at least figuratively, and occasionally literally—to those lucky or ruthless souls whose fate was to acquire great power over others.

There are countless examples of this phenomenon. But the subject of the present discussion provided an illustration through an account written by a former FBI agent, Don Adams. In his 2012 book written with Harrison E. Livingstone, *From an Office Building with a High-Powered Rifle: A Report to the Public from an FBI Agent Involved in the Official JFK Assassination Investigation*, Adams described an incident when, as a newly appointed FBI agent/trainee whose father knew Mr. DeLoach, Adams decided against paying a visit to him as DeLoach had suggested, because he thought there might be repercussions, “with Deke, with the FBI or with my dad.”²⁹² Mr. Adams decided not to make that visit for fear of doing something that he might regret, or might upset his father, with whom he had a tenuous relationship. But “Deke” DeLoach, evidently not one to “forgive and forget,” did not appreciate what he perceived to be an obvious act of disrespect by a neophyte agent to a person of his high office, a person who probably thought of himself as one of the top ten most powerful men in Washington. The true character of a person, as previously demonstrated in relation to Lyndon Johnson, is reflected largely in how he or she treats other people in general, which is not to say that an occasional gaffe automatically means that a person is a horrid individual. But intentional acts—those designed expressly for the purpose of humiliating and insulting a person of less power than, say, the officious Deke DeLoach—reveal the real character, particularly the level of arrogance, of such a person. Even more importantly than that, is the glimpse of the culture within the bureaucratic

cocoon of an important government agency that had run amok under its senile leader. Through this prism we can view the FBI as it existed in the 1960s:

I [Don Adams] was in class one morning and feeling pleased at having received my first assignment, the Atlanta Office. Suddenly, one of the Bureau supervisors assigned to our class came over to me and said, “I don’t know what you did, but Assistant Director DeLoach is madder than hell, and he wants you in his office right now.” He told me to get a move on because “he’s one guy you don’t want to make any madder than he already is.”

Adams then quickly walked several blocks to FBI headquarters and found the office of DeLoach, across the hall from the “Seat of Government” (SOG) as Hoover liked to call his much larger office. He identified himself to Deke’s secretary, who told him to have a seat while she advised him that his visitor was waiting. He saw him standing by his desk, and for hours Adams sat, waiting for DeLoach to finish what he was doing, which was apparently something very important. He caught glimpses of him, and saw that he was reading something. As he sat there trying to remain patient, he remembered that as a new agent, he was on probation for a year and therefore could be fired on the whim of anyone up the food chain from his lowly level. Adams waited all morning and into the afternoon before Mr. DeLoach found time in his busy schedule to see his visitor. Finally, Deke signaled his secretary that he was finished with his important reading and was ready to meet with his visitor, so Adams walked in and Deke told him to take a seat there in front of his desk. Then Deke went back to reading, and Adams realized it was just a stack of newspapers and it was at this point that Adams realized that Deke was just playing “mind games” with him, to remind him who was in charge there and just how low on the totem pole that put himself. Finally, as DeLoach continued to read his newspaper, he asked, “Can you explain to me what you’re trying to prove?” He wanted to know why Adams had not come to his office weeks ago, as he had been invited to do. Adams then explained that he didn’t want special treatment, or for DeLoach’s friendship with his father to be taken by others as a sign of special privilege.²⁹³

The point of including this obscure vignette here is to provide an illustration of the condescending attitudes of some of the most powerful people who were then running the country, and how the culture of the FBI reflected the arrogance of the man who ran it with an iron fist, as though it was his personal fiefdom. Another important insight into how Hoover had submitted the resources of the entire FBI to Lyndon Johnson’s political objectives was provided by Tim Weiner, the author of *Enemies: A History of the F.B.I.*: “DeLoach was always at L.B.J.’s beck and call, night and day ... He was a talented political hatchet man, and a trusted deputy to Hoover. He was also crucial to intelligence investigations conducted during the Johnson presidency.”²⁹⁴ These examples of other authors’ research and conclusions show conclusively that Lyndon Johnson’s direct influence on other highly placed men—whether it be Hoover and DeLoach at the FBI; Angleton, Helms, and Dulles at the CIA; James Rowley at the Secret Service; or any number of congressmen, senators or other cabinet members and the heads of federal agencies—stretched, invisibly and secretatively, across organization charts, state or

country borders, or any other line, visible or not.

It is a fact that J. Edgar Hoover helped (with practically unlimited access to funding and lobbying) to create a very efficient and powerful agency. But somewhere along the way, long before he should have been forced to retire, he had become an iconic, but enigmatic, figure who had become enthralled with himself and his power over others—not only because of his lofty position, but the huge “Official and Confidential” files he held over practically all other public figures, especially every politician on Capitol Hill.^{***} As noted previously, he routinely referred to his office as the “SOG” (Seat of Government) and himself as the one person who wielded the most power of anyone within the government, since he was in a position to control whatever investigations others within that government might request.

The proof of Hoover’s practically unlimited power was “in the pudding”: Every president whom he served had refused to fire him—from Roosevelt and Truman through Eisenhower, Kennedy, Johnson, and Nixon—for fear of the repercussions. Hoover finally died, at age seventy-seven in 1972, still head of a supposedly independent federal agency, serving at “the pleasure of the president” whom he served. DeLoach’s 1995 book, *Hoover’s FBI*, is a paean to Hoover and ignores the real persona of the man, especially in his description of the FBI’s role in the civil rights movement. Indeed, reading his descriptions of Hoover gives one a sense that he could do no wrong and had actually served his country well, in spite of the several more objective books that have been written that prove the opposite.

Bobby Kennedy had observed on many occasions Lyndon Johnson’s ability to manipulate men to do his bidding, even strong-willed men like Robert McNamara, whose role as an enabler to Johnson will be the subject of a later chapter. RFK marveled at Johnson’s ability “to eat people up, even people who are considered rather strong figures. I mean, as I say, Mac Bundy or Bob McNamara. There’s nothing left of them.”²⁹⁵ In McNamara’s case, his duplicity finally wore him out, after realizing in 1967 that he had simply been manipulated by Johnson in a particularly large-scale and successful application of “The Treatment.”

One of Johnson’s many manipulative skills was described by Richard N. Goodwin as his striving to achieve “personal control not only of his own staff, but all the institutions of government.”²⁹⁶ In Goodwin’s case, Johnson “delighted” in telling him that he could control “those fellows over at State” by simply telling them that the president backs him 100 percent.²⁹⁷ Johnson’s ability to manipulate people, as acknowledged by everyone who knew him—including his nemesis Bobby Kennedy—was his primary skill, one he had practiced since he was a child following his father around the state capitol in Austin. That ability was directly connected to his love of political gamesmanship, and that skill was fueled by what he perceived to be the public’s adoration of him when he was in the full swing of a political campaign. His aide George Reedy described this phenomenon with words that suggested Johnson thought of it in terms of a particularly fulfilling climactic experience, that he enjoyed the adoration so much that he compared it to a “state of ecstasy” and “orgasmic” even when he had to have medical attention for the scratches he

had received from the adoring crowds; “LBJ would insist that everyone on the plane cluster around during the massage period and he would point lovingly to each scratch,” Reedy even postulated that a psychiatrist would “have a field day” with an analysis of these experiences.²⁹⁸

Reedy’s comment about how a psychiatrist might react to those points suggests that Johnson craved the adoration of crowds of people, to the extent that his mania was propelled by it, throughout his political career. He must have truly enjoyed it when his own name was not on the ticket (when it was, in a close campaign, he invariably worked himself into such a frenzy that he became very ill, more than once leading to his hospitalization). When he campaigned for others in the “off years” there was always another purpose behind it (such as when he campaigned for the opponent of Delaware Senator Williams, as noted elsewhere). On those occasions, having no “chip” in the game, he could enjoy giving speeches on behalf of whomever he campaigned for, whether he liked them or not, because he was still “feeling the love” of the crowd who came out to see him, or if someone really got lucky, actually got to touch him, or even be one of those folks who scratched his eminence.

Proof of that claim came from none other than Arthur Schlesinger Jr., who wrote of how Johnson—attempting to show the public how much he loved helping RFK—traveled with Bobby around New York for a day or two. Schlesinger described a day on the campaign trail as the two met back in the hotel, when RFK asked Johnson, “Did you enjoy the day?” Johnson responded that “Of all the things in life, this is what I most enjoy doing.” Bobby was astonished at that, and said: “Imagine saying that, of all the things in life, this is what you like the most.”²⁹⁹ The reason, evidently, that Bobby—who disliked that part of the political game—did not understand that comment was because, for Johnson, this was a psychic need, something much higher on the “matrix of fundamental needs,” as devised by psychologist Manfred Max-Neef and others, than Bobby had ever seen in other people. Of course, this was only one of the many differences between these two men, whose respective psychic profiles, like their physical descriptions, educations, taste in music, and everything else down to their table manners, were polar opposites.

Beginning with a dozen or so pawns during his college years, the number of Lyndon Johnson’s chessmen rose to the hundreds in his early congressional years and increased exponentially into the thousands during his senatorial, vice-presidential and presidential years. The most important of these—Abe Fortas, Ed Clark, Cliff Carter, or Mac Wallace, for example—were represented by bishops, knights, and castles.

Johnson himself was the king (as noted in a previous chapter he had proudly proclaimed himself, “*I am the King!*”) and Lady Bird served him well as the fully malleable, highly mobile, and powerful queen who was once parodied as Lady MacBird in the 1967 off-Broadway production of that name noted earlier. She remained in that role until her dying day when she was still battling in center court. She had joined other ex-Johnson propagandists—Bill Moyers, Jack Valenti, and Gerald Ford—in their 2003 combined attack on the History Channel to cancel further broadcasts of “The Guilty Men.” That video effectively put Lyndon Johnson into the cross hairs of the highest-level suspects in

the investigation of John F. Kennedy's assassination. This attack included veiled threats to Nigel Turner and other participants of the broadcast, which were strong enough to silence most of the participants, including Nigel Turner, the producer and director of the series *The Men Who Killed Kennedy*. Turner subsequently disappeared from the radar on a subject of which he had previously been a most passionate critic of the official story propagated by the government. After that experience, he moved back to England and became a virtual recluse, apparently because of those threats.

Among Johnson's other pawns were the millions of men he took charge of as the commander in chief, who he then moved into and out of Southeast Asia, an action (signing NSAM 273^{***}) initiated subtly but officially the day after John F. Kennedy was buried, though the decision had been made weeks earlier by Johnson, with the advocacy of JFK's senior White House advisers McGeorge Bundy and Walter Rostow, along with CIA officials and the Pentagon chiefs. Of the millions of men and women who served in Vietnam, directly as a result of Johnson's ascendance to the presidency, nearly sixty thousand of them would never live through the experience. Their personal legacies were limited to having their names etched into a magnificent monument to them, the Vietnam Veterans Memorial on the National Mall in Washington, DC. Many, many more would die after they returned, of wounds sustained there. Despite their continued suffering (many from the effects of Agent Orange, which was a particularly toxic defoliant used by the US military throughout Vietnam) and eventual death, and they are not even counted in the official number of the dead from that "conflict."

Bill Moyers—From "Beard" to Highest Presidential Aide

According to Sarah McClendon, a famed White House news reporter for fifty years, Lyndon Johnson originally brought Bill Moyers, a graduate of Southwest Theological Institute in Fort Worth, to Washington to provide "cover" for a persistent rumor regarding Johnson's relationship to his highest level, most attractive secretary, Mary Margaret Wiley. According to McClendon, in her book *Mr. President, Mr. President!*, Johnson had his friend Harry Provence, publisher of the *Waco Tribune*, find him someone who he could use to hide behind during their travels, as a "beard" to escort Ms. Wiley around in public, but to make sure she was available to him in the after-hours. Mr. Provence said in his book that Johnson "regretted losing Mary Margaret Wiley, who left his staff to become Mrs. Jack Valenti of Houston" and that "The relationship between the Johnsons and the Valentis is a close, warm one ... Johnson's staff knew he was awaiting with eager interest the news that Mrs. Valenti had borne her first child,"³⁰⁰ Provence wrote that Johnson had hired Bill Moyers in 1958, and described his function as "personal assistant,"³⁰¹ but we know from Ms. McClendon's book that he performed such functions as handling "policy concerning religion and to answer letters that had a religious tone." It would seem to suggest that, in hiring Moyers, Johnson had hired his own personal preacher, from whom he could expect dispensation for his sins.³⁰² He obviously handled his duties very effectively, as he managed to rise to become the highest White House official under the president by 1965.



White House press secretary Bill Moyers.

In an October 29, 1965, cover story, “The Administration: LBJ.’s Young Man in Charge of Everything,” *Time* magazine effusively reported on the rise of Bill Moyers as Johnson’s right-hand man:

The President one day will call him “my vice president in charge of anything”; the next, he will say Bill is “in charge of everything.” Some White House watchers go so far as to rate him the No. 2 man in the entire Administration—over such Cabinet members as McNamara—on the assumption that keeping LBJ running smoothly is every bit as vital a task as running the Pentagon.

The article then compared Moyers’s position with others in the administration and explained how all positions required that the person had to do anything the “boss” required and do it quickly in order to keep him happy. Later in the article, Moyers allowed that “All that I am, I owe to him.”³⁰³

Moyers Studies Mythmaking

During the 1980s, Bill Moyers began a rigorous study of mythology, including the production of a six-part television series on that subject broadcast on the Public Broadcasting System (PBS). A few years later, in 1991, Moyers was given credit as co-authoring a book by Joseph Campbell, a well-established guru of mythology, even though Campbell had died four years before that. The book, *The Power of Myth*, was edited by Betty Sue Flowers, then a myth instructor at the University of Texas in Austin. A reviewer, Gail Hudson, summing it up on Amazon, stated that “Among his many gifts, Joseph Campbell’s most impressive was the unique ability to take a contemporary situation, such as the murder and funeral of President John F. Kennedy, and help us understand its impact in the context of ancient mythology.” Mr. Moyers might have had other insights about that seminal event, and the Shakespearian-Orwellian, nature of the Lyndon Johnson presidency, but he has chosen not to dwell on that subject during his lengthy monologues on numerous other subjects. Certainly, the assassination of John F. Kennedy deserves much more honesty than folklore—deceitful stories invented to replace factual truths—created for the purpose of explaining it “in the context of ancient mythology.”

Moyers's intensive study of mythology might, however, explain certain statements made in the book, *The Power of Myth*, co-written as an interview with the late philosopher Joseph Campbell, who had, when he was still alive, written *The Hero with a Thousand Faces* and several other books. The following excerpts from the Campbell/Moyers book provide further context to how Moyers's personal philosophy has apparently evolved since his days at Southwest Theological Institute:

Moyers: "How do I slay that dragon in me? What's the journey each of us has to make, what you call 'the soul's high adventure'?"

Campbell: "My general formula for my students is 'Follow your bliss.' Find where it is, and don't be afraid to follow it."

And that was Campbell's own primary contribution toward mankind's search for a better understanding of the human condition: To popularize the phrase, "Follow your bliss," which suggests that there is some merit to hedonism after all, in contrast to what most parents have admonished their children. If one connects that phrase to the other, more prominent, saying "ignorance is bliss," the resulting epiphany leads inexorably to the conclusion that bliss is ultimately the product of ignorance. This exercise brings us full circle to a better understanding of what the architects of the cover-up had foreseen fifty years ago: "Ignorance" of the truth will eventually produce the bliss within the population that brought them—the conspirators—safety and freedom and kept them out of maximum security prisons. Replacing truths with myths inexorably completes the circle and explains fully how a lone shooter—an alleged malcontent and loner who once abandoned his country—with a junk surplus rifle and misaligned scope and three bullets (*only* three bullets), but no apparent motive, could do what no one else since has been able to duplicate, and kill the president of the United States. Only the "power of mythology" can explain all of the anomalies left in the wake of Oswald's supposed deed.

Campbell also wrote that it was the myths of Greek, Latin, and biblical literature that became ancient artifacts, and grew into the structures that sustained life and entire civilizations and religions over many millennia. The myths, he said, have resulted in "these traditions, of information of a deep, rich, life-vivifying sort that you don't want to give it up." Moyers responded: "So we tell stories to try to come to terms with the world, to harmonize our lives with reality?"³⁰⁴

Campbell was also known for his study of comparative mythology. One of his theories is of special interest to our understanding of many things we have reviewed or will review shortly, since he viewed mythology as a kind of poetry that should not be interpreted as historical or scientific fact because that would kill the myth. He seems to be saying that certain history must be morphed into mythology and left there, because to then reinterpret it factually might destroy the myth and that is a dangerous thing to do. He explains this circular logic thusly:

Wherever the poetry of myth is interpreted as biography, history, or science, it is killed. The living images become only remote facts of a distant time or sky. Furthermore, it is never difficult to demonstrate that as science and history,

mythology is absurd. When a civilization begins to reinterpret its mythology in this way, the life goes out of it, temples become museums, and the link between the two perspectives becomes dissolved.³⁰⁵

This might strike some as convoluted drivel; it probably requires one to approach it with a high degree of spiritually oriented philosophical latitude, similar to how the more bizarre rituals (say, the favorable effects, to some, of the use of voodoo to exorcise evil spirits) of pagan religions are viewed. Through such intensive studies of the power of mythology—leading inevitably to the conclusion that one should never question the veracity of myths, lest one risk killing all the myths of an entire society, or culture, possibly so deeply as to dissolve the difference of truth versus myth—is somewhat troubling with respect to how it might be used to advance the use of the worst kinds of “rationalization.” The danger is that, taken to its logical conclusion, anything and everything can be rationalized.

In the case of JFK’s assassination, given the resulting confusion now, fifty years after the official explanatory myth was created, that may be precisely the reason the myth lives on, despite the fact that the majority of people have long since come to the realization that it was merely a convenient untruth: Once the “official dogma” was rationalized, it was thus created and given a life of its own through the imprimatur of the leaders of the three branches of government (Chief Justice Earl Warren, Senators Richard Russell, John Sherman Cooper, and Representatives Hale Boggs and Gerald Ford) plus another from the CIA (Allen Dulles [former DCI]) and a representative of a big New York bank (John J. McCloy).

Given his intensive study of this “science,” Bill Moyers was clearly the best person to have been put into the position of the guard protecting the “truth” of certain myths. Moyers, like every other man Johnson appointed to the highest White House positions, became an extension of Lyndon Johnson’s will, ensuring every directive he made was carried out, and done quickly and, usually, accurately. Moyers has considerable experience in reframing historic truths into more palatable myths for public consumption as previous authors have demonstrated: Robert Sherrill, the previously noted author of *The Accidental President*, writing contemporaneously in 1967, said that Bill Moyers often misrepresented things in his position of press aide, where his “best fudging is done by proxy.”³⁰⁶ Sherrill illustrated his point regarding why he felt that Moyers was being a bit disingenuous in the management of Johnson’s press conferences, asserting that Moyers would “plant questions” before a news conference with selected news reporters.³⁰⁷

According to author/historian Victor Lasky, it was Bill Moyers who “expressly approved” circulating within the executive branch a secret FBI report intended to discredit Dr. Martin Luther King. An entire section of this report was devoted to the details of King’s personal life and sexuality preferences, according to a Senate Intelligence Committee report in 1976.³⁰⁸ Moyers admitted under questioning that he understood that the FBI reports dealt with personal information, that he never questioned the propriety of it, that he never considered it inappropriate, and that neither did anyone else in the White House. As the *New York Times* later reported, “Johnson found gossip about

other men's weaknesses a delicious hiatus from work.”³⁰⁹

It is interesting that a decade later, Moyers admitted that some of the taping the FBI did on behalf of Johnson was excessive, but it took even longer for him to admit that they were “constitutional violations.” He has never been held to account for his own actions, nor was Johnson ever held to account for his abuse of illegal bugs and wiretapping, as eventually happened to Richard Nixon under much less egregious circumstances (in Johnson's case, as documented herein, this was the least of his crimes). In fact, it can be said that Moyers's own involvement has left hardly a blemish on his lifetime reputation as a “journalist” beyond reproach. He is generally held in high regard within media circles today, as his commentary on current events illustrates.³¹⁰ Victor Lasky, in his book *It Didn't Start with Watergate*, wrote about an October 1973 Public Broadcasting Service show on one of the only times Bill Moyers ever reminisced about the four and a half years he spent in Johnson's White House, and how he said that putting the president's interests above anything and anyone else can interfere with one's perspective:³¹¹

You begin to confuse the office with the man. And the man with the country. Life inside those iron gates takes on an existential quality. I think with the president's mind. Therefore I am ...

Lasky noted that this show won Moyers an Emmy Award, however due to the irony of how Moyers then launched into a broadside attack on Nixon's use of the FBI, CIA, IRS, and the Secret Service for personal or political reasons, he then opined: “But it should also have won for Moyers a prize for pompous and hypocritical moralizing.”³¹²

Moyers Creates the 1964 Daisy Ads

Arguably the most notoriously scathing, unscrupulous political campaign attack ad, by that point in time, was the 1964 television “Daisy Ad,” which can be seen on various Internet sites, including YouTube.³¹³ Bill Moyers (evidently, an ardent fan of W. H. Auden and his poem “September 1, 1939”) helped to create that ad (with professional polish by Tony Schwartz of the ad firm Doyle, Dane & Bernbach), which was broadcast one time, September 7, 1964. It appears that Moyers got the idea from a memo from ADA president John P. Roche in June, which said, “we can really run a savage assault: A billboard, e.g., can be devised reading ‘Goldwater in '64—Hotwater in '65?’ with a mushroom cloud in the background.”³¹⁴

The ad showed a small girl plucking the petals from a daisy as she stood in a field of yellow flowers. As she finished picking the last few petals, a man's voice dramatically intoned a “countdown”—“ten, nine, eight, seven ...” until he reached “zero,” at which point the entire scene was replaced with a mushrooming cloud, obviously the result of a nuclear explosion. The man's booming voice continued: “*Vote for President Johnson on November third. The stakes are too high for you to stay home.*” That was the twenty-second spot; the longer one, for the thirty-second spot they were intending to run multiple times before pulling it after the predictable backlash of public outcry forced it, showed Johnson's zeal to run the ad because it included his own voice, as described by Richard Goodwin:

“Johnson’s voice, unidentified but unmistakable, preceded the final exhortation: *‘These are the stakes. To make a world in which all of God’s children can live... . We must either love each other, or we must die.’*”³¹⁵ Other biographers who have stated that this brazenly unethical ad was not done with Johnson’s knowledge or consent apparently missed this point.

When the ad was shown to Johnson, Moyers, Goodwin, and unidentified others by the advertising executive, for a few moments the group sat, stunned into silence. Then, as Goodwin described it, “Finally, a voice was heard—I think it was Bill Moyers’s—‘It’s wonderful. But it’s going to get us in a lot of trouble.’”³¹⁶ According to Goodwin’s account, everyone knew it would be explosive but still considered it a “winner,” well worth the investment and the risk of public outcry. The group discussed the options, finally deciding to proceed with it: “We would saturate prime-time viewing hours for a few days (or more, if we could get away with it) and then respond to the inevitable protests by withdrawing the spot.”³¹⁷ When the “inevitable protests” began, immediately after the ad was first run, they responded by agreeing to take it off the air, saying that “we want to avoid even the appearance of unfairness,” and placing the blame for it on the advertising agency that “went wild.”

Against Johnson’s first instinct, the ad was immediately pulled,³¹⁸ but the point was made, as it appeared repeatedly (free, of course) for days and weeks on the nightly news and late shows and special election reports in its entirety. The message was clear: “Vote for LBJ if you’re a parent or a peace-loving person seeking reconciliation with the other countries with which we share the globe. Only rabid warmongers would vote for Goldwater.” It is ironic that the ad portrayed Goldwater as the warmonger in this contest, putting LBJ on a higher, loftier position as a great statesman. It attained immediate cult status within the advertising agency business due to its new, lowest-ever defining point in the world of political advertising history. Nothing quite like it has ever been seen again, although there have been several notable attempts. It was a major factor in Johnson’s landslide defeat of Goldwater in the 1964 presidential election. But in a way, it accurately portrayed Johnson. After all, he didn’t resort to the use of the nuclear bomb in the war he created in Vietnam.³¹⁹

Goldwater, naturally, felt that it misrepresented his position, although his bellicose statements about the use of nuclear weapons as merely another military option to be considered in certain wartime situations mitigated his feelings of outrage for most people. Another ad, ten days later, was described by presidential historian Theodore H. White as having featured:

[A] portrait of a deliciously beautiful little girl innocently licking an ice-cream cone, with a gentle, motherly voice in the background explaining about Strontium-90 and pointing out that Barry Goldwater was against the Test-Ban Treaty. This, as cruel a political film as has ever been shown, was also aired but once.³²⁰

It isn’t completely clear from Goodwin’s account whether anyone involved actually

regretted stooping to this level of banality, but readers can be forgiven for inferring that they did not, especially after seeing next how Marvin Watson characterized Johnson's response to it—a version that is 180 degrees opposite of practically every other account of Johnson's reaction to the ads.

Insights into the attitudes of President Johnson and his entire White House staff can be revealed through examination of obscure records filed in the LBJ Library that made it through the “sanitation” process. An example of this was contained in a letter written by Bill Moyers to one of LBJ's constituents, Marilyn Binkley, who wrote from Moyer's own alma mater, Southwestern Baptist Seminary. On October 21, 1964, Moyers wrote a response to her letter in which he deftly sidesteps the questions she raised:^{321*****}

Dear Miss Binkley:

I appreciate your letter and the spirit of your inquiry, and I hope my reply is helpful.

First, you say: “It has long been an established fact that Mr. Johnson has been involved in dishonest political dealings, from his first election in Texas.” What do you mean—“established fact”? Established by whom? What is the evidence—matters of record and truth, or rumor and gossip and political innuendo? How do you, Marilyn Binkley, know that it is an “established fact”? Have you investigated? Have you read a documented, reasoned, logical, analytical report? Who are the witnesses—friends of the President's or enemies? These are just some of the questions you have to ask yourself when you make sweeping statements like the one I just quoted. Then you say, “If this were not true, the author of *A Texan Speaks Out* [sic] could be sued; I have not heard of Mr. Johnson's filing suit or even answering the charges.”

Well, first, if every man in public life went around answering everything said about him, he never would do anything else. A man cannot be in public life 32 years—any more than a man can occupy a pulpit three decades—without creating enemies. They are always charging him with something—is he supposed to answer every wild, senseless charge? The truth is that this book is characteristic of a number of publications being circulated in this campaign. It is the use of a few unrelated facts, linked together in a chain of shadowy insinuation, which is typical of the tactics of those who seek to divide and confuse through fear and prejudice.

Instead of responding to her specific questions, and the charges contained in J. Evetts Haley's self-published 1964 book, *A Texan Looks at Lyndon*—a best seller nationally, with sales of nearly 7.5 million copies,³²²—Moyers's response is simply a perfunctory, pro forma letter obviously tailored to anyone questioning the allegations made about Johnson, summarily denying all charges. It begs the question, if the charges cannot be refuted categorically, with specificity, does it not follow that they are more than likely based on essential truths (at least more so than the comparable veracity of this specious, non-responsive reply?).

A lengthy article in the November 1989 *Texas Monthly* magazine by Mimi Swartz summarized the relationship between Bill Moyers and his boss by saying that Johnson

expected “herculean loyalty” from his highest level aides:

“Power is what counts, power to change things,” LBJ told him time and again. “You get power through politics and money—you hear me, boy?” Bill Moyers wanted to change the world, but he didn’t know how to effect change; in Lyndon Johnson he had once again found the elder who could teach him what he most needed to know.³²³

Investigative journalist Mimi Swartz concluded, “As Moyers grew in knowledge and skill, it became more and more difficult to realize where Johnson ended and Moyers began. ‘He was a hustler. He walked the halls of power with a sure tread,’ remembers former press secretary Liz Carpenter.’ He was cocky.”³²⁴ Furthermore, she noted, “Moyers was a seasoned infighter—his nickname was Mack the Knife.”³²⁵

In exchange for Moyers’s subservience, it would seem that Johnson would at least treat him with a measure of respect, but there is ample evidence that such was not the case. In fact, Johnson habitually mispronounced his name as “Moyer,” in one case even advising Whitney Young, “You can call Bill Moyer [*sic*] through the White House switchboard ... M-O-Y-E-R [*sic*]. He’s my assistant.”³²⁶ It may seem like a small point, but intentionally and repeatedly mispronouncing a close associate’s name to others indicates an arrogant and condescending disrespect for one of his primary subordinates, a pattern that was repeated in a variety of ways with many of his assistants as noted elsewhere. There is no reason to doubt that Moyers was subjected to the same mean-spirited, bathroom antics that numerous other high-level assistants have reported, even though he has not admitted to such treatment. Although, to my knowledge, Moyers has never spoken publicly about the circumstances of his leaving Johnson’s employ, it is known that on his last day on the job, he had lunch with Bobby Kennedy at San Souci in Washington, which Lyndon Johnson soon learned about, and who was not pleased to hear that bit of news. Moyers had sent, two weeks before that day, his letter of resignation to Johnson; in his letter of response, LBJ “made two changes in the draft of a reply to Moyers’s resignation letter. Johnson altered ‘You leave a legacy of trust and deep respect behind you in Washington’ to eliminate the reference to trust. The phrase ‘I treasure the past’ Johnson cut altogether.”³²⁷

W. Marvin Watson, Johnson’s Chief Nit picker

Eric Goldman, a Princeton professor whose résumé included a stint in the White House working for Johnson, wrote a book with a title that succinctly described that experience: *The Tragedy of Lyndon Johnson*. He described Johnson’s aide Marvin Watson thusly: “Basically, Watson’s conservatism derived from his parochialism. With scarcely any imagination or intellectual curiosity, he knew no world except the moral credo of small-town Texas, the business credo of Lone Star and the political credo of Austin. As businessman or politician, he was essentially an administrator—‘the greatest nit-picker around,’ one associate put it, ‘the master of the paper clip.’”³²⁸ In 2004, Johnson’s former aide and self-designated “chief of staff,” W. Marvin Watson wrote *Chief of Staff*, a book

that strangely attempts to rewrite the LBJ history in ways that are in direct contradiction with the documented record:

- In explaining why Johnson didn't believe the Warren Commission's conclusion that Oswald was the lone assassin, the author asserts that Johnson "thought the Commission's investigation had needed more time,"³²⁹ despite the fact that it was Johnson who constantly pressed it to reach an early conclusion.
- Regarding the "Daisy Ad," Watson stated that "Johnson—and all the rest of us around him—were appalled by the commercial. Johnson summarily rejected it, stating it went too far ... The President was incensed when he learned [that the ad did run on television] although only once."³³⁰ The fact that Johnson liked the ad and wanted to continue running it has been well documented and the obvious question raised by Watson's statement is, if Johnson thought it was in such poor taste, why then did he actively participate in creating it, even using his own voice on the soundtrack:

As the firestorm rages, These are the stakes! To make a world in which all of God's children can live, or to go into the dark. We must either love each other, or we must die.

- In his rather surreal description of the events leading up to JFK's picking LBJ as the vice presidential candidate, Watson's account is contrary to that of all other of the many witnesses to it. His narrative described how *both* JFK and RFK "*had decided that Lyndon Johnson was their choice, but they knew that they desperately needed him if they were to win the general election. Thus it was that John Kennedy's closest advisor, his brother Robert, was dispatched to meet privately with Lyndon Johnson's closest mentor, Speaker Sam Rayburn.*"³³¹

To state that Robert Kennedy went to Lyndon Johnson, to beg him to run as the only candidate that could possibly help win the election, is simply absurd. It is astounding how contradictory this is with every other description of the confrontations the Kennedys had with Johnson and his surrogates as he forced himself onto the ticket through outright blackmail. But it is not without value, because it proves again how Johnson planted lies with his cronies and sycophants, which germinated over four decades ago and can still be found in written records, complete with forceful overstatements that evoke the stridency with which they were originally planted.

- Another contradiction with all the other accounts detailed previously was Watson's description of Johnson as being "ecstatic" at winning the election and becoming vice president.³³² A more accurate description, would be "dejected," or "depressed."
- While admitting that Kennedy's legislative agenda had "languished," Watson blamed that on their not properly using Lyndon Johnson's talent³³³ and because

Kennedy was not fully behind the need for civil rights legislation.³³⁴ The fact that many other authors have documented the actual record—that the real reason had more to do with Johnson’s unwillingness to help get legislation through Congress—did not dissuade Watson from reinventing still more history.

Watson’s book is replete with distortions, both large and small; it is, however, typical of the books written by most of the men who worked for Johnson, undoubtedly due as much to their need for self-justification as the attempt to rehabilitate Lyndon Johnson’s tainted legacy. Interestingly, the title of the book *Chief of Staff* suggests that he, Watson, was Johnson’s chief of staff, a position to which, most everyone agrees, Johnson never appointed anyone.³³⁵ According to Eric Goldman’s account of Watson’s appointment, Johnson designated W. Marvin Watson a title of special assistant.³³⁶ Jack Valenti wrote that Watson was “put in charge of political coordination with the Democratic National Committee and of other inside political issues.”³³⁷

Watson did clarify one of Johnson’s biggest deceptions: According to Watson, Johnson was not the president who reversed Kennedy’s plan to wind down the US involvement in Vietnam, rather, the hapless Johnson was “being destroyed by a war he *inherited, detested, and could do nothing to stop.*” Watson’s worst offense (charitably, since the entire book is offensively banal and toady), was in what was omitted in the three-and-one-half page account of the Israeli Six-Day War: the mysterious attack on the USS *Liberty*, despite the horrific damages and loss of thirty-four sailors, was not even mentioned, apparently that incident was unworthy of even a footnote.

A discussion of the *Liberty* incident appears later in this book.

Jack Valenti—Chief Johnson Sycophant

Lyndon Johnson often assigned his aides to “PR” duty, in an attempt to portray himself as a sensitive and thoughtful man, one who was well read on all topics and much more sophisticated than his critics had portrayed him. Clearly, one of the reasons he appointed Jack Valenti, a partner in a Houston advertising agency, to his staff was another such attempt, because Valenti had made it apparent from the start that he could be a better sycophant than any of his other toady assistants. Once, according to authors Richard Harwood and Haynes Johnson, in their book *Lyndon*, when Valenti made an effusive speech about Johnson—describing him as a “sensitive and cultivated man, a great visionary” and one who “welcomed dissent”—his obsequious fawning caused Washington to explode in laughter: “I sleep each night a little better, a little more confidently, because Lyndon Johnson is my President, he said.” This shamelessly obsequious comment prompted the *Washington Post* cartoonist, Herbert Block (whose cartoons were signed “Herblock”), to mock Valenti in a cartoon showing three of LBJ’s staff assistants shirtless, with slashes in their backs, as Johnson walked away with his bullwhip. The cartoon was captioned “Happy Days on the Old Plantation.”³³⁸

Valenti was one of the most unabashedly submissive and obedient of Johnson’s sycophants, according to Colonel Ralph Albertazzie, the pilot of Air Force One for many

of Johnson's trips as president. Johnson always required Valenti to keep track of the time, wherever they happened to be, for any other spot on the globe: locally, back in Washington or at their eventual destination, so Jack had to wear several watches on his wrist, each one set for the time in different places:³³⁹

"Jack!" LBJ would bellow, "what the hell time is it?"

The diminutive Valenti would dash up to the presidential chair and fall to his knees in a pose of worshipful attention.

"Where, Mr. President? In Washington? Where we're going? Or where we are right now?"

"Give me all of them" [LBJ would reply]

Colonel Albertazzie's comparatively few unfiltered words communicate far more insight about how Johnson conducted himself, and how he treated his sycophantic aides, than many entire books by the more obsequious "journalists" and biographers. Another person who knew Johnson from having served as a steward on Air Force One, Robert M. MacMillan, told author Ronald Kessler of another revealing anecdote about how Johnson treated Jack Valenti on one occasion. The stoicism of Valenti's reaction reveals how his acquiescence of this treatment reflected the larger pattern of his acceptance of Johnson's boorish behavior (which did "pay off" for him eventually, when he was appointed to a position that allowed him to protect Johnson's reputation in Hollywood for four decades). The incident occurred in flight on Air Force One as MacMillan served a dinner of roast beef. Valenti had gotten a slice of rare roast beef, which Johnson noticed. He grabbed the tray and exclaimed, "You dumb son of a bitch. You are eating raw meat." He then took the tray back to the galley and said, "You two sons of bitches, look at this! This is raw. You gotta cook the meat on my airplane. Don't you serve my people raw meat. Goddamn, if you two boys serve raw meat on my airplane again, you'll both end up in Vietnam." He then threw the tray to the floor and stormed off.³⁴⁰ Valenti's reaction to this was to just return to the galley and tell them to go ahead and serve him more rare meat, that Johnson was done now and wouldn't return, so it was all right; he had obviously become accustomed to Johnson's abusive behavior sufficiently to know how to deal with it.

Jack Valenti, Age Forty-four, Suddenly Gets Married

It was not a secret around Washington that one of Johnson's favorite mistresses was one of his secretaries, Mary Margaret Wiley. Johnson had brought her to Washington from Texas and she was reportedly the most beautiful of Lyndon's mistresses. To most people, it was a surprise, however, when she suddenly decided to marry his sidekick, Jack Valenti, in 1962. When her baby Courtenay was born, Mary Margaret was given an open pass to the White House, and whenever they visited, the baby was always present. According to author Traphes Bryant, "Courtney [sic] was the most special child to come to the White House. She absolutely ruled the President and could make him "fetch and carry" any time she wanted to ... LBJ would tell me to look out for Courtney. To be good to Courtney. To protect Courtney. To keep Blanco (the presidential beagle, "Little Blanco Johnson") away

from Courtney.” Bryant said that Johnson had threatened him, if anything happened to Courtney, he would “hang your hide on the barn door.”³⁴¹ Between this point by author Traphes Bryant and an earlier one by Ronald Kessler—about one of Johnson’s earlier mistresses still accommodating him sexually after she married, with the permission of her husband³⁴² an obvious conclusion may be drawn, conjecturally, to connect a few more “dots” for the matrix. Numerous photographs of Johnson holding a three-year-old Courtenay may be found through Internet searches (none available for printing due to unknown copyright ownership).

Lyndon Johnson had never even attempted to hide his affection for Mary Margaret, the secretary who was generally considered the best looking one, of the many, on his staff. When he was still vice president, there had been an incident where he had taken her to Kansas City with him for what was supposed to be an overnight stay as part of his attendance at a Democratic fund-raising dinner. When the event was cancelled at the last minute because of a mysterious kitchen fire, Johnson decided to go to his ranch for the night and the pair flew on to Bergstrom Air Force Base outside Austin. Only he and Mary Margaret, accompanied by Secret Service agents, motored on to the ranch while everyone else stayed overnight near the base so they would be ready to fly back to Washington early the next morning. It was late the next morning before the pilots were notified that the vice president was on the way back to Bergstrom but the crew had to prepare for another side trip, this time to New York, so he and Mary Margaret could see a Broadway play. As the Air Force pilot, Colonel Ralph Albertazzie recalled in his book *The Flying White House* the logistics required of the city’s politicians and policemen for this impromptu trip of the vice president was “formidable.” The impact on the usual Manhattan gridlock due to the security measures that had to be quickly implemented—including placing policemen at key points all along the route from Idlewild Airport (since renamed JFK, thanks to LBJ) to their hotel downtown—caused major disruptions, even worse than such trips that had been planned months in advance. Furthermore, instead of only staying over a few hours, the departure was moved back until late into the evening, and then postponed until the next morning so that Johnson and Mary Margaret could spend the night together. It was then scheduled for 9:00 a.m., but that hour came and went, and the two lovers still never showed up, because Johnson decided to get a haircut and have lunch there. Finally, according to author Albertazzie, Johnson and his date showed up about 5 p.m. and boarded the aircraft, saying that he had a seven o’clock appointment and didn’t want to be late, ordering them to “pour on the coal.”³⁴³

Considering how Johnson was able to position Jack Valenti into his pivotal Hollywood position as the final arbiter of what was allowable in films and what was “out of bounds,” his influence over the content of documentaries on Johnson would be felt even forty years after the assassination. Valenti (along with Bill Moyers, Lady Bird Johnson, and ex-Presidents Gerald Ford, Jimmy Carter) forced The History Channel to “cease and desist” broadcasting the latest additions to its documentary film series *The Men Who Killed Kennedy*, which had previously broadcast six other parts, beginning in Britain in 1988. The final three episodes of the series, (Nos. 7, 8, and 9) were broadcast in November 2003,

which was a surprise to viewers, since they were purposely not announced in advance in order to preclude the very result that indeed subsequently occurred. The decision by The History Channel to ban it from rebroadcast, which they had expected to do every year in November when they originally invested in the program. This was the most well-known of Jack Valenti's acts to protect Johnson's crimes from public exposure and he and the others used gestapo-like tactics (some compared it to "book burning") to force these segments off the channel. It was Episode 9, "The Guilty Men," which caused this reaction; it centered on Lyndon Johnson's involvement in the assassination, and naturally, the truths, which spilled out in that segment, proved to be most upsetting to this group; thankfully, it is still, at the time of this writing, available on DVD and YouTube.

Daughter Courtenay Lynda Valenti was eventually named as an executive vice president of Warner Brothers Studios, and her brother, John Lyndon Valenti, also obviously named after the president (it turned out that Lyndon had, for years, made it known that he expected as much from his aides and associates), would also become employed there as well. It may not be coincidental that Warner Brothers recently made a movie on the JFK assassination, *Parkland*, that comes to contradictory conclusions and naturally supports the official government myth of the ludicrous Warren Commission. Far from a box office success, undoubtedly due to its dubious premise, it joins a long litany of other works apparently commissioned by someone still running Operation Mockingbird. Given its provenance, it is a foregone conclusion that this movie will join other works of fiction that misrepresent Johnson's real role in that event and attempt to continue the long and arduous task of rehabilitating the LBJ image, in accordance with plans he personally made half a century ago.

Valenti had met a number of Hollywood people in his few years in the White House as Johnson's assistant and shortly got an offer from Lew Wasserman (of MCA/Universal Studios) to go to California as the president of the Academy of Motion Picture Arts and Sciences (AMPAS).³⁴⁴ It has been suggested that that particular plum came as a result of Johnson's use of his famed "Treatment" on certain people in Los Angeles. When Johnson had become chairman of the Senate Preparedness Committee in the early 1950s, he named Ed Wiesel, who he had first become friends with during his halcyon days in 1942, while he "served" in the navy, as the committee's counsel. As detailed elsewhere within this narrative, in the ensuing years, Johnson's connections in Hollywood would only intensify. By securing Jack Valenti's position as head of AMPAS,³⁴⁵ where he would remain for over forty years, Johnson ensured, through his loyal servant, that only the "good" stories about him would be produced. Valenti's own daughter would then be in a position to extend it for another generation. It is conjecture, of course, but not unreasonable, to postulate that Lyndon Johnson knew that this maneuver would help to ensure that his tainted "legacy" would be sanitized and survive for many decades after his own mortal existence had ended.

Jack Valenti's book, *This Time, This Place*, contains its share of reinventions of the Johnson years, starting with why the new president really visited John Kennedy's secretary Evelyn Lincoln in the Oval Office on Saturday morning after JFK's assassination. (It wasn't

really to prepare to take it over, according to Valenti, it was—curiously, given that his name had not yet been updated on the letterhead—only to get a couple of pages of White House stationery to write his notes to Caroline and John Jr. and “he held off moving into the president’s office for three more days.”³⁴⁶ More insight into how one can put a positive spin on even the most outrageous facets of Johnson’s sordid history was his depiction of “*LBJ’s celebrated 1948 election as US senator.*”³⁴⁷ (He must have meant that Johnson celebrated it; there was no celebration by the majority of Texas voters over that election.)

Morris D. Jaffe—LBJ’s Ingenuity of Making Friends Rich Enough to Bail Him Out

The key to Johnson’s success in not being caught in the Billie Sol Estes scandals was the result of his obsession with secrecy, and the related precept of deniability, of keeping distance—and two or more layers of people—between him and the worst of his crimes. Moreover, he only avoided an indictment in this collection of scandals directly as a result of suddenly becoming president. For the record, tracing the methods he used to avoid being caught in the Billie Sol Estes scandals, the result was that they were quickly eliminated from the newspapers not only by the fast prosecution and jailing of Estes—thanks to the work of LBJ’s attorney, John Cofer, in purposely losing the case, as Johnson directed him to do—but the appearance on the scene of one of Johnson’s wealthy friends, Morris D. Jaffe of San Antonio, who purchased all the remaining assets and in so doing, assured that the sordid story practically disappeared from all news stories thereafter. There was more to the story of Morris Jaffe than the fact that he just happened to appear at the right time and place for the deal of his life.

The author E. Evetts Haley, who contemporaneously investigated the story, wrote a 1964 book titled *A Texan Looks at Lyndon: A Study in Illegitimate Power* that sold nearly 7.5 million copies during that summer just before the election; yet that was not nearly enough to sway the electorate, most of whom didn’t read it of course. Twenty-three years later a prominent Texas journalist, William M. Adler, wrote a column, “Texas Primer” in the *Texas Monthly* recalling how “no Texas political figure carried a vendetta further than J. Evetts Haley, a conservative Democrat of the old school who took on no less a personage than Lyndon B. Johnson... . It was the most controversial book ever written about a Texan ... it became a cause célèbre of the 1964 election.”³⁴⁸ Adler stated that Haley implicated LBJ in the Kennedy assassination, however Haley did not make such a direct statement; Adler inferred that from what Haley did say, regarding Johnson’s numerous connections to disreputable men and his involvement in certain criminal enterprises including references to a series of murders of men connected to Johnson through Billie Sol Estes and Cliff Carter, all of which were true. And he described Lyndon’s sister Josefa’s mysterious death, which left many questions due to her quick burial without an autopsy, contrary to state law in such a case. In due course, the book became an embarrassment to those same men who urged others to ignore this obvious “partisan attack.” By 1987, Adler dismissed the book entirely as a “venomous propaganda piece,” as mainstream authors and publishers lined up to pay homage to Johnson and begin the task of recasting his image

and legacy as the work of a “great president,” just as Johnson had planned. Younger people who did not get to see his image on the daily television news shows may never know the truth about his real image during the period of 1967–68, which many came to see the same way his fellow college classmates four decades previous to this had: they despised him.

Much of the book was about how Lyndon’s friend and business associate Morris Jaffe took over the remaining assets of the Estes empire, with the help of the Walter E. Heller Company, Pacific Finance, and Commercial Solvents Corporation, all of which were deeply involved with Billie Sol Estes and his scams.³⁴⁹ Coincidentally no doubt, according to researcher Stephen Pegues, Lyndon Johnson was a personal friend of the chief executives of both of these companies and invested, under Lady Bird’s name, in Commercial Solvents.³⁵⁰ The summary of Haley’s assertions that follows is merely a collection of the most pertinent points, so the reader can appreciate the depth of Johnson’s control throughout the management of this political “bump” in the road. The information provided by Haley starts with how Jaffe made his fortune, and it appears that he had considerable help in doing this from the Texas political machine that Johnson was simultaneously building. His first major contract was to build a number of barracks at Lackland Air Force Base, which, when completed, were found not to be in conformance with the specifications he had been furnished. It was later determined that Jaffe had “lavishly entertained” the civil engineer who was supposed to have overseen the construction in exchange for loose interpretations of the “legalese,” but when the inspector general began pursuing the case, the engineer was suddenly transferred to another region and the case was closed.

Shortly after that, apparently with some special “insider knowledge” from someone in a position to know (Lyndon Johnson, coincidentally, was chairman of the Senate Subcommittee on Military Preparedness and used his powers of persuasion over the managerial bureaucracy of the Atomic Energy Commission just as keenly as he had at the Department of Agriculture and the Federal Communications Commission, among others) Morris Jaffe invested heavily in land options on vast acreage in South Texas that were found to contain great amounts of uranium deposits. He then resold his options to the Atomic Energy Commission, banking millions of dollars of profit, undoubtedly paying Johnson “skim” from the transactions.³⁵¹ It was Johnson’s close relationship with Sam Rayburn—who had arranged for a \$2 billion congressional secret budget to fund the Manhattan Project to develop the atomic bomb—that put him into the middle of disbursement of those funds, in this case arranging for his friend Morris Jaffe to become one of the primary beneficiaries of the government’s largess associated with this high-priority project.³⁵²

One of Jaffe’s other enterprises, a few years later—in collaboration with a friend of his, Lieutenant Colonel Roger Zeller, who was executive officer at Lackland—was a roller-skating rink on the base; he hadn’t anticipated the problem of getting men to go there and spend fifty cents to skate after being worn out during the day in strenuous training. As author Haley stated it, “With pressure and influence to spare, Jaffe got the Base Commander, General Herbert L. Grills, to declare an ‘open post policy’ once a week to

give the boys time to skate, and when skating still languished, Grills substituted weekly skating for an hour's basic training, and put pressure on [Col. James A.] Smyrl to force the boys to patronize the rink. Jaffe himself threatened Smyrl if he did not 'get with the system.'"³⁵³ This imbroglio caused some controversy when Smyrl, apparently the only "man of integrity" involved, was removed and the commander proceeded to implement the new skating policy, which caused Jaffe's business to "flourish."³⁵⁴ The pressure mounted for a Senate investigation of this localized scandal (another of the many never described in other Johnson biographies than Haley's and this one), but such an inquiry was never pursued, probably because it would have been referred to the very sub-committee that Johnson chaired.

Within a few years after the Kennedy-Johnson administration took office, Morris Jaffe had become very indebted to Lyndon Johnson, and Johnson knew when to "hold 'em" when it came to political debts, to get the maximum pay back possible. During his profitable work building non-standard barracks and the skating rink at Lackland AFB, Jaffe had become friends with Lieutenant Colonel Zeller, who had proved himself to be sufficiently malleable to be commended to Jaffe's friend Lyndon Johnson. Shortly afterward, in an astonishingly quick promotion, Zeller was suddenly transferred to the Pentagon and jumped over hundreds of full Colonels to the rank of brigadier general. It appears that this amounted to a big "thank you" by someone very high up in the world of Washington politics; another man in the Pentagon beholden to Lyndon Johnson was like money in the bank to him.

Morris Jaffe's help to Johnson was paid back in two major installments: First, when it was discovered that Jerry Holleman, who Johnson had placed as an assistant secretary of labor, had accepted a bribe from Billie Sol Estes and had to be fired, Jaffe hired him immediately at the then very high salary of over \$20,000 per year. Shortly after that, his second installment was when he came to Johnson's rescue by taking over the Estes properties and, according to Haley's calculations, after receiving the government payment due for prior grain storage and selling the land Estes had acquired, "the facilities could have been paid off in six months."³⁵⁵ From the facts provided by author Haley, it is clear that Jaffe did not really pay \$7 to \$9 million for the Estes property; it was likely less than \$1 million and it was a very favorable deal for Jaffe, another in a long series of them extended to him by Lyndon B. Johnson. In any event, the sale of Estes's assets to Jaffe succeeded in taking the story off the front pages nearly as quickly as it had started, in March, 1962. Six months later, by September, it had become "old news" and was no longer causing continual embarrassment for Johnson.

In 1960, Morris Jaffe had attended the Democratic National Convention as a Johnson supporter. According to author Haley, "An old-time San Antonio newspaperman came home admitting that Jaffe not only seemed to be the 'money man' but 'the brains and the trouble-shooter and smart beyond imagination,' the most effective man behind Lyndon B. Johnson."³⁵⁶ Another veteran's opinion was "When anybody's high in Johnson's organization, you can be sure he's the best. Lyndon hasn't got a bum working for him."³⁵⁷

The context of that comment could be construed in more than one way, but it should be clear by now that it probably meant that Lyndon would not employ anyone who wasn't pulling his own weight, and completely according to Johnson's direction. But it was no indication of a man's credibility, honesty, sophistication, or demeanor; the only possible characteristic it might reflect could have been a measure of how close Johnson could take a person to the edge of his or her own moral precipice, assuming the subject would have had such boundaries, which, as we now know, many did not. Those who had trouble getting close to the edge were not kept around, or were savagely abused by Johnson, as Robert Caro described in *Master of the Senate*, regarding his treatment of such aides as Warren Woodward ("Woody"), Mary Rather, and Glynn Stegall, who always took the abuse heaped upon them by simply bowing their heads and becoming as stoic as possible; in Stegall's case the attacks often took place in front of his wife Mildred, another person on Johnson's staff who wasn't spared this abuse, and Glynn's attempts to hide his humiliation were belied by how his hands would involuntarily shake as he stood there.³⁵⁸ How they all took the abuse as obedient, submissive servants who then covered over the psychic damages—as many of them did, aides like Horace Busby and George Reedy—then went out of their way to sing his praises and ignore his condescending, arrogant treatment is a mystery to observers who attempt to understand it now. It can only be understood in the same context as the victims of the "Stockholm syndrome" except those victims had the excuse of actually being physically imprisoned and Johnson's victims were not, except possibly within their own minds. They could have left his employ, but they didn't, probably because they had become so conditioned by him to believe that their lives were just as dependent upon him as a prisoner's is to his jailer's whims.

That Morris Jaffe was considered to be "high" in Johnson's organization should be considered as tantamount to an automatic suspicion of his involvement in other unsavory deeds. The fact that, in 1963, one of his businesses (probably a ruse, since it did not appear to be actively involved in either oil or uranium exploration or production) was the Dallas Uranium and Oil Company,^{*****} located on the third floor of the Dal-Tex Building, which is precisely where many researchers have pointed to as the probable location of one of the shooters of JFK, including one of the first shots that narrowly missed Kennedy, ricocheting from the curb near the triple overpass before hitting James Tague. From that location, it would have been a close, almost deadly, shot, but from the sixth floor of the Texas School Book Depository, it would have been a wild "missed shot" that hit so far away from the supposed target as to qualify as another inexplicable "anomaly" that was never explained by the Warren Commission or any of its apologists, authors like Vince Bugliosi, Gerald Posner, Mark Fuhrman, or Bill O'Reilly.

Another unresolved mystery that occurred many years later, was the suspected involvement of Morris Jaffe in the collapse of a South Texas bank owned by the Salinas family in 1976, which caused the bankruptcy of a number of people, including ex-governor John Connally and Lt. Governor Ben Barnes among other notable figures. But an even darker part of that story was the related, and concurrent, crash of an airplane near H. L. Hunt's Atilano De La Garza Ranch. On board that airplane, just as the news of the bank collapse was breaking, were two sisters, one of whom had worked for Morris Jaffe for ten

years previous to that. Alex Short, travelling with her sister Beth Horstmann, was supposedly moving \$500,000 in cash that had been withdrawn from the bank just before it declared bankruptcy. The suspicions related to the timing of this withdrawal, just before the bank closed its doors, followed by the mysterious fiery crash of the airplane and death of the two girls, raised questions in the minds of many. Most importantly was the question of whether Alex Short even had that money (as no sign of it was found in the wreckage, much of which had burned). Sam Park, a multimillionaire Houstonian and friend of Madeleine Brown (Johnson's ex-mistress), said to Madeleine when this news broke, "It sure looks like ol' Lyndon's carpetbagger, Morris Jaffe, has done in Steve's (Madeleine's son by Johnson) pretty little girlfriend, Beth Horstmann, and her sister, Alex Short."³⁵⁹

Morris D. Jaffe, Sr., was considered a "mystery tycoon" by the people of San Antonio because of his secretive nature and his amazing accumulation of fortune in practically all of his business dealings, despite the fact that most of them, as noted previously, were tainted by corruption at very high levels. Even though he avoided publicity as much as possible, he continued making news for many years after Johnson's death, having even been involved in financial misdeeds that led to the forced resignation of Speaker of the House Jim Wright in 1989. Author Haley, in his 1964 book *A Texan Looks at Lyndon*, adroitly summarized this chapter as follows: "This emphasizes a highly significant facet of Johnson's genius which makes him tremendously effective *and infinitely more dangerous*."³⁶⁰ [Emphasis added.]

Lyndon Johnson's Odd Relationship with Doris Kearns

Numerous examples of Johnson's manipulative skills over others have been cited throughout this book. Another one involves a historian personally selected by Johnson, no doubt so he could exercise ultimate control over the content of his first authorized biography, a student known then as Doris Kearns, now Kearns-Goodwin after marrying Richard Goodwin, the presidential assistant cited within these pages. Johnson first spotted the young graduate student in 1967, when, at twenty-five, she was selected for a scholastic group called White House Fellows. Johnson danced with her several times at a reception held May 1, 1967, and remembered her when an article—co-written by Kearns and Sanford Levinson, another graduate student—appeared two weeks later in *The New Republic*, entitled "How to Remove LBJ in 1968."

It is interesting, in retrospect, that Johnson seemed to go out of his way to entice this particular "Fellow" to commit a very large part of her young life to be of service to him; she was the embodiment of the "Eastern Intellectual"—a "Harvard" in fact—that he had always detested and belittled. Yet he chose her to ghost write his memoirs and, at least in his mind, he became so enamored of her that he even eventually proposed marriage to her. This is an extremely salient point to the overall story of this book, but it was of similar importance to Richard Harwood and Haynes Johnson as well, in their book *Lyndon*, written in 1973. That book alluded to the closeness of the ghost-writer/historian to her subject, "Her own feelings, she has said, were always complex. She had great affection for Lyndon, he fascinated her, he impressed her... . In her view her own feelings never

progressed to romantic love.”³⁶¹

Satisfied that he had found someone who would faithfully describe his “rags to riches” past in the most positive and innocent way possible, he picked Kearns to be his ghost-writer for his autobiography, *The Vantage Point*. Having put him off for some time, on one of his last days in the Oval Office, she “could not turn him down. ‘I need help ... whatever you can give.’”³⁶² She didn’t say as much, but the suggestion that he had tears in his eyes as he begged her to “help” complete his work, was certainly there, likely of the type some refer to as the “crocodile” type.

Kearns soon discovered what the book was *not* meant to be: a candid and honest retrospective of his life. For example, Johnson didn’t want her to include references to the anecdotes and off-color stories that he spun. He complained to her about using anything that he had ever said that was critical of anyone still in office, or any suggestion that he had ever used vulgar language—indeed, anything that accurately reflected the sum and substance of what actually went on, or his actual style—and she summed it up well when she quoted him: “God damn it, I can’t say this”—pointing to a barbed comment on Wilbur Mills—‘get it out right now, why he may be the Speaker of the House someday. And for Christ’s sake get that vulgar language of mine out of there. What do you think this is, the tale of an uneducated cowboy? It’s a presidential memoir, damn it, and I’ve got to come out looking like a statesman, not some backwoods politician.’”³⁶³ This illustrates the point better than anyone else could possibly describe: He knew it was a story about a backwoods politician who made it to the “big tent” and that automatically conferred “statesman” status to its occupant; naturally he wanted “his book” to be only about the latter, none of the scrappy stuff that got him into that office. It should have been no surprise that the resulting product was not well received by most critics, and it never sold well except perhaps to libraries. The *New York Times* book review was particularly scathing:

Judging from its tepid language and its pop-magazine organization, the author was never even a tint more colorful than Calvin Coolidge ... so sappy is the language with which he describes its [his domestic program] forging—so puffed up with bromides, platitudes and phrases such as “it had always grieved me greatly” ... that its weight boils down to nothing.

Having completed the “sappy” book filled with “bromides and platitudes,” Kearns then turned her attention to her own version of presidential biography. In 1976, she wrote *Lyndon Johnson and the American Dream*, which she termed a “psychobiography” of Johnson that described him as being, at least superficially, a great and magnanimous leader whose driving ambition was not for himself but for the common folk: “that every American should have enough nourishing food, warm clothing, decent shelter, and a chance to educate his children; and later, as the Presidency extended his reach, he wanted to restore nature, rebuild cities, even build a Great Society. He wanted to out-Roosevelt Roosevelt.”³⁶⁴

Evidently, the thought that this list was merely a rote repetition of the typical “talking

points” of populist ideals, rather than being a profound revelation of his primary *raison d'être*, did not occur to her. Johnson was never guided by those ideals. They were secondary to the primary objectives that were always foremost in his mind: gaining more power and more wealth as a means to accomplish his single goal, the presidency, by any means necessary. After that, he would have to acquire an extension in tenure through the more conventional method—standing for election.

The critics quickly saw through the transparent attempt to anoint Johnson with adulation even as the nation tried to recover from the damages he had wrought. Pulitzer Prize-winning author, historian, and journalist Gary Wills, in a 1976 review of Kearns's book, noted that “Vast areas of the Johnson psyche are missing from this book—the shrewd and bluffing masculine side, obscene and voracious and game playing—because he did not think that it would ‘play’ in Cambridge.” In his article in the *New York Review of Books*, Wills concluded with this observation: “Johnson gave of himself selectively, always expecting more in return than anything he had surrendered.”³⁶⁵

A 1991 book by Paul R. Henggeler, *In His Steps: Lyndon Johnson and the Kennedy Mystique*, asserted that Johnson had used Kearns to get a head-start into rewriting real history with a servile account of his reinvented tale, complete with all the hundreds of lies documented within these pages, and doubtlessly thousands more as well. Henggeler showed that Johnson even implicitly admitted as much when he begged and pleaded with her to go to Texas with him to write his memoirs: “*Those memoirs are the last chance I've got with the history books, and I've got to do it right.*”³⁶⁶ [Emphasis added.] Kearns evidently agreed that the need was great and proceeded to spend much of her time over the next four years with Johnson at his ranch while, according to that book, “Their relationship grew more intimate after he began experiencing chest pains in the spring of 1970. Confiding to Kearns his ‘instinct’ that he was dying, he began to discuss his childhood in disturbing detail,” according to Henggeler.³⁶⁷ Henggeler noted several concerns with Kearns's interpretations, and how they were derived from her close personal relationship with Johnson caused by her lengthy presence at Johnson's ranch. During these stays, Johnson would enter her bedroom early in the mornings and get into her bed, though she insisted that she sat in a chair alongside the bed during those visits.³⁶⁸ Asserting that Lyndon had lied to Kearns, Henggeler stated that Johnson manipulated her into accepting his recollections without question, to the point of referencing editorials he had allegedly written to support his claims to have demonstrated empathy for minorities, despite the fact that Robert Caro had showed that Johnson's editorials in those days were largely ghost written by others. His portrayal of himself to her as being a victim of Kennedy's actions to pursue war in Vietnam were a disingenuous misstatement of “facts” that most historians recognize as such.³⁶⁹ Clearly, Johnson was at the pinnacle of his delusions at this point, as he artfully recompiled his entire life history to attempt to remove all signs of his fallibility and replace them with stories of his colossus greatness and legendary magnanimity. The most creative parts related to how he rationalized his mistake in (supposedly, in his deluded mind) following Kennedy's path into the quagmire of Vietnam.

It was Johnson's mania, his full-bore, take-no-prisoners zeal to "out-Roosevelt Roosevelt" in order to shape his presidency as among the very best, that propelled him to press both sides of the Congress he knew so well to pass a flurry of legislation immediately upon taking office, a period that would last two years before he destroyed his own "bully pulpit." Recall Robert Caro's description about what the people who knew him best said regarding his obsession: "Lyndon Johnson believed in *nothing*, nothing but his own ambition."³⁷⁰ [Emphasis in original.] The contrast to the "sappy" descriptions of Johnson—by Kearns, and numerous other biographers—compared to the more intellectually honest authors like Arthur Schlesinger Jr., J. Evetts Haley, Victor Lasky, John Campbell, Robert Sherrill, not to mention Ms. Kearns's own future husband Richard Goodwin, is stunning. It is a direct reflection of the subservience, and willingness to distort real history, of the former in contrast to the detached objectivity of the latter authors. The continuing release of books that are little more than paeans to the "great" Lyndon Johnson—with nary a mention of the names of those closest to him, like Billie Sol Estes, Madeleine Brown, Mac Wallace, and, except for the most nebulous activities of Bobby Baker, Cliff Carter, and Ed Clark—validate this point more strongly than mere words strung together can adequately describe.

The Rumor Mill Spins Out of Control

The whispers about their alleged affair surfaced in *Parade* magazine in 1971, which strongly implied that the relationship between Kearns and Johnson was of a romantic nature. This upset Lyndon and Lady Bird, as well as those who had been enlisted by him to defend his legacy, men like Horace Busby, Tom Johnson, Abe Fortas, and Jack Valenti, who predictably insisted that there was nothing to the notion that Johnson had any relationship with Kearns other than a platonic friendship. By 1972 and 1973, the rumors of their relationship had been percolating among the literati, journalists, academics, and Washington politicians for months. The seed from which the rumors grew was traceable back to Ms. Kearns's own indiscriminate comments, not only from certain friends and associates, but, professional journalists as well. Moreover, a fellow graduate student at Harvard in the early 1970s, who prefers to maintain his anonymity, stated to me that, "the gossip at Harvard was always that she was LBJ's lover."

Concurrently with the swirling rumors that followed the *Parade* article, Ms. Kearns voluntarily revealed some of her secrets to two reporters from the *Washington Post*, Richard Harwood and Haynes Johnson. She agreed to be interviewed by them as part of their research for their book titled *Lyndon*, published in 1973. In addition to the more salacious aspects of her relationship with Johnson, she revealed to them that "she was still having trouble placing it in perspective, that she was troubled about how to handle her personal relationship with Johnson when she published her own book."³⁷¹ Haynes Johnson stated that he had warned Kearns, in their first interview, to be certain she wanted to have the personal information become public, that she must prepare to "deal with the reactions, cope with the criticism, the consequences of her remarks."³⁷² Haynes Johnson said that she was "unconcerned" about all of that at the time they first talked.

After having voluntarily told the two journalists the details of her personal relationship with Johnson, she took a trip to Russia, where she began having second thoughts about how the story might look to others, who might then begin to question the ethics of someone willing to burnish her professional credentials by becoming intimately involved with the subject of her work. It should be noted that this was not the first, nor the last, time that had, or would, happen in similar situations between a young woman and her older, male subject (for more contemporary examples of other males who have been so affected, for the sake of argument based on news reports only, conceding that there has never been an adjudication of the issues, one could posit the names General David Patraeus, former director of the CIA, and Jack Welch, former chairman and CEO of General Electric Corporation, for example). Upon her return, she went to Washington to dissuade the authors from using the very material she had previously provided to them. She told them that those remarks were supposed to be “off the record,” though both journalists denied that she had ever stipulated that at the time of their first interview. Kearns stated that all of this was supposed to be “off the record” and then acknowledged that she had told them too much when she admitted that Lyndon Johnson had fallen in love with her.³⁷³ Before she went to Washington to meet with the journalists again, she had already talked to the lawyers at Basic Books regarding the process of suing them if they did not delete the material. As it turned out, there was no need for “lawyering up” quite yet, as the journalists reluctantly agreed to delete the direct references Kearns had retroactively retracted.

Despite her attempts to rein in the rumor mill during this period, the speculation about the incident continued to circulate through 1974 and much of 1975. Finally, in the waning days of August 1975 readers of the *Washington Post*—having spent the entire summer blissfully unaware of the growing brouhaha involving the late former president and a young woman just beginning her career as a historian—awakened to find it all laid out in a long article that took an entire newspaper page, plus substantial parts of two others. On the fourth Sunday of that month, Sally Quinn, in the *Washington Post* Style section, wrote an in-depth story titled “Doris Kearns and Richard Goodwin: A Tale of Hearts and Minds.”

Quinn wrote that Johnson actually courted Kearns during this period, and wrote that Kearns said Johnson had “pressed me very hard sexually the first year” and even proposed marriage to her, though the question of how he would deal with the fact of his existing marriage to Lady Bird was not described in the article. Quoting Kearns herself, Quinn wrote: “as he talked, I suddenly saw myself wearing an LBJ outfit, sitting by the LBJ lake, making conversation with an LBJ millionaire. Nothing would be mine, perhaps not even myself.”³⁷⁴

Bill Moyers said it was possible: “While I don’t really know whether or not he ever said to Doris what she says he said, I suspect she heard accurately what he said without understanding what he meant... . LBJ said many things to many people in the heat of anger, in the wiles of persuasion and in the passion of frustration which every president faces. He was given to stretching the truth to as thin a soup as necessary to feed a lot of people... . He never proposed marriage to me, but he made me feel sometimes as if I might

be an illegitimate son.”³⁷⁵

One of the latest discussions regarding her relationship with LBJ came on St. Patrick’s Day, March 17, 2009, on the *Imus in the Morning Show*. Host Don Imus asked Doris Kearns-Goodwin about the times when she would visit Johnson on his ranch and float around the pool, what else they did. Her response was to repeat her promise to reveal more about that sometime in the future, and now that he (Imus) was to be treated for his prostate cancer, he will no doubt live for many more years, so they will get back to that at some point. She then proceeded to do a three-minute monologue about how sorry she was that she couldn’t join them in the studio and how she was traveling somewhere with her husband, who had just written his first play at age seventy-eight. By then, Mr. Imus had been distracted enough to change the subject. Her coyness about her relationship with the thirty-sixth president, before her marriage to Richard Goodwin, may be a reflection of the unusual closeness of the historian to her subject; yet she was by no means the only professional who was personally compromised by Lyndon Johnson’s patented “Treatment” in order to gain or maintain access with the president and thereby enhance his or her career. It must have been a fine line even for seasoned professionals and Doris Kearns, in that period, was a very unseasoned young graduate student. Perhaps she didn’t realize then that she was engaging herself with someone Bobby Kennedy once described as, “the most formidable human being I’ve ever met.”³⁷⁶

Evaluating the Evidence: When Deceitfulness Rises to the Level of “High Crimes”

The key to understanding Johnson’s crimes is to evaluate them as a whole, in the context of how and why each was committed, and compare it to the others to identify similarities. There were intrinsic patterns that existed within each of them, patterns that reflected Johnson’s unique status as being the primary beneficiary in each and every case, which fit like a jigsaw piece into the overall pattern, and thus the picture is revealed. The crimes that followed JFK’s murder followed similar earlier patterns, though now they were carried out under even stealthier means: the use of official government secrecy protocols; officially sanctioned, or created, evidence fabrication or its destruction; and murders of witnesses who would not go along with the “official” story, or who held dangerous secrets. With the backing of the CIA and FBI, Johnson’s manipulations of others continued just as before, only now on a larger, global scale. Assassins would be recruited from the most elite parts of the military and intelligence organizations. The similar clues gleaned from each of Johnson’s previous crimes and the others that came later, to enforce the secrets, can then be combined into an aggregation of hundreds of dots on a historical matrix, with President Lyndon B. Johnson in the center, connected to each.

My previous work examined Johnson’s many crimes during his four-decade political career—selling influence, extorting money out of anyone trying to do business with the government, bribing or threatening some and murdering others—all of which inexorably led to the murder of John F. Kennedy. In the pages to follow, we will examine his continuing criminal conduct while he was president, culminating in treasons against the United States. Given that “his war” resulted in the deaths of many millions over what

would have otherwise been the natural course of Asian history—had the people of Vietnam and neighboring countries been allowed to determine their own rules of governance—the results of his crimes should be counted with a calculator having at least eight columns of numbers before the decimal. If that were done when the academics and historian “experts” conduct their rankings of US presidents, his presidency would clearly be slotted where it should have been, on the bottom of the entire list and annotated accordingly.

It was Johnson’s duplicity in completely reversing Kennedy’s well- documented, planned policy of complete withdrawal from Vietnam—as Johnson simultaneously declared that “We will continue” all of JFK’s policies—that shows how he thought; this same pattern existed for all the previous crimes as well. Johnson knew that lies could become the “truth” if they were planted early and nurtured with a few half-truths or salted with some minor real truths and plenty of fertilizer spread high from the corral he—“Bull” Johnson, as people had called him back in college in San Marcos—owned and managed. His long-time aide George Reedy confirmed precisely this Johnson trait when he said, “When he spoke of personal matters his words were such a mixture of fantasy, euphemism, and half-truth that it was impossible to separate out the nuggets of revelation.”³⁷⁷

The patterns could be discerned early in Johnson’s life, from his college days through his early years working as a congressional assistant and then as a young congressman. The 1948 Senate election, which required thousands of fraudulent votes—not just the last 203 brazenly added voters (many of dead people who curiously appeared in alphabetical order as they appeared to cast their ballots) in Box 13 that was summarized in *LBJ: The Mastermind of the JFK Assassination* and detailed by both Robert Caro and Robert Dallek—and the introduction of one of the nation’s most creative lawyers of the time, Abe Fortas, was another example of the patterns in existence. In that case—arguably the most convoluted and lawless legal morass in US election history—they show that the entire spectacle had been created personally by Lyndon B. Johnson, to brutally force his way into the Senate of the United States of America.

From there, for the next dozen years, he would begin planning his ascension to the presidency; for him, there were no sacred cows, no “traditional” guidelines to follow, not even bothersome moral codes. As previously noted, Robert Caro described Johnson’s goal as though it was meant to be an absolute resolve: “a hunger so fierce and consuming that no consideration of morality or ethics, no cost to himself—or to anyone else—could stand before it.” Mr. Caro must have seen the same patterns, how they were replicated time after time, because that statement (“no consideration of morality or ethics, no cost to himself—or anyone else”) proves that he saw the patterns when he wrote his first book, and it remains the truest short description of Lyndon B. Johnson ever written.

Yet there are a number of other sources that also provide glimpses into Johnson’s darker side and his unbridled contempt for others—sparingly sprinkled, nearly as an aside in some cases among books and oral histories—written by people who knew him, who had worked for him for decades. In their aggregate, they prove to even the most skeptical but

objective reader that Johnson was a corrupt, mendacious, and contemptible man, but a man smart enough to know that he had to create the greatest legacy possible by accomplishing some “good” things. To that end, he had begun compiling a list of initiatives to push through Congress as quickly as he could, once he moved into the Oval Office; they were mostly ideas that had already been formulated by others, such as the passage of Franklin Roosevelt’s, then Harry Truman’s, Medicare Program and John F. Kennedy’s stalled Civil Rights Act, which filled the void that had been created by Johnson’s earlier leadership in the passage of the much weaker, practically unenforceable 1957 and 1960 legislation.³⁷⁸

Cliff Carter spoke about the night following JFK’s assassination in his oral history record at the LBJ Library; he described some of the conversations as being about Johnson’s public appearances and actions over the next few days:

[The] idea was that Johnson should address the psychological factor that someone had picked up the torch, the country was not without its leader ... the nation was in firm and resolute hands, this on the one hand, *and not to be overdoing on the other* ... make everyone realize that he was going to move in and take over and yet *not to appear that he was rushing in just power-mad like a scavenger that just scoops everything out of the way*.³⁷⁹ [Emphasis added on Carter’s choice of language, which seems to belie what they knew to be the truth.]

Interestingly, it wasn’t only Cliff Carter and Jack Valenti who reported that on the night of JFK’s assassination Johnson was already discussing how he would tackle JFK’s agenda. George Ball, who met Johnson at Andrews Air Force Base that evening, and flew back to the White House with the Johnsons, Carter, Mac Bundy, and McNamara, stated that, upon departing the helicopter, Johnson said, “Now, what do I have to do right away? What are the things that have to be done in the next forty-eight hours? Apart from the funeral arrangements, what substantive problems are there?” Moreover, Ball made the following statement in his oral history document for the Johnson Library.³⁸⁰

There was a kind of constipation on Capitol Hill that was really very serious, and the President turned immediately to the problem of how could he get the Kennedy program through. I think he felt sort of a personal responsibility to Kennedy to get his program through. I think he deeply felt this, and he did it superbly. He did it much better than Kennedy could ever have done it. [Which begs the question, “Why didn’t he help JFK while he was still alive?”]

Another possible account for that Capitol Hill constipation—why Kennedy was not making progress on his agenda during the months before his death—was that Johnson had been working, subtlety and secretly through his many connections with congressional leadership, to stall JFK’s initiatives. He cautioned Kennedy repeatedly that “we don’t have the votes, we need to wait for a better time,” as he continued stalling Congress from passing the civil rights bill throughout his vice presidency and for over two decades before that. That possibility would also explain why Johnson had, seemingly, already begun prioritizing his agenda, and reordering Kennedy’s domestic agenda into his own—before

JFK's body was even interred. This explanation would of course lead directly to the inference of foreknowledge on his part, which also conforms to the hypothesis developed in the previous work. His actions the evening of the assassination, lasting long into the night and early morning hours, conform to his overall patterns of behavior described previously.

Practically everyone else in the country was still in a state of shock of what had just happened. Many lost sleep in the early morning hours of November 23, 1963, out of fear and anticipation of the “unknowns” while the new president corralled his closest aides and associates around his bed to begin talking about what to do next to get his presidency launched, then discussing plans for his new administration. They were doubtlessly the only people in the country, at that moment, whose minds were preoccupied on working intensely—not about the day's horrible events back in Dallas, or the question of whether there might be a continuing conspiracy, possibly an internationally calamitous prelude to nuclear war or any number of other possibilities—but on such tasks such as reordering priorities for the legislative agenda for the remainder of the term, reconciling the budget, and discussing the need to organize for the elections almost a year away. And that explains a number of other anomalies, including the one about how the civil rights bill had suddenly, within days of JFK's murder, moved from the end of Johnson's priority list to first place, and how all the plugs were then pulled to get it passed by Congress, with a lot of presidential persuasion, within eight months.

For those having difficulty reconciling Johnson's so-called “good side” with his indisputably lengthy criminal career including everything up to at least ten and possibly as many as seventeen murders before becoming president, it might be useful to consider that this situation is not as oxymoronic as it seems; in fact a similar pattern seems to exist that runs through many of the world's most notorious leaders, dictators, and serial killers who ever lived:

- One of the world's most murderous dictators, **Joseph Stalin**, seemed to have a lot in common with Lyndon Johnson: Like LBJ, he suffered from a severe inferiority complex and paranoia but was also a man of extreme contradictions: as a poet, he published dozens of poignant and sensitive poems.
- The legendary and maniacal super-spy **James Jesus Angleton** grew delicate orchids and published the avante guard *Furioso* literary journal including essays submitted to him by Ezra Pound, e. e. cummings and Archibald MacLeish.
- **Adolph Hitler** was an artist whose paintings (excluding those still held by the US government), have sold at auction for tens of thousands of dollars; according to Wikipedia, they “are preoccupied with architecture such as deserted places, buildings, and farmhouses.” During World War II, Hitler used to paint water colours with war-ruined buildings... “Hitler's watercolors prove he was ‘grim’ as a painter.” He claimed to be a man “of the people” even though he was the classic “divider” of people. It was also said that he aimed to put a “VW” in every garage, but there would have probably been some restrictions on the garages belonging to certain “groups,” and it undoubtedly would not have been the policy in Poland.

- **Ted Bundy**, a serial killer of college-age coeds also volunteered at a suicide hotline crisis center in Seattle.
- The serial killer of young boys, **John Wayne Gacy**, played as a clown for neighborhood kids' parties. He became known as the "Killer Clown."
- At the risk of putting too fine a point on it, in recent years still another sociopath who had attained too much power relative to his position came to the attention of the nation: the Penn State football scandal starring the (previously) well-respected and admired assistant coach Jerry Sandusky. The most stunning point about this sad story was in the way he was able to keep his horrid obsessions secret, even as he surrounded himself with witting enablers willing to "give him the benefit of the doubt." It is astonishing that this apparently included the legendary head coach, Joe Paterno, although the extent of his knowledge will never be clearly known now that he is dead. From all the known facts, however, the president of the university as well as many of the coaches and faculty had to have known of a stigma on Sandusky's reputation for over twelve years before the case exploded in the press in 2011: Sandusky had to resign from his position with Penn State in 1998, following an investigation into an allegation by one of his victims of sexual molestation. Yet, according to Wikipedia, the university president gave him a "golden parachute" including "emeritus" rank that carried special privileges, including access to the university's recreational facilities, allowing him to continue using the boys' showers as part of his predatory preserve. Despite one very graphic statement from a student assistant coach about having witnessed Sandusky sodomize a young boy in the shower, somehow the report was discounted, as though the idea was silly, that "no one in his esteemed position would dare do such a thing." It is also interesting to note that in 1977, Sandusky founded The Second Mile, a nonprofit charity serving Pennsylvania underprivileged and at-risk-youth.

Such contradictory stories about some of the world's most notorious, lowest forms of criminals are not uncommon in the course of history; more will become apparent in later chapters regarding other very well-respected men in very powerful positions. These strains of similarity, though ethereal and ephemeral, are among the irrefutable, appalling parallels through all the other cases cited previously. Those shadowy patterns are also repeated again and again within the pages of this book and its predecessor, showing that Lyndon Johnson's "dark side" existed just as certainly as it did in the others. Because some authors ignore certain events—especially Johnson's roles in various criminal acts throughout his life that culminated in multiple murders during the 1950s and early 1960s—they are able to avoid the scrutiny his history deserves.

For example, Robert Caro, the author of four extensively detailed books on Johnson, with a fifth one underway, steered clear of this examination simply by avoiding the names of Malcolm Wallace, John "Doug" Kinser, Billie Sol Estes, Morris Jaffe, and Madeleine Brown, all of whom had tenuous but contemporaneous newsworthy connections to Lyndon B. Johnson as previously described. Even his appointment (through a recommendation to JFK) of Barefoot Sanders as the US attorney for north Texas, a man

who stood by to assist Johnson in a number of his most devious schemes was not mentioned by Mr. Caro. By ignoring the many old newspaper and magazine accounts of these clear connections between these old Johnson cronies, business partners, one of his lovers, and a man whose affairs with his sister—even becoming Johnson’s personal hit man—threatened Johnson’s “reputation,” Mr. Caro avoided going to the darkest corners of Lyndon Johnson’s criminal background.

Employing this device allowed the many Johnson biographers to also ignore mentioning the names of others connected to Estes, people who were all murdered in accordance with orders from Lyndon Johnson, according to Billie Sol Estes and Madeleine Brown. This despite the fact that the name Billie Sol Estes was recorded in practically every newspaper in the country—including the *New York Times* and the *Washington Post* as well as cover page articles in *Time* and *Life* magazines for several months beginning in March—continuing throughout the spring and summer of 1962. In practically every article, the largest, most salient point of the scandal related to Estes’s association with Lyndon Johnson. It is simply inexplicable that an in-depth biography of Lyndon Johnson can be written without even the mention of the Estes name, but alas, that is precisely what practically every other Johnson biographer has managed to do. The reason given—if the question is even asked, which is not often—invariably, is that Johnson was never actually “convicted” of any of these crimes (at least while he was still alive) and thereby proven to be guilty of any crimes through that association. Yet the only reasons for that were linked to Johnson’s guile, his craftiness, and conniving manipulation of people—especially his deadly threats to them—and his expertise in criminality. But for all of his cunning ability to avoid being caught, he would have ended up in the penitentiary, just as his quasi-prescient grandmother had predicted when he was a child.

The “Johnson men” were highly compartmentalized, to the extent that many of those whom he put “out front,” like Reedy, Busby, Moyers, and Valenti, probably knew very little about those he kept in the “back,” like Mac Wallace and to a lesser extent, Cliff Carter. Walter Jenkins had clearly and provably been involved in some of the lesser crimes (such as the bribery of Donald Reynolds), but Cliff Carter was assigned to supervise Mac Wallace, which involved him in carrying out miscellaneous “black bag” operations, including several murders, or other kinds of the most illegal activities. Bobby Baker also filled that role with numerous men operating “underground” with Mafiosi and certain men then considered quasi-legitimate, like the lobbyists Irving Davidson and Fred Black, who were later convicted for their frauds against the government.

George de Mohrenschildt—who will be closely examined in [Chapter 5](#)—was another, whose role, in addition to being a friend (and CIA handler) of Lee Harvey Oswald, had been personally involved with Lyndon Johnson in a number of unsavory, or criminal, business dealings involving his friend Clint Murchison. These included being his business partner and collaborator with various nefarious schemes involving Clemard Joseph Charles in Haiti. Those schemes were tied directly to attempts by Charles to foment a coup against the dictator there, Francois “Papa Doc” Duvalier, in collaboration with a number of “friends” of his who were themselves being managed by intelligence handlers highly placed at their headquarters in Langley, Virginia. They eventually decided that Duvalier

was performing sufficiently well to protect US interests in that nation to keep Charles dangling too.

At the same time that DeMohrenschildt left for meetings in Washington and New York, before moving on to Haiti, and Oswald left Dallas for New Orleans, Lyndon Johnson went to Dallas to give a speech to two thousand civic and business leaders there. On April 23, 1963, seven months before “the big event,” he also tipped off the *Dallas Times-Herald*, which reported it the following day, that JFK would be visiting Texas later that year. And finally, on that same day, Vice President Johnson appeared at the Crystal ballroom in the Baker Hotel, and made a statement that left the audience either stunned or puzzled: He stated, according to Penn Jones, Jr., in *Forgive My Grief (Vol. 4)*, that “the President of the United States is like a pilot and the election is when the nation picks an airplane and pilot for the next four years. Once you pick him, and you’re flying across the water in bad weather, don’t go up and open the door and try to knock him in the head. He’s the only pilot you have and if the plane goes down, you go with it. At least wait until next November before you shoot him down.”

Perhaps he had consumed a little too much alcohol before making that rather odd speech; another possibility was that he simply confused this audience with others with whom he was planning to meet during that trip.

* It would be one that he often discussed with others—aides like George Christian and Horace Busby, Hollywood producers and financial supporters like Ed Weisl and Lew Wasserman, and others—whose oral histories recorded the details of these conversations. The only difference in the end product, as compared to other presidents doing the same thing, would be the degree to which the “bad things” had to be hidden from the public, which in Johnson’s case, to be charitable, was “extreme,” as will be demonstrated throughout the remainder of the book.

** Like many Indonesians of Javanese (peasant) descent, Suharto had only one name.

*** All of which is excellently described by Anthony Summers in his book of that title, noted in the Bibliography.

**** See p. 128 of *LBJ: The Mastermind of the JFK Assassination*

***** Found in the Presidential Archives of the LBJ Library in Austin, Texas, by this author (though it is clear that these files have been well laundered to protect against the darkest secrets of that era). Certainly not an example of anything illegal or immoral, nevertheless, it is a clear example of the condescending attitude of the White House toward anyone raising a reasonable question about specific charges of illegal behavior, which were published in this best-selling book.

***** Interestingly, and for suspicious but inexplicable reasons, among the assets listed in J. Edgar Hoover’s \$200,000 (1972) estate, along with many other corporate stock holdings, generally in multiples of 100 shares and valued in thousands of dollars, there was “1 Share, Common Stock” issued by Dallas Uranium & Oil Corp, the value of which was noted as 11 cents (Ref. *The Director*, by Ovid Demaris [Harper & Row, 1975] p. 389).

Chapter 4

LBJ'S USE OF AMERICA'S WEALTHIEST AND MOST INFLUENTIAL—AND HOW IT LED TO PRESIDENTIAL TREASON

The truth is that like many liberal American Jews—and most American Jews are still liberal—I basically avoid thinking about where Israel is going. It seems obvious from here that the narrow-minded policies of the current government are basically a gradual, long-run form of national suicide—and that's bad for Jews everywhere, not to mention the world. But I have other battles to fight, and to say anything to that effect is to bring yourself under intense attack from organized groups that try to make any criticism of Israeli policies tantamount to anti-Semitism.

—PAUL KRUGMAN, OPINION PAGE, THE NEW YORK TIMES, APRIL 24, 2012

I expect that the following journey—which is a kind of unavoidable “battle to fight,” the significance of which will become apparent by the end of this book—may produce similar reactions to those predicted by Mr. Krugman in the epigraph above. Let the reader be assured, however, that there is nothing here remotely “anti-Semitic.” The fact that some of the people whose paths crossed Lyndon Johnson’s were Jews, or at least descendants of Jews, is simply a historical truth that therefore cannot be avoided. Another such truth is that many of them were also Zionists, for whom the primary goal—then and now—was the creation, then the geographic expansion and future security and protection, of the nation of Israel. It must also be understood that there are probably as many, or even more, “Christian Zionists” and others whose personal beliefs might be called “Secular Zionists,” than there are, or were, Jewish Zionists.

Irrespective of these distinctions, the more important difference is that most Zionists used peaceful diplomacy to achieve their objective: the creation of the state of Israel through negotiations by the United Nations in 1948. Yet simultaneously there existed, throughout the twentieth century, more zealously militant supporters of the Zionist cause, whose use of deadly provocations led them to be labeled “terrorists.” Naturally, an individual Zionist could be politically positioned anywhere on that gamut. The historical pertinence of this elementary exercise will become clearer in the following pages but it is important for the reader to understand that there were a number of ardently committed Zionists—people representing points on both ends, and different positions within that spectrum—who became chessmen on a gigantic chessboard being played by Lyndon Johnson as he advanced himself (all while he played the “king”) up the political ladder.

Lyndon Johnson’s skill set—developed over the first three decades of his life, built around his life long obsession to become president and targeted to any person or group that could help him advance toward that goal—inexorably led him to seek the support of Jewish leaders, whose agendas in post-WWII America were formed in the wake of Hitler’s

holocaust. People around the world felt a need to respond to this horror in the most meaningful way possible: The creation of a nation for Jewish people to ensure their future protection from enemies of the sort manifested by Adolph Hitler and his gestapo. Of all the places in the world where such a creation could be considered, it was decided that Israel would be carved out of a geographic area called Palestine. Many people—not merely those harboring anti-Semitic motives—thought that would be unwise; they feared that doing so in this particular area would have such a long tail of backlash from neighboring Arab states that it might never be fixed. Some even foresaw what all fear most: Armageddon.

President Johnson's Zionist Connections (1937–67)

Lyndon Johnson reflexively sided with those who thought that the UN initiative was a good solution. In his case, it might have been largely due to his own lucrative relationships with many influential Jews, starting at least, if not before, in the mid-1930s, when he went to Washington as a congressman. From then on, he was “in his element” when he became involved with wealthy and influential Jewish men, first in Washington, then New York City, and finally in Hollywood. They were (and still are) well represented in Washington, DC, mostly in offices up and down K Street and on the most important stretch of Pennsylvania Avenue. Indeed some even created “branch offices” on Capitol Hill, where they spent much of their working hours lobbying the most powerful congressmen or senators they could meet. That wasn't hard to do as long as they came prepared to “pay to play,” and Lyndon Johnson's office was usually open only to the highest bidders. The high-stakes players, as they still do today, came from Wall Street or nearby midtown and uptown Manhattan. Many happened to be Jewish, but not all. In the late 1940s, the great majority of them advocated strongly for the creation of the state of Israel, many with non-Jewish names like Bush, Rockefeller, and Harriman. There were exceptions to this paradigm, of course, and the passions this issue aroused caused some of them to be put into personal jeopardy; such was the case with the secretary of defense at the time, James Forrestal.

Johnson's innate skills of operating secretly and his ability to manipulate people would be practiced and fine-tuned when he went to Washington in 1931 as the administrative assistant to Congressman Richard Kleberg (himself a very wealthy Jewish congressman, and heir to the King Ranch) and—in the course of his activities there to ingratiate himself into the congressional district's circle of “most powerful constituents”—he leveraged the power he had vicariously assumed from the ineffectual congressman to assist the most important, or wealthy, of them.³⁸¹

One of the first of Kleberg's constituents who Johnson became associated with was a man he had known as a child following his father around the Texas Capitol: Texas State Senator Alvin J. Wirtz, of Seguin, in Guadalupe County. Wirtz has also been described as Svengali-like, and as a particularly devious and deceitful man who had become known for his guile and his cunning ability to strike deals that were later found to contain hidden “surprises.” Wirtz was good at sneaking words or phrases into a business contract that effectively nullified entire sections of it, or changed the meaning of some key part, which

negated what had been agreed to orally. He did this at the last minute, usually by his slipping in a new page to replace an original where necessary, knowing that the other attorneys would not bother rereading the entire document. During the 1922–30 period when he had served as a state senator, he became involved with a group that wanted to build a hydroelectric plant, with a dam over the Guadalupe River. By 1934, the farmers along the river had run him out of Seguin after they figured out how he had used government regulations to manipulate the forced sale of their land (through “*eminent domain*”) at very low prices to build a series of dams for irrigation—though the real purpose was to produce electric power for their own (private) profit. Wirtz was in a meeting with representatives of the Chicago financial firm owned by Samuel Insull when one of the outraged farmers—Tom Hollamon Sr., a former Texas Ranger—burst into the room, repeatedly shooting his gun. Wirtz survived the assault but not the anger of the townspeople for his double-dealing and maneuvering. To communicate their warning to Wirtz, townspeople gave him only hours to leave town, as they told him: “Don’t let the sun set on you in Seguin.”³⁸² Being driven from his hometown by his fellow citizens did not seem to impede his later successes in the political world, tethered as he was to his new friend and associate in Washington, Lyndon B. Johnson.

Much later, Johnson admitted to Richard Goodwin that “The man who had the most influence over me, more than anyone, was Texas Senator Alvin Wirtz. Wirtz was trying to persuade the local power companies to put in lines that would reach out to rural areas and make electric power available to small farmers.”³⁸³ In a meeting that Wirtz and Johnson had with representatives of the power companies, Johnson “blew off and gave them hell,” which caused Wirtz to admonish him after the meeting broke up; he reminded Johnson that the power companies owned the power and he needed to lower the tone of his voice if they expected to reach an agreement, telling him that “I want you to remember some advice—you better not tell a man to go to hell unless you can make him go there.”³⁸⁴

This was just the sort of man with whom Lyndon Johnson would predictably be attracted; the feeling was reciprocated just as strongly. Lady Bird also seemed to like him rather vigorously as well; she wrote below his photograph: “Senator A. J. Wirtz—the Captain of My Ship, Any Day.”³⁸⁵ That was because he was a sort of Jekyll and Hyde kind of person, smiling broadly as he served pitchers of mint juleps on a Sunday afternoon for his guests, he could be completely relaxed on the back porch of his house smoking his cigars, chatting amiably, and telling funny stories. But when he returned to business the next day, he would morph into a cunning and deceitful Dr. Jekyll as he maneuvered “behind-the-scenes.” Wirtz and his new friend Lyndon Johnson had much in common, including the penchant each had for their use of utmost secrecy in all of their dirtiest dealings. Wirtz’s techniques and obsession for secrecy extended to distrusting even his own partners, other attorneys, and secretaries in his own law firm of Powell, Wirtz, Rauhut & Gideon (he preferred to have his name listed second, even though he controlled the organization). He would often write letters in longhand, to keep even his own secretaries from knowing what was in them and usually avoided even writing letters if he could conduct business personally or by telephone for the same reason.³⁸⁶ It is no

coincidence that Johnson and Wirtz grew to be closely aligned over the course of many years, and that their common traits, techniques, and habits became shared; the extreme secrecy practices they both used were the most important of their common methods.

In meetings with others, Wirtz would listen calmly and speak infrequently, using words sparingly and always directly on point, usually in monotones, speaking slowly and deliberately. He would never raise his voice as he spoke. He felt no need to sprinkle a few witticisms or jokes into his business discussions, he was always deadly serious and completely focused. But as soon as the meeting was completed, then he would allow himself to relax enough to act out the person he wished he could be: a southern gentleman, one who wanted his (pretended) reluctance to talk publicly to be noted. He liked to play the part of a country hick, saying things like “Well, I’m just a little ol’ country boy, and I don’t want to sugarcoat it, but it seems to me ...” In his public utterances, Wirtz was good at using country twang and Texas colloquialisms to “lay it on thick.” He would use his country hick routine when someone asked where Seguin was located: “Oh, it’s a fur piece from Austin.”³⁸⁷ But if he seemed to be backward and unassertive to unwary visitors, he was described by the man he chose to follow him in the state Senate as having, “a mind as quick as chain lightning.”³⁸⁸

His craftiness and shrewdness in business was described by Robert Caro, in explaining Wirtz’s approach to planning major and secretive projects: “*indirection, deceit, secrecy—of which Wirtz was by now a master ...*”³⁸⁹ Furthermore, Caro noted that one San Antonio attorney called him “*a conniver—a conniver like I never saw before or since. Sharp, cunning.*” Another attorney said bluntly, “He would gut you if he could, but you would probably never know he did it. I mean, *that was a man who would do anything—and he would still be smiling when he slipped in the knife.*”³⁹⁰ [Emphasis added by author in all three of the above quotations.]

Alvin Wirtz also happened to represent two of the most powerful and politically active oil companies in Texas (Humble Oil and Refining—or “Umble” as it was known in Austin—and Magnolia Petroleum Company). He continued this for many years, despite the obvious conflict of interest and the anti-trust issues it created, given that they were also supposedly competitors with each other.³⁹¹ Wirtz operated with the same measure of secretiveness as Lyndon Johnson, according to Ed Clark, Johnson’s long time chief attorney, bagman, and fellow conspirator in his most nefarious activities, and both of them craved power and became obsessed with accumulating greater and greater volumes of it, primarily from positions one or more steps removed from the scene, operating from “backroom” positions:³⁹²

He liked to sit quietly, smoke a cigar. He would sit and work in his library, and plan and scheme, and usually he would get somebody out in front of him so that nobody knew it was Alvin Wirtz who was doing it. He would sit and scheme in the dark.

Johnson’s early association with Alvin Wirtz and, subsequently, Abe Fortas dated back to the early 1930s, but would grow when they were enlisted in 1937 to help fix the problems

Johnson faced in helping the Brown brothers to get the Marshall Ford Dam built.³⁹³ Abe Fortas had made his fortune, as other powerful and influential men had, in the depths of the Depression; in his case, it was through his legal firm Arnold, Fortas & Porter, assisting many blue-chip corporate clients in finding their way through the maze of new regulations promulgated during the New Deal era. Even in those early days in the 1930s, Fortas and his wife lived in a large and luxurious home in the Dumbarton Oaks section of Washington and he commuted to work in a Rolls-Royce.³⁹⁴

In 1938–40, the juggernaut of congressional Democrats that had initially backed Roosevelt’s “New Deal” had fissured, and many former supporters had split off to another group led, ironically, by the then vice-president, John Nance Garner, who had become opposed to much of Roosevelt’s agenda, including his plan to pack the Supreme Court. A Gallup poll during this period indicated that Garner was favored by 58 percent of all Democrats should Roosevelt decide not to run. Roosevelt decided that Garner would have to be replaced if he ran again, ultimately deciding on the more liberal Henry Wallace. By early 1939, according to Robert Caro, Johnson had not ingratiated himself with President Roosevelt and was therefore merely “a Congressman without influence.”³⁹⁵

During this period, Herman Brown had submitted a bid on one of the new navy bases that Roosevelt was planning to build in anticipation of the “winds of war” that had been blowing in far-off horizons. Brown’s bid on the first such base, in San Juan, Puerto Rico, was ignored and Johnson was given the brush-off by a low ranking officer who informed him that the contractor was not selected because Brown & Root did not have the expertise to build a navy air base.³⁹⁶ Another reason Brown & Root had not been selected for this project appears to have been related to their continued support of John Garner, therefore against President Roosevelt. By December 1939, that impediment had been removed when Herman Brown—under the plotting and prodding of Lyndon Johnson and Alvin Wirtz, and despite the fact that, until then, all three had previously supported Garner, the “head” of the Texas Democrats—switched his support to President Roosevelt. This move, very much a gamble at that critical time, was calculated by the two masters of political manipulation—Wirtz and Johnson—to strengthen their relationships with the only man who could provide them the wherewithal to reach their longer term goals; Johnson, even more than Wirtz, knew they had to “change sides” and support Roosevelt over fellow Texan John Garner.

Almost immediately, the gesture was rewarded by Roosevelt when he allowed Johnson to recommend a major presidential appointment: shortly thereafter, Alvin J. Wirtz was appointed as the undersecretary of the interior. Wirtz would be second in command only to Secretary Harold Ickes.³⁹⁷ In announcing this “plum”—the attorney for Herman Brown being named to a high post in his administration—Roosevelt acknowledged that Representative Lyndon Johnson had “presented Wirtz’s name.” Presidential Secretary Stephen Early stated that “neither Texas Senator was consulted,” nor was Speaker of the House Sam Rayburn or Secretary of Commerce Jesse Jones. As Robert Caro concluded, Johnson and Wirtz had successfully bridged the gap and had become Roosevelt’s reliable

allies: “Roosevelt told us that Garner had to be sent home permanently to his 6,000 neighbors in Uvalde, Texas, so that he could add to his millions,’ presidential aide David K. Niles says, ‘And this crucial task went to Alvin Wirtz.’”³⁹⁸

In addition, the Navy Department was quietly informed by the White House that Lyndon Johnson was to be consulted—and his advice taken—on the awarding of navy contracts in Texas.³⁹⁹ Shortly after that, Herman Brown flew up to Washington with other Johnson cronies, Edward A. Clark and Claud Wild Sr., whose expertise was in knowing where political money should be allocated within Texas.⁴⁰⁰ Lyndon Johnson’s political power had been immeasurably strengthened, even though that required that the former head of the Texas delegation to Washington, Vice President John Garner, be “thrown under the bus.”

Throughout this period, Johnson would become close to many other Texans who were influential within their own territories and groups. The most important to Johnson was the “Suite 8-F” men (so named from the suite at Houston’s Lamar Hotel, where they regularly met) who owned or ran oil companies, newspapers, and other industries or, in the case of Ed Clark, the most influential and politically connected attorney in Austin, Texas, who became Johnson’s chief bagman and facilitator of many of his most criminal acts; he also discreetly controlled much of the judicial system all over Texas through the many judges who were beholden to him for their appointments, or campaign cash for those having elective offices. It was implicitly understood that favors dispensed came with a “quid pro quo” tag.* These methods, including bribery and extortion involving judges and juries, led to the millions paid by Billie Sol Estes to Johnson for his influence with the Department of Agriculture to “bend some rules.” Another example was provided by a lower-level Mafiosa, Jack Halfen, who testified that hundreds of thousands of dollars were diverted from the illegal numbers racket to pay Johnson for his influence in preventing the passage of anti racketeering legislation.

There were Gentiles and there were Jewish men whose help Johnson enlisted along the way. In addition to the aforementioned Estes, Baker, Wirtz, and Fortas, Morris D. Jaffe of San Antonio, who had become very rich buying up land having uranium deposits—and selling that rare metal with virtually monopoly power to the government, which was then desperately trying to acquire it—was one who had become a close associate and indispensable to Johnson in later years, when Johnson had gotten himself embroiled in other legal problems. Jaffe—who, decades later, would gain notoriety as a result of making illegal campaign contributions to Speaker of the House Jim Wright—had stepped in at just the right moment to squelch the rumors connecting Johnson to the ruined empire once owned by Billie Sol Estes, when he bought up the remaining assets for pennies on the dollar, though the “investment” supposedly cost him over \$9 million,⁴⁰¹ this figure appears to have been significantly overstated as explained earlier; but the biggest benefit of this investment was Lyndon Johnson’s, because it ensured that the broiling, near flaming scandal would quickly be extinguished and Johnson’s career saved from certain doom. Lyndon particularly liked friends like that.

Lyndon Johnson: The First Jewish President?

While not critical to the storyline—yet significant to understanding the deep feelings for Jewish people that Lyndon Johnson would later develop—Johnson's natural affinity for Jews might have been due to his own heritage. Author Robert Caro noted that "A Johnson family friend, Cynthia Crider, observed that Lyndon's mother, Rebekah Baines (Johnson), often boasted of her Baines ancestry, but rarely mentioned the maternal side, the Huffmans. In fact, Crider recalled that Lyndon's father, Sam Johnson, used to tease his wife occasionally about her German heritage. When she would get stubborn about something, Sam would say, "That's your German blood again. German blood! Look at your brother's name. Huffman! Probably was Hoffmann once—in Berlin." Rebekah would respond, "Sam, you know it's Holland Dutch."⁴⁰²

In his third oral history interview for the LBJ Library, his long time assistant Harry McPherson said:

And I think he felt instinctively what I've always felt, that some place in Lyndon Johnson's blood there are a great many Jewish corpuscles. I think he is part Jewish, seriously. Not merely because of his affection for a great many Jews, but because of the way he behaves. He really reminds me of a six-foot-three-inch Texas, slightly corny, version of a rabbi or a diamond-merchant on 44th Street.⁴⁰³

In the online article "The First Jewish President?" available through various websites through Internet search engines, further credence is given to Lyndon Johnson's Jewish ancestry. The article states that: "According to Jewish law, if a person's mother is Jewish, then that person is automatically Jewish, regardless of the father's ethnicity or religion. The facts indicate that both of Lyndon Johnson's great-grandparents, on the maternal side, were Jewish."⁴⁰⁴ The grandparents of Lyndon's mother, Rebecca Baines were named John S. Huffman and Mary Elizabeth Perrin, both common Jewish names, as was the name of John Huffman's mother, Suzanne Ament.⁴⁰⁵ Moreover, the article indicates that the Huffmans migrated from Germany to Frederick, Maryland, during the 1750s before they moved on to Kentucky and ultimately Texas in the 1800s. It relates a family story about Lyndon's father "Little Sam" and his grandfather "Big Sam" who sought clemency for Leo Frank, the "Jewish victim of a blood libel in Atlanta" in 1915 and had to guard against retribution from the Ku Klux Klan by defending their farm with shotguns. Further, the article cites historian James M. Smallwood, who stated that

Congressman Johnson used legal and sometimes illegal methods to smuggle 'hundreds of Jews into Texas, using Galveston as the entry port. Enough money could buy false passports and fake visas in Cuba, Mexico and other Latin American countries. Johnson smuggled boatloads and planeloads of Jews into Texas. He hid them in the Texas National Youth Administration. Johnson saved at least four or five hundred Jews, possibly more.'

A pertinent point about Johnson's willingness to help Jews escape Europe in 1937 and his later help in the formation of Israel in 1947–48 and its substantial expansion in 1967

during the Six-Day War (to be examined shortly) is this: Beyond everything else said about Johnson's affinity for Jewish people, the first person to influence Johnson to do something to help Jews fleeing Hitler was his mistress, Alice Glass (she conducted the affair behind the back of her husband, Charles Marsh, one of Johnson's primary financial benefactors and owner of several Texas newspapers). In 1937, Charles and Alice had attended the Salzburg music festival and heard one of Hitler's speeches. They were among the first Americans to realize Hitler's threat and, according to Robert Caro's research, immediately upon their return, they began assisting Jews financially and in other ways to escape Hitler's grasp, even opening their Virginia country estate to refugees. One of them was a young musical conductor, Erich Leinsdorf.⁴⁰⁶ When Leinsdorf realized that he had received no reply for an extension of his visa, after several months, Marsh drove him to Washington where they met with Lyndon Johnson, who not only arranged to have the visa extended but developed an elaborate plan to send him to Cuba so that he could return as a regular immigrant, but one having a new status, as a "permanent resident."⁴⁰⁷

Whether Johnson did this out of an act of kindness for a particularly worthy immigrant—Johnson had someone on his staff write a letter stating that the United States had a "Holy mission to provide a peaceful haven for musical geniuses nervously exhausted from persecution and racial bias,"⁴⁰⁸—or merely to impress his lover at the time, we will never know, but the reader is free to make his or her own inferences.

In the summer of 1938, delegates from thirty-two countries met at the French resort of Evian to conduct a conference focused on what to do about the "Jewish problem." Roosevelt chose not to send a high-level diplomat to represent him; instead, he selected an old businessman friend, Myron C. Taylor, to represent the United States. It turned out to be one of the least productive conferences in recorded history, since practically every country, other than the Dominican Republic, offered excuses for not letting in more refugees, even though, for nine days, delegates from the other countries, including the United States, rose to mouth a few platitudes about what a great and perplexing problem they were working on.⁴⁰⁹ This must have been very frustrating for Alice Glass, possibly enough so that she sought help from the most effective politician she knew; indeed, intimately knew.

In 1939, the twenty-first international World Zionist Conference met just before the start of World War II. Due to the war, it would not meet again until 1942, at which point European Jews, joined by their compatriots from around the world, began demanding, with renewed vigor, the creation of a Jewish state. This issue would become the highest priority for the newly created United Nations immediately after the war.

1941: Lyndon Johnson Goes to War—in Hollywood

After three years of romantic trysts between Lyndon and Alice Glass, usually when her husband was not around, the bloom fell off that rose when Lyndon spent months traveling up and down the California coast pretending to be doing important navy business though he was actually spending an inordinate amount of time in Hollywood. Johnson finally did spend a total of one month and four days in the South Pacific as President Roosevelt's

emissary—miraculously coming back with a Silver Star, under what might charitably be called “most unusual circumstances” after a twenty-minute airplane ride that was reported by Byron Darnton of the *New York Times* on June 10, 1942: “The plane developed mechanical trouble and was forced to return without reaching its target.” (The episode was more fully described in *LBJ: The Mastermind of the JFK Assassination*, which demonstrated that the incident described—not heroism, but cowardice on Johnson’s part—how he managed to coerce high-level military officers to give him a Silver Star for thirteen minutes in flight, where he was never put into jeopardy; it was done to pre pay him for his political influence, with a promise to increase the military budgets for the war zones under their command.) The real military men who flew those Marauders on a daily basis never got a Silver Star for that trip, or any other of their many flights where they actually engaged the Japanese fighters; for their own personal reasons, they did not appreciate how Lyndon Johnson managed to be awarded that medal after only one aborted trip.

The first five to six months of his “service” were spent mostly between San Francisco and Los Angeles—and hobnobbing around Hollywood with producers, pretty actresses, voice coaches, and professional photographers—as he worked to improve his charismatic skills in preparation for his future in the political world. Apparently, his military stint destroyed his once-hot but secret adulterous affair with the wife of one of his primary benefactors, Charles Marsh. The sister of Johnson’s mistress, Alice Glass, according to author Caro, described Alice as “an idealist” who admired politicians who, in her view, tried to “help people.” She also stated that Alice had come to view other politicians—those who were more interested in using their offices for personal gain and accumulation of great powers over others—with disdain, which suggests she had developed conflicted views regarding Lyndon Johnson.⁴¹⁰ It appears that this explanation—which directly points to the fundamental difference between the two—solves the sub plot of why these two lovers eventually broke up. Furthermore, it reveals that Lyndon had managed to hide his real self for many months but that she eventually figured him out. She did so in a lot less time than some of the “best and brightest” White House presidential aides took, both those with him before and those who were brought in after he became president.

Johnson knew instinctively by then that he had to become friends with the most powerful men in town, and Hollywood was no different in that respect than San Marcos or Washington, DC (the college president, “Prexy” Evans in the first case, and Speaker Rayburn, Senator Richard Russell, and President Roosevelt in the latter). In the Hollywood of 1942, there were three men Johnson put onto targeted pedestals for future development: Edwin Weisl Sr., the counsel for Paramount Pictures; Arthur Krim, a New York attorney, who also headed United Artists and founded Orion Pictures; and Lew Wasserman, then head of MCA (later Universal Studios). These and other Hollywood moguls eventually became lifelong friends and financial supporters to Johnson. Johnson became friends with Weisl first, in the 1940s. Weisl, in turn, introduced him to Wasserman in the mid-1950s; both of them were strong supporters of Johnson in 1960, until Johnson agreed to be Jack Kennedy’s running mate. When that happened, Weisl stopped speaking to Johnson for a year due to a long-term feud he had had with Joseph Kennedy Sr. dating back to the 1930s

and Joe's reign at Paramount.⁴¹¹ Arthur Krim became friends with Johnson in 1962, after he had become vice president.⁴¹²

By the 1960s, MCA, headed by Lew Wasserman, had acquired near-monopoly status in Hollywood, having 700 actors and actresses under contract, 300 Broadway actors, all the "Big Bands" and major nightclubs in the largest cities. Yet Wasserman did not become politically active until 1962, when his MCA empire came under attack by the antitrust division of Bobby Kennedy's Justice Department.⁴¹³ The impetus for that investigation was apparently the result of an exposé in the *Saturday Evening Post*, "MCA as 'The Octopus.'"⁴¹⁴ It was then that Lew Wasserman—the most powerful man in Hollywood, arguably of all time—became even closer to Lyndon B. Johnson and much more conscious of the need to have friends in Washington. The eventual result of this lawsuit was that MCA had to cut its direct ties, as their agent, with all of the actors it had represented.

Wasserman and his senior partner, Jules Stein, had made MCA a publicly held corporation in 1959, which required Wasserman to begin dealing with Wall Street. This was difficult for him, and them, since the business analysts expected forthright answers to questions that he considered to be too invasive, including some that he simply felt were none of their business: The corporation's relationship with Jimmy Hoffa and, by extension, his associates, was one such issue. At that time, Hoffa and Bobby Kennedy were often shown on the evening news, as they viciously fought during hearings of the Senate Select Committee on Improper Activities in Labor or Management, for which RFK was counsel. Wall Street analysts considered this to be a very unsavory relationship and when one of them asked Wasserman about it, according to his biographer Connie Bruck, he responded by acknowledging that he knew Hoffa: "We hire about fifteen thousand of his members a week. I'd rather be hiring them from someone I know than someone I don't."⁴¹⁵ Wasserman's reach extended from the Teamster boss Hoffa's underworld to the Chicago/LA/Vegas/Cleveland and Detroit gangland run by mobsters like Moe Dalitz, Meyer Lansky, Johnny Rosselli, Sam Giancana, and mob lawyer Sidney Korshak. Wasserman was also a friend to three presidents of the United States (Lyndon B. Johnson was first and later, former movie star Ronald Reagan and eventually, Bill Clinton).⁴¹⁶

Johnson and Wasserman were similar in many ways: both of them were so obsessed with secrecy that they rarely committed anything the least bit sensitive to writing, and never did that with any projects that were designated to be conducted in total secrecy. Both could quickly fly into a blind rage that made anyone who witnessed it quake in fear of even answering the telephone when either of them called. One of the producers who worked for Wasserman, David Brown, said, "If things didn't go well, he could foam at the mouth, literally; I've seen that happen."⁴¹⁷ Once, when one of his MCA executives proposed that the company buy a small company that made audio equipment that would produce eight-track tapes with the buyer's choices of different tunes and artists, resulting in a customized album, Wasserman screamed at him, "LET ME GET THIS STRAIGHT... YOU WANT TO MANUFACTURE EQUIPMENT THAT WOULD ENABLE PEOPLE TO STEAL OUR COPYRIGHTS?" When the executive tried to explain his proposal,

Wasserman became even more upset, according to Connie Bruck: “he was trembling, he couldn’t speak. Wasserman came around his desk, *screaming* at him.”⁴¹⁸ [Emphasis added.] Another executive later tried to console the trembling manager, telling him he should get “used to it. That was an hors d’oeuvre. Wait till you see the main course.”⁴¹⁹

The very close relationships between Lyndon Johnson and his Hollywood friends Lew Wasserman, Ed Weisl and other moguls from Paramount and MGM, and the lawyer Sidney Korshak—compounded by Korshak’s unique representation of each of them, even despite the obvious conflicts of interest in three-way transactions involving all of them, and notwithstanding Korshak’s ties to Jimmy Hoffa and mobsters from Chicago, Las Vegas, and Los Angeles—gave Korshak undeserved legitimacy, making him more reputable to others.⁴²⁰

Korshak managed to avoid the press until famed investigative journalists Seymour Hersh** and Jeff Gerth published a four-part series in the *New York Times* in June 1976 in which they stated, “Sidney Korshak leads a double life. To scores of federal, state, and local law enforcement officials, Mr. Korshak is the most important link between organized crime and legitimate business.”⁴²¹ The many law enforcement officials who had ventured into Korshak’s criminal activities—labor racketeering, fraud, extortion, and bribery, among others—would inevitably capitulate to his dominance of his domain because of the “reluctance of witnesses to testify.”⁴²² He once told an associate about how a man who the mob was looking for—a “ratfink”—had finally been located. When the associate asked where he had been found, Korshak simply replied: “In Arizona, Nevada and New Mexico.”⁴²³ These close ties to Mafiosi should have been enough to cause legitimate businessmen, even the most unscrupulous Hollywood moguls, to stay as far away from him as possible, but such was not the case; indeed the opposite was true: Korshak was more like a magnet to whom all of them were attracted, like moths to a flame.

In addition to his attorney relationship to Sam Giancana and Johnny Rosselli (ergo, the entire Chicago/Los Angeles/Las Vegas mob), Korshak was also closely associated with Chicago financier Henry Crown (the largest single stockholder, and chairman of the board of directors of General Dynamics, of Fort Worth, Texas). Together with Walter Annenberg (publisher of the *Philadelphia Inquirer*), according to famed columnist Drew Pearson, they were the key people who controlled the Chicago mob all during the 1950s and early 1960s.⁴²⁴ Pearson intimated that a source he was using had introduced him to Jack Ragen, who met with the FBI and divulged multiple leads and evidence about racketeering in Chicago. Both Tom Clark (Supreme Court Justice appointed by Truman, and father of Ramsey Clark) and J. Edgar Hoover informed Pearson that these leads led to “very high places,” (pointing toward Crown and Annenberg) yet Hoover refused to give Ragen any protection. Ragen was murdered within a month of talking.⁴²⁵

Within that crime circle was another Chicago lawyer, Albert E. Jenner Jr.—Henry Crown’s personal attorney—who was nevertheless selected by the Warren Commission to be an assistant counsel; he was put in charge of determining whether there had been any

connection between Lee Harvey Oswald and Jack Ruby. Although he found none, this was contradicted by numerous other people, including a number of Ruby's employees, Billie Sol Estes and Johnson's mistress Madeleine Brown. But for obvious reasons, such leads were not to be pursued, and none of the many people, including these most prominent witnesses, were ever called on to testify to that effect.

Within days of Lew Wasserman's death on June 3, 2002, obituaries appeared in newspapers and magazines around the country, not all of them of the usual genre, which generally focus only on the wonderful accomplishments of the deceased. Walter Shapiro's column in *Slate*, June 6, 2002, titled "Lew Wasserman: The Man Who Ruined Movies," pointed out how Wasserman became the first and foremost of the Hollywood financial backers to the Democratic Party: It happened in the 1964 presidential campaign, which he found was a very productive avenue for acquiring enormous political power. Shapiro's column, appearing shortly after Wasserman's death, also set a new standard of brutal frankness and candor for writers of obituaries:

He left behind almost no memorable quotes or colorful anecdotes. Virtually his only personality quirk was a preternatural ability to inspire dread through volcanic explosions. As Frank Rose put it in a 1995 *Los Angeles Times* profile, "The legendary rages would begin with an ominous tapping of the sword-like letter opener on his immaculate antique desk and proceed to a fury so total that it could leave a grown man in a \$1,500 suit hugging the toilet in fear." Small wonder Wasserman felt a natural affinity for Lyndon Johnson.

Mr. Shapiro's acute and insightful comment about what he called the Wasserman-Johnson "affinity" speaks volumes about the very subject we are now attempting to evaluate; indeed it validates the point already presented: Johnson had perfected his manipulative skills, in this case becoming a sycophant to his powerful target. His greatest talent was in establishing strong relationships with men who he knew could, and would, help him advance his own position. This worked best when applied to men who shared his own traits, especially his obsession for secrecy in all dealings. Lew Wasserman clearly had much in common with Johnson, including that of working under the cloak of complete secrecy.

In the video *The Last Mogul: The Life and Times of Lew Wasserman*, a Hollywood producer said of Wasserman, "One of the reasons that he didn't make notes, I suspect, is that he didn't want anything on paper that would create a trail."⁴²⁶ This was precisely the same lesson Johnson had learned as a youth and had been reaffirmed by many of his closest associates and mentors such as Alvin Wirtz. As he had before in so many other cases of the men he targeted, Johnson treated the Hollywood moguls as though they were the most brilliant, erudite men in the world, and he would do anything in his considerable manipulative powers to create within them a sense of "indebtedness" to himself, using every one of his many "Johnson Treatment" techniques. He would have considered it an "investment" that would be leveraged in the future. The payback on Johnson's investment would grow dramatically during the 1950s, as Johnson continually gained more power within the Senate.

As the leader of the Democratic Party he became the conduit through which funds were

collected and dispersed. Meanwhile, his contacts in Hollywood and Washington grew to New York and throughout the country. Eventually, prominent Jewish bankers (investment bankers as well as the key men in charge of large national banks throughout the country), Jewish doctors, attorneys, lobbyists, and politicians as well as Jewish television and movie producers, were the source of half of the money going into the Democratic party's coffers.⁴²⁷

Clearly, the biggest payback for Lyndon Johnson in his relationship to Hollywood moguls was his success in having his most devoted and worshipful, unquestioning and sycophantic aide, Jack Valenti, appointed to head the Academy of Motion Picture Arts and Sciences (AMPAS). Despite Valenti's and Wasserman's denials, according to the latter's biographer, Connie Bruck, it was Johnson who persuaded Wasserman to appoint Jack Valenti to head the organization.⁴²⁸ Johnson knew that the relatively young Valenti would be in a key position there to "keep the secrets" about his own sordid past hidden for decades—indefinitely, possibly even forever if he lived long enough to secure it for at least the first four decades, which he did. He similarly took his responsibilities toward Wasserman very seriously: In the video *The Last Mogul: The Life and Times of Lew Wasserman*, Valenti stated it himself very bluntly: "If someone attacked Lew Wasserman, they'd be attacking me."⁴²⁹ When asked about Wasserman's ties to Korshak, Valenti hesitated at first, then stated that Korshak was never convicted of any crime related to his ties to Wasserman and therefore, he was innocent.⁴³⁰ The referenced video then contrasted that statement with author Dominick Dunne saying that Korshak's house was the only one he had ever visited that had an armed guard stationed at the front door.⁴³¹ Finally, the video concluded by proclaiming that Korshak operated as Wasserman's "fixer" and that they were a team that ran Hollywood in the 1960s and how one of his Mafioso friends testified under oath that "a message from Korshak is a message from us."⁴³² One need not have been a professional psychic or even minimally clairvoyant, to understand that Sidney Korshak and his friends were very dangerous men to anyone who got in their way.

Although Jack Valenti was technically correct, that all of these mob connections never led to Korshak's conviction, there had been a total of ten FBI investigations of MCA's various misdeeds and connections to the Mafiosi. This included one for which *60 Minutes* was preparing to air in 1983 concerning the "Pisello Case" and connections to multiple mob figures including Moe Dalitz, head of the Cleveland Syndicate branch of the mob (which included Detroit). Wasserman called his friend Don Hewitt at CBS and talked him out of airing that show. However, five years later someone else decided to go ahead and show it; Wasserman never talked to Hewitt again.⁴³³ Two attorneys from the Justice Department stated that they uncovered ties to the East Coast crime families (Genovese and Gambino) and the Chicago syndicate and were still discovering new leads, which showed links to MCA at every level by various mobsters. Then, after a secret 1983 meeting between Wasserman and President Reagan, the FBI investigation was dropped. All Jack Valenti would say about this mystery wrapped in enigma was: "One never knows about what

Wasserman said to President Reagan; when I asked Lew about it, he would smile in an opaque way and I never questioned him on it.”⁴³⁴

In the previously referenced video *The Last Mogul*, Valenti clearly enjoyed and relished the memory of all of these victories of his friends who never got caught with their hands in the cookie jar—or holding a “smoking gun”—by the way he smiles through each of his appearances. The reader may draw his or her own conclusions about Sidney Korshak’s credibility and the role Jack Valenti played as the suffering sycophant of Lyndon Johnson and then, secondarily, to Lew Wasserman. But it is clear that his attitude about Lyndon Johnson was identical to what he expressed about Korshak and Wasserman: Since none of them was ever charged with a crime or indicted for anything, and “you’re innocent until proven guilty in this country,” they must therefore be indisputably accepted as completely honest, magnanimous, and wonderful people and given the same credibility as any other great leader who has managed to avoid a prison term.

The clarity of the dubious nature of this mix of characters, and Jack Valenti’s ambivalence toward them, could not be more striking: He believed that they were all “above the law” and therefore, whatever skeletons were in their respective closets were of no concern to him, nor should they be to anyone else.

The Zionist/Terrorist Associates of LBJ

There is a fine line between a “freedom fighter” and a “terrorist.” The distinction, and arguably the most critically decisive element, is the cowardice that is inherent to the latter: The use of women and children as shields, or the anticipation of killing numbers of innocent people to achieve a Pyrrhic victory, or merely to make a maleficent point, for example, are highest on the list of the most important considerations that determine the difference. The cause itself is another, and whether it is a “just” cause, and whether the community involved is behind that cause or deeply antagonistic toward it, are among the others. As previously noted, most of the population of the United States, if not the world, were “Zionists” with respect to the rhetorical question of establishing a state of Israel in 1948 as a means of assuaging the pain and guilt associated with the Holocaust. However, and in a similar way as any other issue, there are many gradations of commitment and empathy toward attaining the goal. Most “man in the street” people, in the United States and abroad, were simpatico with the conceptual idea of the nation of Israel, but were not necessarily prepared to support warlike actions to achieve that end.

But there were a number of people, very close to Lyndon Johnson, who were themselves closely tied to several Zionist organizations that became “terrorist” in nature and were ready to declare the war they considered necessary to attain their goals. Arthur Krim, a wealthy and well-connected Hollywood friend of Lyndon Johnson, married a woman in 1958 named Mathilde, “a striking blonde Italian 20 years younger than her husband.”⁴³⁵ Mathilde Galland had been raised as a Catholic in Italy and Switzerland and, while in Geneva as a teenager, met and married a handsome Jewish-Bulgarian young man named Davin Danon, who had been raised in Palestine and was living in exile in Geneva. Danon was described by author Jeff Gates as a having been exiled by the British for his activities

with Irgun Zvai Leumi. Irgun had begun as a Zionist freedom-fighter organization led by Menachem Begin, who would later become the Likud Party prime minister of Israel in 1977 and eventually a Nobel Peace Prize winner. After her marriage to Danon, Mathilde also worked as an Irgun operative.⁴³⁶ Mathilde had converted to Judaism at her marriage and began serving as a secret agent for the Irgun right after World War II. After that she had helped to smuggle guns from Europe to the Irgun underground. When she later married movie mogul Arthur Krim, she retained a strong interest in the Middle East. According to British author Peter Hounam, she regarded Danon as a “heroic figure,” working with both the Irgun and the Stern Gang, another Zionist freedom-fighter cum terrorist group and, through his influence, she later became a messenger and gun runner for the Irgun group.⁴³⁷ Hounam wrote that, when Lyndon Johnson met her through her new husband Arthur Krim in 1962, he became infatuated with her because of her intelligence and background with the Irgun group and, probably the most important attribute, her good looks. She was raised as Catholic but became a Zionist and Jewish by choice as she committed to helping Israel come into being and then expanding and strengthening the new nation.⁴³⁸

Throughout the 1930s and 1940s, besides the well-known Italian (Sicilian) Mafia, there also existed a Jewish Mafia (including Bugsy Siegel, Meyer Lansky, Moe Dalitz, and Mickey Cohen, among others), many of whom were then engaged in gun-smuggling to the Zionist organizations (e.g., the Stern Gang, Irgun, and Haganah). These connections to the Jewish Mafia, and the guns being acquired and delivered to the Zionists, were a significant factor in the growth of the most militant components of the Zionist movement and how those organizations morphed from “freedom fighters” to the what many considered “terrorist” groups. In 1939, the British government announced new policies on Palestine through a “White Paper,” which rejected the establishment of an independent Jewish state and future Jewish immigration to Palestine was restricted. Throughout the war years, between 1939 and 1946, an Arab-Palestinian revolt against the British governance of Palestine began to grow. In response to the British policy, illegal immigration of Jewish refugees to Palestine increased and efforts were made by the British to intercept the illegal immigrants and intern them in camps; the British restrictions on Jewish immigration remained in force until the establishment of Israel in 1948, which exacerbated the pressure for greater levels of immigration to what many considered to be the Jewish homeland.⁴³⁹ By the end of the war, with recriminations flying in all directions as the fault for the Holocaust was being dispensed, the resentment toward the restrictive British governance mounted, resulting in greater levels of terrorist attacks and random bombings and this led to more frequent attacks on British officials.

One such attack was a 1946 plan by Irgun to assassinate British Foreign Secretary Ernest Bevin, although this was not widely known until fifty years after the fact, when the *Times of London* finally reported it in 2006.⁴⁴⁰ Irgun and the Stern Gang were originally freedom fighters but along the way each acquired its element of terrorists. It was they, according to Margaret Truman’s biography of her father, who sent President Truman letter bombs in 1947. This was also not widely known at the time the assassination attempt occurred,

because the letter was intercepted and defused by the Secret Service. Either this attempt was kept secret for a time or the mainstream media of the day attempted to contain this bit of troubling news.

A few years after her work with Irgun, Mathilde divorced Danon and subsequently returned to Switzerland to study cytogenetics and cancer-causing viruses at the University of Geneva, receiving a PhD and eventually becoming a research scientist devoted to the study of AIDS, which eventually led to her receiving the Presidential Medal of Freedom in 2000 from President Clinton. She had married Arthur Krim in 1958 but Krim was evidently not jealous of his wife's closeness to Johnson since Mathilde spent so much time as Johnson's guest at the LBJ Ranch that the Krims eventually had a vacation house built near the ranch. As president, Lyndon would often have his pilots fly him to "Mathilde's house" in his helicopter for a visit.⁴⁴¹

Completing the Circle: Johnson's Long History of Indenture to Zionists

The point of this journey "deep into the weeds" of Lyndon Johnson's ancestry, and his close associations with and affinity for wealthy Jewish people since the early 1930s, is that by the time he took his position as the newly "elected" Senator Lyndon Johnson, in January 1949, he had already become very close to a number of people who were dedicated, zealously strident, militant Zionists. Some of these people had connections with Irgun, the same organization behind the documented assassination attempt of Ernest Bevin. Both Bevin and his US counterpart, Defense Secretary James Forrestal, were among their country's most powerful and influential men and thus became targeted due to their positions against the formation of Israel. In both cases, it had nothing to do with anti-Semitism and everything to do with the possible future implications of creating a new nation-state intended for settlement by Jews throughout the world into the middle of what had previously been a multi cultural territory considered as sacred by four different major religious sects. It is now clear, in retrospect, that they were quite prescient in their views, given that what they had feared would be the inevitable result has essentially occurred.

Because the terrorist elements had attempted to murder Earnest Bevin in 1946, they must also be placed high on the suspect list for the systematic harassment, and consequent death, in 1949 of James Forrestal. Lyndon Johnson, due to his many associations with the most ardent Zionists, was undoubtedly placed high on Irgun's list of congressmen who might be helpful to them in plotting the removal of James Forrestal. Johnson's associations with ardent Zionists would grow stronger, and deeper, throughout the next two decades, leading finally to some of Lyndon Johnson's greatest cowardly and criminal acts, which will be explored in detail shortly.

A Quick Look at Twentieth Century International Developments and Lyndon Johnson's Role in Them

Out of the ashes of World War II, the Marshall Plan, named for Secretary of State George Marshall, was developed to aid European countries devastated by war to rebuild. Meanwhile, the newly created United Nations provided Israel's main founder and first prime minister, David Ben-Gurion, with support for his efforts to create a nation in the

very heart of what was once known as the Ottoman Empire, a huge territory based in Turkey, but extending as far north as the Balkans and south into Africa and Sudan. In the middle of that empire, within the heart of what would become the new nation of Israel, was the “Old City” of Jerusalem, within which (despite its small size, roughly one-third of a square mile), four distinct “Quarters” exist: Armenian, Christian, Jewish, and Muslim.

A very brief and cursory review of the history of the area now known as Israel will help to provide context to what later occurred, when Lyndon Johnson tried to leave his imprint on this ancient civilization. Johnson had been drawn instinctively into the current political causes shared by Jewish people, but, as were all of his core interests, the focus was always on himself, and how he could leverage whatever value he could squeeze from them—no differently than he would with any other group—for the singular purpose of strengthening his own power and influence with the highest leaders of that group. It was through his extensive associations and courtship of some of the most aggressively pro-Zionist Jewish leaders in the United States that he came to be one of their most ardent supporters.

The city of Jerusalem was settled four thousand years before the birth of Jesus Christ and has been destroyed twice, attacked and captured, then recaptured, dozens of times. The walls around the old city were built in 1538 under Suleiman the Magnificent and contain many of the most important religious sites in the world, including the Temple Mount, the Western Wall, the Church of the Holy Sepulchre, the Dome of the Rock, and al-Aqsa Mosque. In 1948, West Jerusalem was captured by Israel while East Jerusalem, including the Old City, was claimed by Jordan, until the 1967 Six-Day War, at which time Israel captured and subsequently annexed it, along with other territories. While Israel considers Jerusalem its “undivided capital,” other countries consider East Jerusalem as Palestinian territory that is occupied by the Israeli military.

The result of this conundrum is that Israel implicitly considers its capital as Jerusalem, where all branches of its government are located, while most of the rest of the world believes it to be Tel Aviv. That dilemma illustrates as much as anything else the dissatisfaction of both sides to the existing status quo. The president of the United States during the Six-Day War referenced above was none other than Lyndon B. Johnson; his central role in that particular clash of civilizations will be explored next, for his imprint on the “cradle of civilization” was extremely great and probably permanent. As a consequence, Jewish people have generally been among his strongest supporters, just as African-American people have been, because of their perception that Johnson was a benefactor to them. Both of these pillars of “conventional wisdom” will be scrutinized, and found hollow, in the pages to follow. This review is not meant to suggest that all the ensuing problems related to Israel were Johnson’s fault, however, the chasm that now exists within the “international community” can be traced, in part, to his unqualified support of Israel throughout his career, culminating in Israel’s annexation of East Jerusalem in the aftermath of that war, despite their denials of having intentionally planned that beforehand.

There are many degrees of separation between philosophically simpatico Zionists who worked toward their goal on the diplomatic front lines and the most zealous, strident, and

militant Zionists who fought in the streets trying to achieve the same goal. The same distinction can be made between freedom fighters and terrorists of any stripe. But it is generally acknowledged that the labor Zionists were represented to a much greater degree in the latter (the more militant, “terrorist”) end of the scales. Indeed, to this day, there is great tension between those on both ends of the gamut, to the extent that a number of recent books have been published about how the labor Zionists made deals with the Nazis to save certain “elites” or family members, at the expense of others who were much less fortunate. Two of the more prominent books on this subject are Edwin Black’s 2009 *The Transfer Agreement: The Dramatic Story of the Pact Between the Third Reich and Jewish Palestine* and Ben Hecht’s 1997 book *Perfidy*.

Zionism is by definition at the heart of the formation and subsequent expansion of Israel. It should be noted that the most religious Jewish sects already in Palestine were not Zionists at all and were content, or at least acquiesced, with the status quo; moreover, Zionists are also well represented in the Christian faith and by non secular people, which is to say that many Zionists are not Jewish. We need only touch this subject on the periphery here as it is not the focus of this book, and everything else about the subject will purposefully be left to each reader’s discretion to research further. In the most simplistic terms, however, Zionism was and is about the desire of Jews whose ancestors had been dispersed throughout the world in the Diaspora, dating from the Babylonian exile period, to return to their ancestral homeland. The basis of their claim was that, had their ancestors not been driven out of their homeland, where they were self-ruled by their own monarchy, the question would have been moot. For them, the new nation-state was a means to install their own democratic government. The land had continued to exist, of course, and a Jewish presence continued to exist within that land. The only thing missing, for thousands of years, was Jewish sovereignty, whether religious or racially based. While a gradual movement toward the formation of a Jewish state within Palestine had its origins centuries ago, it was the overt persecution of German Jews by the Nazis, ironically, that brought about the formation of Israel within a decade after the start of the most brutal and deadly assaults on their Jewish population and those same populations in the countries (e.g., Poland and Austria) that the Third Reich had set out to conquer.

The idea for a modern state of Israel grew in the early twentieth century on the basis of the Torah (or the Christian equivalent, the Old Testament), which was interpreted as saying that God granted that geographic area to the descendants of Abraham, and that Moses led the Jews to conquer it several thousand years ago. For many centuries it had been a Jewish kingdom. Since it originally belonged to them, it was argued that the land was therefore subsequently “stolen” from them by the Romans first and then absorbed into the Ottoman Empire. The Diaspora of the second century AD, according to conventional wisdom, caused the Jewish population to be forcibly dispersed throughout the Western world due to persecution tracing back to the Roman Empire, thus originating in part due to actions of the Catholic Church. This devolved ultimately to further isolation and segregated populations and a vicious cycle of persecution. In the first two decades of the twentieth century, the American Jewish Committee was formed to represent its membership in world councils; they had successfully combated hotels and restaurants that

discriminated against Jews.

A delegation of that group attended the Versailles Peace Conference after World War I, but they split off from other Jewish groups when, in the Committee's view, proposals for Jewish rights went "too far" when the conference redefined the boundaries based on ethnic identities, leading to the creation of a Jewish homeland within Palestine.⁴⁴² While the American Jewish Committee leaders were repulsed by Zionism (because it might precipitate anti-Semitic regimes to tell their Jewish populations that they should go to Palestine to find their home), the pro-Zionist American Jewish Congress leaders felt victorious as they returned from Versailles, having created a Jewish homeland and solidified its position with popular Jewish support.⁴⁴³

By 1933, the earliest of the "new" Jewish settlers had come to Palestine with little money or other possessions and began settling in areas previously neglected by the Palestinians in a land that was part desert and part swampy wasteland; soon thereafter, it transformed into productive agricultural land. But as promising as their developments were, the Jewish parts of Palestine—according to Edwin Black's *The Transfer Agreement: The Dramatic Story of the Pact Between the Third Reich and Jewish Palestine*—were mostly "unconnected enclaves" comprised of "nearly 200,000 Jews living in Palestine [which was] only 19 percent of the population. If the enclaves were to grow into an actual homeland and fulfill the promise of God, Abraham, and Balfour, the orange groves would have to prosper. For that, more hands and more lands were needed."⁴⁴⁴

The British rule over Palestine became more and more restrictive during the 1930s, in response to greater numbers of European immigrants (refugees from Nazism). Quotas were applied to the poorest of them; exceptions were allowed for settlers having proof of a significant level of wealth. The strategy was to limit not only the number of new Jewish arrivals but to stagnate the economy of Palestine, eliminating the incentives for anyone to move there. On March 19, 1933, the German consulates in Jerusalem and Jaffa unfurled swastika flags, which, as expected, infuriated many Tel Aviv Jews who prepared to storm the consulates and burn the German flag. Many Zionist leaders feared the certain repercussions to their own family members in Germany, and their ability to raise funds there, if such potentially violent protests occurred. Eventually, a protest initiated by the Jewish War Veterans group, to boycott German products, did begin to catch on not only in America but in Poland as well, where the Jews of Vilna came up with the same idea.⁴⁴⁵ On March 23, 1933, the *New York Times* captured the growing movement in its headline "Protest on Hitler Growing in Nation. Christian and Non-Sectarian Groups Voice Indignation Over Anti-Jewish Drive. Urge Washington to Act."⁴⁴⁶ The boycott was successful in attracting the attention of people from around the United States despite the uncertainty about its potential effectiveness at the time—whether an economic boycott would influence the Third Reich, or even topple the regime or force changes in their policy toward Jews in Germany.⁴⁴⁷

Indeed, the prospect of such an economic boycott, just as Germany was trying to recover from one of the worst cases of hyper inflation and economic depression in

recorded history—as a result of having printed money so fast that they only bothered to put ink on one side of the paper, coming from a 1:9 exchange rate with the US dollar in 1919 to utter destruction of the currency five years later—was very concerning to Adolph Hitler and his fellow Nazis.

As appalling as it is in retrospect, the German leaders then shortly reached an agreement with leaders of the labor Zionist movement for a trade involving 60,000 Jews and \$100 million (nearly \$2 billion today) for the creation of a Jewish Palestine, in exchange for their putting a stop to the boycott. In one of the great ironies of history, the “Transfer Agreement” saved some lives while it acquiesced to the sacrifice of many others and rescued certain assets while consigning more to the fascist captors and allocated the proceeds to the funding of the new Jewish State.⁴⁴⁸ Yet many argue that the leftist/labor Zionist leaders who reached this “deal with the devil” were the real terrorists, and that this “deal” empowered their deadliest enemy to do far more destructive damage—physically, economically, and morally—than those conducting the work of “freedom fighters” ten to fifteen years later (some of whom were called “terrorists” though the distinctions become blurred).

Despite the 60,000 lives that were said to be saved due to this “agreement,” those same leaders vigorously fought attempts to increase the number of Jews who tried to find a way out of Germany and Poland. One excerpt of many on this subject, from an article (cited later) by Barry Chamish, referencing a book by David Morrison, *Lies—The Rabin Assassination and Israel’s Secret Service*, illustrates this point: “In the wake of Kristallnacht, New York Senator Wagner introduced legislation to allow 20,000 German Jewish children into the United States. Stephen Wise (a leader of the Labor Zionists) testified before the legislation committee: ‘If there is any conflict between our duty to those children and our duty to our country, our country comes first; and if children cannot be helped, they cannot be helped.’ ... The legislation, without support from the Jewish leadership, got nowhere.” Chamish further cited Morrison’s observation that, “If the children were not destined from Germany to Palestine, they were not destined to live. The same thing happened when choosing the Polish Jews fit to live.”⁴⁴⁹

In the wake of World War II—as the mushroom clouds over Hiroshima and Nagasaki dissipated and dispersed into the atmosphere and spread around the world, undoubtedly causing incalculable health damages to the entire human population—the calamitous physical wreckage of Europe and the psychic damage wrought to world wide humanity by the loss of millions of human lives became the new reality. The world’s population began demanding redress for this damage from their respective leaders. Pressure from people around the world to create a Jewish nation escalated after the war, reaching its highest intensity in July 1946 when Jewish men dressed as Arabs bombed the King David Hotel in Jerusalem, killing ninety-one people, 25 percent of whom were British officials headquartered there.

By then, many of those having started out as “freedom fighters” had crossed over the line and were using terrorism to accomplish their goal. A Rabbi named Henry Siegman—the ex-director of the American Jewish Congress, who recently referenced the Israeli

historian Benny Morris's book *Righteous Victims*—has stated that even David Ben-Gurion crossed that line, condoning the killing of innocents in order to increase the intensity of battle.

The movement for a more effective world wide organization to replace the failed League of Nations matured simultaneously with the need to address the “Jewish” problem that had been brought to the surface by the rise of Nazism in Germany. The “ripple effect” that followed caused many fundamental cultural shifts, which played out in the following decades, continuing even now. The reactions of people split two ways: Some attempted to press their leaders to pursue more peaceful rapprochement with old enemies through “World Federalist” type organizations. Their opposites, centered around their nationalistic world view, wanted to take more forceful actions to ensure that their own nations would remain the most well-armed, militarily powerful of all nations, capable of defeating any enemy, or multiple enemies at once. Many Americans in the “far right” end of the spectrum of this group found fraternal rapport with such organizations as the John Birch Society and other militant organizations, such as the Minutemen, which were even more reactionary and aggressive. These organizations at the more extreme left and right ends of the political gamut attracted only the most zealous adherents; most people took positions on the many points of the spectrum in between the two poles and generally divided along party lines: Democrats to the left and Republicans to the right, although independents, libertarians and mavericks of all stripes aligned themselves on one side or the other.

For some issues, party affiliation is not a reliable predictor of an individual's proclivities. For example, in 1948 and since, the creation and continued support of the nation-state of Israel is arguably such a paradigm: The supporters and the skeptics are both generally constituted equally of liberals and conservatives, Democrats and Republicans. If the premise is accurate, it suggests that the concept of Zionism is apolitical in nature and therefore determined by other aspects of one's hierarchy of values. The problem that many people in the 1940s had with the idea of the nation-state of Israel was based on the fact that, by then, many of the affected individuals or groups were united only by religion, not so much a common heritage. Moreover, many of its adherents by then were “converts” having no immediate historical connection to the land in question; therefore, many feared that taking land away from the Palestinians to “give it” to Jews immigrating mostly from Europe would cause untold cultural disruptions far into the future. Nevertheless, the momentum picked up quickly throughout the world and, in 1948, the United Nations was born; almost simultaneously, the nation-state of Israel became a reality.

Senator Lyndon Johnson's Favor to his Zionist Friends

Concurrently with those global developments, Congressman Lyndon Johnson was plotting to become a member of the US Senate, and trying to gain as much power as he could, vicariously through other powerful people. It was not surprising therefore that he was also naturally given to a “knee-jerk” support of the creation of the state of Israel. It was not an uncommon sentiment in those post-WW II years, with all the monstrous stories pouring out of the smoldering ashes of Germany; most of the world favored some kind of a fairer “permanent” solution to the lack of an official homeland nation for Jewish people. Over

the years, that support would wane in much of the world even as it grew in others, in cadence with the ever changing barometer of world opinion about which of three major global religions—all claiming ownership of certain parts of that geographic area—should be allowed to occupy what they individually and independently acknowledge to be a special holy place and “the cradle of civilization.”

The story to follow, of Lyndon Johnson’s involvement on behalf of the most zealous of the Zionists as he sought to weaken President Eisenhower’s power to keep Israel from profiting from its actions during the Suez Canal conflict, is yet another incident that won’t be found within the pages of the bestselling LBJ biographies.

***“Democrats Urge President: Fight Israel Sanctions,” “Johnson Leads Action”
(Headline: The New York Times, February 20, 1957)***

In the same edition of the *New York Times*, President Eisenhower is pictured, scowling, as he returned from his interrupted vacation in Georgia. He had to cancel his golfing vacation at Augusta, in the wake of the 1957 Suez crisis, when David Ben-Gurion refused to withdraw Israel’s military troops from the Gaza Strip and the Gulf of Aqaba, defying a UN resolution that had Eisenhower’s support. Eisenhower was prepared to use the threat of economic sanctions against Israel to force it to relinquish control over the lands it occupied as a result of that conflict. Now he was visibly angry at having to cancel his winter golfing vacation at the Augusta National Golf Club, home of the Masters Golf Tournament, in order to respond to the action taken by the majority leader of the Senate to subvert the president in order to have his own turn at controlling US foreign policy. His anger was surely focused on actions taken by the “Master of the Senate,” Lyndon B. Johnson, which had forced him to give up his golfing vacation and return to Washington.

Senator Johnson had written a letter to Secretary of State John Foster Dulles objecting to the imposition of sanctions against Israel and had the letter printed by the *New York Times*. Throughout his political career, Johnson had nurtured his connections to the wealthy New Yorkers who generously supported usually liberal Democratic causes. Those connections were not necessarily always Jewish, or even always Democratic. As Robert Dallek noted, astonishingly, Johnson chose Republican Governor Nelson Rockefeller as his first choice to replace himself, over his own, previous vice president, Hubert Humphrey.⁴⁵⁰ Author Dallek did not provide much of an explanation for that stunning news, however, it clearly reflected the common interests of the two. When Rockefeller failed to obtain the Republican nomination in 1968, Johnson eventually abandoned his own vice president in the latter days of the campaign, when he switched his support to the Republican candidate, Richard M. Nixon, clearly someone who he knew would help to protect his secrets if he should find the hidden truths in the vaults at Langley. Indeed, that very attempt by Nixon when he became president was what brought the wrath of the CIA’s new director, Richard Helms, who eventually decided that Nixon was much too determined to find that elusive truth, and for that, he would have to be sacrificed in an orchestrated, choreographed, and directed action collectively called “Watergate.” But it had to wait until Nixon beat George McGovern and delayed again until Spiro Agnew was forced to “retire” to make room for his replacement, Gerald Ford. Helms knew that he

could trust Ford to keep the family secrets, since he had a stake in them, so after much repositioning, he became the first unelected president as his reward for services rendered.

In addition to the enormous fortune he had inherited and would control throughout his life, Nelson Rockefeller had acquired wide-ranging experience in intelligence operations, including covert actions during World War II, as an assistant secretary of state before becoming a special assistant to President Eisenhower, specializing in cold war strategies and psychological warfare. He eventually headed the special group formed within the National Security Council charged with the oversight of CIA covert activities, including the protection of the highest-level secrets from their deepest vaults—the ones that were later referred to as the “family jewels,” some of which were eventually revealed in 1975 by CIA director William Colby.⁴⁵¹

Another reason for Lyndon Johnson’s closeness to Nelson Rockefeller was related to their mutual ties to many of the men who became instrumental in conducting the assassination cover-up: Allen Dulles and John J. McCloy, both having deep ties to the CIA, are the two best examples. Johnson’s preference for a Republican successor was actually a quite logical conclusion in the context of ensuring that the cloak of secrecy created by the Warren Commission would be extended for at least four to eight more years. He knew that the alternative, if Bobby had won the election, would render the opposite result and that would inevitably mean a prison term for himself. All of that was, of course, before Bobby finally threw his hat into the ring to run for the presidency, a very short campaign due to his inevitable assassination, a subject to be deferred to a later chapter.

Johnson’s position throughout the 1950s as the Senate majority leader, the highest ranked Democrat in the country, and the man running the congressional fund-raising operation, put him in direct, sometimes daily routine contact with all the top money men, including his Hollywood supporters and the New York bankers, such as Nelson Rockefeller. Just as it is obvious that Johnson was a long-term member of Rockefeller’s circle, it is equally true that John F. Kennedy was *not* part of that group. According to Arthur M. Schlesinger Jr., Kennedy was not closely involved with the people in charge of the financial capital of the world in New York; he named the primary leaders—Henry Stimson, Elihu Root, Robert Lovett, and John J. McCloy—and the primary organizations through which they operated, including the Rockefeller, Ford, and Carnegie foundations, the Council on Foreign Relations (CFR), and the *New York Times* as being the key components of that community.⁴⁵²

These are the very organizations that were represented on the Warren Commission by John J. McCloy, Allen Dulles, and Gerald Ford. Clearly, each of these organizations has been instrumental in keeping the secrets of its forebears, the members anxious to pledge their loyalty to the big lie. The unwritten and unspoken, but implicitly understood, dictum communicated mostly through body language, condescending looks, and “need to know” secrecy protocols is that the generally accepted official myths of three of the greatest assassinations in American history must be protected. Just as they were inherited from the previous generation, and it from the one before, the secrets would be passed to future generations with the same expectation: The future occupants of those offices would have

to be properly indoctrinated in all the ways necessary to ensure that result.

Of all of those entities, it is the Council on Foreign Relations that, to this day, has protected the secrets of the assassination through its actions and words; virtually all of its most senior members, then and now, refuse to accept the truths of JFK's assassination, while steadfastly continuing its endorsement of an "official story" whose credibility has been incrementally demolished throughout the last half century. As if that weren't enough, people who dare engage in the research of the event are generally subjected to ridicule and derision, the ubiquitous chorus of what is now referred to as the "mainstream media" (MSM) serving as their faithful extension, just as they had originally been trained to do, in Operation Mockingbird, by Richard Bissell, Allen Dulles, and Cord Meyer.

The Israeli Lobby, circa 1960–63 vs. 1964–68

Abe Fortas had known Israeli Ambassador Avraham Harman since 1959, when Harman became the new ambassador to the United States. A few months later, in March 1960, Fortas hosted a breakfast meeting at his home for Israeli Prime Minister David Ben-Gurion. Senate Majority Leader Lyndon Johnson was one of the featured guests at that meeting.

One of the biggest objectives of Ben-Gurion and the other Israeli leaders during that period was their desire to obtain nuclear weapons to give them an overwhelming tactical advantage over their Arab neighbors, and this was undoubtedly a subject of discussion at this and other meetings. John F. Kennedy was adamantly opposed to this, fearing that it would create such an imbalance in weaponry that the Arab nations would be forced to align themselves with the Soviet Union in order to defend themselves, and eventually to acquire their own nuclear weapons to correct this imbalance. Clearly JFK's prescience in this regard has now become the reality that the world is still coping with fifty years later. The "accidental president," Lyndon B. Johnson, is credited with reversing that policy and facilitating the development of the very program that Kennedy had struggled to contain.

Jewish Democrats in 1960, particularly in New York, did not completely trust Kennedy, as author Richard Reeves noted, "the son of a man who had been accused of being both anti-Semitic and pro-Nazi. Nor did John Kennedy, comfortably surrounded by Jewish staff members, trust all Jews, particularly New Yorkers."⁴⁵³ In his book *President Kennedy, Profile of Power*, Reeves quoted Kennedy, explaining an incident that confirms this point, to a friend: "I had the damnedest meeting in New York last night,' he had said to his friend Charlie Bartlett one day in the early fall of 1960. 'I went to this party. It was given by a group of people who were big money contributors and also Zionists and they said to me, 'We know that your campaign is in terrible financial shape!' ... The deal they offered me was that they would finance the rest of this campaign if I would agree to let them run the Middle Eastern policy of the United States for the next four years.'"⁴⁵⁴

Kennedy did not accede to this request; in fact, he battled with Israeli officials over giving them access to nuclear weapons or assistance in their development of a secret nuclear weapons production facility, opened in 1962 at Dimona in the Negev desert, and their requests for the best available fighter jets for their air force, the US-built F-4 Phantom

jets. On July 5, 1963, President Kennedy wrote to Israeli Prime Minister Levi Eshkol, clearly setting forth the conditions, specifically that the facility would not be used for the purpose of developing nuclear weapons, and the need for “periodic visits” (i.e., “inspections”) he wanted to be understood:

Dear Mr. Prime Minister (Eshkol),

It gives me great personal pleasure to extend congratulations as you assume your responsibilities as Prime Minister of Israel. You have our friendship and best wishes in your new tasks. It is on one of these that I am writing you at this time.

You are aware, I am sure, of the exchange which I had with Prime Minister Ben-Gurion concerning American visits to Israel’s nuclear facility at Dimona. Most recently, the Prime Minister wrote to me on May 27. His words reflected a most intense personal consideration of a problem that I know is not easy for your Government, as it is not for mine. We welcomed the former Prime Minister’s strong reaffirmation that Dimona will be devoted exclusively to peaceful purposes and the reaffirmation also of Israel’s willingness to permit periodic visits to Dimona.

I regret having to add to your burdens so soon after your assumption of office, but I feel the crucial importance of this problem necessitates my taking up with you at this early date certain further considerations, arising out of Mr. Ben-Gurion’s May 27 letter, as to the nature and scheduling of such visits.

I am sure you will agree that these visits should be as nearly as possible in accord with international standards, thereby resolving all doubts as to the peaceful intent of the Dimona project. As I wrote Mr. Ben-Gurion, this Government’s commitment to and support of Israel could be seriously jeopardized if it should be thought that we were unable to obtain reliable information on a subject as vital to the peace as the question of Israel’s effort in the nuclear field.

Therefore, I asked our scientists to review the alternative schedules of visits we and you had proposed. If Israel’s purposes are to be clear beyond reasonable doubt, I believe that the schedule which would best serve our common purposes would be a visit early this summer, another visit in June 1964, and thereafter at intervals of six months. I am sure that such a schedule should not cause you any more difficulty than that which Mr. Ben-Gurion proposed in his May 27 letter. It would be essential, and I understand that Mr. Ben-Gurion’s letter was in accord with this, that our scientist have access to all areas of the Dimona site and to any related part of the complex, such as fuel fabrication facilities or plutonium separation plant, and that sufficient time to be allotted for a thorough examination.

Knowing that you fully appreciate the truly vital significance of this matter to the future well-being of Israel, to the United States, and internationally, I am sure our carefully considered request will have your most sympathetic attention.

Sincerely,

John F. Kennedy

Michael Collins Piper, in his controversial 1995 book, *Final Judgment* made the case that the Mossad, through its direct connections to James Angleton and its indirect other connections to the CIA front international corporation known as Permindex—with its direct ties to Clay Shaw, who had been indicted for his role in “handling” Lee Harvey Oswald in New Orleans—was “involved” in the JFK assassination. Although Piper has been accused of having an anti-Semitic bias, he denies that. It must be observed that the charge itself “stirs the pot” sufficiently to invoke that very kind of response, which is precisely the same one noted in the epigraph of this chapter by Paul Krugman.

There is no question that Kennedy took a hard line against Israel’s procurement of nuclear weapons while Lyndon Johnson reversed that to the point of giving in to their every demand, as we will examine shortly. For the record, I find that Piper’s charge is not of equal credence with the assertions of complicity by the other named parties in this and my previous book. Even if the Mossad played a significant role in the assassination, it was inexorably tied to its undeniably close connection to James J. Angleton, “Israel’s best friend” as noted elsewhere, and his involvement would have been inherently dependent upon the existence of the “driving force,” for which the chief driver and the only man who had the power to bring all the other disparate forces together, as demonstrated in *LBJ: The Mastermind of the JFK Assassination*, was Lyndon B. Johnson.

According to Seymour Hersh, in his book *The Samson Option*, Israel’s underground nuclear facility in Dimona, begun in 1957, was financed in secret to keep it out of any national budget, through a “Committee of Thirty” run by then-Director of Defense Shimon Peres and backed by David Ben-Gurion, which quietly raised money from wealthy Jews around the world, notably Baron Edmund de Rothschild of Paris and Abraham Feinberg of New York.⁴⁵⁵ The Eisenhower administration was aware of the huge complex being built in the Negev desert by 1958 because of photographs made available from U-2 overflights, however Peres and Ben-Gurion stated that the facility was merely a twenty-four megawatt reactor “dedicated entirely to peaceful purposes.”⁴⁵⁶ The Israeli’s deceit as to the real purpose of the Dimona project, after stalling for years on allowing inspections, finally extended to allowing for inspections by the International Atomic Energy Agency (IAEA), however they prohibited inspection of the reactor core “for safety reasons.” Moreover, the agreement to allow a limited inspection was, as Abe Feinberg finally admitted, “a scam job” using a false control room, with phony instruments.⁴⁵⁷

Having failed to enlist JFK in their plans to continue development of a nuclear capability, Lyndon Johnson would begin relaxing those restrictions as soon as he became president, eventually allowing Israel to acquire the fifty nuclear-capable F-4 Phantom jets with no contingency requiring their compliance with the Nuclear Non-Proliferation Treaty then being negotiated by the United States, Great Britain, and the Soviet Union.⁴⁵⁸ This effectively gave Israel carte-blanc authority to proceed with producing nuclear weapons through an automatic waiver from having to participate in the treaty, and the F-4 Phantom jets would complete their delivery system to targets of their choice.

Lyndon Johnson and his advisers—feckless in their requests to Israel to allow

unconditional inspections by the International Atomic Energy Agency (IAEA) and seemingly unconcerned with that being a firm goal—operated, as detailed in *The Samson Option*, “in self-inflicted darkness when it came to Dimona: they were convinced that Israel had the technical skill to build a bomb and install it on a warhead, but no one seemed to know whether Israel seriously intended to do so or not. It was as if the White House believed there really were two atoms, one of which was peaceful.”⁴⁵⁹

Within four years of its opening, and two years after Johnson became president, the facility in Dimona began the production of plutonium, and by 1967 it had produced the first two nuclear bombs. These would provide them a much more powerful hand in the conduct of the Six-Day War that year.⁴⁶⁰ In early 1968, it began full-scale production and began producing four or five warheads per year; by September, 1973, the time of the Yom Kippur War, they had over twenty-five bombs available for use.⁴⁶¹

In the aftermath of the Six-Day War, the position of the United States had started out to be supposedly premised on the presumption that Israel would include a return of the Palestinian territories “won” during the war. It had included a withholding of authorization of the sale of the fifty F-4 jets and their development of nuclear weaponry; negotiations depended on Israel’s allowing IAEA inspections and their acceptance of the Nuclear Non-Proliferation Treaty (NPT). Soon thereafter, however, Lyndon Johnson unilaterally gave up on getting any concessions from Israel, folding his hand on all of it at the insistence of his key financial “bagman,” Abraham Feinberg.

Abe Feinberg—a New York banker and, along with Arthur Krim and Lew Wasserman of Hollywood, the first Jews to become prominent fund-raisers in Democratic presidential campaigns—had been enrolled personally by Lyndon Johnson’s persuasion.⁴⁶² After Feinberg reminded Walter Rostow and Clark Clifford that Johnson—already a “lame duck” president following his decision to not run for reelection, and even more so after the November election—in 1968 had agreed to the F-4 sale and left the details to be worked out later. Feinberg then pressed him further, to drop all the conditions. Harry H. Schwartz, an aide to Paul Warnke, the assistant secretary of defense for international security affairs, described Johnson’s response: “Clifford called Johnson and LBJ said, ‘Sell them anything they want.’ [Clifford responded] ‘Mr. President, I don’t want to live in a world where the Israelis have nuclear weapons.’ [Johnson then said] ‘*Don’t bother me with this anymore.*’ *And he hangs up.*”⁴⁶³ [Emphasis added.]

It is not clear what the clinical condition of Lyndon Johnson’s state of mind was on that particular day. But it appears in retrospect he simply tired of having to deal with this messy detail and wanted it to go away, evidently due to other pressing concerns related to the high-level secrecy protocols he had already placed on the military hierarchy. It could also have been related to a massive cover-up of treasons he had committed that exposed him to the potential for Israeli blackmail to be explored in Chapters 8 and 9 of this book. It was a matter that gave the Israelis the upper hand in their relationship with the United States on June 8, 1967, which extends to this day, and probably will “forevermore.”

Johnson’s sixth sense—an intrinsic and essential skill he was gifted with, honed, and

perfected by the time he left college in San Marcos—was in seeking out men with power who were willing to “horse-trade” for whatever Johnson could offer in return. He had found many very powerful men along the way through the application of this skill wherever he went after leaving San Marcos, but especially in the halls of Congress, the movie sets of Hollywood, and banks headquartered in New York City. In many cases, these powerful men were Jewish and Johnson’s experience with fellow Texans Wirtz and Morris D. Jaffe helped in his dealings with them. Moreover, he was no stranger to the boardrooms of New York, run in many cases by wealthy and influential Jewish men.

Another of the men Johnson would become very close to was Arthur Krim, a Hollywood movie executive whom he appointed as the finance chairman for the Democratic National Committee.⁴⁶⁴ Johnson even offered Krim the posts of US ambassador to France and US ambassador to the United Nations. In his oral history, Krim stated:

[Since] a lot of people knew that I was able to see [Johnson] one-on-one, I had to carry a lot of messages to him and also get things done. I must say that of the group that came into the money aspect of politics through me, the things they wanted the president to do almost without exception had nothing to do with them or their business. It had to do with broader issues of importance, in their view, to the country, but not small, petty things. It’d have to do with health legislation, with Israel, with tax legislation. For instance ... Abe Feinberg [would be giving me messages] on what to do about Israel.⁴⁶⁵

Mr. Krim was being unusually candid in this admission, which leads one to conclude that Johnson was being given advice on Israel from the very people who were intent on doing everything under their power to grow and strengthen that nation, and they knew that their closeness to Lyndon Johnson would allow them to dictate “foreign policy” decisions related to that nation. Whether this dynamic was the “cause” or the “effect” of what transpired in the early part of 1967, culminating in the Six-Day War, will be the subject of debate for years to come. It is conceivable that the tragic treasons committed—for the very purpose of expanding and protecting Israel’s borders—grew from the germ of an idea planted by this very group. But just as likely, the cause was the intrinsic tie to Lyndon Johnson’s unbridled mania and his eagerness to put his own neck on the line to prove his “loyalty” to this group, always aware of the financial resources available to him for tapping if and when it might become necessary. Considering his psychological state of mind, as described by his own aides, it would seem that the latter of these postulations was the more correct one. The third possibility, of course, was that the origin was equally split and sprung synergistically from Johnson’s adoption of the counsel of Abe Fortas and all of his friends and political connections.

During Johnson’s presidency, the Business Council was the most prominent and influential lobbying group of businessmen. Ralph Lazarus was the vice chairman of the council and Lyndon Johnson had long ago targeted him for the deluxe form of the “Johnson Treatment.” One of the special prizes he gave out in 1965—which benefited not only Abe Fortas but Ralph Lazarus, one of Fortas’s most valued clients for decades—came

when Johnson made Fortas a Supreme Court justice. In probably the most unique relationship a Supreme Court justice ever had with a president, they continued working together so closely that Fortas assisted Johnson in whatever way he could and was performing practically simultaneously as his personal aide and attorney.⁴⁶⁶

It was during this period that Lazarus came to believe the Johnson administration had underestimated the federal deficit by \$5 billion and was prepared to make public statements to that effect. Fortas immediately called Lazarus, who was attending an alumni meeting at Dartmouth College, to appeal to him not to make this estimate public because it “would do great harm to the country.” When Lazarus declined that request, according to Fortas’s biographer, Laura Kalman, in her book *Abe Fortas: A Biography*: “Fortas then resorted to pettifoggery ... reasoning that the prognosis would carry less weight if the public perceived it as Lazarus’s conclusion rather than as a statement of fact by a public official... . Fortas seemingly would do anything for Lyndon Johnson.”⁴⁶⁷ Indeed, Lazarus took the Fortas bait and did take the position of it being a matter of his personal opinion rather than that of an official, but it left a “bad taste” in his mouth.⁴⁶⁸ During this same period, Fortas had become friends with Louis Finkelstein, the chancellor of the Jewish Theological Seminary, who, he explained to Johnson, was “the nearest thing to Jesus in the United States.”⁴⁶⁹ That knowledge would undoubtedly prove very useful to Johnson in his thinking, and his plotting further actions to strengthen the bond between the United States and Israel in the early summer of 1967.

Grace Halsell worked in the White House as a speechwriter in 1967 and explained how Johnson had surrounded himself with advisers who were uniformly pro-Israel; none were proffering advice to him from the perspective of its Arab neighbors.⁴⁷⁰

There were Walt Rostow at the White House, his brother Eugene at State, and Arthur Goldberg, ambassador to the United Nations. Other pro-Israel advisers included Abe Fortas, associate justice of the Supreme Court; Democratic Party fundraiser Abraham Feinberg; White House counsels Leo White and Jake Jacobsen; White House writers Richard Goodwin and Ben Wattenberg; domestic affairs aide Larry Levinson; and John P. Roche, known as Johnson’s intellectual-in-residence and an avid supporter of Israel.

The mind-set of his Jewish friends and financial backers was one of Johnson’s biggest concerns; it had become his most important constituency, one that provided up to 65 percent of the campaign fund-raising receipts and was succinctly described by author J. J. Goldberg in his book *Jewish Power: Inside the American Jewish Establishment*. According to him, in 1967 the Zionists had become the leaders of the American Jewish community, what he referred to as the “New Jews: Their defiance was so strident, and their anger so intense, that the rest of the Jewish community respectfully stood back and let the New Jews take the lead. The minority was permitted to speak for the mass and become the dominant voice of Jewish politics.”⁴⁷¹ With it, a new set of values, of loyalty to Jewish people and hostility to enemies, replaced the older values of equality and social justice.⁴⁷²

To help launch this “new set of values,” Johnson assigned his longtime aide Harry McPherson a specific objective, directed to the maintenance of a close connection to this constituency. Clearly, Johnson had come to resent Jews who did not give his policies 100 percent support, and much of that feeling was caused by his notion that the protestors of his Vietnam policies were led by young Jewish men and women. Interviewed by T. H. Baker for an oral history paper in the LBJ Library, McPherson further discussed his own role as a “conduit” to the Jewish community who was charged with assuring them access to a voice who could speak directly into the president’s ear on any and all matters that might be of concern to them:⁴⁷³ “The President could never understand why there were so many Jews who were anti-Viet Nam, and he would say—you know, to him this was a small country fighting aggression.”

Author J. J. Goldberg, in his previously noted book *Jewish Power: Inside the American Jewish Establishment*, acknowledged Johnson’s concern about the war protestors across the street in Lafayette Park, many, according to Mr. Goldberg, of them Jewish, including those scattered across the nation at every college campus. According to author Goldberg, Johnson was upset about the prominence of Jews among the anti war protestors and thought they were being somehow hypocritical to expect the United States to support Israel but not South Vietnam (despite the fact that no soldiers were being sent to the former, but hundreds of thousands were to the latter).⁴⁷⁴

Johnson’s concerns about Jewish war protestors had become one of his greatest worries, according to Harry McPherson in his oral history interview. He had undoubtedly focused more and more on this “disconnect” given that he had already done more than any other president to increase financial, military, and diplomatic capital to Israel. But in his tortured mind, Lyndon Johnson thought that striking out against Israel’s enemies would buy him so much goodwill among Jews that they would stop protesting his Vietnam policies and unite behind him. He probably even envisioned all the disparate groups coming together as one to support him, if he acted as boldly and grandly as possible.

In late May 1967, Johnson went to Ottawa to meet with Canadian Prime Minister Lester Pearson. As noted earlier, this visit with Pearson was unsuccessful in achieving his apparent objective of enlisting Canada’s help for his plans to join Israel in a war that had not yet started, a war that was still the subject of a secret plan that was then being finished. Shortly after he returned from this Canadian trip, he met with the relatively low-level Israeli Deputy Chief of Mission Eppie Evron, who on May 26, 1967, was visiting secretaries in the outer office to schedule a meeting with the president for his foreign minister, Abba Eban. Johnson learned he was there and said that he wanted to see him, which then occurred in the Oval Office. According to what Evron described and was reported in *The Six-Day War—A Retrospective*, edited by Richard B. Parker, the Israeli official was shocked at what then followed, considering his relatively low-level position and how the president called him into his office, to “speak in Texas terms” to describe what had just happened when he went to visit Prime Minister Pearson:⁴⁷⁵

[President Johnson] had just returned from a meeting with Lester Pearson, who was one of the key designers, planners, of the 1957 arrangement [Pearson had played a

leading role in helping to end the Suez Crisis]. He wasn't complimentary ("I use diplomatic language" [i.e. he is telling us that Johnson used his foulest vernacular, probably the "barnyard" type]), in his description of the Canadian position, of Mr. Pearson personally, of the way he had been treated there... . *Obviously there was no clear Canadian support for whatever the President wanted.* [Bracketed phrases in original; emphasis added.]

Aside from the point about it being a rather unusual action of the president to call in a lower-ranking diplomat who was there to perform a clerical task, to discuss "in great detail" his failed meeting with Canadian Prime Minister Lester Pearson, it is germane to speculate on "what" the subject of the discussion might have been about, even ponder his state of mind at the time. Perhaps it was related to the major scheme he was currently working on, the one that he was now paying even more attention to than Vietnam. Did he go to Canada for the purpose of giving Pearson the "Treatment" in order to manipulate him into helping him out of a difficult dilemma, or perhaps give credence to a story that he knew his own "credibility gap" might cause some to question? Given the descriptions, and how they were reframed "in diplomatic language," it suggests that Johnson was in another of his "meltdown" states.

By Memorial Day, 1967, Supreme Court Justice Abe Fortas—for three decades Johnson's primary adviser for everything involving his most difficult legal dilemmas—now took on a new role, as a "back channel" for communications between the Israeli embassy and Lyndon Johnson.⁴⁷⁶ Fortas was in touch routinely with the Israeli ambassador in the weeks leading up to the war and attended a critical White House strategy meeting on the Middle East on May 26, ten days before the start of the war. When it came to Israel, Fortas was never neutral. "When they get back from Egypt," a law clerk in his Supreme Court chambers overheard Justice Fortas say, "I'm going to decorate my office with Arab foreskins."⁴⁷⁷

Despite his awareness of the growing tensions and the virtual certainty of a Middle East war, for Memorial Day (Tuesday, May 30, 1967), instead of the usual presidential visit to Arlington and the ceremony at the Tomb of the Unknown Soldier, Johnson left for a holiday weekend at his Texas ranch on Saturday, May 27. According to Dr. William B. Quandt, author of "The Johnson Administration and the 1967 War," in *The Jerusalem Fund*: "He took none of his foreign policy advisors with him. Instead, he was surrounded by his family and friends, including Democratic party money man and his Texas neighbor, Arthur Krim, and his wife Mathilde, with whom Johnson seemed to have, what we might now politely call, a very close personal relationship."⁴⁷⁸ According to Peter Hounam's book *Operation Cyanide*, on Thursday, June 1, Johnson returned to Washington with Mathilde Krim and she subsequently accompanied Johnson to New York for a dinner-dance on June 3. That evening, at a major fund-raiser for the Democrats as well as Israel, Abraham "Abe" Feinberg, interrupted the president's evening with Mathilde to say that he "had some important news from Israel. 'Mr. President, it can't be held any longer,' he said. 'It's going to be within the next 24 hours.' The President continued with the fun, and took no action on this important piece of intelligence."⁴⁷⁹ Feinberg's point that "it can't be held

any longer” referred to the fact that the plan called for the war to begin June 15 (which was reflected in the operational code name, “Frontlet 615”), ten days after it was actually launched on June 5, 1967. That is what led to the calamitous events to be closely examined in [Chapter 8](#).

The next evening, June 4, Johnson, Robert McNamara, and John Loeb attended a dinner party at Abe Fortas’s house. That evening, Fortas warned Johnson that war would break out soon in the Middle East. Throughout the period up through the outbreak of war, Abe Fortas met with the Israeli ambassador, Avraham Harman, who kept him “apprised of events.”⁴⁸⁰ Additionally, “records show numerous instances of [Mathilde] passing documents directly to Johnson during the crisis, usually supporting a very hawkish viewpoint.”⁴⁸¹ Moreover, on the morning of June 5, when Johnson was informed at 4:30 a.m. that Israel attacked Egypt, the first person he told about it was Mathilde Krim, going to her White House bedroom to inform her that “The war has started.”⁴⁸² All during the six days of carnage that Israel inflicted on its neighbors, Near East experts met daily with Johnson in the Cabinet Room. Supreme Court Justice Abe Fortas attended each of those meetings. Reflecting on comments by Fortas to Johnson at their June 4 dinner party, John Loeb, Johnson’s resident “intellectual,” wrote to Fortas on June 6: “You were prophetic about the Middle East. Thank the Lord the President has you as a friend and counselor.”⁴⁸³

As demonstrated through the last several chapters, it is indisputable that, by 1967, Lyndon Johnson had surrounded himself with ardent and strident, Jewish and non-Jewish, militant Zionists, people who had worked for decades to first establish the nation of Israel and then for two more decades to expand its borders. As will be demonstrated shortly, this was done in such a way that evidence was left that reflected months of planning. The Six-Day War was not spontaneous, or randomly started by either side—it had been planned for months, as a joint effort between the CIA and the Israeli Mossad. The precept of “need to know” strictly limited the knowledge of most presidential advisers and others in the executive branch, except for Lyndon Johnson and Robert McNamara.

Moreover, such other people as George Ball and Dean Rusk, and therefore the State Department, were not “in the loop” in this planning. The weight of the evidence indicates that a plan was executed according to a long-scheduled, sophisticated operation that had been prepared from the start within the White House to make it appear that Israel had been the victim of a surprise attack by its Arab neighbors. This charge, that a plan—either initiated directly by Lyndon Johnson or advanced and sold to him as a political gold mine of support in the major centers of commerce and communication (especially Hollywood, New York, Miami, and Washington, DC), as well as kindred spirits in other major cities—was devised with an agenda created by a cadre of strident Zionists whose tentacles extended to others within the Oval Office. The sketchy outline of the plan presented here will shortly be given more detailed scrutiny but it is important here to establish the context of how it was an extension, and cumulative result, of many of the efforts reviewed previously and was separated in sequence by another war, Vietnam, which came first chronologically and must therefore be examined first.

The architects of the secret plan to strengthen the US ally Israel—which was arguably designed and implemented by the only man with the power to make it happen, Lyndon B. Johnson—would be James J. Angleton and his close friends in the Mossad, specifically Moshe Dayan.^{***} The plan was to instigate a war between Israel and her Arab neighbors, one that would be blamed on Egypt, which would then allow Israel to expand its borders through annexing lands won by virtue of their being “the spoils of war.” It required American support to keep the Russians at bay but Lyndon Johnson used that leverage in a way that resulted in clearly treasonous acts by himself and Robert McNamara, and arguably a number of other military officers on down the chain of command. But that is only the second of his treasons committed under the pretext of his wartime powers as commander in chief; it will be examined in detail shortly.

* As if to illustrate the maxim, “what goes around, comes around,”—or even the biblical admonition about “the sins of the father being visited upon the son,”—the Austin law firm of Clark, Thomas and Winters, founded in 1938, finally closed its doors in 2011, after being caught in a financial scandal relating to the Pedernales Electric Cooperative which was similar, and probably distantly related, to those that Lyndon Johnson, Ed Clark and Alvin Wirtz originally perpetrated during the period of the late 1930s through the 1950s. As the *Austin American-Statesman* newspaper summarized it, “In 2009, former Pedernales General Manager Bennie Fuelberg and former Clark Thomas partner Walter Demond were indicted on charges of felony theft, misapplication of fiduciary property and money laundering.” (<http://www.statesman.com/news/news/local/clark-thomas-winters-austins-oldest-law-firm-close/nRY7w/>)

** Hersh is a renowned, Pulitzer Prize-winning investigative journalist, admittedly controversial, but nonetheless much more credible than most of his critics. Gerth is also a Pulitzer Prize winner whose background work includes both Watergate and Whitewater investigations and reportage. He has collaborated with Hersh on several occasions.

*** The friendship of Israeli intelligence chiefs with James J. Angleton is evidenced by two monuments there, one in the Old City near the King David Hotel, the other in Jerusalem Forest. “In English and Hebrew, the inscriptions read: ‘James Jesus Angleton, 1917–1987. In Memory of a Good Friend.’” (Hounam, p. 229)

ENDLESS INVESTIGATIONS, MORE MURDERS

In a government of laws, the existence of the government will be imperiled if it fails to observe the law scrupulously. Our government is the potent, the omnipotent, teacher. For good or ill, it teaches the whole people by its example. If government becomes a lawbreaker it breeds contempt for law; it invites every man to become a law unto himself. It invites anarchy.

—JUSTICE LOUIS D. BRANDEIS

An incident that bears directly on our investigation, which Peter Janney wrote about in his book *Mary's Mosaic*, foretells how a White House aide sensed that something was amiss seven months before Kennedy was assassinated. It was during April 1963 that Lyndon Johnson and John Connally developed the plan for Kennedy's trip to Texas. It had been worked out by April 23 and the following day, the *Dallas Times Herald* included an article about the pending presidential visit even before the White House had formally made the announcement. It is possible that Johnson leaked the information because he wanted to get the story out so that it would be more difficult for Kennedy to subsequently change his mind. According to Janney's story, just a week before that, special White House aide Joseph W. Shimon's daughter, Toni, spent Easter weekend (April 13–14) with her father. She usually lived on Long Island with her mother. Shimon worked in the White House at the highest security levels and, in that position, he also worked closely with the Justice Department and the CIA. Moreover, in those capacities, he acted as a liaison to the DC Metropolitan Police Department, where he had many contacts, as that is where he started his law enforcement career decades earlier. During that weekend, as the planning for the Texas trip was being developed, Shimon and his daughter were walking near Shimon's home in Arlington, Virginia, when he told her about something that was bothering him: "You're on the outside and I'm going to hit you with something," Shimon told his daughter. "Tell me right off the top of your head what you think." "Okay," she said, not expecting to hear what followed.⁴⁸⁴

"The vice president [Lyndon Johnson] has asked me to give him more security than the president," said Shimon. As they continued walking, Toni's mood began to darken. There was something ominous in her father's voice, she remembered feeling.

"What's he afraid of, Dad?" she asked her father.

"What do you think?" Her father responded, wanting to see if she understood and connected the dots. There was an awkward silence. She knew she was being tested. Toni would remember that moment and the darkness that had come over her that day.

"Something's coming down, Dad," she said. "Does President Kennedy know about this?"

"I haven't mentioned it," she remembered her father telling her. "What do you

think?” her father asked again.

“Something’s going to happen and Johnson knows about it,” Toni immediately responded.

“Good girl!” said Shimon, proud of his tutelage of his only child.

There is a clear connection between the point that Mr. Shimon was making in his conversation with his daughter in April 1963 and the historic fact that not only was the result of this vice presidential initiative granted, evidently by many of the agencies involved, but the result was manifested seven months later, in Dallas, Texas: That is when all local, state, and federal law enforcement officers, other than the Secret Service agents riding along in the motorcade, were removed from Dealey Plaza. This can only mean that they were either oblivious to the rumors of potential attacks on the president or complicit, unwittingly or not, with a high-level decision to abandon the last vestiges of President Kennedy’s protection at the corner of Houston and Elm. The fact that the motorcycle escorts had backed themselves away from the presidential limousine and began riding alongside the Secret Service car, together with the fact, according to sixty witnesses, that the limousine came to a stop as the head shots were fired, apparently devolved from the highest levels of the Secret Service to the agents in the motorcade as a direct result of Lyndon Johnson’s orders as witnessed by Mr. Shimon.

According to Vince Palamara, the leading civilian researcher of the Secret Service, certain agents stated that the reason for reducing the number of motorcycle escorts in the motorcade, and cutting the two agents who normally rode on the back bumper of the presidential limousine, was because President Kennedy wanted to get “closer to the people” and that he suddenly objected to the noise of too many motorcycles around him. Yet neither of those issues had ever been expressed before and many of Kennedy’s staff, including his advance man Jerry Bruno, had expressed concern about the level of hostility toward the president by right-wing extremists in Dallas. Palamara has deconstructed those myths and proved that Kennedy had always been very cooperative with all Secret Service procedures and could not have been the source of the orders to reduce presidential protection.⁴⁸⁵ The conversation of Mr. Shimon with his daughter seven months before the Dallas trip described by author Janney should put to rest any remaining doubt about the real source of the request for the reduced presidential protection that took place in the Dallas motorcade; the planning for that particular motorcade, and only that one, was managed entirely by Vice President Lyndon Johnson and his assistants, including his acolyte, US attorney Barefoot Sanders, who resided in Dallas.

By September 1963, when the Bobby Baker scandals first surfaced in the news, according to JFK’s long-time personal secretary, Evelyn Lincoln in her book *Kennedy and Johnson*, the Kennedys were greatly disturbed about how Baker had abused his position. Under Johnson’s tutelage, he had taken over the function of awarding smaller federal government contracts to vendors of his choosing (assisted by kickbacks to his personal account), clearly a conflict of interest and a blatant example of the “pay for play” mentality that was only one example of how Lyndon Johnson had created avenues for personal profit in everything he touched. Though LBJ had given up his direct control over Baker when

Johnson left the Senate, he still had influence over him, and Baker reciprocated that with LBJ. It was irritating to the Kennedys, said Mrs. Lincoln, to hear that Baker still dangled Johnson's name to others as he began conversations with, "Well, Lyndon told me the other day ..."⁴⁸⁶ Irrespective of JFK's personal dalliances, he felt very strongly that officials in his administration had to conform to rigorous rules of ethics, especially with respect to the avoidance of conflicts of interest regarding financial issues. That principle included a need to remove subordinates who did not observe those rules.⁴⁸⁷

Mrs. Lincoln then commented on the "persistent rumor" that Kennedy was planning to remove Johnson from the ticket in 1964. She stated that her father-in-law, who worked in the Executive Office Building where Johnson's vice presidential suite was located, told her that: "Johnson would storm out of his office into the reception room and shout to someone walking with him, 'Why does the White House always have it in for me? I'm going back to Texas and run for the United States Senate against Senator Yarborough.'"⁴⁸⁸ During this same period, October 19, 1963, to be exact, an appreciation dinner was held in Austin called "A Texas Salute to Ralph Yarborough" including other senators from throughout the country and a keynote speech by Postmaster General John A. Gronouski with a filmed message by President Kennedy. Despite the fact that Johnson was then spending a month at his nearby ranch preparing for JFK's trip to Texas, as Mrs. Lincoln put it, "Mr. Johnson was conspicuous by his absence."⁴⁸⁹

Mrs. Lincoln's reference to Johnson's "absence" related to more than his not being invited to the Yarborough party; she had also made the point about how the Kennedys were purposefully leaving him out of important meetings on any substantive issues, not only on foreign policy matters but domestic as well. His absence from the development of the civil rights bill Kennedy submitted to Congress in June 1963—despite Johnson's position as the chairman of the Equal Opportunity Commission—illustrates that point with astonishing clarity. Yet he continued to try to portray himself as an active member of the administration, as revealed in George Reedy's 1982 memoir, recounting his fifteen years of working for Johnson, and how he had observed Johnson's growing paranoia about Robert Kennedy's control over the press. By 1963, Reedy stated, Johnson had begun fearing that Bobby was preparing to launch a "dump LBJ" movement in 1964. Furthermore Reedy noted how Johnson had begun showing his growing desperation by hanging out in the West Wing of the White House, pretending to be an active collaborator with JFK, an action Reedy did not feel was becoming to a man of his position.⁴⁹⁰

It was during this period that Lyndon went to his ranch to begin preparing for the Texas presidential trip, spending considerable time on the Dallas motorcade piece of the three-day presidential visit. In the meantime, Connally had gone to Washington to visit the president in preparation for the trip; he was very concerned that Kennedy might back out of his commitment to come to Texas, for the purpose of bringing the feuding factions together. Despite what Connally would write about warning Kennedy not to come to Texas (below), JFK's secretary, Evelyn Lincoln said that after he left, Kennedy said that, "*He sure seemed anxious for me to go to Texas. He attracts some people—money people*

who would never vote for me, but I have many supporters down there who are bitterly opposed to him. I think in the long run it would be more advantageous to him than for me. *The one thing I noticed above everything else was his concern about Lyndon being on the ticket.*"⁴⁹¹ [Emphasis added.]

These statements by the very credible Mrs. Lincoln were completely contradicted by an article in the *Dallas Morning News* on November 23, 1963: The headline of the story was "Connally Wanted President to Call Off Trip to Texas" and the key (second) paragraph of this article stated: "The governor, wounded by Mr. Kennedy's assassin, was against the idea for two reasons: (1) It would not be wise politically, would expand rather than heal wounds within the Texas Democratic Party, and (2) There was the possibility of some unpleasant incident."⁴⁹²

These diametrically opposite statements, one from the credible Mrs. Lincoln, the other—directly or indirectly—from the pathological liar Lyndon Johnson, show yet another set of Johnsonian lies meant to supplant the truth. The statement about Connally's actions could not have originated with him, since he was recovering from his own gunshot wounds from the day before, so it is most likely that Johnson had been behind it. Regarding Connally's White House visit, although Johnson publicly denied it, even expressing some anger about Connally visiting with the president without him being there, it appears, judging by what Mrs. Lincoln said about that visit, her account of that meeting was the truth. He had doubtlessly even been behind Connally's visit to the White House, for multiple purposes, all designed to ensure that Kennedy would come to Texas, which he thought would have to be taken as a sign that Johnson would be on the 1964 ticket. Just the prospect of it, he had to have thought, would stanch the "persistent rumors" engulfing Washington that he would be removed. After the assassination, it would no longer matter anyway, but the less that rumor spread, the less scrutiny would be put on his own actions in the immediate aftermath. Author Jeff Shesol, in his book *Mutual Contempt: Lyndon Johnson, Robert Kennedy, and the Feud That Defined a Decade*, wrote about how Johnson still repeated those lies years afterward, claiming that it was a "great myth" that he did anything to force Kennedy to come to Texas, yet that is precisely what the record shows: The most compelling piece of that evidence is the video available on the Internet, archived at the story about how JFK had told him on Air Force One, a week before the assassination, Library and the PBS files, in which Senator George Smathers tells the story about how JFK had told him on Air Force One, a week before the assassination, that "I just don't want to go down in that mess. I hate to go. I wish I could think of a way to get out of it."⁴⁹³ Yet Johnson would carry on with his denials, "that he had dragged a reluctant president to Dallas and to his death. 'That's a great myth,' Johnson complained privately. 'I didn't force him to come to Texas. Hell, he wanted to come out there himself!'"⁴⁹⁴ Clearly, the president had repeated that lie so often that he came to believe it was the truth, just as he was habitually known to do, a point that has been made and validated by many of his staff.

By 1967, Connally even went to the trouble, undoubtedly at Johnson's behest, to write in the November 27 issue of *Life* magazine an article titled "Why Kennedy Went to Texas,"

which contained a number of blatantly false statements about that trip, obviously meant to deflect attention away from the role he and Johnson had played in luring John Kennedy to Texas. This article was nothing more than an attempt by two conniving and duplicitous politicians to effectively blame JFK for causing his own death by insisting on coming to Texas in the first place (despite the mountain of evidence to the contrary). Planting such a ludicrous lie, had the public chosen to believe it, would of course be extremely helpful in diverting attention about JFK's fate away from Johnson, clearly the primary objective of this article.

In contradiction of what Robert Caro wrote in *The Passage of Power*, that Connally had gone to Washington at Kennedy's invitation (which had not been extended to Vice President Lyndon Johnson) to finalize planning for the trip,⁴⁹⁵ someone who knew John Connally, has published an account that argues the opposite position. A man named Doug Thompson published, in 2006, his account of personally meeting John Connally in 1982 and eventually having dinner with him, at which time Connally told him: "You know I was one of the ones who advised Kennedy to stay away from Texas... . Lyndon (Johnson) was being a real a** hole about the whole thing and insisted [that Kennedy come to Texas]."

⁴⁹⁶ Of course, Connally might have been lying about this to Mr. Thompson and his wife in an attempt to cover himself from suspicions. But if indeed this account is true, he eventually would cooperate with Johnson despite his own hesitation, which would suggest that he had no prior knowledge of the real plans. However, as an attorney friend of mine affirmed, his "excited utterance" during the shooting ("*They are going to kill us all!*") must also be considered, and the fact that the judicial system treats such expressions as an exception to the ordinary "hearsay" rules by admitting them as evidence because they are considered intrinsically trustworthy. Furthermore, the corollary premise—that when a life-altering experience occurs, people remember it—must be factored into the analysis and be considered in the ultimate conclusion.

Regardless of whether or not he knew of the plot in advance, Connally clearly became aware of the truth subsequently, as revealed in another comment he made that Mr. Thompson repeated: "I love this country and we needed closure at the time. *I will never speak out publicly about what I believe.*"⁴⁹⁷ [Emphasis added.] Connally's words clearly reveal that he was hiding what he knew to be the truth, and he did it out of fear for the future of the country if that information were to become public. He knew that the implications could possibly bring down the government and he didn't want to be the one responsible for that. Moreover, he may have been familiar with the quote from Supreme Court Justice Louis D. Brandeis, noted in the Epigraph of [Chapter 5](#). The last sentence is repeated here, for clarity: "*If government becomes a lawbreaker it breeds contempt for law; it invites every man to become a law unto himself. It invites anarchy.*"

There are many other examples of Johnson's intrinsic duplicity, sociopathic criminality, and psychotic behavior that will appear in practically every chapter that follows. The fact that these patterns existed throughout his lifetime—yet are unreported in most other biographies of him—demonstrates his success at controlling what history books would say about him in the future. It was the aggregation of crimes he successfully committed that

became a critical element in how he managed to accrue such enormous political power. Each success gave Johnson greater confidence, and he leveraged that to repeatedly accrue more and more power, every iteration fueling the next, the rationalizations building with every cycle. By 1963, this process, practiced secretly and behind closed doors, would have produced a crucial network of key intelligence and military personnel. He instinctively knew who could keep secrets and they knew that he would provide the ultimate protection from prosecution once he was president. This was the fertile ground from which Johnson would recruit others who were sympathetic with the gathering conspiracy for their own reasons, mostly based on the fear that President Kennedy was dangerous to the future of the United States in its confrontations with the Soviet Union and the growing number of other socialistic nations.

The process to be described in later chapters will also illustrate how Lyndon Johnson evaded laws that would have impeded anyone else less daring throughout his lifetime. Some of those laws even rose to being qualified as “high crimes and misdemeanors,” and he evaded them all without penalty, never being caught after at least four decades of growing criminality. It is the undeniable existence of the proofs cited within these pages that exposes the reality behind the facade he had created, with a lot of help from sycophantic aides, compromised politicians and judges susceptible to either bribes or blackmail, the hateful and conniving head of the FBI, and an ineffectual press. The saddest part of the story is how the “Fourth Estate” (the free press) largely abdicated its constitutional duties to keep the three branches of government in check. That mandate to monitor the governmental process and root out the corruption that potentially exists wherever great power is exercised was jettisoned by many reporters in exchange for keeping their positions, and continued access to the White House.

A credulous public, still in shock in the aftermath of one of the most traumatic events ever witnessed by America, had been saturated with all the “bad news” it could handle, especially as its attention was diverted on the one hand by the Great Society domestic legislation, with its lofty promises of equality and justice for all, though that was tempered, on the other hand, by the increasing body counts of young Americans killed in action on the other side of the world. The retrospective look at these issues—which are directly related to how Lyndon Johnson became President Johnson in a domestic coup d’état engineered with assistance from rogue elements of the military services and intelligence agencies—reveal certain ugly truths pertaining to the real legacy of Lyndon B. Johnson.

As we proceed to expose the real truths, those that Lyndon Johnson had ensured would be buried and replaced by the lies that he manufactured—especially about the events in Dallas—the patterns already established reappeared and the cumulative result should by now be self-evident: The pattern of lies continued, all throughout his presidency, as he exploited the power of that office. Before Lyndon Johnson occupied the Oval Office, the public extended to the incumbent a tremendous amount of trust—inherently, automatically, and nearly completely. All that changed within two years of his landslide election—and it has never wholly recovered. Yet even then, the public was not completely aware of how much they had been purposely manipulated and lied to and kept “in the dark” about certain of those lies.

Secretary of Defense James Forrestal's Mysterious Death (and Lyndon Johnson's mysterious 1949 visit with him just before he died)

Though the “conventional wisdom” is that it was a suicide, the strange circumstances related to the death of America’s first secretary of defense, James Forrestal, appointed to the position by President Truman, has remained under a cloud of suspicion for over sixty years.⁴⁹⁸ The “official” government finding, that James Forrestal committed suicide, will be examined at length so the reader can evaluate the case and form their own conclusions based on the pertinent facts. But irrespective of how James Forrestal died, and regardless of who else might have been involved in his death, our purpose is merely to focus on Lyndon Johnson’s related activities and the possible motives Johnson might have had to have become involved during this very busy period of his career.

After his return to Washington as the newly “elected” junior senator from Texas in 1949, Lyndon Johnson became involved in two separate activities, on behalf of two different political constituencies. The events leading up to Forrestal’s death were unfolding during exactly the same period as Johnson’s preparation for his offensive attack against the nomination of Leland Olds for a third term as the chairman of the Federal Power Commission. That project was being executed by Lyndon for his “Suite 8-F” constituency—the group of multimillionaire Texas oilmen—in order to reduce the efficacy of Chairman Olds, whose priorities were biased toward power consumers, not power suppliers.

Johnson’s other major constituency—the wealthy and well-connected financial supporters, primarily bankers and power brokers based in New York—were pressing him to help control his other adversary, James Forrestal. For reasons that will become clear shortly, Lyndon Johnson became involved strangely—and, perhaps, tangentially—in the death of the first secretary of defense, who had been appointed by President Truman only two years earlier, in 1947. Before that, James V. Forrestal had served as an administrative assistant to President Roosevelt, followed by an appointment as secretary of the Navy in the Roosevelt and Truman administrations. His tenure as defense secretary was limited, however, because he disagreed with Truman on a number of issues of great import. Finally, Truman requested his resignation and Forrestal complied; it became effective on March 28, 1949. A few days after his resignation, he was forced into hospitalization for depression and seven weeks after that, on the very day that he was to have been released because he had been pronounced “well,” he either jumped or was pushed out of a window on the sixteenth floor of the Bethesda Naval Hospital—the same building where, fourteen years later, an even bigger mystery would unfold involving the body of the thirty-fifth president of the United States. Both of these events remain shrouded in secrecy, enigmas, and anomalies decades later. They remain “unsolved” in the minds of most people having a scintilla of critical thinking ability.

The columnist and radio broadcaster Drew Pearson, who was very much a maverick, had a history of switching his allegiance to and from Lyndon Johnson, rising occasionally even to attacks of him. Nevertheless, Pearson regularly received suggestions from Johnson on juicy items for his syndicated columns. Johnson might have been the source (or, more

likely, a conduit) of a series of highly critical articles regarding Forrestal written by Pearson, and another columnist, Walter Winchell, who also participated in these attacks. Pearson's articles were especially brutal, so much so that his attacks on James Forrestal would seem clearly libelous today. His news slant in these articles was consistently directed to what he felt was Forrestal's immoral conduct and his strange or nervous behavior. Pearson's protégé Jack Anderson later even admitted that Pearson had "hector[ed] Forrestal with innuendos and false accusations."⁴⁹⁹ Much of the pressure on President Truman to get rid of Forrestal was coming from his eventual successor, Louis Johnson, who had been a major fund-raiser for Truman's 1948 campaign and, according to Pearson himself, Louis Johnson "felt that he should be rewarded for his efforts by being named Secretary of Defense."⁵⁰⁰

Among the things Pearson told his partner for the *Merry Go Round* nationally syndicated column, Jack Anderson, about Forrestal, was that he was "'the most dangerous man in America' and claimed that if he was not removed from office he would 'cause another world war.' Pearson also insinuated that Forrestal was guilty of corruption, though he was completely unable to prove any wrongdoing. The lowest blow came in January 1949 [just as Lyndon Johnson was being sworn into his new position as senator], when Pearson related that Forrestal's wife had been the victim of a holdup back in 1937 and falsely suggested that Forrestal had run away, leaving his wife defenseless... . Pearson unrelentingly continued his attacks on Forrestal in his columns and radio broadcasts, openly berating Truman for not firing Forrestal."⁵⁰¹

After a third columnist, Marquis Childs, reported in his column, in January 1949, that Louis Johnson was "waging a vendetta against Forrestal," Louis Johnson went to see President Truman to convince him otherwise, despite the fact that Childs's reportage was indeed true. It was at this time that Truman decided that Forrestal would have to go.⁵⁰² In the meantime, Drew Pearson kept up his radio and newspaper column attacks, writing that Forrestal had tried to commit suicide multiple times, although by then Pearson's rhetoric had become so vitriolic that it became difficult to measure its truthfulness; indeed, if Forrestal had tried to kill himself, it would have been at least partly due to Pearson's venomous columns.⁵⁰³ The next day, Pearson wrote the following entry in his diary: "ABC objected strenuously to the Forrestal broadcast [apparently, the day before, he described Forrestal's condition on the radio much like his diary entry]... . Significantly, the network also objected to any reference to the idea that Forrestal might have been out of his head while in public office, and that Truman knew about this. To me this was the most important part of the news. When a man is insane while in high public office, it affects millions."⁵⁰⁴ (His prescience on this point was premature by a decade and a half).

Forrestal died at 2 a.m. on May 22, 1949. The following day, another columnist, Westbrook Pegler, wrote a column, according to Pearson's next diary entry, "virtually accusing me of murdering Forrestal. Telegrams and telephone calls have been coming in singing the same song."⁵⁰⁵ Pearson immediately filed a \$250,000 libel suit against Pegler. On May 26, Pearson wrote that "the *Washington Post* is being bombarded with letters,"

demanding that Pearson's column be canceled in what appeared to be an organized campaign.⁵⁰⁶ On May 28, Pearson wrote that *Editor & Publisher*, a trade magazine for journalists, had published an article that also asserted that he and Walter Winchell were responsible for Forrestal's death.⁵⁰⁷

Even after Forrestal died by falling, or being shoved from, a sixteenth-floor window and falling thirteen stories onto the roof of an adjoining three-story building section, Pearson continued his attacks on Forrestal, saying such things as the reason Forrestal took his own life was because he was too ambitious and self-centered, a man with no "spiritual reserves," that he had abandoned his church and his wife.⁵⁰⁸ Drew Pearson clearly used his pulpit in hundreds of newspapers around the country to make some rather harsh judgmental and probably libelous assertions of other people's personal lives.

The vicious Pearson articles (as noted above, even disclaimed by his partner, Jack Anderson, himself occasionally one of the more reckless of the twentieth-century muckrakers) were only a portion of the overall attacks suddenly made on Forrestal, who, until his support for a certain controversial position—being in philosophical disagreement with the movement toward the creation of the nation of Israel, which will be examined shortly—had an impeccable record, as reflected in his successive promotions within President Truman's cabinet. It seems clear that the attack was a well-designed, coordinated verbal public assault on Forrestal, intended to drive him out of office or out of his mind, whichever occurred first. The real mental condition of Forrestal has become lost in a maze of conflicting reports and "unreliable" news stories that tend to suggest that he might have been the victim of an intricate plot to remove him from his position and ensure that he would no longer pose a threat to the agenda of people having opposite objectives. Lyndon Johnson's involvement, as detailed below, may have also had a lot to do with Forrestal's dilemma.

A psychiatrist, William Menninger, had been brought in to examine Forrestal. On April 2, 1949, he determined that Forrestal suffered from depression and arranged for him to be admitted to the National Naval Medical Center (a.k.a. Bethesda Naval Hospital), confined to the sixteenth floor⁵⁰⁹ (which was itself highly unusual, since most psychiatric patients were placed no higher than the second floor). It was not uncommon for doctors to order patients "involuntarily" hospitalized in those days, even when no one else (such as a spouse) had requested it. Seven weeks later, on May 22, Forrestal was discovered dead on the roof of a covered three-story walkway below a kitchen window near his sixteenth-floor room at the Bethesda Naval Hospital, a bathrobe sash knotted tightly around his neck. His health had improved sufficiently that he was scheduled for discharge from the hospital on that very day. The local coroner ruled his death a suicide and the head of the National Naval Medical Center, Rear Admiral Morton D. Willcutts, chaired a committee to review the case. Subsequently a report was released that only listed the conclusions reached by the committee. Of primary interest was the conclusion that Forrestal "died following a fall" and that the fall caused his death. The board did not speculate as to what might have caused the fall.⁵¹⁰

More than five decades later, in 2004, the committee's full report was released. In a review of the board's evidence and findings—solicited by the Navy and kept secret with the report until it was released—Chairman of the American Psychiatric Association Dr. Winfred Overholser stated that Forrestal “came to his death by suicide while in a state of mental depression,” but the report's conclusions echoed the original 1949 report, that “Forrestal died from the fall. Debate over the exact circumstances of Forrestal's unusual death continues today, with some critics citing the US government's withholding of the official report and autopsy results as well as possible signs of struggle in evidence photos as indicating foul play.”⁵¹¹

It practically goes without saying, but someone has to: It is inconceivable that—short of still another massive cover-up by government agencies obsessed with keeping highly classified secrets about how a man in its custody wound up falling thirteen stories to his death—there is any possible innocent rationale, fifty-five years after the event, why the autopsy results and evidence photos were still not released in 2004. Nor have they been released to this day, a decade later.

There are arguments both for and against the question of whether Forrestal's mental condition had become so serious enough to justify his forced hospitalization. It is beyond the scope of this necessarily brief review to draw conclusions one way or the other. But it is more than a little ironic that one of Forrestal's allegedly wild “predictions”—one of them referenced at the time to argue that he was “paranoid”—was that the United States would soon be at war again, even though that prediction came true within a few months, in Korea. Two sociologists, Mary Akashah and Donald Tennant of Oklahoma State University, published their study, “Madness and Politics: The Case of James Forrestal” in 1980, which concluded by saying that there was no justification for concluding that his attitudes, and therefore his policies, were those of someone with a diseased mind, that he was ever psychotic, incapable of performing his duties. However, those were the conclusions made by a lot of journalists and of the people who had him committed and of the doctors who treated him.⁵¹² The Akashah and Tennant analysis has since become even more prescient now than it was then, nearly thirty-five years ago, in this passage:⁵¹³

[Perhaps] his most controversial position was his opposition to the partition of Palestine and the creation of Israel in 1948. Truman presents this as an example of extremely poor judgment on Forrestal's part despite the fact that the latter was supported by the joint Chiefs of Staff and almost the entire State Department. Yet the reasons Forrestal gave for his position that it would eventually endanger relations with other Middle Eastern nations, threaten our oil supplies, and possibly lead to military entanglements in the area seem all too prophetic today. However we may feel about the wisdom of Truman's pro-Israel policy, Forrestal's opposition to it can hardly be dismissed as the raving of a madman.

In 1992, a biography of Forrestal, *Driven Patriot, the Life and Times of James Forrestal*, was written by Townsend Hoopes, a former undersecretary of the Air Force, and Douglas Brinkley, then the head of the Eisenhower Center at the University of New Orleans and now a history professor at Rice University. The book points out that Forrestal's view was

shared by other high-level American officials, including “The Wise Men” such as Assistant Secretary of State George C. Marshall and Robert Lovett, an assistant secretary of defense.* Their concerns were centered on the potential for an immediate war, or indefinite long-term turbulence, in the region that might draw the United States into an endless conflict with the Arab neighbors of the new nation.

The authors have observed that in the larger context of the geo political culture of this area, including at least two millennia of its history it would be hard to argue the point that these men were making at the time. The less-than-satisfactory aftermath, over the six decades that have since passed, would seem to bear that out. Indeed, these impressively credentialed authors have acknowledged that the price paid by the United States, in political capital as well as monetary expenditures, was “extremely high,” and that the continuing antagonisms have now spread to all parts of the world. While acknowledging that some of the “instability” would have occurred had Israel never existed, they omit asking, or answering, the question of the inevitable implications: Whether the instability could have at least been more contained to that geographic area instead of being spread throughout the world. It could be postulated that the alternative would have created greater natural protection for the very geographic area considered most sacred by four of the world’s major religious groups. The very same ones over which the fight is being fought.⁵¹⁴

Authors Hoopes and Brinkley noted that Forrestal warned that any American support had to be conditioned upon the rights of the Palestinians being guaranteed, and (referencing Robert Lovett’s description): “justly upheld and the boundaries of the new state explicitly drawn” (and, implicitly, never forcibly expanded). Moreover, they have established that Forrestal’s fear was that failure to make these ironclad commitments would “alienate not alone the Arabs and the Middle East, but of the whole Moslem world ... and the eventual harvest would not be a peaceful homeland for a race exhausted by persecution and massacre, but a reaping of a whirlwind of hate for all of us.”⁵¹⁵ It is difficult to argue that James Forrestal, for all of his alleged weaknesses, was not prescient, even rather clairvoyant, in retrospect. Yet, as the authors have pointed out, his passionately held concerns caused him to become the target for the worst elements of the muckraking journalists of that shameful period of American history. The attacks were scurrilous, unfounded, and arguably libelous—even to a public figure—based almost entirely upon the “open marriage” lifestyle that Mr. and Mrs. Forrestal decided to adopt.⁵¹⁶ The same kind of attack would continue in the days after his death and they will be examined in summary fashion shortly.

The day before James Forrestal died, Rear Admiral Morton Willcutts, the commanding officer at the naval hospital in Bethesda, noticed how Forrestal had looked at that point, describing him as “ebullient, meticulously shaven” as he ate a steak for lunch, eager to meet his son Peter and other visitors he had expected to see that day. That evening, he decided that he wanted to stay up late to read and write, in this case allegedly copying onto paper the forlorn poem “The Chorus from Ajax” by Sophocles. It has been posited that he got as far as the word “nightingale” and stopped in the middle of writing that word, to kill

himself. This point was then used as evidence of his despondency, allegedly because that word reminded him of a group of anti-Communist guerilla fighters who were known by the same term, that was comprised of Ukrainian refugees who had been set up by the CIA, acting in concert with Nazi collaborators who had carried out mass executions behind German lines during the war. Forrestal had authorized that operation according to the Hoopes/Brinkley book.⁵¹⁷ If it all seems a little too “pat,” there may be some truth to that, according to others who were there or have investigated it since then.

The Hoopes and Brinkley book concluded that Forrestal’s death was the result of a suicide, even though no substantive physical evidence or first person testimony is offered to conclusively prove that contention. Their book contained references to very selectively culled “evidence” from obscure periodicals and the original study of Forrestal, *James Forrestal: A Study of Personality, Politics, and Policy*, by Arnold A. Rogow, published in 1963 by the Macmillan Company. Some of the original reviews of this book criticize it for its general shallowness and Rogow’s attempt at post mortem psychoanalysis, or what some have called a “psychological autopsy.”⁵¹⁸ For reasons that only Douglas Brinkley or Townsend Hoopes could explain, another book, by Cornell Simpson, *The Death of James Forrestal*, was not used in the formulation of their conclusions, even though it was written (1966) only three years after that of author Rogow. Had that been done, readers would have been exposed to a different prism from which to examine the mystery related to Forrestal’s strange death. For example, Simpson interviewed James Forrestal’s brother Henry, who stated that all the doctors and the high officials, even the new defense secretary, Louis Johnson, and President Truman, agreed that he was then fully recovered and in “fine shape.”⁵¹⁹

Henry Forrestal thought the incident “smelled to high heaven.” He stated that his brother’s involuntary commitment to the psychiatric unit of the hospital and his treatment there as a virtual prisoner whose visitors were limited—not to his friends and family—mostly to his enemies, people he had no wish to see, and that was what caused that stink that Henry smelled. Henry was convinced, according to author Simpson, who conducted the interview, that the “suicide” was staged from the start and that from the time James was “admitted” into the hospital, he was being guided toward that result. It was proven, to him, by the way the hospital authorities had brazenly lied about such things as his having unfettered freedom of access to visitors, which he knew to be a lie, and why, after all the time spent there, he had decided to kill himself at a point just a few hours away from the arrival of his brother Henry, who he knew would finally take him home, which meant his long-sought freedom was nearly his again. Moreover, Monsignor Maurice Sheehy, Forrestal’s friend and priest, told Henry that, when he hurried to the hospital shortly after Forrestal’s death, a hospital corpsman wearing stripes indicating twenty years of navy service came up to him and said, “Father ... you know Mr. Forrestal didn’t kill himself, don’t you?” before being pushed away by the crowd that had gathered in the hallway; the priest did not get his name, or have a chance to ask him any questions about his remark.⁵²⁰ Father Sheehy had been turned away six different times by Dr. George N. Raines, the Navy psychiatrist in charge. According to author Cornell Simpson, Father

Sheehy commented that it appeared to him that Dr. Raines was acting under orders; Simpson concluded that those orders, like the orders that caused Forrestal to be committed to the hospital and kept there in virtual isolation for seven weeks, came from the White House. Dr. Raines had also kept another priest, Paul McNally, S.J. from Georgetown University, from seeing Forrestal.⁵²¹

David Martin's treatise *Who Killed James Forrestal?* referenced previously argues convincingly that Forrestal's alleged suicide was actually a carefully planned "execution" to remove Forrestal from the scene. Forrestal had become an impediment—one at too high a level to ignore—to an agenda that many people had adopted as their highest priority, the unqualified support for the creation of the nation of Israel, the first substantive action of the newly formed United Nations. While this case is certainly relevant to the story of Lyndon Johnson's ascension, our purpose here is not to prove or disprove Martin's hypothesis, or even to argue that Johnson was actively involved in the death of James Forrestal (though logic, and the long string of other unethical, immoral, and illegal actions on his part, strongly suggests the possibility of such a linkage). Rather, it is simply to examine certain evidence that Mr. Martin has presented that raises profound questions about a case that was "swept under the rug" almost immediately after the suspicious death of the former secretary of defense. The precise circumstances of how Forrestal died and who, if anyone else, was responsible for his death may never be known. But there are telling signs that suggest there is much more to this story than previously revealed.

For example, Martin noted that "At the same time that Forrestal was being prevented visits by those he most wanted and needed to see, unwanted guests were being allowed in. These included his successor as Secretary of Defense, Louis Johnson, a man, according to Hoopes and Brinkley, he held in very low regard." Louis Johnson was disliked by many, not only Forrestal, who saw him as a quarrelsome, incompetent, overly ambitious troublemaker whose only talent was raising money, which he had done for President Truman with the expectation of being named to the position of secretary of defense.⁵²²

President Truman was another guest at the hospital who Forrestal would have no doubt preferred not to see, given that the president had forced his resignation in order to replace him with someone much more malleable. Louis Johnson was Truman's chief fund-raiser and he was a man who was not very concerned with the problems of the world that had taken their toll on Forrestal.

Finally, there was one other visitor also named Johnson at the hospital just before his death, a person who, like many others who knew this man, Forrestal despised. Forrestal would have considered Lyndon B. Johnson as someone who was uniquely unfamiliar with the complex nuances and potential long-term violent ramifications pertaining to the creation of an Israeli nation. Yet, according to the Townsend Hoopes/David Brinkley book *Driven Patriot* previously cited, Forrestal's good friend Marx Leva stated that the newly "elected" Senator Lyndon Baines Johnson had "managed to gain entrance to the suite 'against Forrestal's wishes.'"⁵²³

Lyndon Johnson, at that time, was a man of far lesser stature than Forrestal; he had just

moved from the House to the Senate in one of the most controversial, widely known, transparently fraudulent elections in US history. It would have been extraordinarily presumptuous of him to bull his way into Secretary Forrestal's hospital room when his visit was frankly not wanted. But such fastidious attention to sensing another person's feelings was not something Johnson excelled in, or probably could have even attempted to do. A likely reason why Forrestal would have considered Johnson a member of the enemy camp, albeit a low-level one, was Johnson's great partisanship toward the fledgling state of Israel. As a congressman, Johnson had already responded to the entreaties of Abe Fortas, for whom he now felt deeply indebted. Forrestal's attitude toward Lyndon Johnson, Drew Pearson, and Walter Winchell was probably indicated in an article in the *Washington Post* a day after his death, Monday, May 23, 1949, headlined, "Delusions of Persecution, Acute Anxiety, Depression Marked Forrestal's Illness," which summarized his attitude thusly:

His fear of reprisals from pro-Zionists was said to stem from attacks by some columnists on what they said was his opposition to partition of Palestine under a UN mandate. In his last year as Defense Secretary, he received great numbers of abusive and threatening letters.

The unknowable circumstances—on many levels—that would lead Lyndon Johnson to visit Forrestal in his hospital room, and what the two adversaries might have had to say to one another, will remain part of the mystery regarding Forrestal's demise. It would not be unreasonable to speculate, however, given Lyndon Johnson's mastery of people-manipulation skills, including an infinite repertoire of sub skills he could employ almost as effortlessly as the swift, single motion of a stationary deer, gliding gracefully over a four-foot fence. Some of those ingrained skills, practiced and honed for over three decades by that time can be reduced to three important points:

- First, the words of one of his radio station broadcasters, Harry Blackstone Jr., whose father was a magician known as The Great Blackstone: "I learned more about the art of deception from him than I did from my father ... he was a man who understood the art of misdirection—of making the eye watch "A" when the dirty work was going on at "B."
- Secondly, recall Johnson's ability to masterfully employ every manipulative device imaginable through his simple application of the "Johnson Treatment": As previously noted, a combination of "supplication, accusation, cajolery, exuberance, scorn, tears, complaint, the hint of threat. It was all of these together. It ran the gamut of human emotions. Its velocity was breathtaking, and it was all in one direction. Interjections from the target were rare. Johnson anticipated them before they could be spoken."
- Finally, the other methods used by Johnson, always operating "behind the scenes" and in complete secrecy, manipulating other people to employ whatever devices he could persuade them to administer, suggests that it is not unreasonable to posit that his elaborate planning against Forrestal might have even mirrored some of the same devices he employed with great genius against Leland Olds, which was concurrently unfolding on Capitol Hill. Unleashing all of his skills of deception and

commanding all subordinates to mount a coordinated attack on Forrestal, using the heavy ammunition of having two of the leading newspaper columnists in the country viciously piling on simultaneously with his other attacks, seems eerily similar to the well-orchestrated attack being concurrently waged on the hapless Leland Olds.

There are many parallels between the fates of Olds and Forrestal, but the key difference is that Olds was merely driven out of office, destroyed financially, publicly humiliated, his friendships ruined. While the same thing also happened to Forrestal, it didn't stop there. For some reason, someone evidently decided that his voice should be silenced forever, not just neutralized by the vicious gossip and innuendo that ended his career. That distinction suggests that he was feared by some very powerful people. The clearly weakened state of mental acuity being experienced by Forrestal at the time of Johnson's visit, regardless of the fact that his condition had, until that point, been improving, would make him particularly vulnerable to a man of Johnson's legendary, overpowering mania and manipulative ability. Merely being an involuntarily committed patient in a mental hospital would have been traumatically damaging to the psyche of a man who had once been one of the three or four most powerful men in Washington, DC. That he was then put "nose to nose" against the highly skilled man-eater Lyndon Johnson would have certainly caused him to wither, if not completely collapse. Recall Bobby Kennedy's description of Johnson: "[He] had this ability to eat people up, even people who are considered rather strong figures ... He's mean, bitter, vicious—an animal in many ways."⁵²⁴ Richard Goodwin's pithy recollection of another of Robert Kennedy's comments about Johnson is equally pertinent here: "He is the most formidable human being I've ever met."⁵²⁵

Whoever else was managing or overseeing this operation** must have smiled and smirked when he dreamed up the plan for putting Lyndon Johnson into the same hospital room as James Forrestal, possibly for the purpose of using Johnson's psychic skills to plant seeds of destruction into the mind of the unprepared and weakened Forrestal. Admittedly, this is mere speculation, however, it does have the momentum of multiple Johnsonian patterns of behavior and the weight of Bobby Kennedy's cryptic descriptions of him. Under those circumstances, it is easy to picture the hapless, recovering Forrestal wishing for the company of a more normal form of man-eater, like a lion or tiger.

The mystery is compounded by the fact that none of Forrestal's closest professional associates—men whom he would have loved to have seen—such as Monsignor Maurice S. Sheehy, and working associates Ferdinand Eberstadt, Robert Lovett, and Marx Leva, all friends who were usually at his side before he had become hospitalized; for inexplicable reasons, they were not permitted to visit him.^{***} The overall context of how Forrestal was then being "managed" raises profound issues about not only the questionable circumstances of his supposed "suicide" but begs the question of what else had been done, other than the unleashing of syndicated newspaper columnists Drew Pearson and Walter Winchell to mercilessly attack him, provoking James Forrestal's apparent nervous breakdown, which was allegedly so serious as to require his forced hospitalization on the sixteenth floor (in a seventeen-story tower) within a military hospital in which the

standard policy was to keep “mental patients” confined only to the first or second story.

The first US ambassador to Israel, James G. McDonald, writing in 1951, described the attacks on Forrestal as “unjustifiable,” “persistent and venomous,” and “among the ugliest example of the willingness of politicians and publicists to use the vilest means—in the name of patriotism—to destroy self-sacrificing and devoted public servants.”⁵²⁶ This stunning description of the treatment of Forrestal is eerily similar to the words used by many to describe Lyndon Johnson’s treatment of Leland Olds in the reconfirmation hearing being held concurrently for his reappointment as the head of the Federal Power Commission. When these words are juxtaposed to the fact that both events overlapped in 1949, the confluence is unmistakable: As the series of attacks on Forrestal, starting in 1948 and ending shortly after his death on May 22, 1949, were at their peak in March and April, Johnson had just been named to chair the subcommittee that he would use for his assault on Olds. His attack plan was being cast simultaneously with the vilification of Forrestal, and it would be “executed” in the weeks following Forrestal’s mysterious death. That the ambassador’s choice of words regarding Forrestal’s treatment evoke exactly what others said about the ugliness of Johnson’s “venomous” and “vile” attacks against Leland Olds at virtually the same time speaks volumes about the non random nature of the synchronicity relating to a number of otherwise inexplicable events as Washington, DC, and a few other cities in America and abroad, circa 1950–69.

Understanding the brutal ruthlessness and brazenly outrageous conduct of Lyndon B. Johnson in how he “handled” both Leland Olds and James Forrestal, and in having done so simultaneously, provides the foundational underpinning that is essential to comprehending the real character of the man, something that won’t be found in most other biographies of him.

There are many parallels with Forrestal’s death in 1949 and other unsolved murders in the 1950s and early 60s: Dr. Frank Olson’s plunge from the thirteenth floor of the Hotel Pennsylvania in New York City on November 28, 1953—after having been surreptitiously given a dosage of LSD by colleagues from the CIA⁵²⁷—and the death of Grant Stockdale, a friend of JFK’s who had become involved, and knew too much about, the corruption swirling around Bobby Baker’s and Lyndon Johnson’s swindles and scams, when he died ten days after JFK’s assassination, falling thirteen floors from a window of the Dupont Building in Miami. The Stockdale case will be presented in more detail shortly.

Disturbing Patterns Before and After JFK’s Assassination

The similarities of seemingly unrelated deaths of certain people, at particular times that could be said to be “opportune” or “fortuitous” for certain other people during the fifteen year period of 1949–63, and again between 1964 and 1995, and beyond, give rise to questions regarding coincidences. Regarding multiple “coincidences,” famed James Bond novelist Ian Fleming famously said, “*Once is happenstance, twice is coincidence, but three times is enemy action.*” After the first such incident, repeating patterns can only be considered “still another coincidence” for a very limited number of iterations, before “too many” coincidences belie the obvious: That none of it was “coincidental,” they were all sub

plots in a larger plan. In the aftermath of JFK's assassination, there were a number of mysterious murders, clearly staged "suicides," fatalities from strangely similar one-car accidents, and a number of timely heart attacks suffered by people who had no prior history or other indications of being vulnerable to such risk. Researcher Penn Jones was among the first to note this phenomenon and, since then, books have been written with this as their focus. A January 1984 article he wrote on the subject, "Disappearing Witnesses" is readily available at the Mae Brussell website. The latest book on this topic, *Hit List: An In-Depth Investigation into the Mysterious Deaths of Witnesses to the JFK Assassination* by Richard Belzer and David Wayne, examines many of these deaths in detail. Richard Charnin has also taken the baton on this subject to keep it current on his blog.⁵²⁸ He has conducted a number of analytical studies that prove to a mathematical certainty that the totality of this evidence, alone, proves the massive scale of the continuing cover-up. For these reasons, we will only consider a few for which Lyndon Johnson's hand may be seen in the background. There are a number of traces of evidence he left behind. It is those that we want to put under the microscope, with the proviso that there may have been others that might have been added, using the same guideline.

Most of the murders that were thought to have been committed on behalf of Lyndon Johnson before JFK's murder have been previously described. They included LBJ's sister, Josefa Johnson in 1961, and ten years earlier, her lover Doug Kinser in 1951. Moreover, the prison inmate Sam Smithwick—who was about to "talk" about Johnson's stolen 1948 election—was hung in his jail cell in 1952; Henry Marshall, the Agriculture Department official who was coming too close to exposing Johnson's ties to Billie Sol Estes, in 1961; and then the five others who were murdered at Johnson's behest in 1962, all to keep his name out of the breaking Estes scandals. The disappearance of Dale Turner, the "nanny" for Johnson and Madeleine Brown's son Steven was yet another, whose only transgression was witnessing Lyndon and Madeleine embracing one another, upsetting Johnson.

To the extent that he was capable of completing "investigations"—around the multiple roadblocks Johnson had erected, or the rigged determination of "suicide" or "accidental" by certain of the coroners and sheriffs he and his Texas Mafia controlled—the estimable Texas Ranger Clint Peoples was convinced that they were all murders directed by Lyndon Johnson. Still others will be examined forthwith, with the caveat that none of them have been proved to have been commissioned by Johnson—in fact, some of them occurred well after his death. Yet they were among many actions taken after he died that he didn't personally direct, but done through a "committee" of sorts that he had created to continue protecting his presidential eminence: An example, as noted elsewhere, were videos produced thirty years later, in 2003, which were attacked and forced off The History Channel on his behalf, by his ex-sycophantic aides, his widow and former Presidents Gerald Ford and Jimmy Carter.

Major Unsolved Deaths (Suicides/Accidents/Murders) Chronologically: After the Assassination

Penn Jones Begins the Death List

Penn Jones Jr. was the publisher, editor, and chief reporter of the *Midlothian Mirror* a small town weekly Texas newspaper, and practically the only liberal Democrat in a town of right-wing Republicans. Someone in that town disliked him intensely, as evidenced by the fact that in 1962 that person threw a firebomb into the newspaper's offices hoping to destroy its printing presses. Though it succeeded in burning much of the building and equipment, the paper was back in business quickly enough not to have missed a single edition of the paper.

Arguably the first JFK assassination researcher, or one of them, Jones developed a specialty of keeping track of the growing number of key witnesses, or others who had come into possession of certain secrets that the co conspirators decided were coming too close to the truth of what happened in Dallas. On November, 22, 1963, Jones went to Dallas, to the Trade Mart, to hear President John F. Kennedy speak. After hearing that Kennedy had been shot, he immediately rushed to Parkland Hospital. Jones spent several months investigating the death of Kennedy and wrote about the case in the *Midlothian Mirror*. According to John Simkin, proprietor of the *Education Forum*, Gary Mack (when he was still an independent, truth-seeking researcher of the case, which is to say prior to his being named to head the Sixth Floor Museum, where he became less independent) stated: "Penn was one of the first generation of researchers who felt the government was behind the assassination—probably a conspiracy involving military intelligence... . He always thought LBJ was behind it somehow."⁵²⁹ In 1966, Penn Jones published his collection of articles in the book *Forgive My Grief*. Mr. Simkin summarized this book as follows:⁵³⁰

The book was mainly a critique of the Warren Commission Report. He argued that the testimony of several witnesses suggested a conspiracy had taken place but this had been downplayed or ignored by the report. This included the evidence of Roger Craig, who was on duty in Dallas at the time John F. Kennedy was killed. Craig ran towards the Grassy Knoll where he interviewed witnesses to the shooting. About 15 minutes later he saw a man running from the back door of the Texas School Book Depository down the slope to Elm Street. He then got into a Nash station wagon. Craig saw the man again in the office of Captain Will Fritz. It was the recently arrested Lee Harvey Oswald. When Craig told his story about the man being picked up by the station wagon, Oswald replied: "That station wagon belongs to Mrs. Paine... . Don't try to tie her into this. She had nothing to do with it."

Forgive My Grief: Volume One also dealt with the deaths of several witnesses and investigators. This included the deaths of Dorothy Kilgallen, Bill Hunter, Jim Koethe, Tom Howard, Florence Pritchett Smith and Karyn Kupcinec. [Penn Jones Jr. wrote that] "Miss Kilgallen is the only journalist who was granted a private interview with Jack Ruby since he killed Lee Oswald. Judge Joe B. Brown granted the interview during the course of the Ruby trial in Dallas—to the intense anger of the hundreds of other news people present... . Also strangely, Miss Kilgallen's close friend, Mrs. Earl E.T. [Florence Pritchett] Smith, died two days after Miss Kilgallen. Mrs. Smith's autopsy read that the cause of death was unknown."

...

The book was criticised by some researchers as being “over speculative”. Warren Hinckle, the editor of *Ramparts* Magazine, also found it difficult to believe. He wrote: “The sleuths said he had discovered at least thirteen deaths that were mysteriously related to the assassination of President Kennedy.” Hinckle contacted John Howard Griffin: “Disbelieving, I had called John Howard Griffin, [a neighbor of Jones, and] asked if he knew this Penn Jones, and if so, what sort of a nut was he?” Griffin replied: “Penn’s a good fellow. He’s the scrappiest editor in Texas. If he says there’s been a series of deaths, I’m sure there’s substance to it.” Hinckle added: “John Griffin would say something nice about a man who had just run over him, but he would never misstate a fact, or give a false impression; if he took the King Tut’s curse in stride, then there had to be something to it.”

The irony of the mention of King Tut’s (King Tutankhamun) curse should be noted here because, according to Egyptologist Bob Brier of Long Island University, he was also murdered by his successor, Ay, who inherited the throne and became the new pharaoh. ****

A portion of the Penn Jones article “Disappearing Witnesses,” which appeared in *The Rebel* magazine in January 1984 is summarized below (The article is available on the Internet in its entirety, identifying one hundred people whose deaths were “too convenient” to be considered coincidence, at the Mae Brussell website referenced previously in this chapter).

On Sunday evening, November 24, 1963—the day that Jack Ruby killed Lee Harvey Oswald, Ruby’s roommate George Senator and a friend of his, Jim Martin, invited attorney Tom Howard and two newsmen, Bill Hunter of the *Long Beach California Press* and Jim Koethe of the *Dallas Times Herald* to the apartment that he and Ruby shared. Months later, Penn Jones asked Jim Martin what he thought about George Senator forgetting about that meeting when he testified before the Warren Commission on April 22, 1964, the exact same date that Bill Hunter was (supposedly “accidentally,” though the story kept changing) shot to death in a police station in Long Beach. Martin answered coyly that he didn’t think there was any conspiracy related to that coincidence. One of the things the reporter Hunter had written about regarding Jack Ruby’s shooting of Oswald was the fact that, according to Tom Howard, the lawyer who was there, two attorneys were on the scene immediately to talk to Ruby right after the shooting—they didn’t even have to chase an ambulance to get to him.⁵³¹

Tom Howard allegedly died of a heart attack in Dallas a few months after Hunter’s own death. Howard had been a friend of District Attorney Henry Wade. According to Penn Jones, “Howard arrived at the jail shortly after Ruby shot Oswald, asking to see his old friend. Howard was shown into a meeting room to see a bewildered Ruby, who had not asked for a lawyer. For the next two days—until Ruby’s brother, Earl, soured on him, and had Howard relieved—he was Jack Ruby’s chief attorney and public spokesman.”⁵³²

Howard told newsmen the case was a “once-in-a-lifetime chance” and had also corresponded with a national magazine about a proposal to write a chronicle of Oswald’s murder. Just before his own death, Howard had begun “acting strangely” and was taken to a hospital by an unknown person (clearly not a “friend”) and dropped off just as (or after) he died. No autopsy was performed yet the doctor signing the death certificate decided that he had died of a heart attack.⁵³³

Summary of a Select Few “Strange Deaths”

The people to be described next died in ways that were comparable to many others, as if certain models were being followed, each of which met certain distinctive patterns. The one thing all the decedents had in common was that they had become personally vulnerable to the resolute force of others holding very high offices in Washington, DC, by men who considered their priorities to be higher than the thresholds allowed by the self-imposed constraints ordinarily observed by about 99 percent of the population. In this case, a relative handful of men in those high government offices were either naturally sociopathic by birth or through intensive and rigorous, long-term training. They routinely ignored mere ethical, moral, or legal standards of conduct; these men’s careers had become intertwined with covert operations of the deadliest kind, including the assassination of foreign leaders whose political views were not congruent with official US government expectations.

In the following pages, we will examine certain of these “random” deaths in a bit more detail, to put the question of why they seem too coincidental into proper perspective. Author of *Crossfire: The Plot That Killed Kennedy* and numerous works of the science-fiction genre, Jim Marrs observed that the deaths were grouped around investigations conducted by the Warren Commission, the investigation by New Orleans District Attorney Jim Garrison, the Senate Intelligence Committee, and the House Select Committee on Assassinations. None of the supposed “suicides” to be considered here appears to have been self-initiated by the victims, if one puts their immediate family’s conclusions above all the “official reports,” yet nearly all of them were ultimately categorized as such. On closer examination, one finds many parallels between certain of these deaths; more importantly, each of the men and women who died (a relative handful, compared to the complete list of all possible candidates) had become caught in the periphery of the JFK assassination or in the middle of related and insidious cover-up actions for which they had become impediments, or threats. In the pages to follow, we will discover parallels between several of these designated “suicides.”

Grant Stockdale’s 1963 “Suicide”

Edward Grant Stockdale was a longtime close friend of Florida Senator and close friend of JFK George Smathers, and in 1949 Smathers introduced Stockdale to John Kennedy. In 1959 Stockdale became the director of the Kennedy’s Florida campaign. After Kennedy won the nomination in 1960, Stockdale actively campaigned for him in other states and also became a member of the Democratic Party’s National Finance Committee. In March, 1961, President Kennedy appointed Stockdale as the US ambassador to Ireland. He

resigned as ambassador after eighteen months and returned to the United States, for business problems and financial reasons.⁵³⁴ According to his obituary: “He said that when he quit the job to return to his real estate business, he found that the market had declined badly. And he spoke of the great expense of a large family. He had two sons and three daughters.”⁵³⁵

Stockdale and his friend George Smathers had formed a business partnership, Automatic Vending, which was involved in providing vending machines to government institutions. This business plan was copied by Bobby Baker when he started Serv-U Corp; before long, thanks to Baker’s position of deciding to which company the government vending machine contracts were to be awarded, Automatic Vending went out of business, at which point Stockdale became involved with Baker’s Serv-U Corporation. Bobby Baker was the primary partner, but he had the financial and “odd-jobs” wherewithal of a couple of pals from Las Vegas, Eddie Levinson and Ben Siegelbaum, well-known figures within the Mafiasi.

Grant Stockdale was more of a traditional “family man” than most of the others he became involved with and evidently he eventually began having misgivings about life in the fast lane with his new business partners. He was only one of the two (the other being Don Reynolds) men involved in business dealings with Baker, apparently, who were uneasy with the lascivious nature of Fred Black’s and Bobby Baker’s well-attended parties (which generally tended to turn into orgies after the stroke of midnight). After becoming involved with Baker in the Serv-U-Corp., he attended one of the celebrated Baker-arranged parties and declined to participate in more. According to Seymour M. Hersh, who interviewed Stockdale’s son Grant Stockdale Jr.⁵³⁶

He had joined Kennedy in 1962 at one of his private parties in the Carlyle Hotel in New York, and later told his son that “there were women, beautiful women there.” It was a world, Grant said of his father, “that was too fast for him. He was completely out of his league.” He did not go back.

Stockdale’s friendship with JFK, through his partner Senator Smathers, led to his being involved in campaign fund-raising on behalf of Kennedy. As part owner of Automatic Vending, Stockdale had benefited from the patronage of Johnson and Bobby Baker until Baker “put the squeeze” on him to close his company so that Baker could expand his, precisely the same methodology he had used with Ralph Hill, who had his own vending machine business; but Ralph wouldn’t fold. Both Grant Stockdale and Ralph Hill were upset about this turn of events and both had become dangerous to Lyndon Johnson.

For the sake of brevity the ongoing feud between businessman Ralph Hill and Lyndon Johnson’s protege Bobby Baker is merely summarized here, but it led to a major news story in October 1963 as a result of two Senate investigations into Lyndon Johnson’s connections to a plethora of scandals centered on his business partner Bobby Baker. Baker was not satisfied with what he regarded as insufficient “skim” from the vending machine businesses for two companies, one controlled by Ralph Hill, the other by Grant Stockdale and partners. His remedy was to drive those companies out of business so he could control

all of those contracts through his own company, sharing the skim only with Lyndon Johnson. One of the Senate investigations was being conducted by Delaware Senator John Williams, who was known as the “Conscience of the Senate” and in fulfilling his mission he began—and with considerable resolve, attempted to complete—an investigation into Baker’s performance as secretary of the Senate, originally begun when he worked for Lyndon Johnson, the “Master” of that body. His work was sidetracked more than once by Johnson and his cohorts in the mob and Bobby Baker was eventually imprisoned for his criminal acts while his partner in crime was awarded a five-year stint in the White House.

As all of that played out, in February 1964, inside Speaker of the House John McCormack’s office, the new President Lyndon Johnson stormed in—unaware of the presence of Robert Winter-Berger, who was taking notes—demanding, as he screamed profanities, that McCormack force Baker to “take the fall” in order to protect himself from going to jail. Johnson only calmed himself when he solved his own dilemma by telling Winter-Berger to have his associate Nathan Voloshen tell Baker that he would pay him \$1 million to do the prison time so he wouldn’t have to; all Baker had to do was keep his lips sealed about Johnson’s involvement.⁵³⁷ Baker eventually went to prison and presumably collected the \$1 million that Johnson had offered through Winter-Berger upon his release. Ralph Hill had obviously caused enormous irritation, and expense, to Lyndon Johnson, almost bringing him down. Johnson was only saved from prison time, practically at the last minute, when he ascended to the presidency upon Kennedy’s assassination and was then able to shut down the two Senate investigations directed squarely toward him. At this point, he was able to use a new tool to persuade his friends in the Senate: the threat of a constitutional crisis if he had been impeached and/or indicted. The mood of those senators had undoubtedly been that “the country had been through all it could handle, why kick the hornet’s nest?”

At least one of Stockdale’s new business associates, Ralph Hill, had managed to stay alive, probably as a result of his having been in the public eye through all the newspaper articles then being printed. But between the two of them—Grant Stockdale and Ralph Hill—it was Stockdale, friend of Senator Smathers and JFK, and chief fund-raiser for the Democratic National Committee, who was much better connected, therefore far more dangerous to Johnson, than the vending-machine-business-operator magnate Ralph Hill. And, after November 22, 1963, Stockdale became even more dangerous to Johnson, because his “level of knowledge” about that “fast lane” traveled by Johnson and Baker, and how they used the information they collected. Having become formally associated with his new boss Bobby Baker, he would also get to know Baker’s partners in the business; the descriptions of Stockdale’s solid reputation and personal discretion, and his morality—especially as compared to those of Baker and his new partners—lead one to infer that the new business paradigm with those partners had not been a good fit for him.

Stockdale, unfortunately for him, knew exactly what had been going on as a result of Baker’s (ergo Johnson’s) involvement with arranging the services of the lovely Ellen Rometsch for JFK. According to Seymour Hersh, J. Edgar Hoover told Kennedy in early November 1963, and Kennedy later confided to journalist Ben Bradlee, that Ellen Rometsch—who Bobby had quietly, and quickly, deported to Germany in August after the

news started breaking about her affairs with JFK and many other Washington politicians—now wanted to return to the United States to marry a Senate investigator, LaVern Duffy. The payoff previously given to her apparently wasn't sufficient to keep her content in what was then known as East Germany, at that time a rather bleak existence for the beautiful ex-call girl from Washington.⁵³⁸

To help keep Rometsch happy, and living in Germany, two or three weeks before he was assassinated, JFK had asked Stockdale (among several others) to raise \$50,000 in cash for him, "for personal use." This really put Stockdale on the spot, because Kennedy wanted him to "keep quiet" about who and what it was supposed to go to, which also meant that JFK wouldn't acknowledge it and—because Stockdale's friends knew that his own finances were then in poor condition therefore he was short of money at that same time—many of his normal sources refused to contribute because he would not tell them, and they could not know, who would really be using those funds, or for what purpose they would be used. Stockdale had a very difficult time trying to convince the donors that he didn't swindle the money from them for his personal use. Seymour Hersh, quoting Stockdale's son, Grant Stockdale Jr., wrote: "My father went around and collected money. I think he did it not believing that Kennedy wouldn't acknowledge it [as a loan or contribution] in some way. He couldn't believe it was so underhanded."⁵³⁹ Stockdale hated having to do it, considering his desperate need to shore up his own finances, but complied with Kennedy's request. But he still needed Kennedy to somehow allay the rumors that the funds were really for Stockdale himself. To have a witness, he took a friend with him to the Kennedy compound to deliver the money. "Kennedy said, 'thank you,' opened a nearby closet door, and threw the briefcase in there,' Grant [Jr.] was told. 'The closet was full of briefcases.'"⁵⁴⁰

After the assassination, the devastated Stockdale told everyone he had solicited for funds that they were really for Kennedy, but he had no proof and lost some important friendships. Grant Jr. also said that "his father 'was very worried about Bobby Baker. Why would my father be worried about Bobby Baker?'"⁵⁴¹

One must now ask, rhetorically at least, "Why would Grant Stockdale Sr. have been so worried about Bobby Baker," who was already under scrutiny and suddenly without any power whatsoever, a man then on his way to certain indictment and prison time. Clearly, his worries went beyond Bobby Baker: It was his connections to Johnson, through Baker, that exposed Stockdale not only to the financial scandals that had already started to break open, but his first hand knowledge of the sexual scandals involving Kennedy and Rometsch that were the real danger: Bobby Baker was merely the co-owner and manager of that enterprise called the Quorum Club, Johnson was the puppet master who set it up, and Grant Stockdale must have figured all of that out. Perhaps that explains why he must have felt he had to talk to Bobby and Ted Kennedy in the days immediately following JFK's assassination.

Grant Stockdale had been a close friend to JFK and the emotional shock of his death was the catalyst that caused him to go to Washington and tell everything he knew about what

he had found out about the assassination to Robert and Edward Kennedy. According to an article written by *Miami Herald* reporter John B. McDermott, titled “Stockdale into Irrational Mood,” Stockdale had tried to reach him on Sunday, December 1. “He wanted to tell me something—to talk things over.” Among the items McDermott reported were that on Saturday, November 23, 1963, Grant Stockdale flew to Washington, DC, after a call from Robert Kennedy. He returned that night, thinking he would be unable to get a ticket to the church for the funeral services. On Monday, November 25, Stockdale learned that a ticket had been reserved for him by the White House, but there was not enough time to get proper plane connections on time. On Tuesday, November 26, Stockdale flew up to Washington and talked with Robert and Edward Kennedy, and then flew back that night. Stockdale had mentioned to several people during the ten days before his death that “the world was closing in.” On Sunday, December 1, after attending services at St. Stephens Episcopal Church with his family, Stockdale had paused to speak with attorney William Frates. “He started talking,” Frates recalled Monday. “It didn’t make much sense. He said something about ‘those guys’ trying to get him. Then about the assassination. He said he wanted to talk to me—that he had already talked to Billy Gaither (another attorney).”⁵⁴² In his meetings with the Kennedys on November 26, 1963, Stockdale undoubtedly told them about the frauds he knew were being run by Johnson and Baker, because all of that was ultimately the cause of his problems and the real reason for his financial difficulties, which had now become further compounded as a result of the fact that he had collected \$50,000 from his friends, who now suspected he had done it for his own benefit, because he had nothing he could show them to prove that JFK had requested him to do it. Robert already knew that background, as he had been desperately trying to keep the scandals quiet throughout the last four months. Evidently, neither Robert nor Edward Kennedy offered to help Stockdale out of his financial dilemma, but at this point in time the futility of Grant Stockdale’s problems must have seemed small compared to the shock they were still experiencing.

Stockdale clearly was a person who was a very real threat to Johnson at this point. His “clean-living reputation” was anathema to Lyndon, since that made him, like Senators Curtis and Williams, “untouchable” and therefore a threat to the conspiracy cover-up with which Johnson was then obsessed. Although Johnson could control some of the Senate committees through the Democratic chairmen, he could not stop anyone going to Senators Curtis or Williams, both men who lived—apparently, a nearly unique trait in Washington—a clean and scandal-free life, and were therefore not susceptible to LBJ’s threats or blackmail. But the real threat to Johnson was not the senators, it was Stockdale himself. There was never a potentially explosive risk that Johnson had not anticipated in advance, such was the mind of an inveterate and meticulous, conniving planner and master manipulator. Johnson still had access to his hit man, Malcolm Wallace, of course; Wallace’s whereabouts in the week or so after JFK’s assassination is not known, so to say he had anything to do with it, or perhaps someone else, is mere speculation, left here for the reader to ponder.

Yet the fact is Edward Grant Stockdale died at the age of forty-eight when he either jumped, or was shoved, from his office window in downtown Miami on December 2, 1963

—ten days after the JFK assassination. According to newspaper accounts in the *Miami Herald* and *Miami News*, at 10:00 a.m. on that Monday morning, he went to his office on the thirteenth floor of the Alfred I. Dupont Building, in Miami. His secretary, LaVerne Weingartner, who usually opened the office, was delayed and would not arrive until 10:30 a.m. Stockdale went into a law office across the hall from his and asked Mrs. Mary Ruth Hauser how he could get a key to unlock his office door. She offered to call the building manager to send someone to open it. Mrs. Hauser stated, “He followed me into my office and stood there while I called down for a key. *He stood there very calmly. He didn’t seem at all agitated...* . [Emphasis added.] Somehow the subject of the President’s death came up... . He told me he was in his office when his wife called to tell him the President had been shot. He said he just got down on his knees and prayed.” Stockdale and Mrs. Hauser were still talking when someone came to unlock his door. She started to follow him across the hall, but just then her office phone started ringing and she returned to answer it. Mrs. Hauser said, “It couldn’t have been five minutes later that there was this terrible thud... . I just wonder if I had gone right behind him... . I don’t know, I guess it wouldn’t have made any difference. The whole world has just gone mad.”⁵⁴³ All of the people who saw and spoke to Stockdale on his way to work said that he had been in good spirits, waving and saying hello. He stopped for a shoe shine, and spoke to the elevator operator and the parking garage attendant. His friend George Smathers claimed that it had been an accumulation of grief and worry that had driven Stockdale to suicide. Others, including his son and other family members did not think he would take his own life and, citing the people who stated that he was in good spirits, believe that he was murdered.⁵⁴⁴

At this point, the call could go either way, suicide or homicide. One thing is certain though: Grant Stockdale rued the day he gave up his business and threw in with Lyndon Johnson, Bobby Baker, and the mobsters who became their partners. Had Grant Stockdale not become involved with life in the fast lane, had he never met Ellen Rometsch and the other party girls, had he never known how Bobby Baker (ergo, Lyndon Johnson) had been instrumental in setting up liaisons for JFK with Ms. Rometsch, and had he never been exposed to the financial shenanigans and other corruption—extortion and bribery—and not been forced out of his own business and swallowed up in theirs, he would never have come to know so much about the real forces at work behind the assassination of John F. Kennedy.

Whether he ended his own life by jumping, or if someone was sent there to give him the assist through the window, there was but a single pertinent thread between life and death for him, and that thread would have broken regardless of who opened the window. Because even if Grant Stockdale took his own life, then it is axiomatic that the reason he did it was because he knew he could no longer live with himself as a result of the taint of criminality he had brought onto himself by his association with Lyndon Johnson, through Bobby Baker. His own rectitude was on the line, put there implicitly on the thread connecting him directly to the Johnson-Baker partnership in crime; he must have felt tremendously guilty about something much greater than his own deeds—of which there is nothing that remotely indicates his own complicity in any criminal acts, certainly nothing that should have made him feel so dejected or guilty about that might lead him to take his

own life. As Seymour Hersh wrote in his last sentence of the chapter he wrote on this subject, “His son still wants to know why Kennedy needed the money.” The last sentence of the penultimate paragraph of that chapter reads, “Why would my father be worried about Bobby Baker?”⁵⁴⁵ The answers to these two poignant questions should now be clear to one and all.

The 1964 Murder of Mary Pinchot Meyer

In *LBJ: The Mastermind of the JFK Assassination*, the story leading up to the murder of Mary Meyer was drawn; it showed the clear connection between her murder, as planned and executed at the highest levels of the CIA, including her own ex-husband Cord Meyer. That story was condensed from a number of other sources, most importantly by the book written by the son of another CIA official involved in the plot, Wistar Janney. His son, Peter Janney, with passionate courage and candor, wrote the definitive book, *Mary’s Mosaic*, on that sordid piece of American history. The following synopsis of that story will complete the circle and examine the remaining mystery surrounding her death.

The headline in the *Washington Post* on October 14, 1964, read:

**WOMAN PAINTER SHOT AND KILLED ON CANAL TOWPATH IN CAPITAL—
MRS. MARY PINCHOT MEYER WAS A FRIEND OF MRS. KENNEDY, SUSPECT IS
ARRAIGNED**

Mary Meyer had been shot once in the head and once in the chest at 12:45 in the afternoon of October 12, 1964, as she walked along the Old Chesapeake and Ohio (C&O) Canal towpath in the Georgetown section of Washington. A friend told reporters that she often walked there, occasionally with her friend Jacqueline Kennedy. The death of Mary Meyer came only two weeks after the Warren Commission Report was released. She bought a copy of the Warren Report the day it was released and as she started reading it she became more and more furious. She knew it was an outrageous whitewash, no doubt a product of disinformation from the FBI and CIA and virtually devoid of any truth. She confided to her friends that she was considering revealing the real truth as she knew it, some of it already documented in her diary. As Nina Burleigh described it in *A Very Private Woman*, Mary Meyer had become insinuated into JFK’s presidential deliberations and was herself of a serious mind, while being gregarious enough to avoid becoming burdensome. More than any of his other lovers, Burleigh believed that Mary would have been most likely to have substantive discussions with him regarding such things as civil rights and peace initiatives.⁵⁴⁶

Peter Janney wrote that Mary’s death touched him personally at the time of the murder because his best friend as a boy had been Meyer’s younger son, Michael, who had been killed in 1956 after being hit by a car at the same spot where his dog had been run over the previous year. He had known the family for several years before that and through the ensuing years as a result of his own parents being friends with the Meyers. Janney’s work provides contextual background of the characters behind the many names and the most plausible explanation of the “who, what, when, and where” details of how Mary Meyer met her death along the towpath of the C&O Canal just below Canal Road in Georgetown.

Janney portrays Cord Meyer thusly: “Insensitive and dismissive, Cord was arrogantly patronizing and never fun to be around.”⁵⁴⁷ On a fishing trip to the Potomac River with his boyhood friend Michael Meyer and his father Cord and Jim Angleton, the godfather of all three Meyer boys, Janney and Michael took turns climbing out on a jetty of rocks, trying to snag herring: “Cord’s demeanor that day had been as intimidating as it was uncomfortable. He and Angleton spent most of the time criticizing our techniques. Already self-conscious, I had to watch my every move lest I provoke one of Cord’s or Angleton’s withering stares. Truth be told, I never liked Cord. Michael feared his father, inasmuch as telling me so. His dread of his father was such a contrast to the connection he had with his mother.”⁵⁴⁸

Janney reveals that Mary’s husband Cord Meyer (until their divorce in the late 1950s) was in charge of Operation Mockingbird, the CIA’s program of feeding its propaganda through numerous syndicated columnists, book publishers, and the major newspapers and television networks. After their divorce, Cord moved his offices to London, the base from which, according to E. Howard Hunt’s “deathbed confession,” the JFK assassination plan initiated by Lyndon Johnson was executed by Meyer with the assistance of many of his colleagues from Langley, including James J. Angleton and Bill Harvey.⁵⁴⁹

Janney’s book describes in detail how the DC Metropolitan Police, with some consulting from men highly placed within the CIA—including Janney’s own father, Wistar Janney—manipulated an illiterate and disheveled black man, Ray Crump, into being framed for the mysterious murder in ways similar to those used to frame Lee Harvey Oswald. Janney shows that the reason Mary Meyer was murdered was because those same men learned that she was about to publicly renounce the Warren Report as a sham. These same men knew that she had kept a private diary that would prove her relationship with President Kennedy, including possible national secrets. Ironically, in their married days in the 1950s, she and her husband Cord were friends with many of these same men. But friendships with these dangerous men, who seemed to be truly “beyond the law,” were tenuous at best and subject to immediate dissolution in a most violent way.

No one really knows what Mary Pinchot Meyer possibly discovered during her encounters with Kennedy in the White House. How much of it was written down in her diary will likely never be known for sure either. It would have all been kept a secret but for the fact that eventually, in 1976, Ben Bradlee fired James Truitt, who was the husband of Ann Truitt, a friend of Mary Meyer and her sister Antoinette (Tony) Bradlee, who was married to Ben. Five months before the assassination, and shortly after the CEO of the *Washington Post*, Phil Graham had drunkenly grabbed the microphone in a convention hall in Phoenix, and began telling a ballroom full of news reporters about JFK’s affair with Mary Meyer, James Truitt had sent a chartered jet to Phoenix to pick up Graham and send him back to Washington, to be admitted to a psychiatric hospital. Bradlee had become upset with Truitt, for unclear reasons, and forced him to take an assignment in Tokyo, where he and his wife were when Mary Meyer was murdered. Things went from bad to worse for Truitt and he was furious when Bradlee finally fired him. In retaliation, he gave an interview to the *National Enquirer*. The irony of Truitt giving the story to that tabloid

paper would not have been lost on Bradlee, the editor-in-chief of the *Washington Post*. Truitt revealed for the first time (aside from Phil Graham's unfortunate rant in Phoenix) how Mary Pinchot Meyer had had an affair with JFK sporadically in the White House and stated that Mary Meyer told his wife, Ann Truitt, all about it, including the fact that Mary was keeping notes about it in her diary. In fact, Mary Meyer had asked Ann Truitt to find the diary "if anything ever happened to me."⁵⁵⁰ Since Ann Truitt was living in Tokyo at the time of the murder she phoned Ben Bradlee at his home and asked him if he had found the diary. Bradlee, who claimed he was unaware of his sister-in-law's affair with Kennedy, said he knew nothing about the diary. He later recalled what he did after Truitt's phone call: "We didn't start looking until the next morning, when Tony and I walked around the corner a few blocks to Mary's house. It was locked, as we had expected, but when we got inside, we found Jim Angleton, and to our complete surprise he told us he, too, was looking for Mary's diary."⁵⁵¹

The crime scene strongly suggested that Mary Meyer had been killed by a professional hit man. The first bullet was fired point-blank at the back of the head. She did not die immediately and was able to scream out and fight briefly with the killer. No forensic evidence was found on Crump to indicate he had been involved in a struggle with Mary. A second shot was fired into the heart. In both cases, the gun was inches away from Mary's body when it was fired. To complicate things for the prosecution, police tests were unable to show that Crump had fired a gun of any sort since there was no trace of nitrates on his hands or clothes. Despite an extensive search of the entire towpath and canal area, that took two days and forty police officers, no gun was found. The search included draining the canal near the murder scene and a search by police scuba divers of the river nearby.

Operation Mockingbird, the CIA's program to enlist journalists and publishers as its direct outlets to the public's ears and eyes, was immediately invoked and articles were planted in leading newspapers about the murder of Mary Meyer. The motive of Raymond Crump put forth by the prosecution was supposed to be that he had exposed himself to her, because his fly was allegedly open when he was arrested. She screamed when she realized she was about to be murdered, and it would have certainly startled anyone into taking evasive action, including running from the scene. But then, the story goes, this man—whose own story, of being on the scene for the purposes of drinking, fishing, and having sex with his girlfriend along the C&O towpath, seemed more believable—supposedly proceeded to kill Mary by shooting her point-blank, once in the head and another through the heart, the patterns usually left by a trained assassin. After shooting her twice he then disposed of the gun so effectively that an entire platoon of policemen was not able to find it, even after dragging the riverbed in the process of looking for it. And after doing this, he then waited around, relaxing patiently while the police were summoned to come and arrest him. Mr. Crump did not even realize—unlike Lee Harvey Oswald, Sirhan Sirhan, or James Earl Ray had—that he had been played as a "patsy."

The trial judge was Howard Corcoran, the brother of Lyndon Johnson's old friend Tommy Corcoran, a legendary Washington congressional lobbyist whose name was associated with cigars, smoky backrooms, and the clinking of ice in whiskey glasses—and

envelopes stuffed with cash. Howard had been appointed to the bench by Johnson soon after he became president. There was no question that Howard, like so many other powerful men in Washington, was under Lyndon B. Johnson's complete control. His decision to insist that Mary's private life not be mentioned in court was very important in disguising the possible motive for the murder. Likewise no one on the jury knew of her ex-husband's long career with the CIA, nor did the readers of the *Washington Post* or any other newspaper in the country.

Raymond Crump was found not guilty of the charges against him through the diligent efforts of his court-appointed attorney, Dovey Roundtree, much to the chagrin of the many people who thought that the case against him was a "slam dunk" as a result of the set up designed, apparently, by professionals. The newspaper reporters generally got the message through the Mockingbird channel that Crump had gotten off because he had a clever lawyer, but the fact was that the case against Crump was extremely weak. The case remains officially unsolved, one of the "coldest cases" in the lengthy list of such homicides, both inside and outside of the Washington Beltway.

Peter Janney's original courageous and poignant research for his book *Mary's Mosaic*, provides many answers to the question of who murdered Mary Meyer: His realization that his own father's involvement—with help from others within the agency he worked for—was painstakingly revealed in that book.

Malcolm "Mac" Wallace

There are multiple references to Mac Wallace throughout this book concerning his involvement in crimes committed on behalf of Lyndon Johnson. He was made a permanent member of Johnson's "family" in 1951 when Johnson, with help from his criminal lawyer Ed Clark, pressured Wallace to kill Doug Kinser. Wallace's "license to kill" was best illustrated by that murder, for which a jury found him guilty and Johnson proved his power over him by "fixing" the judge and jury to give him a term of five years, which was then immediately suspended, and changed to merely five years of probation. According to an article published in *The Texas Observer* by Bill Adler on November 7, 1986, Mac Wallace and Cliff Carter worked together for at least a decade and had been seen together at many functions during the 1960 presidential election campaign.

Wallace was given employment in some defense industry corporations through Johnson's power, as previously noted, despite his long history of crime. This enabled Johnson to keep him "on retainer" and available to serve on an "as-needed" basis, with additional compensation paid on the side. That fact would have automatically put his name on multiple agency files, including especially those at FBI headquarters. Yet, those files have never been released to the public despite many years of attempts by long time JFK assassination researchers, the most prominent of which was the late Jay Harrison, who, as a Dallas police reserve officer, rushed to the Texas School Book Depository within minutes of the assassination. Harrison continued his career in the Dallas Police Department and, until his death in 2003, continued his research into the JFK assassination, compiling an extensive set of files.

One of Harrison's efforts was to participate with the French researcher and author William Reymond in the production of an untitled video made, along with fellow JFK researcher Tom Bowden (the former part-owner and manager of The Conspiracy Museum in Dallas), that was shown to a number of visitors to that museum in 2003, including a few dozen people who saw it on November 22, 2003. The video had no titling of any sort, or credits, so its ownership is unclear. It appeared during the same period that a lengthier French version was widely sold that complemented a book concurrently published by the French publisher Flammarion, titled *JFK: Le Dernier Témoin* (*JFK: The Last Witness*).⁵⁵² The book was written by the same French researcher who appeared in the video, William Reymond, and listed Billie Sol Estes as a co-author. The video featured, among other things, an interview by Mr. Reymond with the late researcher Jay Harrison, who described the way the FBI "investigation" was being conducted in the weeks immediately after the assassination. Harrison said that sixty FBI agents from other offices around the country, with their secretaries, moved into Dallas to do their investigations but all of it was directed from Washington, including the questions they should ask of each witness.

Similar scenes were described by many witnesses as noted previously. It was clear that orders were given to allow no deviations in the conduct of the interviews; it was no different than how the entire "investigation" was handled, including the FBI, the Secret Service, and Warren Commission staff. In many cases the "investigators" were instructed to act very aggressively, sometimes even forcefully, to certain witnesses: This was illustrated by a Dallas Secret Service agent named Elmer Moore, who admitted years later that "he had been ordered to tell Dr. Perry to change his testimony.' Moore said that in threatening Perry, he acted on orders from Washington and Mr. Kelly of the Secret Service Headquarters... . Moore [admitted that he] 'badgered Dr. Perry into making a flat statement that there was no entry wound in the [front of the] neck ... [and, Moore continued] I regret what I had to do with Dr. Perry' ... [but] he had been given 'marching orders from Washington... . *I did everything I was told, we all did everything we were told, or we'd get our heads cut off.*'"⁵⁵³ [Emphasis added.]

Jay Harrison also described, in the same interview with William Reymond, his decades-long fight to obtain the FBI records of Lyndon Johnson's hit man, Malcolm "Mac" Wallace. His efforts to get Wallace's FBI file started in 1998, after the news that JFK researchers had identified Wallace as the person whose fingerprint had finally been identified, thirty-five years after it had been found on a box in the "sniper's nest" on the afternoon of November 22, 1963:

[JH] "Well, for eight years, I tried to get the [FBI] files ... all I got was "No Files," "No Files," "No Files," "No Files," (etc.)... . I've been using every possible way to do them (FOIA requests) ... so there were other places to go and I went to one of the other places [apparently, copies that had been kept by his employer, the Dallas Police Department].

When he finally got copies, they were almost completely redacted, page after page of blacked-out paragraphs. Shortly before his (alleged) death, Mac Wallace had pressured his bosses at L&G Oil Company in Longview, Texas, for a raise, based on his "past

performance.” Two of the owners of this corporation were Ed Clark and Lyndon Johnson, who were probably growing increasingly concerned about Wallace’s knowledge and involvement in a long list of previous murders and pondering whether there was any further need of his services. Mac Wallace reportedly died on January 9, 1971, when his car ran off (or was run off) the road near Pittsburgh, Texas. It has long been rumored that the “accident” was facilitated by socks stuffed into the car’s tailpipe in order to produce an abundance of carbon monoxide inside the car; its steering system and brakes had supposedly been tampered with as well, according to this rumor.

Another, conflicting, rumor has it that Wallace was later seen in Las Vegas, just like another enigmatic figure, John Liggett, whose story awaits. Suffice it to say for now that Liggett, whose work as a highly skilled mortician made him somewhat of an expert in the field, had claimed that it was not unusual for him to be asked by a US Marshal to supply a corpse for the purpose of staging an accident, to make a person “disappear” into a witness protection program (of sorts) by faking their death.⁵⁵⁴ It is probably no coincidence that Cliff Carter had been appointed by Johnson to be a US Marshal, knowing that Carter was very obedient to Johnson’s requests, or orders, to perform whatever deed he might request. Johnson’s much-practiced technique for getting “his men” to commit greater and greater criminal acts was to start out with minor ones, then using those as a sort of unstated (or forcefully stated, as in the case of Billie Sol Estes) threat, he would pressure them to go to the next level, and so on until he got them into the compromised position he needed them to be in.

Regardless of when and how Mac Wallace died, and whether he is dead even now, he had been taught well by Lyndon Johnson to “compartmentalize” the worst of his deeds. Since Wallace was also a sociopath, just like Johnson, he didn’t need too much instruction given that the key distinction of sociopaths is that they have no conscience to guide their behavior to begin with. The two aides he picked for those assignments—Mac Wallace and Cliff Carter—had long understood that they had compromised themselves in such a way that prevented either of them from ever leaving his employ. It doubtlessly also compromised their own lives, to the point that Lyndon Johnson had to ensure that neither of them would outlive himself, with the possible exception of Wallace, if his death could be “staged” so that he was effectively, though not literally, dead. But that wasn’t the case with Cliff Carter, who Johnson knew had a conscience that he had suppressed for over two decades and something would have to be done to ensure that it would never be allowed to be explored by anyone else.

Cliff Carter

An illustration of one of the more benign, routine responsibilities assigned to Cliff Carter is reflected in a memo I found in the vice presidential files at the LBJ Library. It was written on June 24, 1963, by Walter Jenkins, on behalf of Lyndon Johnson, to Carter, laying out the procedure for him to follow to investigate anyone who wrote a “letter to the editor” that Johnson might consider “mean.”⁵⁵⁵ This memo also reveals another dimension of Johnson’s fabled insecurities and shows how his sensitivity to any criticism at all might lead to ever more severe retaliation to anyone who might criticize him.

MEMORANDUM:

TO: Cliff

FROM: Walter

Mr. Johnson asked me to give you the following message:

“I want every mean letter put in a separate file. Then I want Cliff to check the county man and see who the author is so we can make some determination about them. On every mean letter to the editor, I want to get Cliff to write a reply—as Jack Valenti has been doing from Houston.

“Have Cliff call Houston Harte about the letter from San Angelo and tell him I don’t know what good it is going to do to get the warehouse conversion that we have been working hard on for San Angelo and then have them publish these mean letters. *They ought to require the writers to buy an ad. Some of the Houston papers have cut out taking them and the Times Herald has done so in Dallas. Get Cliff to send each mean letter to his man and find out why they are writing such things.*” [Emphasis added to illustrate and underscore the vindictiveness of Johnson even with respect to how independent newspapers chose to print letters from their readers.]

Johnson evidently liked Carter’s bluntness and way with words, as I also discovered at the LBJ Library: Carter wrote a memo to LBJ describing his visit with the journalist, John Mashek, during the Cuban missile crisis—which, until now, was widely viewed as something the Kennedys handled with little assistance from the vice president—on October 26, 1962:⁵⁵⁶

I talked to him about the important work you were doing with the National Security Council... . Also I was able to get him stirred some on Cox’s “pork barrel” statement about the Trinity River improvement and told him it was shameful that a little pipsqueak like Cox would be back there biting at your heels *while you were working every waking hour on the international situation.* [Emphasis added, though it was nonetheless implicitly there in the original.]

Clifton Crawford Carter, Johnson’s designated “black bag” man, “dirty tricks” instigator—and liaison with Mac Wallace in a number of murders before November 22, 1963, was, according to Billie Sol Estes, a key facilitator in the assassination cover-up immediately after that date. Carter was indebted to Johnson for his patronage—Johnson had nominated Carter as a US Marshal for the Southern District in 1949 even though he was uninterested in the job and had no law enforcement experience whatsoever—and Johnson clearly used him for the “dirty work” involved in his shady maneuvers, beginning with helping Johnson steal the 1948 Senate election. Other tasks Johnson would assign to Carter were exemplified by a comment that he once made, bragging that he had a “file seven inches thick” on the un-American activities of one of Bobby Kennedy’s campaign supporters,⁵⁵⁷ no doubt including much material from the files of J. Edgar Hoover. Based on the totality of the assertions previously noted, Carter was involved in increasingly brazen illegal activities on behalf of Johnson, leading up to the murder of JFK.

According to Walter Jenkin's oral history at the Johnson Library, Johnson paid a number of his assistants, including Clifton Carter, out of his own pocket to supplement any government pay they might have received.⁵⁵⁸ Mac Wallace would undoubtedly have been another whose pay was supplemented by Johnson since his "job responsibilities" went well beyond those enumerated in his position description, either while on the government's payroll or that of the private companies in which Johnson had secured his continued employment. Johnson had assigned his most vindictive tasks—as well as the immoral or illegal activities involving the payoffs and the retributions to enemies up to and including murder—to Cliff Carter and Mac Wallace.

Cliff Carter was one of those aides who was 100 percent loyal to the charming but brutal, narcissistic but generous Lyndon B. Johnson. Cliff Carter had gradually learned to hide his regrets and forget his criminal actions and that worked for a while, all the way through the assassination of Kennedy. After that Johnson wanted to keep him at arm's length, still connected enough to watch him but not so close that anyone else, particularly news reporters, would do so. Johnson had Carter appointed executive director of the Democratic National Committee and chief fund-raiser for the President's Club, a subsidiary that targeted only the wealthiest donors, through \$1,000 memberships that were sold with the clear message that the purchase price included the ultimate in political influence: "Members are assured of a direct relationship with President Johnson." Carter resigned from the DNC in 1966, after ethical questions were raised about his fund-raising techniques; the questions seemed to come directly from the president himself, as a result of a growing distrust, or fear of how much Carter knew about the darkest secrets.⁵⁵⁹

The depth of Cliff Carter's loyalty to Lyndon Johnson is reflected in the tone underlying the words he committed to posterity; his own unlimited support for Johnson, unfettered by morally based boundaries, is implicitly stated in practically all of his utterances as well. Despite the loyalty of Carter to Johnson, there was apparently no reciprocity to that sentiment. Johnson told Arthur Krim as much when he talked the New York lawyer and Hollywood mogul into taking over the Democratic National Committee's campaign finance organization to make sure that it was properly controlled. Johnson had previously moved Carter to that committee but was disappointed in his fund-raising abilities and came to distrust him, thinking that he was taking a "skim" off the contributions that were made, just as Johnson himself had done. Krim reluctantly accepted Johnson's request to go to the DNC and first perform an audit of the operations; he mentions that in his oral history interview with Michael L. Gillette.⁵⁶⁰

Gillette (Michael L.): Do you think he was exaggerating the mismanagement of the committee?

Krim (Arthur): No, he wasn't, as I found out later. But he was exaggerating—not exaggerating, but he did have an undercurrent of suspicion of dishonesty in certain quarters and I never found evidence of that. Sloppiness, yes.

G: To what extent do you think it was a question of him feeling that he didn't have control of the committee?

K: Well, a large extent. First of all, he didn't trust Dick Maguire, whom I had worked with very closely in the Kennedy Administration, and I did trust Dick and I liked him. But Johnson had the same feeling there that he had had during the 1964 campaign about Kenny O'Donnell and Mike [Myer] Feldman, and that is that they were just living out the days but not really loyal to him. He had that feeling about Dick Maguire.

But his main worry was about Cliff Carter. [Emphasis added.] Cliff had been with LBJ for many years and I had only just met Cliff. To me Cliff was a lovely man. I got to know his wife, too. I think everybody who knew Cliff liked him as a person. A very decent man, but accident-prone in politics. Johnson was just so afraid of scandal. I mean, he felt people thought of him as the kind of president who would misuse the office of the presidency and would sell it, and that the press would be watching with magnifying glasses to exaggerate even the smallest kind of evidence of selling the presidency. He was afraid that Cliff would put him in that kind of position. I heard that many times after this meeting, and he wanted to leave the presidency with the image of integrity in financial matters.

So he gave me that mandate that night and I did move in on the committee. I spent a lot of time in an unofficial capacity with all of them, starting with that period. I had not really been involved with the committee since the assassination of President Kennedy two years before this. But I moved back in and had an office again there and all that kind of thing.

Krim's reference to JFK's assassination "two years before this" indicates that this incident would have taken place in late 1965 or early in 1966. This insight into Johnson's paranoia at this point suggests that he was very concerned about Cliff Carter's knowledge about his own secrets. Johnson's mental state at this point has already been established to have manifested itself in extreme paranoia and depression, with bouts of psychotic behavior. That would have caused Johnson extreme worry. Considering that his mental condition remained untreated until a year or two after he had retired, those worries about Cliff Carter would have grown as well. The above words, taken directly from Arthur Krim, vividly described Johnson's primary fear: a "scandal" of some sort regarding Carter. Lyndon Johnson was concerned about wanting to leave the presidency with "the image of integrity" (as contrasted to the reality) and for some reason, he was afraid that Carter would "spill his guts" at some point, probably because he recognized that Cliff had a conscience, which he could never understand completely because, as a sociopath, he had never known what that was exactly, other than a nuisance that impeded practically everyone else.

This is a most intriguing interview regardless of how you read it, but it undeniably confirms Johnson's deep-seated fears about Cliff Carter and whether he could continue to be trusted not to expose the darkest secrets. Moreover, Krim's comment that Cliff Carter was "a lovely man ... everybody who knew Cliff liked him as a person," suggests that he was generally liked by most people, which in turn suggests that he actually had a normal conscience; most people qualifying for that description would have sustained serious

psychic damage after being involved with criminal activity on the scale of facilitating multiple murders, to say nothing of the assassination of a president. I have spoken to a man who knew Carter in the 1963–64 period (having even sat with him watching the man’s brother and Cliff’s son Lyndon Carter play Little League baseball) who said that he was a genial and polite person. But the person I spoke with, who wishes to remain anonymous, also told a paradoxical story about a play-off game that Lyndon Carter was taken out of, after pitching the maximum number of innings. The emotions had risen so much that he left the bleachers and went underneath to get away from it, running into Cliff Carter, the presidential adviser, chain-smoking cigarettes to calm himself. Perhaps he had more worries on his mind than his son’s win or loss that day.

Billie Sol Estes named two witnesses, Kyle Brown and Tom Bowden, who had listened to his tape recordings of Cliff Carter and Malcolm Wallace, both of whom affirmed that Estes’s description of the recordings was accurate. Brown had also stated on video that as a young man he often carried cash—\$50,000 to \$100,000—between Estes and Carter, to be delivered to Lyndon Johnson. Brown affirmed that Cliff Carter had become very remorseful about his dealings with Johnson, and he wanted to clear his conscience at one of these meetings where he also warned Estes that Johnson had become more and more paranoid.⁵⁶¹

Given that some of the dirtiest duties fell within Cliff Carter’s normal span of operations, he was naturally used to manipulate anyone else that needed direction. One of these was Henry Wade, the Dallas district attorney, who would get three calls from Cliff Carter the evening of November 22. *“He said that President Johnson felt any word of a conspiracy—some plot by foreign nations—to kill President Kennedy would shake our nation to its foundation Washington’s word to me was that it would hurt foreign relations if I alleged a conspiracy—whether I could prove it or not. I would just charge Oswald with plain murder and go for the death penalty. So, I went down to the Police Department at City Hall to see Captain Fritz—to make sure the Dallas police didn’t involve any foreign country in the assassination.”*⁵⁶² Thus, within hours of the assassination, as LBJ was repeatedly warning of the possibility of a foreign conspiracy, the order was sent out to stop any talk of such a thing.

Considering everything we have learned about the criminal, even murderous, activities that he had performed on Lyndon’s behalf, it is axiomatic that, being a man who had to suppress his conscience for decades, Cliff Carter would have had feelings of guilt that needed to be assuaged. Johnson would have looked for any sign of compassion, or worse, sorrow and regret, on Carter’s or Wallace’s part; it would have doubtlessly been very distressing to him.

Cliff had made contact with Billie Sol Estes in late December 1963 at the Driskill Hotel in Austin, and the two of them met there with Mac Wallace. Carter and Wallace told Estes enough for him to know that they were involved in the assassination. Furthermore, it was made clear that none of them were to talk about it or any of the other murders. Estes wrote that he had “pledged my silence” and asked Carter to relay to Johnson his appeal to “make things right” with him. Carter told him that Lyndon would do that, but it would take some

time to fulfill his promises to him and that he would have to take the prison term, but that eventually he would receive a presidential pardon. Estes told Carter about his telephone recordings that he had stored away in a secret place, though he did not use that to coerce Johnson into doing anything other than doing no harm to his family. Later, in August 1971, he had his last conversation with Cliff Carter, who by then was very remorseful about his own involvement with Johnson's use of him to carry out the murders of a number of people. Carter admitted to him that Johnson had abused the trust Carter had given to him because he had believed in Johnson's "vision" for the country and that had somehow justified his use of force to attain those goals; by then, with Johnson out of power and trying to adjust to life down on the ranch, Carter witnessed the decline in Johnson's mental state, saying that he refused to even get his hair cut and it had grown "as long as the hippies he used to hate." Estes said that Carter even admitted, "Lyndon should not have authorized Mac to kill the president."⁵⁶³

Cliff Carter died in Alexandria, Virginia, in September 1971, from what was reportedly a case of pneumonia, for which, according to Texas author Penn Jones, "no penicillin could be found" anywhere in Washington. However, Billie Sol Estes stated this was not true in a book co-authored by William Reymond, *JFK: Le Dernier Témoin (JFK: The Last Witness)*, never published in English, but translated into four other languages. He said that Carter had not died in a Washington hospital of pneumonia. That, he said, was the story perpetrated by the "Johnson clan" (i.e., his "extended family") but the true story was told by Carter's secretary, who claimed in a video shown at The Conspiracy Museum in Dallas, produced by the authors of that same book, which claimed that he first "disappeared" before his body was found in a "cheap Virginia motel."⁵⁶⁴ That portion of the book, and Billie Sol's comments on the untitled video, stated that this happened just thirty-six hours after Carter had repeated to him his guilt feelings. The author has had the book translated and the following is representative of what Estes and Reymond wrote regarding that visit, edited only to rephrase the French into standard English sentence structure while retaining the essence of the narrative cited. Billie Sol Estes said in this book that Cliff Carter had called him at the end of August 1971, his voice weaker, and that he seemed psychologically ill as he asked him if he could come to his house for a visit. Carter was in Texas on business and was then working as a lobbyist, having left the Democratic National Committee five years earlier because Johnson had wanted someone with better political connections to wealthy people, which he got when he replaced Carter with Arthur Krim, as noted previously.⁵⁶⁵ According to the interview with Arthur Krim, Johnson had growing suspicions of Carter.

Within the French book and video, it is clear that by 1971 Johnson had become very paranoid about threats to his "legacy" and Cliff Carter was considered by him as his main threat. When Carter arrived for the meeting with Estes in late August 1971, he apologized for all the time that Billie Sol had to spend in prison and stated that Lyndon Johnson had become "really paranoid," fearing that his legacy would be compromised by his past crimes. He also told Estes that Johnson's drinking had greatly increased, implying that he was drunk most of the time and his psychological state was worse than ever. Carter further

admitted that Johnson had used the Vietnam War not for the purposes espoused but for his own “personal enrichment.”

After asking him if he “was going to get your tape recorder” (which Billie Sol had already started before Carter arrived at his home), Carter also asked Estes if he still had the recordings that he had made of their conversations and they discussed the strange accumulation of “accidents” that had taken place, particularly the oddities of the one-car accident that purportedly took the life of their mutual friend Mac Wallace just a few months previous to that meeting.

The circumstances of the death of Cliff Carter are as strange as Mac Wallace’s, because even before the Johnson family announced his death and funeral plans, Cliff’s secretary had described his death differently than the story told by the Johnsons. Rather than dying of pneumonia in a Virginia hospital, she said he first disappeared and efforts to find him were unsuccessful until his body was discovered in a Virginia motel. It seems that it was a kind of final justice that he died as mysteriously as many others who had been involved in the “Kennedy conundrum.”

The fact that Carter died a day and a half after meeting with Estes should be sufficient to prove that he didn’t die of pneumonia, as the Johnsons had claimed. It was his decades-long devotion and loyalty to Johnson that made Carter set aside his own moral code and perform the deeds assigned to him by Johnson. He must have come to the realization, over time, that he had been put into a position from which he could never resign, and so the magnitude of crimes started with merely helping to steal an election, but increased with each additional iteration. As we have learned earlier, when a number of people had become too dangerous to Lyndon Johnson’s ability to attain his lifetime goal, and then to protect his contrived “legacy,” their lives were terminated, the crimes never solved.

A more plausible story, considering the circumstances described by Estes, is that someone met Cliff Carter when he returned to Washington and killed him by some other means, since such a quick case of pneumonia within a day and a half after leaving Texas was most unlikely. A trusted but anonymous researcher, who knows the case and who was a friend of Estes and is certain of the parties involved, has stated that, when Cliff Carter left after his last meeting with Johnson, he had become very “angry” with the position within which he had been put, and then left to live out his life. It is unlikely that Cliff Carter died of “natural causes” at the age of fifty-eight, after having just visited Billie Sol with no ailments, other than a severe case of anger, afflicting him. It would not be too much of a stretch to conclude that his death might have been caused by his actions—direct or indirect—that evidently had been monitored by someone who had been hired to track him, who thereupon alerted Lyndon Johnson that he was becoming a very dangerous man to keep around.

When Cliff Carter asked Billie Sol Estes, in the conversation referenced previously, whether he still had the “recordings from the sixties,” he understood how Estes had habitually recorded most of his conversations for the purpose of buying his own “life insurance,” the kind where the premiums paid were in the form of a very expensive and elaborate audio recording system and the purported dozens of audio tapes that such

insurance would require. When Estes participated, from 1998–2003 with Tom Bowden and William Reymond in the creation of a book and video, telling his story of working under Johnson’s protective cover to facilitate fraud against the government, Bowden and Reymond wanted additional proof that Estes had the recordings he claimed to have. His first wife, before she died, had said to him “Sol, do it now,” and he decided to play them a sample of one of his recordings. This sample was very special, in that it was one that he had secretly made during the 1984 grand jury hearing to investigate the murder of Henry Marshall and the long-term efforts of Clint Peoples to overturn the “suicide” verdict. Reymond continued his interviews with Billie Sol on video, still not satisfied that he was being completely forthcoming, as Billie grew more frustrated with William’s relentless efforts to have him explain all of its complexities. Reymond kept probing into what he believed were still-hidden mysteries that Estes would not reveal, yet Billie Sol did not think there were such enigmas and it frustrated him that William did not understand that. Finally, this exchange occurred, bringing all of it to a head:⁵⁶⁶

There is no mystery! The death of Kennedy is simple to solve; it is a story of a man who wanted the power at any price, and who was ready for it, as the summit of his climb up the political ladder. It is no more complicated than that.

There is only one person whose name might conceivably be on the list of candidates for ordering the murder of Cliff Carter: Lyndon B. Johnson, just as he had uniquely been at the top of the list for numerous other unsolved murders, was also uniquely in a position to have had the motive, means, and opportunity to have his previous sidekick murdered, together with the narcissistic, sociopathic, and psychotic personality to find a willing and able hit man to make it happen. One candidate for that job might have been a morbidly mysterious mortician, John Liggett, about whom we will investigate shortly.

LBJ’s Double—Cousin Jay Bert Peck—And His Untimely Death

Jack Valenti’s presence in Hollywood might have been behind one of the more mysterious “real-life” dramas played out there in the late 1960s, which was indirectly tied to two murders back in Texas that soon followed. It all started in 1968, when a news item appeared in two national magazines announcing that Lyndon Johnson had a “double,” a man who was known to have “stood-in” for Johnson on a number of occasions when Johnson wanted his presence known to have “existed,” even though he needed to be someplace else at that point in time. Lyndon’s cousin, J. Bert Peck, had a close resemblance to Johnson, and a voice that sounded like him.

According to Billie Sol Estes, Johnson had Peck “stand in” for him the evening of November 21, 1963, so he could go to the Murchison party and give the final go-ahead nod for the assassination, secure in the knowledge that Peck would only make a brief appearance to throw off reporters as to his whereabouts.⁵⁶⁷ The reports that Johnson was seen that evening at the hotel in Fort Worth in the main dining room and lobby could be explained by this device, considering that there were no indications that he spoke to any group or even to anyone in particular that evening. (One longtime researcher who wishes to remain anonymous and who knew Johnson’s lover Madeleine Brown said that Ms.

Brown believed that Johnson had Captain Swindel, who flew Air Force One, fly him in a small airplane to the smaller Addison Airport, which was only a mile or two from Murchison's mansion on Preston Road in north Dallas.)

Other researchers are convinced that Johnson had his Secret Service agent, the sycophantic Rufus Youngblood, drive him to the Murchison home at Clint's insistence, which would explain Johnson's surly attitude upon his arrival there (as described by Madeleine Brown). They point out that Youngblood became so close to him that Johnson allegedly bought a retirement house for him on Lake LBJ. It is clear that Youngblood's fealty to Johnson had led him to "go along" with whatever stories Johnson came up with, as illustrated by the false statements made about Youngblood sitting on LBJ on the ride to Parkland Hospital covered earlier.

The following article, which validates the point about J. Bert Peck's known role as an "LBJ Stand-in," appeared in the People section of *Time* magazine, in the edition dated August 2, 1968 (a similar article appeared in *Newsweek* three days later):

Dean Martin and Elke Sommer have locked up star billing in *House of Seven Joys*,***** Columbia's new Matt Helm thriller. Yet one supporting role is sure to set the audience buzzing. That's when ... an aide informs the President that thieves have made off with \$1 billion in gold bullion. And there's old L.B.J. listening to the bad news... . To play the President, Central Casting tapped J. B. Peck, 66, L.B.J.'s look-alike first cousin.

In August 1968, before the movie was released, this was a big enough scoop to cause *Time* and *Newsweek* to print the story and Lyndon Johnson assuredly would have seen these articles immediately thereafter, if not before. Based on his usual conduct, it is probably safe to assume that he went "ballistic" with rage at this point about this piece of news becoming public knowledge. The death of Mr. Peck a few months later was clearly not a random coincidence. It was far more likely that, considering the person who was visiting him just as he decided to "shoot himself," his death was probably the end result of the same rage. In fact, Billie Sol Estes stated that Johnson had become paranoid about Peck's ability to keep quiet as a result of this publicity, and that was what caused him to order his murder.⁵⁶⁸ There had been two scenes in that movie in which J. B. Peck appeared, one taken from the back and right side as he, playing LBJ, was told about some stolen gold bullion; the second scene showed him dancing with Elke Sommer. The fact that these scenes were originally in the movie, as noted by the news articles above, but deleted at some later point, suggests that someone did not want the fact that Johnson had a "double" to become widely known to the public, at least in such a record that might become permanent, like a movie. All of which begs the questions, "Who would have had the power to delete that footage, and change the movie description to delete all references to the 'presidential' scenes and change the credits to list only 'J. B. Pick' (instead of 'Peck') and instead of listing his character name (LBJ) it is only listed as "uncredited." One must carefully ponder this question and consider the implications, as part of this exercise in deductive reasoning: "Is it possible that LBJ picked up the telephone and called Jack Valenti one day in August 1968 and asked (or, more likely, ordered) him to have those changes made to the movie? If

not, how then did these obviously telling yet otherwise innocuous set of changes get made, and by whose order?"

The questions raised by someone in Hollywood making those changes to the movie that *Time* and *Newsweek* had announced in August, and was originally shown in movie theaters on December 31, 1968 (only four months later, which is rather late in the cycle of normal production for any significant editing), were nothing compared to the questions raised by the unfortunate demise of Jay Bert Peck shortly after all that publicity. Indeed, it is very likely that publicity about J. B. Peck's long time role in "standing-in" for Johnson was considered by Johnson to be frightfully embarrassing to him. Considering Johnson's past, and the number of other "suicides" and mysterious deaths that occurred later, during 1971, Johnson's embarrassment was most likely the proximate cause of Peck's death. He was found shot on the evening of Friday, July 4, 1969, and died the next day. According to his obituary in the *Garland Texas News* on Sunday, July 6, 1969, he had achieved considerable fame, having appeared on the Johnny Carson television show as well as the movie referenced previously. That appearance on the Johnny Carson show was also "cleansed," apparently by Jack Valenti at the same time as the other changes noted; neither Peck nor Pick is listed among the hundreds of guests tabulated by the show's staff of all the guests who ever appeared on the show.⁵⁶⁹ Perhaps it was his appearance on Carson's television show, something that would have incensed the former president, that was the "final straw."

According to Billie Sol Estes, John M. Liggett, a murderous mortician who will shortly be examined further, was ordered to kill Jay Bert Peck and tell Peck's wife that he had killed himself.⁵⁷⁰ Based on facts to be revealed in the next section, on Liggett's documented attempt a few years later to kill Peck's wife Dorothy, it is reasonable to infer that he had threatened her to go along with the "suicide" story, thereby forcing her to cooperate. There was scarcely any other news about Jay Bert Peck's murder, except for his obituary two days later. The abbreviated news coverage on the death of Mr. Peck resulted in yet another unresolved anomaly: Although he was found by his wife Dorothy shortly after the gunshot, when she ran into the bedroom to find him lying in bed with a bullet wound in the head, there was no indication in any report of a gun ever being found at the scene.

John M. Liggett: From Embalmer Extraordinaire to Serial Killer—Then Dead Man Walking

Jay Bert Peck's homicide was not the only assault at the little ranch house at 1202 Melrose Street in Garland, Texas. Almost five years later, on Tuesday, March 27, 1974, Jay Bert's wife Dorothy Peck was attacked by the mortician John M. Liggett, beaten with a hammer, and left for dead. He erred in not double-checking to be sure she was dead before starting a fire under her bed with clothing he had stuffed under it, then running out the door. Because Dorothy managed to regain consciousness and stumbled her way out of the fire to a neighbor's house to call the fire and police departments. And she knew her attacker, John M. Liggett, because he had accompanied her home from a bar the night before. Since she was able to wake up and leave the burning bedroom and identify him, John M. Liggett

was arrested and subsequently investigated for several other Dallas area murders involving similar arson attempts to destroy any evidence left behind by the killer.

John Liggett had worked for several other funeral homes in Dallas before he went to the largest such mortuary and cemetery in Dallas, Restland, which had allegedly been owned by a member of the Texas Mafia.⁵⁷¹ Liggett had become highly skilled in the use of reconstructive techniques to eliminate all signs of physical damage on corpses that had been brutally attacked, horribly disfigured in automobile accidents, or died by gunshot(s), and he was considered “the best” by his colleagues in that particular segment of the mortuary business.⁵⁷² His skills were so good that, when the beautiful actress Jayne Mansfield was killed and decapitated in a car accident in Louisiana, John Liggett was selected to make it appear that her head was still attached to her body because her family insisted on an open casket funeral.⁵⁷³ Liggett led a dual life in 1963, married to a woman named Lois who said that he would be gone for days or weeks at a time without explanation. Lois had children from a previous marriage but John maintained his distance from them during that period, and one of them, Debra Godwin, claimed that she had always suspected he was merely treating them as “cover” to provide him with an aura of being a plain, average guy.⁵⁷⁴

Immediately after JFK’s assassination, Liggett was called while at work at Restland Funeral Home. He rushed to Parkland, calling his wife only once to let her know that he had been asked to work on the president and that he would call her, she shouldn’t try to call him. According to Billie Sol Estes, in his book *Billie Sol Estes—A Texas Legend*, Liggett left Restland with an assistant, taking a body that had been stored in the morgue that was similar to JFK’s body and prepared to look like a rear head shot was the cause of death.⁵⁷⁵ Estes stated that the second body was used to create false evidence and that photographs, X-rays, and even the complete brain from that cadaver were substituted for JFK’s autopsy “records” in order to reframe the documents to conform to the official story; moreover, he stated that all of this was sent first to the White House before being sent to the FBI, the Warren Commission, and the National Archives.⁵⁷⁶

According to Estes, the “other body” was taken to Washington on a private jet. If that story is true, it is a possible explanation of the provenance of the discrepancies that exist in photographs and X-rays which could not have been taken of Kennedy’s head. It might also explain the enigma, noted elsewhere, of the supposed existence of JFK’s complete brain, weighing 1500 grams, more than an average male brain, as reported by several authors; that is impossible, since most of his brain had been blown out the back of his head, much of it splattering the motorcycle policeman B. J. Martin in the process.

The scenario that I previously portrayed, in *LBJ: The Mastermind of the JFK Assassination*, had been based partly on David Lifton’s early research, but I independently concluded that JFK’s body was moved to a shipping crate and put on “Air Force 2.” I have since reevaluated that, based on Lifton’s latest research, pending publication, which clarifies that and proves that JFK’s body was indeed simply moved to the cargo hold of Air Force One immediately upon delivery of the ornate casket, while the Kennedy party was

still on the tarmac. Lifton explained his findings at an address in November 2013 at Bismarck State University, which is available for viewing on a YouTube video.⁵⁷⁷

Mr. Lifton has recently advised me that his latest work, now underway, will address this point further as he has obtained additional information on how JFK's body was moved to Washington. Researcher/author Doug Horne has also written what is arguably the most detailed, meticulously documented account of the events on Air Force One and Bethesda Naval Hospital ever written to date: *The AF1 Tapes and Subsequent Events at Andrews AFB on November 22, 1963: What Was Supposed to Happen vs. What Did Happen* at the Future of Freedom Foundation website.⁵⁷⁸ As I previously noted, the overall story portrayed does not hinge on which of these scenarios was the true and complete one, the details of which may never be known with absolute certainty. The one thing that is certain is that the "official" version described by the Warren Commission cannot be reconciled with the numerous contradictions that have already been identified in a number of books and summarized here.

According to Episode 7 ("The Smoking Guns") of *The Men Who Killed Kennedy*, a day after the assassination, John Liggett returned home, unshaven, disheveled, and very tired. According to his wife, "he looked like he had been in a traumatic event." Yet he immediately took his wife and three step children to Austin and San Antonio, talking briefly and furtively to men he met at each stop as he rushed from Dallas to these other cities, even getting a speeding ticket between Dallas and Austin.⁵⁷⁹ He then took the family on to Corpus Christi, where on Sunday morning they watched Jack Ruby shoot Oswald on live television. Upon seeing that stunning event, he turned to his wife and said calmly, "Everything's OK now ... and you could just see his face, it was like all the pressure had been taken off of him."⁵⁸⁰ Shortly after the assassination, John Liggett came into a lot of money and bought an expensive Dallas home and then became the host of numerous high-stakes poker parties. At one of these parties, the daughter of Lois Liggett, Debra Godwin, stated that David Ferrie—who was a long time acquaintance, and a short-time "handler" of Lee Harvey Oswald in the summer of 1963 in New Orleans—appeared, and that John said he had known him while he served in the Civil Air Patrol.⁵⁸¹

More Possible Victims of the Demented Mortician: Susan Payne, Lewis T. Stratton, and Maurine Joyce Elliott

Before attempting to kill Mrs. Peck early in 1974, John Liggett had killed "several people in New Orleans, whom he felt knew of his role in the assassination"⁵⁸² according to the video "The Smoking Guns" referenced previously. Among the other victims of the demented mortician was a forty-one-year-old woman named Susan Thompson Payne, who had been found dead in her fire-gutted North Dallas apartment two weeks before the attack on Dorothy Peck. She had only recently moved to Dallas from California. Ms. Payne's body had been sexually abused and her body mutilated before the fire was set, both acts Liggett had often adopted as his "modus operandi." Liggett had a habit of hanging around the Duck Creek Lounge in Dallas after work and when he drank too much, he

would become too talkative about some of the “jobs” he had done. That later made him become paranoid about what he had revealed and, according to Billie Sol Estes, Lewis T. Stratton and Maurine Joyce Elliott were killed because they had the misfortune of listening to Liggett tell them too much while he was drunk.⁵⁸³ Ms. Elliott had previously worked at the Duck Creek Lounge, where she would have known Liggett, and where she had, most likely, been told too much by the murderous mortician; by the time of their deaths, she had gone to work for Stratton at his bar and lounge in Oak Cliff. They were both sexually mutilated after they were dead and the bar was set on fire.

Roscoe White

Still another possible victim of Liggett was Roscoe White, a Dallas policeman who had only obtained his position a few weeks before the assassination. Before that, White had worked at Jagger-Chiles-Stoval Company, which had contracts with the US Army to perform highly classified work, at which somehow Lee Harvey Oswald had also obtained a job. White’s job there involved map making and working with photographic development, which gave him skills in retouching photographs. The two had known each other from their Marine Corps tours in Japan. Among his photographic achievements, according to researcher Stephen Pegues, was the set of infamous photos ostensibly showing Oswald holding a rifle and, confusing rival Marxist/Communist genre newspapers. Pegues asserted that the photographs show a bump on the figure’s arm that Oswald did not have, but White did.⁵⁸⁴ That, together with many other discrepancies identified by other researchers, conclusively prove that those photographs were fabricated, apparently by Roscoe White.⁵⁸⁵

According to researcher and author Matthew Smith, White is also considered by many to have been one of the shooters, indeed “Badgeman” the policeman, captured in Mary Moorman’s famous Polaroid photograph taken at the moment Kennedy received the fatal shot. According to this story, after taking the “last shot” (the head shot that caused JFK’s body to jerk “backwards and to his left”), White, in his Dallas policeman’s uniform, hurled his gun to a waiting assistant who caught it and ran toward the rail yards while White jumped onto a car’s bumper and hurled himself over the fence, before morphing himself back into his role as a Dallas policeman and immediately confiscating the film of Gordon Arnold (who stated that his film was taken by a uniformed policeman).⁵⁸⁶ The following excerpt from Matthew Smith’s *JFK: The Second Plot* succinctly summarizes the Roscoe White story from the perspective of his wife Geneva White, and their son, Ricky White. His wife stated that her then-deceased husband had been a “contract man” with the CIA who had gotten other contracts to murder people, both on shore and off. His son Ricky believed that his father had tried to disengage himself from this arrangement after JFK’s assassination but the CIA wasn’t about to let him walk away from his past. ⁵⁸⁷

Geneva White claimed her now-deceased husband left a diary in which he revealed he was one of the marksmen who shot the President, and that he also killed Officer Tippit. The diary, said to have been stolen by the FBI, is claimed to contain details of the assassination, which was carried out on the instructions of the CIA.

The fact that Roscoe White had worked for the CIA was verified by Tosh Plumlee, an acknowledged CIA operative, whose long and fascinating interview can be found at the websites *Spartacus Educational* and *JFK Murder Solved*:⁵⁸⁸

Roscoe White was at the radar complex and jungle warfare training in Honolulu and that's where I first met him. When I say met him ... I would have never, never have picked Roscoe White and my feelings, it's a tragedy of what happened to Roscoe White's life. He was an operative. He was military intelligence.

While the Roscoe White story, whether or not it was true, is incidental to the scope of this book, it is still widely believed by many JFK assassination researchers despite attempts to discredit it. The solid connections he had with intelligence agencies, and his subsequent service in Vietnam, as noted previously, give credence to the assertions of his involvement in the assassination on behalf of his "handlers." His connections to both John Liggett and Jack Ruby (who, the day following JFK's assassination, attended Roscoe and Geneva White's birthday party for their young son Ricky), together with the fact that they lived across the street from officer J. D. Tippit, puts him at the epicenter of the pre-assassination conspiracy. The fact that both White and Liggett have been reported to have "come into a lot of money" after the assassination also tends to corroborate that conclusion. It should also be noted that White died as a result of an "industrial accident," which, in light of the next possible victim in the following paragraph, should not be discounted as being within the skill set of John M. Liggett. In the absence of a full accounting of the incident, it should at least be stipulated that the victim's son, as noted previously, does *not* believe it was an accident. *****

Mary Sherman

Another possible victim of Liggett, according to one prominent Dallas area researcher who, for personal reasons, prefers to remain anonymous, was Mary Sherman, whose murder remains unsolved, because, as an article on the 50th anniversary of her murder on July 21, 1964, in the New Orleans on line paper NOLA.com revealed: "But a 117-page police report and 70 pages of case files recently obtained by NOLA.com/the *Times-Picayune* paints only a picture of detectives tracking leads that went nowhere. The report contains no obvious smoking gun, no definite suspect to the crime."⁵⁸⁹ The article then stated that "Firefighters hauled out a burning mattress, and found the body of Dr. Mary Sherman lying face up on the floor. She was severely burned on her right side. Her liver, intestines and charred lung were exposed. And her right arm and right torso were gone."⁵⁹⁰ This article asserts that "blood spatter on the walls, floor, and chest indicated she had been stabbed there in her apartment" and that she died of stab wounds, the fire apparently being merely a cover-up. What is oddly not explained is how such a hot fire—hot enough to burn her right arm and torso so completely—could be so concentrated that the rest of her body was not burnt at all?

Another take on the story of Mary Sherman's murder appears in Edward T. Haslam's book, *Dr. Mary's Monkey*. Haslam believes that Mary was brutally murdered by electrocution in the secret CIA—controlled laboratory in New Orleans, as she worked to

develop an aggressive strain of cancer for the purpose of murdering Fidel Castro. He has posited that her murder was followed by an attempt to destroy the “evidence” when her body was then moved back to her apartment, where a fire was started to burn her corpse.

Regardless of which of these hypotheses one accepts, the fact that, of the murders that have been attributed to John Liggett—at least tentatively, since he was never convicted of any of the unsolved cases—at least four of them involved brutal attacks by gun or knife followed by an attempt to burn the bodies, as noted previously. The case against him that was pending when he died, the attempt on Dorothy Peck, was very solid, since she survived and was ready to testify against him. The plain fact was that setting fire to the mattress where his victim lay was precisely John Liggett’s favorite method of covering his tracks.

Haslam writes of how the New Orleans project went off track, leading to the contamination of the Salk vaccine with monkey viruses that caused the tremendous increase in the incidence of soft tissue cancers in the last fifty years, as well as being the proximate cause of mutations that were linked to the origin of the AIDS virus. It is a fascinating read, one which comports with the story told by Judyth Vary Baker in her book *Me and Lee*. The sum total of these two books, as persuasive and as fascinating as they are, remain very controversial among researchers, though, in our case, that issue is not pertinent because neither of them would significantly affect the narrative of this book. But one thing cannot be denied however: Mary Sherman was viciously murdered on July 21, 1964, just one more person among many who had unwittingly become involved with very treacherous people—some unwittingly, others not—all operating in one capacity or another on the periphery of the conspiracy to assassinate a president.

The Arrest and Death of John M. Liggett

After Dorothy Peck’s escape from the nearly fatal beating and the start of the house fire set on March 27, 1974, by John M. Liggett, he was arrested. One of the most distinguished, and expensive, criminal lawyers in Dallas, Charles Tessmer, was recruited to come to John Liggett’s defense. It appears that he had been selected by others, judging by the kind of advice he would give his client. Tessmer was described in a 1999 article in the *Dallas Observer* as being “The don of Dallas criminal lawyers” and as having, “possessed the stage presence of an Olivier, the oratorical skills of a Greek philosopher, and the liver of Nicolas Cage in *Leaving Las Vegas*. He celebrated his wins by going on lengthy drinking binges, and he was always winning—and buying. He was Good-time Charlie to his friends, and everyone was his friend.”⁵⁹¹ Tessmer briefly considered representing Jack Ruby until he discussed it with his good friend, Sheriff Bill Decker, who told him to stay away from that one: “There may be a conspiracy,” Tessmer recalls Decker saying. “*Those are dangerous people*”⁵⁹² implicitly meaning Lyndon Johnson and his cohorts, of whom most people in Dallas were afraid, probably including many in the Dallas police department, the mayor and Henry Wade, the district attorney, and, clearly, by his own admission which then became public, Sheriff Bill Decker. [Emphasis added.]

Perhaps he didn’t know of his connection back to the original murder when he accepted

the challenge of defending John M. Liggett, or maybe he did it in spite of that connection, to help perform a task that most defense lawyers would avoid, even if paid very well to do it. The esteemed lawyer, paradoxically, gave his client John Liggett some strange and unusual advice: He prohibited Liggett from discussing the case with either prosecutors or police officers or anyone else besides himself for month after month, all while Liggett was being held pending a trial that kept being rescheduled, time after time.

After nearly a year of delays, on February 14, 1975, as he was being taken from the jail to another location, John Liggett allegedly tried to escape and was killed by a shot in the back by one of the guards. The term “allegedly” is used here to convey the official story even though there are a number of unexplained “holes” in that story. First, it appears that Liggett was given a key to use to slip the handcuffs off of his wrists before his escape attempt; secondly, both his wife at the time as well as his previous wife, and her daughter, have disputed those assertions, to the point that his ex-wife suggested that he wasn’t killed at all, that another body was substituted for his.

His wife at the time he was killed, Leona, later stated that the body she was asked to identify in 1975 was not her husband John. She said that the corpse had a mustache and that John Liggett did not have a mustache and that she did not believe he could have had one if he tried. His ex-daughter-in-law agreed with that assessment and his ex-wife Lois, who can be seen on the video *The Men Who Killed Kennedy: Part 7, “The Smoking Guns,”* was convinced that she had seen John in a Las Vegas casino a few years after that. Indeed, he had previously worked in that casino for several years in Las Vegas, and had remained well-connected there.⁵⁹³ There were other discrepancies related to the death certificate issued for John Liggett, including the fact that it stated that the shooting occurred on another street, “several hundred meters from the place where he died;” and that the deputy who shot him was not on the list of sheriff’s deputies. It also indicated that he had died “due to an injury on the front of his thorax,” even though he supposedly died because he was running away, attempting to escape.⁵⁹⁴

Another important piece of evidence presented in the referenced video is a photograph showing, according to Ms. Godwin, John Liggett’s brother Malcolm, standing next to Jack Ruby with a group of other people; Malcolm, it was further stated, was one of the people John met on the Liggett’s strange ride through Texas in the two days following JFK’s murder,⁵⁹⁵ before Oswald was shot on national television and the greatly relieved Liggett suddenly decided it was finally okay to return to Dallas. As a result of that scene, where the person in the photograph was identified as being Malcolm Liggett, a lawsuit was brought by him against The History Channel, which was described in a contemporaneous news article on March 19, 2005, in the *Vero Beach Press Journal* (Florida):

History Channel to Answer Vero Couple

By Grace Murphy, staff writer

April 30, 2005

VERO BEACH—The History Channel is scheduled to air a statement at 8:30 a.m.

Sunday concerning the inclusion of a Vero Beach couple in a 2003 TV series called “The Men Who Killed Kennedy.”

The disputed episode said that Liggett’s brother, John, now deceased, was a mortuary worker in Dallas when Kennedy was shot in November 1963. Later in the program, a photograph is shown of a man and woman identified as Malcolm Liggett and his wife, Suzanne, standing with Dallas nightclub owner Jack Ruby. In the letter scheduled to air Sunday, the Liggetts claim the program made false accusations. They also claim they never met Ruby and were not associated in an assassination conspiracy.

The article makes no reference as to whether the lawsuit was only against The History Channel, and if so, why the former Mrs. John Liggett and her daughter were not named in the suit. It was they who had the courage to go onto national television and make the specific charges regarding having seen Malcolm Liggett meet with her husband two days after the assassination and who identified him in the photograph next to Jack Ruby. The photograph shown in the video (at about 43:00 on Episode 7, “The Smoking Guns”) certainly looks like the same man, but then there are a lot of “look-a-likes” so we will never know who that might have been if it wasn’t Mr. Liggett. This was only one of the numerous mysteries occurring in the wake of John Kennedy’s murder that will probably never be solved.

The evidence noted previously, of a close connection between John Liggett and David Ferrie, the alleged New Orleans “handler” of Lee Harvey Oswald, inexorably leads one to ponder whether Liggett’s involvement in handling the “reconstruction” of JFK’s skull was directly connected to his long-time friendship with a key member of the New Orleans group (Clay Shaw/Bertrand, Guy Banister, David Ferrie) overseeing the details related to the preparations for the assassination. When Oswald returned to New Orleans, in April 1963, he was immediately swept into the nascent conspiracy, either through his previous association with Ferrie or through his uncle, Charles “Dutch” Murret, who was on the payroll of Carlos Marcello. Banister’s long-time secretary, Delphine Roberts, would not cooperate with Jim Garrison because she thought that both Banister and Ferrie had been murdered and feared for her own life, but she did admit to the House Select Committee on Assassinations (HSCA) that Oswald worked out of Banister’s office.⁵⁹⁶ The clear connections between Oswald to Ferrie and Banister, and theirs back to John Liggett, completes an undeniable circle that widens and connects with the many other men and the circles each of them inhabited: From Johnny Rosselli, George Joannides, and David Phillips, and then from them to Bill Harvey and David Morales, and from them to Cord Meyer, James Angleton, and J. Edgar Hoover, all the way back to the top of the hierarchy, where sat Lyndon B. Johnson.

That same evidence also demonstrates the “continuum” that existed in the “before” and “after” conspiracies; it leads inexorably to a logical presumption that Lyndon Johnson’s known actions to cover up the real story “after” the assassination—viewed by many (since that is exactly how he intentionally portrayed it) as merely his attempt to avoid “World War III”—were intrinsically connected to the “before” plotting and planning: It is this

continuum that shows the “pre” and “post” conspiracies were not separate and unconnected. There was only one “conspiracy” and the shooting of JFK was merely the half-time intermission that marked the switch of most of the first half actors (e.g., Angleton, Harvey, DeMohrenschildt and Oswald) with the second-half actors (e.g., Hoover, Dulles, Specter, et al.). There was really only one most prominent actor in both halves: Lyndon B. Johnson.

HSCA Related Murders (circa 1978–79)

There were numerous suspicious deaths during the period above that the HSCA suspected existed. The committee was then engaged in the reexamination of evidence related to the assassinations of John F. Kennedy and Martin Luther King following the release of many of the “state secrets” (or, the “family jewels” as CIA insiders referred to them), which had become exposed in congressional hearings in the previous three years following the resignation of Richard Nixon. During one six-month period in 1977 for example, six high-level FBI officials—all connected to the FBI investigation of JFK’s assassination—died just before being scheduled to testify to the Congressional committee. According to the sources used by Richard Belzer and David Wayne, authors of *Hit List: An In-depth Investigation into the Mysterious Deaths of Witnesses to the JFK Assassination*, the probabilities of this happening were near zero, when reduced to a mathematical equation.⁵⁹⁷

George de Mohrenschildt

Almost immediately after the Oswalds were resettled in Fort Worth in 1962, an invisible “guiding hand” seemed to bring them together with a person who would otherwise have been the most unlikely of persons to be in such a position. Yet the worldly and well-connected George de Mohrenschildt, whose extended family included Jacqueline Bouvier Kennedy’s father, had quickly become the principal influence on Lee Harvey Oswald during the last few months of 1962 and the first three and a half months of 1963, when they went their separate ways: Oswald to New Orleans and de Mohrenschildt, after some meetings in Washington, to mysterious “work” in Haiti, ostensibly to search for and acquire the rights to oil reserves, but in actuality, to remove him from the Dallas scene and provide “cover” for him so that he could distance himself from the “patsy” he had helped to set up.

Author Russ Baker vividly described de Mohrenschildt as “a self-aggrandizing entrepreneur with a taste for intrigue ... a friend of a Haitian banker who had been eager to foster a coup d’état against the evil President Duvalier. Each layer of this plausible cover story would lead the investigator further from the truth.”⁵⁹⁸ De Mohrenschildt’s background cover for his clandestine work was lengthy and varied, having begun in the 1930s working for powerful Russian émigrés who had become connected to the highest levels of Manhattan society. Eventually, his connections grew and he was given foreign assignments, which led him to travel the world and become friends with—in addition to Lyndon Johnson—many other wealthy and well-connected Texans, including oilmen Clint Murchison, H. L. Hunt, John Mecom, Sid Richardson, George Brown of Brown and Root (now Halliburton), and non-Texans such as Jean de Menil of Schlumberger, the huge

French oil services firm.⁵⁹⁹ It is clear now that de Mohrenschildt's trips to Washington and his subsequent move to Haiti were designed, at least partially, to provide an elaborate layer of obfuscation; this was done through having him set up to work ostensibly with a Haitian banker named M. Clemard Joseph Charles, and the cover of a geologist engaged in the exploration of oil and uranium, both of which apparently were in very short supply in that island nation. The other natural resource that was more realistic was sisal, used in the manufacture of rope, and it became the commodity that would occupy their activities when they were not engaged in their real purpose: plotting the overthrow of the Haitian dictator Francois "Papa Doc" Duvalier as a "back-up" plan if the CIA had decided he was no longer sufficiently cooperative with their need for a Caribbean outpost from which to launch an attack on Cuba.⁶⁰⁰

Wednesday, April 24, 1963, was a very busy day for a number of people involved in preparations for the assassination of JFK. On that date, through a leak provided to the *Dallas Times Herald* by Lyndon Johnson, the paper carried a full banner headline on the front page: "LBJ Sees Kennedy Dallas Visit—One-Day Texas Tour Eyed." He probably did this to ensure that Kennedy would then feel obligated to make the trip and not back out of it later. On that same date, Lee Harvey Oswald left Dallas for New Orleans as Jack Ruby began making a series of telephone calls to his Mafia contacts around the country, particularly Chicago. And on that same date George de Mohrenschildt went to New York for meetings with a CIA operative code-named WUBRINY, who held a meeting the next day in one of the most exclusive men's clubs in the city, the Knickerbocker Club, on East 62nd Street, just off Fifth Avenue. That meeting was attended by C. Frank Stone III, head of the CIA's European clandestine section, and M. Clemard Joseph Charles, the banker who de Mohrenschildt would become closely identified with in Haiti. In the following days, in the process of setting up the mineral concessions and sisal plantation in Haiti, de Mohrenschildt and Charles would meet, mysteriously, with Lyndon Johnson's military adviser Howard Burris, and a promise was made to facilitate a meeting with Johnson himself by his highest-level assistant, Walter Jenkins.⁶⁰¹

Ultimately, the "plan" they were developing, for a coup to displace "Papa Doc" Duvalier with Mr. Charles, failed, arguably because it wasn't really a plan in the first place, only a transparent maneuver to move de Mohrenschildt out of the Dallas/Fort Worth picture indefinitely. The US military and CIA were both content with the dictator Duvalier, as Lyndon Johnson was. Apparently it was only the Kennedys who had felt a "regime change" should be facilitated in that country and the activities were merely busy work meant to provide a cover for a project that was not meant to be. Since there was no real coup being planned, and no oil reserves to find, the stories of de Mohrenschildt and Clemard Charles were reduced to the latter's being jailed for a decade by the dictator he planned to replace and the former being removed from the Dallas scene, and far away from his many friends there, ranging from Clint Murchison to George H. W. Bush.

In 1977, after the H.S.C.A. learned that George de Mohrenschildt had returned from Europe to the United States, they sent investigator Gaeton Fonzi, to find him. According to the Spartacus Educational website, Fonzi tracked him down to a town on the coast of

Florida, where he was living while visiting his daughter. *Readers Digest* author Edward Jay Epstein who had offered him \$1,000 a day for a four-day interview, and on the third day of these interviews, March 29, 1977, de Mohrenschildt told Epstein that, while he had never been on the CIA's payroll, he had done favors for "CIA connected officials" and they had reciprocated those favors by helping him secure business contacts overseas. Those contacts led to business deals that provided him with data, which he would then use to report intelligence back to the same CIA personnel. Around noon of that third day they took a lunch break and agreed to meet again at 3 p.m. De Mohrenschildt returned to his room, where he found a card that Fonzi had left requesting a meeting to obtain his testimony on behalf of the House Select Committee on Assassinations.

A gunshot was heard shortly after that by others within or outside the house—including a bizarre claim by author Bill O'Reilly that he was standing outside the door at the very moment when the shotgun blast was heard,⁶⁰² which, if true, might explain the real reason why George decided to kill himself—and de Mohrenschildt's body was discovered shortly thereafter, apparently after O'Reilly left, since no one else saw him there.⁶⁰³ Alternatively, Mr. O'Reilly might have overused his editorial license in this instance, as others have asserted, since that story seems to have materialized after the fact and his news colleagues at the time could not verify the statement, nor could anyone at the scene. But it was not the only instance of O'Reilly's prevarications in his book, including his description of Lee Harvey Oswald's sharpshooting expertise as being a "crack shot" when the record shows that his last test in the Marine Corps barely qualified him to be holding a rifle at all. Indeed, men who knew him in the Marine Corps have stated that he "lacked coordination" and called him "a very poor rifle marksman."

In the second part of a YouTube video previously referenced, regarding Bill O'Reilly in his younger days as a news reporter, was a separate piece of information that strongly suggests that de Mohrenschildt was murdered: Mark Lane narrates this part and he explained that the woman whose house de Mohrenschildt was staying in at the time of his "suicide" had instructed her maid to record a soap opera because she had to go out that day for a bridge tournament. The tape was running during the very moment de Mohrenschildt died; it recorded not only the shotgun blast but, just before that shot, a "beep beep beep" sound was recorded. Mark Lane stated that he asked the district attorney about that just before the coroner's inquest, and was told that "We weren't going into that." When asked why, the DA said, "You understand why ... this is bigger than all of us. We have to do what we have to do." Although he didn't let Lane bring it up, one of the coroner's jurors did bring it up, saying, "That 'beep beep beep' ... that sounds just like my security system ... somebody apparently went into the house [just before he was murdered]." The DA told her, too, "We're not going into that."⁶⁰⁴ And so the issue was dropped, just like so many other potential leads had already been dropped, any one of which might have led to the discovery of important truths. Had it been pursued vigorously, the story most likely would have not been one of suicide, but of homicide, and that would have led inevitably to an investigation.

The Murder of Martin Luther King Jr.

One year after the assassination of John F. Kennedy, the FBI, under the direction of J. Edgar Hoover, sent the following letter to Martin Luther King Jr., essentially asking him to do the right thing, and kill himself:*****

In view of your low grade ... I will not dignify your name with either a Mr. or a Reverend or a Dr. And, your last name calls to mind only the type of King such as King Henry the VIII ... King, look into your heart. You know you are a complete fraud and a great liability to all of us Negroes. White people in this country have enough frauds of their own but I am sure they don't have one at this time anywhere near your equal. You are no clergyman and you know it. I repeat you are a colossal fraud and an evil, vicious one at that. You could not believe in God... . Clearly you don't believe in any personal moral principles.

King, like all frauds your end is approaching. You could have been our greatest leader. You, even at an early age have turned out to be not a leader but a dissolute, abnormal moral imbecile. We will now have to depend on our older leaders like Wilkins, a man of character and thank God we have others like him. But you are done. Your "honorary" degrees, your Nobel Prize (what a grim farce) and other awards will not save you. King, I repeat you are done.

No person can overcome facts, not even a fraud like yourself... . I repeat—no person can argue successfully against facts... . Satan could not do more. What incredible evilness ... King you are done. The American public, the church organizations that have been helping—Protestant, Catholic and Jews will know you for what you are—an evil, abnormal beast. So will others who have backed you. You are done.

King, there is only one thing left for you to do. You know what it is. You have just 34 days in which to do it (this exact number has been selected for a specific reason, it has definite practical significance). You are done. There is but one way out for you. You better take it before your filthy, abnormal fraudulent self is bared to the nation.

Many books have been written on the murder of Martin Luther King Jr., including two by Dr. William F. Pepper, *Orders to Kill* ⁶⁰⁵ and *An Act of State: The Execution of Martin Luther King*.⁶⁰⁶ According to his website (williampepper.com) he "was a friend of Martin Luther King in the last year of his life. Some years after King's death, Bill Pepper went on to represent James Earl Ray in [the appeal of] his guilty plea, and subsequent conviction. Pepper believes that Ray was framed by the federal government and that King was killed by a conspiracy that involved the FBI, the CIA, the military, the Memphis police and organized crime figures from New Orleans and Memphis. He later represented James Earl Ray in a televised mock trial in an attempt to get Ray the trial that he never had."

The jury at that trial determined that "others, including government agencies, were parties to this conspiracy as alleged by the defendant." It is no secret that the FBI, under the orders of J. Edgar Hoover, with the coerced approval of Bobby Kennedy at one point, continued carrying out illegal wiretaps and bugs on King through the rest of his life; it is not commonly known that the CIA and Army Intelligence had done their own

surveillance on King for many years, concerned that he might become popularized as a “black messiah.” In fact, it was revealed at the civil trial that the only witness on the balcony with Dr. King when he was shot, James Laue, was in Memphis filming King for a documentary, even though he secretly worked for the CIA.

Syndicated columnist Jack Anderson revealed that the FBI had conducted surveillance of Martin Luther King Jr.’s sex life over many years. Columnist Ronald Kessler also wrote an article entitled “Hoover’s Secret Files” in the *Daily Beast* on August 2, 2011, describing the results of this surveillance:

King was having an affair with a young woman in his office, says an agent who monitored wiretaps on King’s office and home phones. King had an apartment, the former agent says. “On Tuesdays, he’d go to the apartment, ostensibly to meditate and write sermons.” In fact, King’s girlfriend would meet him there for sex.

William Pepper also later represented the King family in a wrongful death civil trial, *King family vs. Loyd Jowers*. Jowers was the owner of a restaurant, Jim’s Grill, near the Lorraine Motel in Memphis, where Martin Luther King Jr. was assassinated. He believed that the US government, with help from the Mafia, conspired to murder King. During the trial that lasted four weeks, Pepper produced over seventy witnesses. Jowers, testifying by deposition, stated that James Earl Ray was a scapegoat, and was not involved in the assassination. Jowers testified that Memphis police officer Earl Clark fired the fatal shots. On December 8, 1999, the Memphis jury found Jowers’s testimony believable, taking less than an hour to find in favor of the King family for the requested sum of \$100.”

The fact that the trial took place more than three decades after the event, despite the momentous and profound verdict, explains why it was virtually ignored by the main stream media. Another book, *The 13th Juror: The Official Transcript of the Martin Luther King Assassination Conspiracy Trial*, provides the complete details of that trial, and within it, an explanation is given of why the jury essentially found Ray innocent of the murder, just as the King family had suspected was the case. It is the only one of the three major assassinations ever successfully adjudicated in a courtroom setting and it proves the veracity of this chapter of the book. By extension, it provides a sound, supporting basis for the overall theme of this book: That all three of the major political assassinations of the 1960s were perpetrated by essentially the same men, using the same resources, the same, or similar, “methods of operation,” conducted for similar motives; and they were executed with at least the passive acquiescence, and undoubtedly the active provocations, of the two men at the very head of the hierarchy, Lyndon B. Johnson and J. Edgar Hoover. Only this leadership could have been reasonably equipped, with the eager assistance of a few spooks from higher up the Potomac River, with the kinds of resources, and spheres of influence in the local communities involved, to have succeeded in accomplishing the multiple missions. William Pepper’s conclusions may be summarized as (a) James Earl Ray did not kill Martin Luther King Jr., and (b) that the murder of MLK was the result of a conspiracy by various federal and local law enforcement for the purpose of eliminating him as a potential political rival to Lyndon Johnson. These claims are supported by ballistics tests that proved that Ray’s gun was not involved in the shooting as well as Ray’s claims that he

had been set up as a “patsy,” just like Lee Harvey Oswald had been five years earlier. The evidence that Pepper has assembled is persuasive and compelling proof of his assertions and conclusions. It proves, for example, that the shooter’s location could not have been above Dr. King and to his right; the bullet taken from King did not match Ray’s gun; there was evidence of another rifle and other, clearly planted, evidence; neither normal ballistics tests of the alleged weapon nor even an autopsy of King was performed, as was the normal procedure for any murder. Policemen and detectives destroyed the crime scene through mishandling and contaminating it, making no attempt to preserve the scene for proper forensic testing. His own defense lawyer (as would be repeated by the attorney for RFK’s alleged assassin, Sirhan Sirhan) stipulated his guilt and suppressed exculpatory evidence, including anything that would point toward a conspiracy. His attorney pressured Ray to accept a plea bargain and to plan to appeal the case later, ensuring an endless, circular, legal process. In those later appeals, two judges would suddenly die in the middle of their reviews. In his final appeal, it was proven that Ray’s gun did not fire the bullet that killed Dr. King but, by then, it was too late for Ray, who died before his appeal was decided. Johnson’s struggling attorney general, Ramsey Clark, had another vocal malfunction when he declared there was no conspiracy involved, even before the “investigation” was complete, not to mention the trial. In this case, AG Clark was speaking on behalf of President Johnson in pronouncing the accused guilty; this is yet another pattern that will be repeated again and again, as we shall see.

Though the result of this civil trial—James Earl Ray being posthumously declared innocent—brought a bit more finality to the family of Dr. King, it was an event that was virtually ignored by the mainstream media, thus leaving James Earl Ray with the legend, in the public consciousness at least, of being just another “lone assassin.” This is one pattern (a completely discredited, yet still “official,” verdict) that seems to persist in all of the 1960s assassinations, so much so that it alone should be considered as the opposite of what the plotters considered their collective “signature.”

In 1999, after that trial, Coretta Scott King issued the following statement:

There is abundant evidence of a major high level conspiracy in the assassination of my husband, Martin Luther King Jr... the conspiracy of the Mafia, local, state and federal government agencies, were deeply involved in the assassination of my husband. The jury also affirmed overwhelming evidence that identified someone else, not James Earl Ray, as the shooter, and that Mr. Ray was set up to take the blame.

Following statements by Dexter King and other family members, Dexter was subsequently asked by a reporter, “there are many people out there who feel that as long as these conspirators remain nameless and faceless there is no true closure, and no justice.” He replied:

No, he [Mr. Lloyd Jowers] named the shooter. The shooter was the Memphis Police Department Officer, Lt. Earl Clark who he named as the killer. Once again, beyond that you had credible witnesses that named members of a Special Forces team who didn’t have to act because the contract killer succeeded, with plausible denial, a Mafia contracted killer.

Two years before that verdict, on June 20, 1997, in a *New York Times* article headlined “Son of Dr. King Asserts L.B.J. Role in Plot” by Kevin Sack, the King family admitted that they had suspected all along that President Lyndon Baines Johnson was behind the murder of Dr. Martin Luther King:

Three months ago, Dexter Scott King declared that he and his family believed that James Earl Ray was not guilty of the murder of his father, the Rev. Dr. Martin Luther King Jr. Tonight, in a televised interview, Mr. King asserted that President Lyndon B. Johnson must have been part of a military and governmental conspiracy to kill Dr. King.

“Based on the evidence that I’ve been shown, I would think that it would be very difficult for something of that magnitude to occur on his watch and he [LBJ] not be privy to it,” Mr. King said on the ABC News program *Turning Point*.

Mr. King, who heads the Martin Luther King Jr. Center for Nonviolent Social Change in Atlanta, suggested that the Army and Federal intelligence agencies were involved in his father’s assassination, in Memphis on April 4, 1968.

“I am told that it was part and parcel Army intelligence, CIA, FBI,” he said in the interview. “I think we knew it all along.”

In his book *The Last Crusade*, Gerald McKnight affirmed that the FBI did everything it could to disrupt the Poor People’s Campaign, aided and abetted by local police agencies as well as other agencies of the federal government, including military intelligence.⁶⁰⁷ McKnight wrote that “It was the president’s [Johnson’s] politically convenient pet thesis that the ghetto rebellions of the 1960s were the work of small cadres of black conspirators. Johnson believed that the community surveillance and intelligence-gathering program coordinated by operatives from the Justice Department, military intelligence, and the FBI would give the government the inside track on when the next ghetto would ‘blow,’ allowing the government to take preemptive action. Although the whole concept was spectacularly wrongheaded, it reflected the hold that the mystique of counterinsurgency had on official Washington.”⁶⁰⁸ McKnight also wrote that “according to Andy Young there were ugly scenes in the Oval Office late in the war-ruined Johnson administration when the president, in one of his Texas-sized towering rages, referred to King as that ‘goddamn nigger preacher.’ Young recalled the deceptive signals emanating from the Johnson White House: ‘On the surface we were being smiled at and granted grudging support; below the surface we were distrusted, resented and undercut.’”⁶⁰⁹

By the summer of 1963—thanks largely to the congressional gridlock created and sustained by Lyndon Johnson, as he cautioned Kennedy against moving too quickly on his civil rights initiative—the pent-up frustrations of African Americans had reached the boiling point. That tension extended to civil rights leaders, including Martin Luther King Jr. It was compounded by the enmity that had materialized between himself and the Kennedys, described in an article titled “What Really Happened Between J. Edgar Hoover and MLK Jr.” by John Meroney that appeared in the *Atlantic* on November 11, 2011, following the release of Clint Eastwood’s film on Hoover, *J. Edgar*. According to Meroney,

Hoover had made sure that both John and Robert Kennedy were also caught in the web of suspicion he had spun about King's supposed Communist leanings. That allegation was based on the fact that one of King's advisers, Stanley Levison and an employee of King, Jack O'Dell, were secret members of the Communist Party. The situation between the Kennedys and Martin Luther King just before JFK's assassination was described in this excerpt of the article in the *Atlantic*:

President Kennedy didn't worry about an espionage leak, or that the men would necessarily insert propaganda into King's speeches ... Rather, the president feared the political fall-out that would come if it were revealed that the nation's foremost civil rights leader had advisers with ties to the Soviet Union ... by June, the president had grown weary of the risks King was causing him and decided to have a come-to-Jesus meeting with the minister in Washington. In the Rose Garden, he exhorted King that Levison, was, as Kennedy described him, a "Kremlin agent." *Get rid of him*, demanded the president.

Although King agreed to drop Levison, he continued to communicate with him through others on his staff and the FBI continued their surveillance. After Kennedy was assassinated, the tapes were then sent directly to Johnson, who took great delight in listening to them, especially King's sexual exploits, as the *Atlantic* article went on to say:

"He listened to the tapes that even had the noises of the bedsprings," *Time* correspondent Hugh Sidey reported in 1975. Johnson would say, "Goddammit, if you could only hear what that hypocritical preacher does sexually."

In the three years following the assassination, though King collaborated with Johnson initially in the passage of civil rights legislation, that stopped suddenly, after King's speech of April 4, 1967, at Riverside Church in New York City at which he came out strongly against the Vietnam War and Johnson's methods in creating the war. In his book *Hellhound on His Trail: The Stalking of Martin Luther King*, Hampton Sides summarized the situation that King had found himself in six months before his assassination. By 1967, the thirty-eight-year-old King had been working almost non stop for twelve years, while getting little exercise and smoking and drinking in excess, he had become extremely stressed; he had been receiving death threats and his marriage was teetering toward failure. His outspoken criticisms of the Vietnam War caused Lyndon Johnson to turn against him completely:

Certainly he was no longer welcome at the White House. Martin Luther King and Lyndon Johnson had made history together—collaborating on the passage of the landmark Civil Rights Act of 1964 and Voting Rights Act of 1965—but now Johnson wouldn't even talk to King. *The president viewed him as a traitor, once calling him, 'that nigger preacher.'*"⁶¹⁰ [Emphasis added.]

Clearly, Lyndon Johnson's description of King was the same in 1967 as it had been three years earlier, despite how they had "collaborated" on the passage of the legislation in between. This is because Johnson used King to help accomplish his own personal goals, yet, despite Johnson's own legendary womanizing, he had the temerity to call Dr. King

“hypocritical.” When he was through with King, just as he would do with others he similarly used, he would toss him aside, or “under the bus,” and move on to other targets. We need not elaborate on the level of hate on the part of J. Edgar Hoover toward MLK Jr. since that is well documented in practically every book ever written about Hoover, other than the most obsequious paeans, such as Cartha D. DeLoach’s book, *Hoover’s FBI*, which intentionally avoid that topic. The question of which of them would have led the effort to kill King—Johnson or Hoover—is debatable, but there is little doubt that neither of them would have impeded such an effort. In the early months of that stormy year of 1968, Lyndon Johnson was desperately trying to hang on to his office, while simultaneously trying to keep both Robert Kennedy and Martin Luther King out of it, forever into the future. It is not entirely fanciful, or without factual basis, to speculate whether it was Johnson or Hoover who most wanted to see both of them dead.

Given the parallels noted previously, and more to come in the next chapter, it should be obvious by now that Martin Luther King Jr. was another victim of the insidious, secret teamwork between Lyndon Johnson and J. Edgar Hoover and their common belief that King was a Communist who threatened their provincial view of the United States: It was a view not unlike that of their segregationist friends in Congress, whose attitudes were essentially unchanged from their predecessors in the same seats, and their own ancestors, many of whom were also politicians representing the Southern plantation owners throughout the south a century before. The books cited previously—other than the one by Hampton Sides, which seems to miss much of the contextual background that is essential for a complete understanding of how the actions of a “patsy” can be conducted remotely—provide the critical evidence that support that thesis.

For the sake of brevity in this one, the conclusions of books by these other authors are incorporated by proxy to the present thesis as the remaining chapters continue to shape the overall dimensions of the set of criminal acts performed at the highest levels of government: And it was all done under what was portrayed as the “national security” of the United States of America, by men who were unfit for the positions of trust that they held.

* According to the Walter Isaacson/Evan Thomas book of that title, that name was explained thusly: “Later, when much of what they stood for appeared to be sinking in the mire of Vietnam, they were summoned for their steady counsel and dubbed ‘the Wise Men.’”

** James J. Angleton would be a leading contender, given that his unconditional support of Israel is now memorialized through his statue in Tel Aviv and two more in Jerusalem.

*** Mr. Martin, in his review of this section of the book, indicated that he knew this to be the case only with respect to Monsignor Sheehy and initially with his brother. The author’s inference that it extended to Forrestal’s other friends was based on his brother’s comment, quoted above from Cornell Simpson’s book: “He remarked about his brother’s treatment at the hospital, his virtual imprisonment and the censorship of his visitors.”

**** See “The Theory of Ay” at: <http://www.kingtutone.com/tutankhamun/murder/>

***** The name of the movie was changed from *House of Seven Joys* (which had been the “working title”) to *The Wrecking Crew*.

***** Despite the “findings” of Dave Perry, whose conclusions on every item of controversy can be assumed from the start to support the “official story,” in the cases this author has studied, his analysis fails to withstand close scrutiny (as demonstrated in *LBJ: The Masterxmind of the JFK Assassination* with reference to Johnson’s telephone call to Dr. Charles

Crenshaw, ordering him to get a deathbed confession from Oswald).

***** Source: David J. Garrow, *The FBI and Martin Luther King, Jr.*, New Haven, CT: Yale University Press, 1981, pp. 125, 126). This letter can also be seen at the website "Letters of Note," <http://www.lettersofnote.com/2012/01/king-like-all-frauds-your-end-is.html>

Chapter 6

THE DEMISE OF ROBERT F. KENNEDY

I thought they'd get one of us, but Jack, after all he's been through, never worried about it. I thought it would be me.

—BOBBY KENNEDY

I'll cut his (RFK's) throat if it's the last thing I do.

—LYNDON B. JOHNSON

Bobby Kennedy's Dilemma

The assassination of Robert F. Kennedy in Los Angeles on June 5, 1968, two months after Martin Luther King Jr.'s, caused some people to begin to suspect that there might be some kind of connection between the two events, perhaps even back to JFK's still-unresolved murder nearly five years earlier. For most, it was just an ephemeral thought that didn't linger long, because it was something many people wanted to keep deeply buried beneath the surface of their own daily rituals that demanded their immediate attention. RFK's killing, therefore, skipped further downward on the "average person's priority list." That slippage was helped along by the natural tendency of most people to dismiss such forbidden, negative ideas as being a sign of paranoia, too horrible to entertain for long. Such thoughts, by their very nature, are negative and unpleasant, and most people instinctively strive to attain positive attitudes out of their fear of such negativity. It follows that those are the first to be dismissed by the majority of people.

Yet there remained many minds that were still open to critical thought, and for those people it was the underlying patterns of the three assassinations of major US leaders that caused many people to lose confidence in the US government and made the political climate in the late 1960s surreal. The growing cynicism was fed by a set of common denominators and suggestions of larger patterns: Signs of overshadowing, controlling forces and the jetsam of accused assassins with similar traits, all of whom have been shown to be either "a patsy, a scapegoat, or a hypnotized, robotic Manchurian figure with no memory"; incredible witnesses subpoenaed in lieu of the more credible witnesses ignored; anomalies in the evidence that point toward further suspects, ineptitude and malfeasance, even signs of criminal complicity, of local and federal officials, and of course, in every case, the prevailing consensus of nearly everyone who has studied them intensely, the botched investigations.

The question of which of them—Lyndon Johnson or J. Edgar Hoover—hated Bobby Kennedy the most would be difficult to resolve, given how closely their attitudes about him matched. As noted previously, Hoover once called him "that skinny squealing little liberal shit," whereas Johnson once described him as "that little shit-ass." So the answer to that question is that the longer period of documented history that recorded the hateful relationship between LBJ and RFK probably trumps the more lengthy string of pejoratives in Hoover's assessment. Nevertheless, both of these men had more than enough reason,

and certainly the experience under their oversize belts, to have been involved in the decision that resulted in his murder at the Ambassador Hotel on June 5, 1968, just over two months after Lyndon Johnson announced that he would not run for reelection. The real, most obvious reason for Johnson's decision was that he couldn't bear the thought of being beaten in the primaries of his own party by "that little shit-ass," and that would of course risk jeopardizing his chances for securing the renomination itself, an absolutely unacceptable result. Their motives, just as they had been in the JFK assassination, were much more plainly visible than anyone else's (with the notable exceptions of the Mafiosi and of course certain high officials within the CIA), certainly the non existence of any provable motive for RFK's alleged assassin, Sirhan B. Sirhan, in his normal mind-set (i.e., when he was not under hypnosis or drug-induced memory loss).

The long-term feud between Bobby Kennedy and Lyndon Johnson has been documented in a number of books, including *LBJ: The Mastermind of the JFK Assassination*, so it is not necessary to delve deeply into that background again here. But the fact that it defined their relationship cannot be disassociated with Bobby's fate a little more than four years after his brother's murder. Moreover, it is pertinent that Bobby's relationship with Lyndon's friend and longtime neighbor, the increasingly senile J. Edgar Hoover, was a cut out of the same cloth: the mutual hatred between these older men toward the thirty-five-year-old attorney general could not have been greater in either case. The feeling was reciprocated by Bobby, who had much to do with its genesis since he had always treated Johnson with utter contempt, from their first meeting in the Senate dining room in 1953.

It was because of the long feud with Johnson that, after JFK's assassination, Bobby and Jackie Kennedy attempted to avoid serious confrontations with him; subsequently the Kennedy family generally also grew more reluctant to publicly comment about JFK's murder, or the defects in the investigation of it. Much has been written about Bobby's plan to run for the presidency as the only possible way to find the real answers. It is now clear that he was caught in a metaphorical spider's web, cut off from below by Hoover and above by Johnson and anything he might try to do before becoming president himself would risk his political career; indeed, it appears to many, in retrospect, that his decision to run for the presidency was precisely what cost him his own life, just weeks later.

Bobby did not want to "reopen the whole tragic business" for a number of reasons. First and foremost was that he knew that, as president, Johnson had complete power over the investigations and the agencies to be investigated: That power directly controlled the FBI, CIA, Secret Service, and the various military, intelligence, medical, and other sub divisions of those agencies and, vicariously through Texas and Dallas officials, to every other local judicial and police entity, including local sheriffs like Howard Stegall, as noted earlier. Bobby had none, and would not have that power unless he himself became president; he had even lost effective control over the FBI after his brother's assassination through Hoover's refusal to cooperate with him any longer. A deep insight into the prism within which Bobby viewed his position was shared by his friend Charles Bartlett: "Bobby was absolutely convinced that Lyndon Johnson was out to destroy him in public life. There was no way to bridge it."⁶¹¹

Some of his friends still connected to the Johnson administration repeated to him all the latest stories coming out of the White House press (mostly unpublished), keeping him as enraged as ever about his nemesis. One of these was an incident that occurred when Johnson noticed a Secret Service agent wearing a PT-109 tie clip. Johnson purportedly tore it off his tie and threw it in a trash can, then had the agent reassigned.⁶¹² Whether or not it was true—and there is certainly no reason to doubt it, given Johnson's other behavior toward the Kennedys—the fact that Bobby believed it was all that mattered. An illustration of Johnson's "other behavior" toward JFK, one of many which should not be written off as mere oversight, or merely an innocuous observation, was that after Johnson died, "Secret Service agents guarding Lady Bird were amazed to find that, even though their home was crammed with photos of Johnson with famous people, not one photo pictured him with JFK."⁶¹³ There was no outright statement that Bobby was also not pictured with Johnson in any of these photos, but that can be assumed.

Bobby Kennedy struggled with the idea of running in 1968, vacillating between the pros and cons. On January 30, 1968, he made the decision not to run, deciding that competing against Johnson, who was prepared to manipulate the war "in any way which will promote his political ambitions," would not only be a futile effort, but would most likely backfire in some way that would ensure Johnson's wrath against him would be insufferable and endless. Bobby had also realized that his long feud with Johnson was portrayed by much of the media—largely as a result of the controversy surrounding the publication of William Manchester's book, *The Death of a President*—as "ruthless and ambitious."⁶¹⁴ Within six weeks of that decision he had reversed himself, seeing how well Eugene McCarthy was doing in New Hampshire and the groundswell of support he was already generating in the Wisconsin primary, the next major event. This situation put some of his potential supporters—those who had given up on Bobby by then and had come out for McCarthy already—into being boxed in, having to continue that nominal support, even as they expected to eventually switch their allegiance back to Bobby for the remaining states.⁶¹⁵

New Orleans DA Jim Garrison Enters the Scene

In the meantime, a new investigation of JFK's assassination was creating a lot of publicity, which became a major concern for Bobby, not to mention many other people up and down, and on both sides of, the Potomac River. The best example of this was reflected in Richard Helm's opening comment every morning when he asked his CIA staff: "How is the Shaw trial going? Are we giving them all the help they need?"⁶¹⁶ The investigation that caused so much worry for so many people had been launched in New Orleans by Jim Garrison, the maverick district attorney, in December 1966, after he had begun analyzing Lee Harvey Oswald's activities in that city in the summer of 1963. He quickly discovered many links Oswald had with others and became particularly interested in those with David Ferrie and Clay Shaw (a.k.a. "Bertrand"), the homosexual bon vivant of the French Quarter and head of the New Orleans World Trade Center (put there with the help of his friends in the CIA).

Unfortunately for Garrison, he revealed too much to people he erroneously thought

were there to offer assistance to him; their real agenda was to disrupt the investigation. One of the first of these was James Phelan, a reporter who had previously befriended Garrison in getting a favorable story about him (“The Vice Man Cometh”) published in the *Saturday Evening Post*. Garrison trusted Phelan because of their previous contacts and made an error in allowing him access to memoranda related to the statements of one of Garrison’s key witnesses, Perry Russo. Phelan wrote an article titled “Rush to Judgment in New Orleans” for the *Saturday Evening Post* attacking Garrison’s investigation, including a claim that his investigators drugged witness Perry Russo, a lie that was exposed later at Clay Shaw’s trial.⁶¹⁷ Other reporters, including Hugh Aynesworth, writing for *Newsweek*, and Dick Billings, for *Life* magazine, soon joined the fray with false reports of Garrison bribing witnesses and not pursuing organized crime figures, as well as portraying him as living the high life of a Las Vegas gambler. All of these stories were shown to be untrue, as Garrison detailed in his book *On the Trail of the Assassins*.⁶¹⁸

All during 1967 and early 1968, as the LBJ-RFK feud continued unabated, Bobby went out of his way to avoid a serious confrontation with Johnson. This included his sending one of his top investigators, Walter Sheridan, to New Orleans in 1967 to try to disrupt or shut down the Garrison investigation, essentially helping Johnson, the FBI, the CIA, and the Secret Service to keep the secrets hidden. Sheridan—paradoxically, representing the criminal division of the Justice Department—wasn’t merely a passive observer of the New Orleans scene during this period: He was actively working to undermine Garrison personally and professionally and had recruited, bribed, or threatened witnesses to perjure themselves in order to derail Garrison’s efforts to prove that Clay Shaw and Clay “Bertrand” were one and the same and that he had been involved with overseeing Lee Harvey Oswald in the summer of 1963. One of the witnesses was a lawyer named Dean Andrews, who had repeatedly lied, denying that he even knew Clay Shaw and that Shaw was not the “Clay Bertrand” who had asked him to represent Lee Harvey Oswald.⁶¹⁹ Sheridan, with help from others furnished to him by agents of the FBI and CIA, used extra-legal methods on several other witnesses in order to attempt to destroy Garrison. (The adjective “extreme” should be added before “extra-legal” in relation to the mysterious deaths of David Ferrie, Mary Sherman, and Eladio del Valle, a CIA contact of Ferrie’s in Miami who was found shot through the heart and his skull slashed with a machete, from ear to ear. All of these murders were linked to the efforts to derail Garrison’s investigation, though there is no indication that Sheridan himself was involved in, or even knew about, such dirty work.)

One of Sheridan’s very successfully executed objectives was to move potential witnesses to other states where he knew they could be protected from extradition, either due to the current state laws in effect or his ability to rein in the appropriate officials (including several governors, one of whom was Ronald Reagan) to prevent it.⁶²⁰ Sheridan eventually enlisted the help (or it was volunteered by others) of a number of people connected to the CIA or FBI who were sent in to volunteer themselves to Garrison but actually performed as moles. Sheridan was also behind the production of a television show “White Paper,” which aired on NBC on June 19, 1967. The show was amateurish and filled with half-

truths, whole lies, parsed testimony, and missing much of the real evidence that had been withheld.⁶²¹

It wasn't just the news organizations, print and broadcast, that came out with attacks on Garrison: The chief justice of the United States, Earl Warren, on September 4, 1967, speaking in Tokyo, Japan, stated that Garrison had presented "absolutely nothing" to refute the official findings of the Warren Commission that Lee Harvey Oswald was the lone assassin. This was a clear and early message for all the world, thus the eventual jury, that the accused, Clay Shaw, was innocent, in the opinion of the highest judge in the country. Whether he was acting out a request by President Johnson was never mentioned, but that would not be an unreasonable question.

The relentless attacks by the government, aided by the news media, continued for years after the trial. In 1971, Garrison was arrested for allegedly taking bribes to protect gambling interests in New Orleans. According to an article titled "Garrison Links Arrest to a Move to Hide Kennedy Death 'Truth'" in the July 2, 1971, edition of the *New York Times*, Garrison responded to that event by saying that it was "part of the Government's [sic] effort to suppress 'the truth' about the assassination of President Kennedy." It appears that the continued harassment of Garrison was part of the government's agenda to make sure that his reputation remained sullied in perpetuity.

During the course of the Garrison investigation, the FBI had between ten and fifteen agents following the case in New Orleans, all reporting back to Cartha (Deke) DeLoach and J. Edgar Hoover, who kept Lyndon Johnson up-to-date. The number of men on the CIA's clandestine New Orleans payroll will never be known for certain, but it is clear that there were many connections between them and military intelligence, one of which was the CIA operative Antonio Veciana, who was also connected to Richard Helms in Langley, through Major General William P. Yarborough, the head of the 902nd Military Intelligence Group at Fort Hood, Texas. And there was David Atlee Phillips, who was then writing a novel, titled "*The AMLASH Legacy*" about the assassination, which stated that his own role (his own character was named Harold Harrison) was "one of the two case officers who handled Lee Harvey Oswald."

As it later became widely known Johnson came up with at least three possible scenarios for what might have happened, all of which pointed the finger away from himself and toward others, specifically the mafia, the CIA, and Castro. They had something else in common though: Bobby Kennedy, in one way or the other in all these scenarios, was indirectly implicated in his own brother's death. In addition to these problems, Bobby also knew that Johnson was behind the counter attack on himself, brought about by the leaks that Bobby had fed to Senator Williams in his investigation of the Bobby Baker/Lyndon Johnson frauds. RFK knew that Johnson had been behind the FBI's investigation of JFK's trysts with the three "Communist" girls, Ellen Rometsch (East Germany), Maria Novotny (Czechoslovakia), and Suzy Chang (China), which had caused his own pursuit of Johnson to "backfire."⁶²² Taken together, all of these matters had also exploded in Dallas, at least figuratively. Bobby immediately realized that he had been neutralized, probably coming to this realization the very afternoon of his brother's death, as he also began to understand

how deftly he had been “played.” Johnson was no longer merely a powerless vice president. Indeed, Johnson had, at the moment JFK was killed, instantly transformed from the very vulnerable target of Robert’s investigations into the most powerful and formidable opponent he had ever had.

In 1967, as the New Orleans imbroglio unfolded, Bobby was also embroiled in a feud with William Manchester over the *The Death of a President*, the book he had commissioned, trying to get Manchester to yield to his demands that he cut out all negative commentary about Lyndon Johnson—knowing that Johnson was out to “get him” one way or the other, and realizing that such material would undoubtedly backfire on him—specifically Johnson’s behavior on the afternoon and evening of November 22, 1963. Fueled by Lyndon Johnson’s position as the maestro of muckraking—with dozens of political pundits, newspaper columnists, and reporters ready and willing to plant the seeds—the reputation of Bobby Kennedy was now characterized as being “ruthless,” a crazed man out to do anything to damage LBJ. This situation was described in *LBJ: The Mastermind of the JFK Assassination* thusly: “As the controversy became public, Bobby’s prescience on that point (that Manchester’s attacks would damage his own relationship with Johnson) proved to be correct, but not in the way he feared; instead, he came to be seen by many people as a ruthless, vindictive, mean-spirited man who would countenance ‘book burning’ where it suited his needs. Johnson, ironically, was seen as the hapless victim of the Kennedy’s stridency, despite the fact that it was his own boorish behavior and his rude, insensitive, and arrogant actions that caused the rift in the first place.”⁶²³

Considering all of these points, it would not be idle conjecture to consider the likelihood that Bobby knew that Johnson was behind his brother’s assassination even before Johnson returned to Washington. That would explain why he could not confront—even acknowledge—him on Air Force One: He probably feared that he could not resist throwing a punch at him.

Now, we can add the further irony: Johnson upped the ante in the next round, by “doubling-down” on the spurious charge that Bobby had hired Manchester to “get him.” Bobby Kennedy feared that Johnson’s reaction to Manchester’s book would cause Johnson to ruin him, either politically or mortally. It was this fear that effectively transformed Bobby’s behavior—from his natural inclination to continue his previous attempts to have Johnson indicted—to his earnest attempt to salve LBJ’s hurting ego by getting the negative commentary toward him cut out of that book, ever fearful of Johnson’s inevitable reaction if he didn’t. Not just to himself, but to Jackie, the source of all the information concerning Johnson’s actions on board Air Force One returning to Washington. Yet despite this transformation, Johnson still believed that RFK was trying to unfairly embarrass and denigrate him. Johnson’s PR men immediately began spreading this story among the newsmen who were always hungry for more salacious details of the legendary feud between the president and the previous “assistant president.”

Meanwhile, Back in New Orleans ...

Just as the RFK/William Manchester battles began in 1967—and perhaps partly because of the personal difficulties they presented to Bobby in his larger objective to avoid battling

with the president in the press—the Garrison investigation in New Orleans was building steam quickly. In fact, that investigation quickly became a major concern for many very powerful people in Washington, who arrayed themselves against a handful of people in New Orleans who, with minimal resources and mainly “off-budget,” bravely but credulously attempted to solve one part of the “Crime of the Century.”

Robert Kennedy’s previous attempts to eliminate Castro backfired after the missile crisis, when his contradictory actions produced mixed signals and caused hatred by many of the exiles and the CIA assets employed for this agenda.⁶²⁴ But, regardless of the question of Bobby Kennedy’s level of knowledge of the continuing plots against Castro—that is, was he, or was he not, the thrust for trying to kill Castro, as some allege—one thing is abundantly clear: He knew that it was those same “assets,” a faction of whom he openly socialized with, even at his Hickory Hill home, who were at least partially responsible for what happened in Dealey Plaza on November 22, 1963.

There are a number of possible explanations why Bobby would have wanted to stop the Garrison investigation: One is that he felt that Garrison would only foul it up (given that he was not in a position to acquire the complete records, or even a measure of cooperation, from the “Agency”), making it more difficult for Bobby to investigate it fully once he became president, which is what he reportedly felt was the only avenue open to him, the only one that might guarantee a successful result. Perhaps he thought that, until he became president, anything that Garrison might uncover could simply give the perpetrators a “road map” of what other evidence, or witnesses, would need to be destroyed.

Combined with the reality of what the Justice Department’s Walter Sheridan was doing in New Orleans to derail Garrison’s investigation, it is now clear that Bobby knew that he could only solve his brother’s murder by becoming president himself. Mark Lane, in his book *Last Word* said that Garrison had confided it to him through a mutual friend: “He [RFK] said ‘Keep up the good work. I support you and when I’m president I am going to blow the whole thing wide open.’” When Lane asked Garrison how he had responded, he said he was encouraged, yet frightened: “If Bobby is telling people privately what his plans are, I think his life is in danger. Even the White House is not a sanctuary; his brother was president when they killed him. And Bobby is much more vulnerable now; he doesn’t even have Secret Service protection, not that those clowns are effective, and he mingles with crowds of people who want to touch him. He shakes hands with everybody.”⁶²⁵

Bobby acknowledged the risk, according to Garrison, and sent a message to him two days later that he had thought about it and decided that “if I win the California primary I will state that I have doubts about the official version and that I will conduct a thorough investigation if I become president. If I win California I think I’ll be on my way.”⁶²⁶ This would make it appear that he wanted to be seen publicly fighting Garrison’s efforts while privately wanting to see Garrison succeed. If so, it is perplexing that he would have gone to such lengths to have Sheridan do so much real damage to Garrison’s investigation since the result was seemingly contrary to his stated goal. The fear of Garrison compromising the investigation may have been considered to be more serious by Walter Sheridan than Robert Kennedy had anticipated, which might explain his overzealousness as well as

Bobby Kennedy's apparent acquiescence to Sheridan's actions.

Two young military men, Gerry Patrick Hemming and Bradley Ayers, were deeply involved in training the Cuban exiles in the Florida Keys during 1963, for a possible invasion of Cuba. Both of them, independently, stated that they saw Bobby Kennedy when he personally visited the training facility/encampment (twice, according to Ayers⁶²⁷) to meet with some of the exiles, so that they would know they had the backing of the White House. Hemming stated that Bernardo de Torres, who was the Cuban trailing Oswald, and Oswald himself, were both there in the summer of 1963. If that story is true, it would certainly explain why Bobby wanted to have Garrison's investigation stopped before it became public. There are many people who have pointed to discrepancies with their stories, however, which cause them to be considered controversial in the minds of many critics. Another take on this "Why did Bobby attack Garrison" conundrum was advanced by Jeff Shesol in his previously referenced 1997 book *Mutual Contempt: Lyndon Johnson, Robert Kennedy, and the Feud That Defined a Decade*:⁶²⁸

"Bobby is a wild man on this," Richard Bissell of the CIA concluded privately. White House aide Harris Wofford later identified Bobby as "the driving force behind the clandestine effort to overthrow Castro. From inside accounts of the pressure he was putting on the CIA to 'get Castro,' he seemed like a wild man who was out-CIAing the CIA."

The confusion over what RFK's role had been is contaminated by the fact that so much of the "testimony" regarding his actions was furnished by people within the CIA, in some cases from men who openly stated that they had no duty to tell the truth, even under oath. It is therefore difficult to treat much of that evidence as credible when it emanates from such people as Richard Bissell, Richard Helms, James J. Angleton, Edward Lansdale, Bill Harvey, and certain of their assistants, all senior CIA officials whose interest in solving this particular crime could charitably be called "conflicted." That these men were all trying to implicate RFK in plotting, which backfired and caused the death of his brother, does not exactly strengthen the case against Bobby. But, on the other hand, it isn't conclusive evidence that he didn't know about such a plot.

It has been widely reported that Bobby did not have knowledge of the assassination attempts on Castro (as distinct from the more general attacks being plotted against Cuba) until May 7, 1962, at which point he ordered that he be kept informed before "such schemes" were conducted. The question of whether Bobby knew about any specific scheme to murder Castro, which was being planned or conducted in November 1963, is still being vigorously debated on Internet forums and in a number of books, and the verdict on that point must therefore remain unresolved. Yet another, more benign, possibility is that perhaps he felt guilty because he didn't know about such a plan in 1963 and simply realized that he should have, given his position.

For about forty-five years, the Kennedy family has participated in an effort to keep Bobby's involvement in Operation Mongoose—among other things—out of the public domain. As reported by the *Boston Globe* on August 5, 2012, "Kennedys keep vise-grip on

RFK papers,” it has taken so long to come up with a plan because there are a lot of private notes sprinkled among the publicly owned documents; the lead paragraph states:

A trove of documents housed in a secure vault at the John F. Kennedy Library has long been described as Robert F. Kennedy’s private papers and been kept from public view by the Kennedy family. But many of the documents have little to do with personal matters and instead detail once-secret military and intelligence activities

... ⁶²⁹

The report goes on to say, “*Yet the Kennedy family, led by Robert’s widow, Ethel, has rarely permitted even limited access to the papers.*” The fact that the family controlled the RFK archive, including military, State Department, and CIA documents, was caused by a controversial agreement they had reached with the National Archives in the wake of Robert Kennedy’s assassination in 1968. The conundrum presented by this unprecedented “agreement” is that it puts archive personnel overseeing it into a situation that they have recently described as “inappropriate”: “*Ethel has been given control of documents that she couldn’t even legally read because she didn’t have a security clearance,*” said a former National Archives official who had the authority to handle top-secret information regarding the RFK papers.”⁶³⁰ [Emphasis added.]

Beyond the issue of what RFK’s papers may or may not reveal looms the larger question that they would be expected to resolve: What caused Bobby Kennedy to participate in having the Garrison case derailed? Bobby’s direct leadership of the Special Group—Augmented, as well as other specific compartments of Operations Mongoose and ZR/Rifle (the first of these operations referred to the actions taken to foment an uprising within Cuba, the second referred to plots to assassinate Fidel Castro), which he commanded, resulted in a situation his orders had created and, apparently in his mind at least, that led to the murder of his brother. That is the best explanation, nearly the only one possible, for his taking such aggressive steps to sabotage Jim Garrison. This explanation leads to a conclusion suggesting that by 1967 he was effectively joining forces with his enemies in the CIA, FBI, and even Lyndon Johnson himself in their mutual objective to shut down Garrison’s investigation. Between March 1961 and October 30, 1962, Bobby’s role in these programs was part of the historical record. But he had ordered that the efforts against Castro be terminated at that point, as part of the resolution of the missile crisis, so the only pertinent issue is whether he had secretly continued beyond that date or whether Bill Harvey or Johnnie Rosselli had taken it upon themselves to continue the sabotage without Bobby’s knowledge. Alternatively, it may have been that date, October 30, 1962, was when Harvey and Rosselli, with a “green light” from the top end of the hierarchy, began redrawing the plan to change the target from Castro to JFK, considering that they seemed to be very busy, working together often, over the next several months. This probability is strengthened by the well-established fact that the highest echelon leaders of both the Joint Chiefs of Staff, as well as the military brass and CIA officials, were livid because of what they felt was JFK’s capitulation to the Soviet Union and Castro after the missile crisis, and had missed the best chance to date of invading Cuba, destroying the missiles and ridding forever the Communist menace from the Western Hemisphere. Naturally, this point of

view neglects the far more critical point—that JFK’s handling arguably saved many millions of lives, and possibly permanent damage to extended life on planet earth, at least with respect to both of the continents involved.

A lot of the confusion left in the wake of JFK’s murder can be traced back to the false public perception that John F. Kennedy’s view of Lyndon Johnson was substantively different than that of his brother Robert. That was disproved on September 12, 2011, when an announcement was made by major news media, including the one below from *CBS News*, about Jackie Kennedy’s seven-part series of interviews with Arthur Schlesinger Jr. shortly after the assassination were to be published in a new book, *Jacqueline Kennedy: Historic Conversations on Life with John F. Kennedy*. The announcement conclusively shows that this was not the case at all. In fact, it proves the opposite: JFK thought that it would be a terrible event for the country if Lyndon ever became president:

NEW YORK—President John F. Kennedy openly scorned the notion of Vice President Lyndon Baines Johnson succeeding him in office, according to a book of newly-released interviews with his widow, former first lady Jacqueline Kennedy ... “This book shows Jackie Kennedy unplugged,” historian and CBS News analyst Douglas Brinkley told “Early Show” co-anchor Erica Hill Monday. *She said her husband and his brother, then-Attorney General Robert F. Kennedy, a longtime LBJ antagonist, even discussed ways to prevent Johnson from winning the Democratic nomination in a future contest.*⁶³¹ [Emphasis added.]

The fact that the revelations finally released did not match the hyperbole of the announcement merely affirms that the forces leading the continuing cover-up are still hard at work, reburying the truths and propping up the lies and mythology that have taken deep roots to replace them. This should put to rest once and for all the question of whether the Kennedys would also plan to replace Johnson on the 1964 ticket, if for no other reason, to ensure that he would never become president. Of course Johnson knew of their plans to replace him and that must be factored into how he continued to “get back” at RFK immediately upon becoming president.

Finally, in January 2013, after decades of silence from any of the Kennedys, a few interviews and news releases have suggested that more substantive information may now start to be disclosed. An AP news article titled “RFK Children Speak About JFK Assassination” published in *USA Today* on January 12, 2013, quoted an interview in which reporter Charlie Rose asked Robert F. Kennedy Jr. about what his father thought of the work of the Warren Commission:⁶³²

[RFK Jr.] said his father thought the Warren Commission, which concluded Lee Harvey Oswald acted alone in killing the president, was a “*shoddy piece of craftsmanship*.” [Emphasis added.] He said that he, too, questioned the report. “The evidence at this point I think is very, very convincing that it was not a lone gunman,” he said, but he didn’t say what he believed may have happened.

Robert F. Kennedy Jr. continued his answer by agreeing with Charlie Rose that his father had come to the realization that there may have been a linkage between his own efforts

against organized crime and his brother's assassination. Moreover, he also agreed that his father tried to ignore or offer nominal support in public for the Warren Report, but privately dismissed it. Arthur Schlesinger Jr. also stated that Bobby Kennedy did not believe the conclusions of the Warren Report when Schlesinger wrote that on the night of October 30, 1966, they, along with Richard Goodwin, talked long into the night at the New York bar P.J. Clarke's. They talked about the Manchester book and about the autopsy photographs that he had just turned back over to the Archives (which became subject to more sleight of hand machinations, as described in an earlier chapter). That led into a discussion of the Warren Report and Bobby wondered aloud how long he could continue avoiding comment on the report, making clear to the others there that he thought it was a poor job. Yet Bobby Kennedy knew that he couldn't openly criticize it because to do so would risk a major confrontation with Johnson as well as reopen the case before he was prepared to do so.⁶³³ This spoken comment to his close friends aligns closely with what Mark Lane reported, as noted previously, about the message that a mutual friend of his and Bobby's had told Jim Garrison: That he would reopen the investigation and find out what had actually occurred.

There can be no question, based on Arthur Schlesinger Jr.'s and Robert F. Kennedy Jr.'s words, that Bobby Kennedy thought that the Warren Report was a sham. It logically follows that what Mark Lane said about Bobby's plan to reopen the investigation was true. The story that Bobby did tell students after the speech he gave at San Fernando Valley State College in Northridge, California, on March 25, 1968, was described by David Talbot, author of one of the best books on JFK and RFK, *Brothers: The Hidden History of the Kennedy Years*. Talbot, an accomplished journalist and founder of the Internet magazine *Salon*, reported that many students had surrounded Bobby after his speech when a young woman shouted, "WE WANT TO KNOW who killed President Kennedy!" Other students then joined with her in yelling "Open the archives." Kennedy said, in a response recorded by Los Angeles radio station KLAC: "You wanted to ask me something about the archives. I'm sure, as I've said before, the archives will be open... . Can I just say, and I have answered this question before, but there is no one who would be more interested in all of these matters as to who was responsible for uh ... the uh, uh, the death of President Kennedy than I would. I have seen all of the matters in the archives. If I became president of the United States, I would not, I would not reopen the, uh, Warren Commission Report. I think I, uh, stand by the Warren Commission Report. I've seen everything in the archives, the archives will be available at the appropriate time.' At this, the crowd again broke into loud cheers."⁶³⁴ The students who heard this, as well as members of his own staff, took this to mean that a reopening of the archives (which Johnson had ordered to be closed for seventy-five years), was tantamount to a reopening of the investigation. According to Talbot, Bobby's press secretary, Frank Mankiewicz, said that there was no doubt that "Kennedy was calling for his brother's assassination to be reopened one day. 'I remember that I was stunned by the answer,' recalled Mankiewicz. 'It was either like he was suddenly blurting out the truth, or it was a way to shut down any further questioning. You know; 'Yes, I will reopen the case. Now let's move on.'"⁶³⁵ A month later, a media consultant, Richard Lubic, asked him about it and RFK explained: "Subject to me getting

elected, I would like to reopen the Warren Commission.”⁶³⁶

The conclusions of Frank Mankiewicz and Richard Lubic, as described by David Talbot, were affirmed by Bobby’s friend Paul Schrade, in a conversation I had with him on January 28, 2013. Even though Schrade had no first hand knowledge of Robert Kennedy’s intentions at the time, he stated to me that, “the record is clear that Kennedy would have continued his own intensive investigation into his brother’s murder if he became president.”⁶³⁷

The 1968 Presidential Race Begins, and, for LBJ, Ends

In the final days of January 1968, the Vietcong began a surprise attack throughout South Vietnam, setting off bombs and attacking even the “invulnerable” American embassy in Saigon. The breadth of the attack was so huge, the “Tet Offensive” so unexpected by US forces, that it shook the citizenry of the United States to its core. Finally the majority of Americans came to the realization that they had been lied to by their own president and his highest officials, who had assured the country that the enemy had practically already been defeated. This marked the “turnaround” in attitudes about the Vietnam War among the American public; it was helped, in no small measure, by the change in reportage of the merits of the war by many in the news media, led by news anchor Walter Cronkite of CBS News, considered then the “Most Trusted Man in America.”*

Senator Eugene McCarthy of Minnesota soon entered the campaign to challenge the president in the first of the national primaries, in New Hampshire. McCarthy told Richard Goodwin—a Kennedy presidential adviser who Johnson held over until the relationship soured—that he first decided to run when Attorney General Nicholas Katzenbach testified that the president no longer needed congressional approval to make war because of advancements made in technology rendered the niceties of the constitutional checks and balances obsolete (Clearly a position that no attorney in his right mind would have advanced, therefore it can be presumed to have been a point pushed by the president himself, who was demonstrably not in his right mind as we have already proved, and will continue to show in this narrative). Goodwin said, “I walked out of the hearing room determined to do something about it.”⁶³⁸ In February, as Richard Goodwin described it, the general assumption at the time was that McCarthy’s campaign was doomed. But it was a serious error by the master politician, Lyndon Johnson, that caused his train to come off the tracks. He incorrectly believed that Eugene McCarthy’s campaign was really a proxy for Bobby Kennedy’s and that to destroy his chances, Johnson would have to enter the race as a write-in candidate and mount an aggressive campaign to fight him and drive McCarthy out of future races. That was a major mistake, because in the larger context of the campaign, although Johnson won by 5 percent over McCarthy, the closeness of the race was seen as a huge loss for a sitting president. Had he done nothing but sit out the race, he could have claimed victory even if he had lost. The turning point was the torrent of televised coverage of burning villages and endless jungle fighting in the evening news coverage of the Vietnam war following the Tet offensive by the Vietcong.⁶³⁹ The New Hampshire election was on March 12; on March 16 Robert Kennedy entered the race and

two weeks after that, on March 31, Johnson announced that he would not run for reelection. The following week, Martin Luther King was murdered and two months after that Robert Kennedy was assassinated.

Bobby Throws His Hat into the Ring

On March 16, Robert F. Kennedy announced that he was entering the presidential race. According to Joseph Califano, a well-respected domestic affairs adviser to Presidents Kennedy and Johnson who eventually served in the cabinet of Jimmy Carter, despite his having heard Johnson's frequent verbal jabs at Bobby Kennedy, said that Johnson accepted the news of Bobby entering the race with equanimity, and that his attitude about the event was "detached."⁶⁴⁰ Johnson even stated to Califano that, if reporters asked him about this news, he should merely state that "he's had a brilliant government career."⁶⁴¹ In contrast to everything else written about this event, Califano's assessment—that Johnson had not been ruffled by Bobby's announcement—must be considered with some skepticism: Was he miscasting Johnson's reaction for his own reasons? A possible explanation, of course, is that Johnson would have known that Califano was close to Bobby Kennedy and would never have revealed his real reactions to him for that reason. Or, maybe it was simply how Johnson always tried to react to an unfolding crisis, showing his steely resolve to whoever happened to be with him at the moment, much like his comportment immediately following JFK's assassination in various accounts, despite conflicting reports of his erratic "crybaby" behavior from others.

But Califano's account of Johnson's equanimity was not shared by the esteemed, highly credentialed and credible author Townsend Hoopes—as previously noted, a former undersecretary of the Air Force—who stated that all during the next week, Johnson lashed out in "tantrums" and made two "truculent speeches" in the Midwest as he "pounded on the lecturn, jabbing his finger at the audience" and declaring that "we're going to win" the war he had already been told was a lost cause by none other than Dean Acheson, another very credible and honorable man respected by the most well-established statesmen of that period.⁶⁴²

These contradictory statements by Califano and Hoopes are rather stunning, considering everything that Johnson had previously said about Bobby Kennedy at every opportunity, making it clear that his election to the presidency was the worst possible thing that could possibly happen. Even in retirement he admitted that the thing he feared the most, all during his presidency, was that Robert Kennedy would declare his candidacy for the presidency.⁶⁴³

Just two weeks after RFK's announcement, Lyndon Johnson announced that he would not run for reelection, which left the field wide open for Bobby to go after the nomination and almost assuredly win the general election against Nixon after winning the California primary election, just as his brother had done eight years earlier. Yet helping Bobby get elected to the presidency was the last thing that Johnson would have done; he undoubtedly understood the implications and anticipated the result of his decision not to run again in 1968. Unless of course this was merely another of his plots, a subterfuge he felt might offer

protection for himself if something bad should happen to Bobby: He had removed himself from the race, so of course he had no motive to have been behind any plot against him, and if any misfortune should happen to Bobby, he could portray himself as being completely out of the picture and therefore guiltless.

Bobby Kennedy had only one security man, an ex-FBI agent named William “Bill” Barry, who Kennedy tolerated only because he liked him personally. He once told Barry that, “if there’s somebody out there who wants to get me, well, doing anything in public life today is Russian roulette.”⁶⁴⁴ There was a lot of talk among newsmen about the danger to Kennedy’s life because of his attitude about security measures. Syndicated columnist Jimmy Breslin once asked *Newsweek* reporter John Lindsay whether Kennedy had the “stuff” to go all the way. “And I said, ‘Yes, of course, he has the stuff to go all the way, but he’s not going to go all the way ... somebody is going to shoot him. I know it and you know it, just as sure as we are sitting here ... He’s out there now waiting for him.’ There was a sort of stunned silence around the table, and then, one by one, each of us agreed.”⁶⁴⁵ Apparently, by June 1968, political assassination had simply become an accepted form of “thinning the herd,” even to the newsmen covering the candidates. Perhaps it was becoming the accepted paradigm because it was intrinsic to the Johnson presidency, and no one could do much about it as long as it couldn’t be proven.

A little more than two months after Bobby entered the presidential race, he won the California primary on June 4 and, immediately after the celebration at the Ambassador Hotel, minutes after midnight, in the wee hours of June 5—as a result of planning that had begun sometime earlier by highly experienced men and at least one woman, specialists in the field of deadly covert operations who were practicing hypnosis on a man named Sirhan Sirhan—Bobby was shot in Los Angeles and died the next day, June 6.

After Bobby was assassinated, Lyndon Johnson began having second thoughts about dropping out of the race, even toying with the idea of pushing a “Draft Johnson” movement, apparently after having his confidence restored now that Bobby would not be on the ticket to embarrass him. Thirty years later, in the April 1998 issue of *The Atlantic Monthly*, Robert Dallek described that turnaround, in an article entitled “The Presidency: Three New Revelations About LBJ.” The article noted how, after Bobby’s assassination, Johnson’s support had shifted back to himself, and how he had then begun planning how to retract his previous withdrawal of March 31, 1968. When he was made to see that his support had disappeared over those few weeks, he eventually abandoned his party’s nominee, Hubert Humphrey, and secretly backed the Republican nominee, Richard M. Nixon.⁶⁴⁶

[After] Robert F. Kennedy had been assassinated and Hubert Humphrey, the likely Democratic nominee, hinted that he would make a quick end to the war, Johnson tried to come back into the presidential race and arrange a draft for himself at the Chicago convention... . *Johnson secretly favored Nixon in the campaign.* “You know that Nixon is following my policies more closely than Humphrey,” LBJ told his longtime friend Jim Rowe.

As we turn to the story of Bobby's assassination, it is important to realize that its complexities are comparable to those of JFK's murder; therefore a complete examination of it is beyond the scope of this book. What follows is merely a summary of what has been established by others and is a composite of three of the best books on the subject: *The Assassination of Robert F. Kennedy*, by William W. Turner and Jonn G. Christian, *Shadow Play: The Untold Story of the Robert F. Kennedy Assassination* by William Klaber and Philip H. Melanson, and *Who Killed Bobby?* by Shane O'Sullivan. Each of these books has presented meticulously detailed rebuttals to the manipulated evidence, described the credible witnesses who had heretofore been ignored, examined the censored and edited statements made by other witnesses, noted the enigmatic appearance of men in police uniforms, and all have demonstrated the incompetence of the defense attorneys. All of these prevarications and deceptions were part of a carefully designed plan to set up the case against Sirhan B. Sirhan as the lone shooter of Robert F. Kennedy. The patterns that have emerged run parallel to and seem to duplicate many of those previously employed in Dallas and Memphis.

There is no single "smoking gun" evidence that shows there was a thinly disguised conspiracy to assassinate Robert F. Kennedy. But there is a plethora of evidence that reveals multiple patterns which show suppression of evidence or testimony in conflict with the preestablished verdict. This includes destruction of real evidence, which was invariably replaced with fabrications, and multiple cases of FBI reports being written that were inconsistent with the actual statements of witnesses. While all of this mirrored the cover-ups in Dallas and Memphis, the blueprints of each were connected, on another higher level, to fundamental Johnsonian patterns. The most basic of these were: Always acting in complete secrecy, acting through his subordinates and willing officials subject to the highest levels of classified government secrecy protocols, never committing anything related to writing, and replacing truth with lies planted generously to an obedient press and aspiring writers. All of these tenets were employed by and under the control of the FBI or the CIA, through news agencies dominated by journalists who had grown to be dependent on the flow of information through valves controlled by the Agency's Operation Mockingbird. Finally, in each of the cases of the 1960s assassinations, Lyndon B. Johnson was uniquely in the power position to control all the working components of the cover-ups.

The Turner-Christian book was originally published in 1978 by Random House and republished by Carroll & Graf in 2006 with substantive new information regarding how Random House had sabotaged its own book, burning thousands of copies of it based on a specious charge of libel by a man who the authors identified as having been in Dallas during JFK's assassination (and interviewed by the police immediately after that event, before being freed) as well as near the Ambassador Hotel in Los Angeles at the time of Bobby's assassination. The man who evidently made this charge, Eugene Hale Brading (a.k.a. "Jim Braden" and "Edgar Eugene Bradley") had met with his California parole officer a few days before the JFK assassination, during which he stated that he was going to Dallas to meet with Lamar Hunt (one of H. L. Hunt's sons). Braden and Bradley were aliases used by Brading, as revealed in an FBI rap sheet (#799 431) that showed he had

“hung around with Mafia heavies, among them Jimmy ‘The Weasel’ Fratianno, described as ‘the executioner for the Mafia on the ‘West Coast.’”⁶⁴⁷

Peter Noyes, a CBS News producer, found that Brading’s Empire Oil Company also had an office in New Orleans, and that Brading was in Dallas on the day of the JFK shooting visiting two sons of billionaire H. L. Hunt (Lamar and Nelson Bunker Hunt) on the day before the assassination. Nelson Bunker Hunt was one of the sponsors of the full-page ad in the *Dallas Morning News* of November 22, 1963, showing a photograph of John Kennedy titled “WANTED FOR TREASON.”⁶⁴⁸ On November 22, 1963, Brading/Braden had been taken into custody by the Dallas police at the Dal-Tex building across the street from the Texas School Book Depository, a building in which many researchers believe one of the shooters had been positioned. As noted previously, a friend of Lyndon Johnson’s who had also employed his hit man Malcolm Wallace, D. H. Byrd, happened to own the Texas School Book Depository building and another friend and benefactor, Morris D. Jaffe, had an office on the third floor of the Dal-Tex building, which housed a company for which no records exist to indicate it did business in either of the commodities reflected in its title, “Dallas Oil and Uranium Company.” When the Turner-Christian revised book was finally republished in 2006, the authors stated that there were many indications of “a troubling Dallas-Los Angeles parallel.”⁶⁴⁹ That was, as we shall see, only one of many such parallels.

Another commonality between the Dallas and Los Angeles assassinations was the concurrent loss of telephone and police radio contact; in the Dallas case, it even extended to a complete breakdown of the telephone system in Washington, DC, immediately after JFK’s assassination. In Los Angeles, Sergeant Paul Sharaga described it as follows: “The thing that still has me confused—and as a police officer it shouldn’t affect me that way but it sends cold chills down my spine—is that for a fifteen or twenty-minute period we lost all radio communication. I’ve got it recorded in my log. There was that period when I could not communicate with another car; I could not communicate with the monitor; and I could not communicate with Communications, either on the main frequency or on Tac 1 or Tac 2 (tactical channels).”⁶⁵⁰ In a footnote to that point, the authors Turner and Christian added: “In 1977, the Los Angeles District Attorney John Van de Kamp announced that there was no black-out—because the LAPD radio logs didn’t show one.”⁶⁵¹

The actions of Random House in its attempt to destroy the book they originally published was only one of the many lingering intrigues and anomalies in yet another case of what appears to be officially sanctioned murder having origins at the highest level of the federal government. The multiple patterns of Bobby’s murder that were comparable to those of JFK’s, when examined from the macro level perspective, include: destroyed crime-scene evidence, culled witnesses whose testimony did not align with the preestablished verdict, signs of the vestiges of Operation Mockingbird (enlistment of the media to recreate a story unsupported by ballistic evidence), and the MK/ULTRA mind-control experimentation conducted for nearly two decades by the various intelligence agencies,

traces of which can be seen in Lee Harvey Oswald (Dallas), Sirhan Sirhan (Los Angeles), and James Earl Ray (Memphis). As had been the case in Dallas five years earlier, and just two months previously in Memphis, there was no police protection or Secret Service support assigned to Senator Kennedy. Secret Service support was not extended to presidential candidates until after, and because of, RFK's assassination and then only because of the public outcry that forced a complicit president to accede to it.

In this case, despite the normal police presence at major political events, there were no LAPD officers assigned to Robert Kennedy's protection, despite the fact that three major candidates were holding election events at the Ambassador Hotel, attracting people from the extremes of both political parties, from the far left to the far right. As authors Turner and Christian established, both Los Angeles Mayor Sam Yorty and Police Commissioner Thomas Reddin tried to blame Robert Kennedy himself because he allegedly told the LAPD that he did not need their services. "[Yet] no one in the RFK campaign entourage could recall anyone, RFK included, having called off LAPD protection... . The impression that prevailed was that RFK had somehow managed to orally sign his own death warrant."⁶⁵² That correlates precisely with how JFK had supposedly ordered Secret Service and Dallas motorcycle policemen to stay away from his limousine during the Dallas motorcade, an assertion now proven to be completely untrue,⁶⁵³ but it allowed both entities to later claim that they were only submitting to the dead victim's demands when they virtually removed any protection for JFK as he entered Dealey Plaza.

The only "official" protection was from a few hotel security personnel, working with hired guards from the Ace Guard Service and Bill Barry, who was supposed to be a bodyguard for Bobby, though he had remained with Ethel too long to be on the scene when Bobby was murdered. Unofficially, the fact that pro football lineman Roosevelt Grier and the Olympic decathlon champion Rafer Johnson were nearby, though not armed, also made themselves available for the purpose of intimidating would-be assailants. The alleged assailant Sirhan Sirhan, however, would not likely be intimidated by anyone, as he appeared to be in a hypnotic trance or drugged, according to many bystanders. Author George Plimpton, for example, had been inches away from Sirhan when the shooting started and Olympian Rafer Johnson grabbed Sirhan in the struggle to free the gun from his hand. Plimpton remembered something that seemed very odd to him: "The man with the gun had 'enormously peaceful eyes,' an almost beatific expression on his face. 'In the middle of a hurricane of sound and feeling,' Plimpton recalled, 'he seemed peaceful.'"⁶⁵⁴ Several other witnesses made similar comments, suggesting that Sirhan was hypnotized or otherwise mentally disabled throughout the madness going on within and around him.

A possible explanation was advanced in a recent book, *Masters of Deceit* by Alex Tarnavsky, which posited that Sirhan had actually been given a drug by his "handler" called scopolamine; this powder, when inhaled, blocks the ability of the mind to form memories during the affected period, generally two to three hours. This theory for Sirhan's complete absence of memory of the events leading up to the assassination of Robert F. Kennedy is plausible because hypnosis would not be as effective; indeed, it is often the very method commonly used to access distant memories.

Moments after Bobby finished his speech, saying “My thanks to all of you, and now it’s on to Chicago, and let’s win there!” he left the platform and his only bodyguard, Bill Barry, stayed back to help the pregnant Ethel Kennedy down from the podium; she told Barry, “I’m all right. Stay with the senator.” As author Shane O’Sullivan, in *Who Killed Bobby*, wrote of that moment:⁶⁵⁵

For a few fateful moments, Kennedy seemed uncertain where he was going next. Shouts came at him from three directions, but the waving arm of hotel assistant maitre d’ Karl Uecker caught his eye. Uecker took the senator’s right hand, parted a gold curtain behind the rostrum, and led him off the rear of the platform into a small backstage anteroom ... Barry and the rest of the Kennedy entourage rushed to catch up, and emerged into a backstage hallway as Karl Uecker led Kennedy toward the double swinging doors of the pantry, en route to a press conference in the Colonial Room.

“Slow down! You’re getting ahead of everyone,” shouted Frank Burns, a lawyer and aide to Jesse Unruh. Ace security guard Thane Eugene Cesar took hold of Kennedy around the right elbow with his left hand and Uecker and Cesar led the senator into the pantry and began to push their way through the crowd.

Amid all the chaos, as Sirhan—standing four to six feet in front of Bobby—pointed his gun erratically toward Kennedy, he began firing in his general direction, but almost immediately Bill Barry had pushed his way through the crowd and began hitting Sirhan in the face with his fist as others grabbed his arm, trying to pry the gun from his hand. One of the men who had led Bobby into the pantry, Karl Uecker, leaped onto Sirhan after the second or third shot, grabbing him around the neck with his right arm and Sirhan’s wrist with his left hand as he attempted to divert the gun away from the crowd. Shots from Sirhan’s gun hit Bobby’s friend Paul Schrade, reporter Ira Goldstein, student Irwin Stroll, ABC news director William Weisel, and a nearby woman, Elizabeth Evans.⁶⁵⁶

A campaign worker named Sandra Serrano was interviewed by NBC news reporter Sander Vanocur less than an hour after the shooting. She had left the heat of the Embassy Room shortly before Kennedy’s speech to seek respite on a fire escape a short distance away. Serrano told Vanocur that she saw a young lady wearing a white dress with black polka dots, who had a “funny nose,” accompanied by two young males, who had climbed the fire escape to enter the hotel. A few minutes later, she said that she heard muffled sounds that she thought sounded like an automobile backfire.⁶⁵⁷

Right after that she said the woman, accompanied by only one of the men, came running past her repeatedly shouting “We’ve shot him!” When Serrano asked who they shot, the woman shouted back “Senator Kennedy.”⁶⁵⁸

Serrano’s story was so contrary to the version immediately adopted by the investigators that they began repeatedly browbeating her with intimidation and threats, even an apparent attempt at seduction. The handsome young investigator and polygraph operator, Enrique “Hank” Hernandez, did this in what he described as an attempt to gain her trust

and make her comfortable before administering the polygraph test to her. It was at the suggestion of his supervisor, Lieutenant Manny Pena, that Hernandez invited the eighteen-year-old Serrano out to dinner on June 20, two weeks after the assassination, along with her aunt as chaperone just before administering the examination, even buying two alcoholic drinks for the underage Serrano.

The real objective of Hernandez was clearly an effort to persuade her to conform her testimony to the officially sanctioned police version. One of his earliest questions to her was: "Between the ages of eighteen and nineteen, do you remember lying to the police about something very serious?" She answered, "No." He then asked, "When you told the police that a girl with a polka-dot dress told you she had shot Kennedy, were you telling the truth?" Sandra responded, "She didn't say, 'We had shot *Kennedy*.' She said, 'We shot *him*.'"

Vincent DiPierro, an Ambassador Hotel waiter who saw Sirhan push his way past a high school student named Lisa Urso, another witness, said that the man had a "strange smile" on his face.⁶⁵⁹ Numerous witnesses, including these two, gave statements that Sirhan's gun never got closer than three to four feet, possibly as much as six feet, from Kennedy. Karl Uecker had been a close witness to Sirhan, though he was not questioned in court by either the prosecution or the defense, about how far away Sirhan's gun was from Bobby's head. Uecker later made a statement to the effect that "there was a distance of at least one and one-half feet between the muzzle of Sirhan's gun and Senator Kennedy's head. The revolver was directly in front of my nose. After Sirhan's second shot, I pushed his hand that held the revolver down, and pushed him onto the steam table. There is no way that the shot described in the autopsy could have come from Sirhan's gun. When I told this to the authorities, they told me that I was wrong. But I repeat now what I told them then: Sirhan never got close enough for a point-blank shot, never."⁶⁶⁰ Yet, the autopsy indicated that at least one shot was made at point-blank range, within "one inch away from the senator's ear at the time it was fired."⁶⁶¹

Just as Jack Ruby had been represented by the flamboyant attorney from San Francisco, Melvin Belli, and James Earl Ray was represented by another famous and flamboyant attorney, Percy Foreman, Sirhan Bishara Sirhan was given the same treatment. Grant Cooper was a silver-maned, elegantly dressed attorney for the Hollywood stars, who had been gifted with a silver tongue as well. Authors Klaber and Melanson in their book *Shadow Play*, described Grant Cooper as an attorney never at a loss for words in his long history of Hollywood lawyering, including his then-most-recent case, which involved his "victory" in getting a hung jury in the case of a murder trial against his client Dr. Bernard Finch, who, along with his mistress Carole Tregoff, was charged with the murder of Finch's wife.⁶⁶²

The esteemed and legendary attorney Grant Cooper did not pursue the ballistics discrepancies relating to Sirhan's eight-cartridge gun, and the prosecution wasn't concerned about the inconsistencies in witness statements. Ordinarily, one would expect a defense lawyer to embrace, and emphasize, the conclusions of the coroner if they

exonerated the accused. In this case, the coroner, Thomas Noguchi, provided testimony that practically screamed that a second shooter was responsible for the death of Robert F. Kennedy. Noguchi, testified that “all three of the bullets that hit Kennedy entered from the *rear*, from down below his head, pointed upwards and fired at less than one inch from the head and no more than two to three inches behind the right ear.”⁶⁶³ This contradicted even the remote possibility that the shots came from Sirhan’s gun, since all agreed that he was between three and six feet in *front* of Kennedy. After having been pressured by a deputy DA to suborn perjury, when he asked him to revise the distance from “one to three inches” to “one to three feet,” the coroner refused to comply. Apparently in a hurry to go golfing or a cocktail party, Sirhan’s own lawyer cut short Noguchi’s answers, “claiming it was ‘not necessary’ for the coroner to go into ‘gory detail’ about the nature and location of RFK’s various wounds.”⁶⁶⁴

Until Noguchi’s testimony, everyone else had attempted to gloss over that disturbing little detail. Indeed, even the *bon vivant* Hollywood attorney Grant Cooper, whom Sirhan relied on to represent his interests, complained about Noguchi’s testimony, claiming that it went into too much detail. He asked the judge: “Pardon me, your Honor ... Is all of this detail really necessary? I think the witness can express an opinion that death was due to a gunshot wound but these details ...”⁶⁶⁵ He even objected to a question to the coroner about RFK’s height: “‘Your Honor please, how tall he was, I object to it as I don’t think it is material’ said Cooper.” The judge explained to the brilliant attorney that it might pertain to “certain angles and things” of bullet trajectories. Cooper then sheepishly said, “Well, I will withdraw the objection.”

Author Shane O’Sullivan succinctly summed up the competence level of Sirhan’s famous defense attorney: “Cooper was quick to overlook such details as bullet trajectories ... Cooper’s muddled, bungling performance was merely a taste of things to come.”⁶⁶⁶ The apparent aggressiveness with which he tilted the tables against his client suggests that there were other forces at work to throw the trial. The indifference of the defense attorneys allowed the prosecution to roll along with their own perfunctory presentation, to an inevitable victory. It is interesting now to wonder how the news media at that time missed the trial’s greater story, about anomalies related to the evidence generally and specifically to the many assertions of witnesses being suborned and the unresolved ballistics issues. Their lack of interest in looking into some other rather startling developments in the case might have also caused them to miss the point about how Sirhan’s attorney had bungled the case, apparently out of a fear of getting too close to certain exculpatory issues, or even too much detail over “angles and things” by the defense counsel.

Two of the many distractions going on simultaneously with the trial were rumors of investigations going on regarding defense attorney Grant Cooper and an even more enigmatic, well-coordinated harassment campaign of coroner Thomas Noguchi. For Grant Cooper, the day after the trial was over, the federal government resumed an investigation into certain illegal acts involving Cooper’s own “moral turpitude.” In fact, the state bar association angrily protested when the judge treated the case as *not* involving moral turpitude, as a way to get him off the hook with only a \$1,000 fine—typical for a

misdemeanor offense, for which Cooper was convicted. As author O'Sullivan lamented: "Was the Los Angeles legal establishment taking care of one of its own, or was Cooper given an easy ride in return for his weak defense of Sirhan at the trial?"⁶⁶⁷

Los Angeles County Coroner Thomas Noguchi became embroiled in a bitter feud with the county's chief administrative officer, Lin Hollinger, who tried to transfer Noguchi to another hospital. When he refused that move, Hollinger attempted to have him fired. It appeared that there was an attempt being made by others within the department to portray Noguchi as mentally disturbed and he thought it hopeless to fight back so, the day before he was to testify at Sirhan's trial, he resigned, but then retracted his resignation. A few months later, when his testimony had been put back to bed and ignored, Noguchi was cleared of the charges and reinstated as the county coroner.⁶⁶⁸

The ballistics discrepancies noted previously from Karl Uecker's testimony were among the many problems left unresolved at the trial. Authors William Klaber and Philip Melanson pointed out that, despite multiple witnesses who stated they had seen bullet holes in the hotel pantry, in the ceiling tiles, and woodwork around the entry door, at the trial six of them testified but *neither the prosecution nor the defense asked them any questions about those holes.*⁶⁶⁹ More than anything else, the lack of interest of the defense attorneys in pursuing this critical piece of exculpatory evidence reflects the blasé attitude of Sirhan's legal team.

The reason for the disinterest in those bullet holes was because Sirhan's gun only held eight bullets and eight bullets had been accounted for. Any more bullets than eight would not fit the crime scene, so the easiest path to closing the case with a guilty verdict was to systematically ignore such confusion. None of this was made an issue and all of it would remain a secret for many years afterward, again consistent with a pattern that had already been repeated and would continue to be left like flotsam in other endeavors instigated, orchestrated, and controlled by the same plotters.

In addition to the six witnesses who were steered away from any discussion about all the holes they had seen, authors Klaber and Melanson wrote that an FBI agent stationed in Los Angeles, William Bailey, stated in 1993 that he observed two fresh bullet holes in a wooden doorframe where two swinging doors were mounted and noticed that the base of a bullet could be seen in each of these holes. He also stated that the absence of the police at the scene caused them to arrive too late to secure the area from others who had contaminated the crime scene, even one man who was seen by a detective trying to pry a bullet out of a wall with a penknife.⁶⁷⁰

What these earlier authors have proved beyond a shadow of a doubt is that at least ten to twelve shots were fired in the pantry, mostly in scattered directions not aimed at Senator Kennedy, shots that hit Bobby's friend Paul Schrade and several others. These shots were fired by Sirhan's gun during the struggle that followed the first shot, none of which hit Kennedy. Indeed Sirhan was positioned at least three to four feet in *front* of Kennedy and his gun only held eight bullets. Yet Bobby was killed by bullets fired from *behind* his right ear, from a gun held only an inch or two away from his head. All of these details were not

pursued at trial, however, and in fact the ceiling tiles and woodwork with bullet holes were destroyed even before the trial and Sirhan's appeal were over. The question of the extra bullets therefore did not come up at trial. As noted by authors Klaber and Melanson, due to the confusion caused by the mishandling of the crime scene: "It is a tribute to how well the bullet-count secret was kept that ... years would go by, many years in some cases, before the significance of witness and police observation would be understood."⁶⁷¹ The only clear thing that seemed to come out of Sirhan's murder trial was that it had all the earmarks of a deliberate, pre-ordained verdict of "guilty" and that result was set from the start, with prosecutors, defense attorneys, and the judge committed to achieving it.

Criminologist William W. Harper, eighteen months after Sirhan's botched trial, examined the evidence, the autopsy report, and the police trajectory diagrams and swore in an affidavit that Robert Kennedy "was fired upon from two distinct firing positions."⁶⁷² Position A was from where Sirhan stood, in front of Kennedy, from four to six feet away as he faced the senator. Position B was directly behind Kennedy, within inches of him and the only possible position from which the shots to the back of RFK's head could have been fired.

One of the more credible witnesses to the shooting (who would be systematically ignored by the police and FBI, similar to the way the Dallas "investigation" was handled) was news photographer Evan Freed, who was very near Kennedy when the shooting began. He gave sworn testimony that stated, when he entered the pantry area, "he noticed two men 'very similar in appearance' moving around. One of these men would turn out to be Sirhan. The two men did not stand together, but seemed to look at each other every now and then. Freed thought they might be brothers."

Freed stated that Sirhan was waving his gun around for all to see, and they did see him and began running toward him, rushing right past the second gunman, who had crouched down and had begun backing away. Freed saw that gunman sneaking away and another man started pursuing him, yelling, "Stop that guy." The police insisted that he had been incorrect and must have heard the other man say something like "call an ambulance" or "get a doctor."⁶⁷³ There would be many other incidents of LAPD officers changing the testimony of witnesses to conform to their official story.

The above summary of what happened in the "pantry room" of the Ambassador Hotel is probably as close to what happened as can be described in a few paragraphs. By the end of this chapter, it will become clear that Sirhan had been given hypnotic instructions and/or drugs to block his memory and make him obedient to his handlers, as a way to ensure that he performed precisely the way he acted; their intent was to get him to forcibly draw the attention of everyone in the room to himself as he wildly waved his pistol while shooting it randomly into five other people and into the ceiling and the woodwork around the doorway. This was planned as a distraction that allowed his accomplices to perform their function, of murdering Robert F. Kennedy while no one noticed.

The more likely scenario, according to people who witnessed it, was that as the girl in the polka-dot dress moved Sirhan into his position, the real assassin moved himself, with

his pistol hidden, as close as he could get behind Bobby, until he could place it within inches of his head. The real assassin then waited for Sirhan to start taking shots as he had been trained to do while the drugs blocked his memory and was already drawing the attention of nearly everyone else present. On cue, the assassin placed his gun up to RFK's head and shot four times, missing once. Sirhan's accomplice then dropped down and quickly moved away to make his escape. When confronted by someone who noticed that he was trying to escape, he ran back through the screaming chaos of the crowd and managed to evade that person.⁶⁷⁴

The assertion that Sirhan was given hypnotic instruction comes from the psychiatrist Dr. Bernard Diamond, who had spent almost twenty-five hours examining him in the months after his arrest, and stated his conclusion, that it was "immediately apparent that Sirhan had been programmed," noting that the indicators he observed, such as "automatic writing" and his lack of memory of even the notebook he supposedly used, nor of the actual shooting, pointed to a person who was "pretty well trained."⁶⁷⁵

Dr. Diamond showed Sirhan the notebooks and he acknowledged that it was his writing, but he couldn't remember having written them. All of this was disturbing to Dr. Diamond because it didn't make sense—given that Sirhan had admitted to the murder—that the prosecution was saying that he had lied about the memory loss, calling it a defense ploy. For that reason, Diamond decided to hypnotize Sirhan himself, recognizing that a person under hypnosis can be made to overcome conscious or unconscious resistance. He said that he was surprised at how quickly he "went under," then almost immediately, Sirhan became enraged and his arms and fists were brought into a fighter's stance as his face contorted and he began weeping. Diamond said that he saw Sirhan morph into a man he had never seen before, from a man without emotion to a man completely overcome with emotion.

Dr. Diamond then brought Sirhan back from the hypnosis and stated that he woke up "quite bewildered," "startled," and "confused." "He would visibly shiver and complain of being cold."⁶⁷⁶ Interestingly, the authors pointed out that the morning of his arrest, when he was interviewed by the LAPD's Dr. Marcus Crahan, Sirhan had also complained that he was "chilly."⁶⁷⁷ His chills and confusion on both of these occasions may have been related to changes he had just experienced, such as being awakened out of a hypnotic trance.

Eventually, after he was placed on San Quentin's death row in 1969, Sirhan was thoroughly examined by Dr. Eduard Simson-Kallas over a period of thirty-five hours. Dr. Simson-Kallas was convinced that someone had prepared him to carry out the assassination, that "He was hypnotized by someone, and made a Manchurian Candidate."^{**} Furthermore, he pointed out that the girl in the polka-dot dress was probably involved as the "triggering mechanism." Just as the doctor had brought Sirhan to the point at which he agreed to be hypnotized by Dr. Simson-Kallas, who said Sirhan "was extremely eager to talk to me," an associate warden, James W. L. Park intervened, ordering the doctor to curtail his visits. After working in the prison for six years and never having been ordered to stop treating any inmate, Dr. Simson-Kallas handed in his resignation.⁶⁷⁸

Before he could begin work on Sirhan's case, Grant Cooper had to complete his defense of Dr. Bernard Finch and his mistress Carole Tregoff. That case proved to be one of his most successful, when he persuaded most of the members of the jury that Finch valiantly tried to save his wife's life, as he attempted to grab the pistol from her hand, just before she used it to shoot herself.⁶⁷⁹

Since Grant Cooper had to finish that trial before joining Sirhan's, the initial representation was provided by a "stand-in," the seventy-five-year-old Russell Parsons, not the most intently curious or energetic lawyer who might have gotten the defense case started more aggressively. By the time Cooper became involved, he did not appear to take the case any more seriously than Parsons had. During the trial, Cooper made it clear that his idea of defending Sirhan B. Sirhan was limited to merely keep him from facing capital punishment, even admitting to the jury that: "We are not here to free a guilty man... . We tell you, as we always have, that he is guilty of having killed Robert Kennedy. Under the facts of this case Mr. Sirhan deserves to spend the rest of his life in the penitentiary," which contradicted what his colleague Russell Parsons had just said about their client, in a much more impassioned style, when he appealed to the jury to not give Sirhan either the death penalty or life in prison because he was a sick man who did not know what he had done.⁶⁸⁰

Cooper then went on a rambling discourse about the different levels of culpability of an accused person, the definitions of premeditation, and various other esoteric legalisms that lasted an entire afternoon and most of the next morning. After admitting that defendants incapacitated by mental illness, intoxication, or other reasons can use "diminished capacity" as a reason to find such a person guilty of manslaughter rather than first-degree murder, he then stated—again contradicting his own fellow defense attorneys—that "But we are not going to ask for it ... the verdict should be second degree."⁶⁸¹ Cooper's intent to give up his client completely was best evidenced by the fact that he completely discarded the most exculpatory issue before the court: "I don't care if he was in a hypnotic state at the time he fired the shot, or whether he was in a trance, as Dr. Diamond said; this is beside the point."⁶⁸² His complete indifference to this point, with its clear and obvious indications of how Sirhan was manipulated into acting out his role in complete oblivion to what was going on, should be sufficient to declare it a mistrial due to the obvious incompetence of Sirhan's attorney.

He reviewed Sirhan's notebook (the one Sirhan had no recollection of) and asked rhetorically, "Is that mature thinking?" as he compared Sirhan's actions with those of someone who, for example, had murdered his wife for financial gain, a much more heinous crime that would clearly call for the death sentence (in advancing this argument, paradoxically, he referred precisely to the subject of his previous trial, in which he had successfully gotten his clients freed, using the same silver tongue that he now started having so much trouble with).⁶⁸³

Amid all of the confusion caused by the destruction of evidence—even as the case against Sirhan was being tried and then that verdict appealed—along with the less than

perfunctory effort by his defense counsel and the many other efforts by the LAPD to avoid a real investigation of the obvious conspiracy to murder Robert Kennedy, there was yet another pattern from the previous murders that should be noted at this point: The multiple cases of the FBI culling witnesses in favor of those whose tainted testimony would best conform to their case against Sirhan, and worse, to actually change the sworn testimony of many others as documented in the three books referenced previously. There were numerous other credible witnesses of RFK's murder who would also be ignored or discredited by the LAPD or the FBI, just as had been the case in JFK's assassination almost five years before. For example, Bill Powers, the owner of Wild Bill's Stables in Santa Ana, who knew both Sirhan Sirhan and the evangelist Jerry Owen (known as the "The Walking Bible" for having memorized it) who were among those who had been ignored by the LAPD and told not to repeat to anyone else what they had seen. As the authors Turner and Christian stated: "This was no surprise, since we had found that the Los Angeles police had systematically browbeaten witnesses whose account conflicted with the official verdict that there had been no conspiracy."⁶⁸⁴

One other example of this is sufficient for our purposes, in the interest of brevity: Nina Rhodes went to the Ambassador Hotel with her husband to celebrate Bobby's winning the California primary and witnessed the assassination from a position about six feet away from Kennedy. She was interviewed by the FBI on July 9, 1968, telling them that she had heard "12-14 shots in all." She was never given a copy of the written report, which stated that "*She later recalled hearing eight distinct shots.*"⁶⁸⁵ [Emphasis in original.]

It wasn't until 1992 that she had the opportunity to read the FBI report; when she did, she stated: "*I never said I heard 8 distinct shots. From the moment the tragedy began I knew that there was at least 10-14 shots and that there had to be more than one assailant. The shots were to the left and right from where I was.*"⁶⁸⁶ [Emphasis added.] The FBI chose to make this unauthorized change to her testimony and then attempt to keep those files secret for decades and further, to be certain that she would never be heard, did not even include the name Nina Rhodes on their list of witnesses who they say were in the pantry when Robert Kennedy was murdered.⁶⁸⁷ This treatment by the FBI of the witness Nina Rhodes was strikingly similar to how other FBI agents had reframed the testimony of many other witnesses after the assassinations in Dallas and again in Memphis.

Although Lee Harvey Oswald didn't live long enough to even have a trial, the sealing of all records for decades was still another parallel from the Dallas non investigation by the FBI. There were many more examples, including one comparing the similarities between Oswald's and Sirhan's alleged political tilt: Police Chief Reddin revealed that a "reliable police informant" had seen a car traceable to Sirhan parked in front of the W.E.B. DuBois Club, a leftist young-peoples group, which implied that he, too, was a left-wing radical (this was despite the fact that the DuBois Clubs had vacated the address given over a year before).⁶⁸⁸ Mayor Sam Yorty added to this confusion when he stated: "[Sirhan] was a member of numerous Communist organizations, including the Rosicrucians." A newsman responded to him that "The Rosicrucians aren't a Communist organization."^{***} Indeed, it

is a secret society originally based on the philosophy of the Moors, “built on esoteric truths of the ancient past” founded in medieval Germany. It was later determined that Sirhan had never been affiliated with any Communist-oriented group.⁶⁸⁹

The enigmatic Reverend Jerry Owen, whose various statements regarding his involvement with Sirhan after having randomly met him the day before the assassination, and his plan to sell Sirhan a horse, caused considerable confusion all during the so-called investigation and trial. One of the reasons for that was the fact that the Reverend Owens, whom the LAPD went out of its way to ignore, turned out to be old friends with Mayor Yorty. That might also explain why the mayor’s aide, Jack Brown, had been unceremoniously fired for even stating his recommendation that the Owen angle should be investigated.⁶⁹⁰

The unmistakable parallels between Bobby’s assassination with JFK’s noted previously do not end there. All of them point to a very sophisticated, meticulously planned plot, choreographed by men experienced in decades of covert operations, including the murders of high-level officials of foreign governments. Their methods had been developed in the earliest years of the Cold War and would show up repeatedly in their most lethal work, both abroad and at home. Another similarity that should be noted before we move to another topic is that, just as he did in the JFK assassination, President Johnson would order the FBI to take over the investigation, and they did so, putting Roger J. LaJeunesse, the senior FBI agent in charge. In actuality, the investigation was handled by a combination of FBI agents and LAPD agents who formed a new unit called Special Unit Senator (SUS) to ensure well-executed coordination of the objective: Secure a guilty verdict for the accused killer Sirhan B. Sirhan.

To round that circle of resolve, it helped that the LAPD officers, Lieutenant Manuel Pena and Sergeant Enrique “Hank” Hernandez, both had longtime connections to the CIA. Authors Turner and Christian stated that Sergeant Hernandez was assigned to question all witnesses who attempted to portray the murder as a plot between anyone other than Sirhan and if they did not cooperate, by altering their stories, his job was to destroy their credibility, using his polygraph expertise to undermine their testimony.⁶⁹¹ Sandy Serrano and Vincent DiPierro were among the witnesses whose testimony was not congruent with the “official story” and therefore their testimony, rather than being used to aggressively pursue the obvious leads, was ignored by the SUS. As authors Turner and Christian put it, “SUS had a habit of slurring witnesses whose account did not square with the police version.”⁶⁹²

More proof that Sirhan’s own defense counsel folded in their duty to represent him aggressively occurred during his trial: The first was illustrated during a hearing on October 14, 1968, when the LAPD’s file on Jerry Owen was not delivered as requested; it remained in the SUS unit’s files, marked “No Discovery.” By ignoring his testimony, the prosecution could also distance itself from the many related indications of a conspiracy and make the case simply about a “lone nut.” Sirhan’s first temporary attorney, Russell Parsons, went along with the prosecution, saying, “We have seen no evidence of a conspiracy ... The next

morning the *Los Angeles Times* banner read: BOTH SIDES AGREE SIRHAN WAS ALONE.”⁶⁹³

Among the eyewitnesses ignored by the prosecution and defense was a CBS News employee, Donald Schulman, who had been behind RFK in the pantry, “whose line of vision included both Sirhan and a uniformed security guard, told radio reporter Jeff Brant moments after the shooting: ‘A Caucasian gentleman stepped out and fired three times, the security guard hit Kennedy all three times. Mr. Kennedy slumped to the floor. They carried him away ... the man who stepped out and fired three times at Kennedy, hit him all three times.’”⁶⁹⁴

Sirhan B. Sirhan never had a chance against the onslaught of forces arrayed against him. As the record shows, he was found guilty of the crime, the records sealed for decades and the case was quietly put to bed, somewhat officially by the august newspaper of record, the one that proclaims in its masthead that it prints “All the news that’s fit to print,” the *New York Times*, which opined:⁶⁹⁵

Justice was on trial with Sirhan B. Sirhan. Now ... after a long and careful trial, it can be said that justice has been served... . The public at home and abroad may never know what goes on inside the twisted mind of an assassin, but at least, it has been able to see an open trial fairly conducted.

Nine years after the fact, Los Angeles judge William Hogaboom, ruling against Sirhan’s appeal involving his request to try to have his memory jogged, ruled that “There is no indication—psychological, medical, astrological or otherwise—that his man’s memory can be refreshed.” Ironically, and unfortunately for Judge Hogaboom, his ruling came just as the newspapers were reporting the news, in 1977, of the CIA’s long-term MK-ULTRA mind-control program, which included a study called Operation Artichoke that had been directed to investigate the possible drugs, psychological techniques, and support methodologies required to program a person to, involuntarily, commit an assassination.⁶⁹⁶

The CIA presence in the Embassy Room of the Ambassador was possibly revealed by photos and film taken inside the ballroom and confirmed by several men who knew CIA officials Gordon Campbell, David Morales, and George Joannides. Against the odds of three other men being together there—who were seen associating with each other in the film—each of whom closely resembled one of these particular men (who were, coincidentally, also working as a team), together with their identification by other men who knew them closely as demonstrated within the film, the chances that they might be completely different and unrelated men would seem to be remote. Combined with the other anomalies that simultaneously occurred, described in detail elsewhere (twelve to thirteen shots, when Sirhan’s gun only held eight bullets; the lack of police presence, etc.), the number of coincidences well exceed the expected norm. According to Ian Fleming’s maxim previously noted, it would seem to be well beyond “coincidental” and well into the territory called “enemy action.”

A 2007 video was produced by Irish author and filmmaker Shane O’Sullivan titled *RFK Must Die* in which three men—George Joannides, David Sanchez Morales, and Gordon Campbell, all CIA employees—were initially identified as being in the hotel at the time of the shooting. Questions have been raised about the identification of the man named as Gordon Campbell (apparently, the “real” Gordon Campbell died in 1962, however, the CIA has been known to use all sorts of aliases for their covert operations “fieldmen”). The photograph of the man identified as David Sanchez Morales, a long-time CIA agent known as “El Indio” (The Indian)—who, it is generally accepted, was a key operative in the JFK assassination who was eventually “suicided”—was not clear enough to be absolutely certain it was him. However, the attorney for Morales, Robert Walton, confirmed on the referenced videos that Morales had acknowledged to him that he had been in Los Angeles when RFK was assassinated as well as Dallas when JFK was assassinated.⁶⁹⁷ Specifically, Walton stated that “Morales said, ‘I was in Dallas when I, when we got that motherfucker, and I was in Los Angeles when we got the little bastard.’ What was said to me was that he was in some way implicated with the death of John Kennedy, and let’s go one step further, and also with Bobby.”⁶⁹⁸ Morales also confided to his lifelong friend Ruben “Rocky” Carbajal a similar story though Carbajal preferred coyness over candor. He did admit that “When some asshole needed to be killed, Didi [his nickname for Morales] was the man to do it... . He believed in his job to protect the United States and he was going to go after anyone who was against it... . He didn’t give a damn. If his own brother would have talked against the United States, he would have blown his ass apart.”⁶⁹⁹

The identification of George Joannides was made by Ed Lopez—a former congressional investigator who had worked for the House Select Committee on Assassinations—who identified him as the same man he had worked with so closely for two years. In the referenced video, there is little doubt left that he was convinced that it was Joannides. Author/researcher O’Sullivan later stated that he had determined that the men he identified as “Joannides” and “Campbell” were employees of the Bulova Watch Company, raising the possibility that Bulova was a convenient cover for them. The close connections of this company to the CIA and military were reflected in the fact that former Army General Omar Bradley was the CEO of the company at that time. But the investigation of this issue must be considered “inconclusive” at best, which is essentially where David Talbot, in his book *Brothers*, left the matter when he wrote that his investigation led him to conclude that “[David Sanchez] Morales and other JM/WAVE [CIA] veterans” were involved with the assassination of JFK and possibly that of RFK. Talbot said that Morales was described to him, by people who knew him, as “a violent and ruthless man, driven by a supercharged sense of patriotism and a poisonous hatred for anyone he considered a traitor, including the Kennedys.”⁷⁰⁰ Those passions were most likely stirred by others with whom he worked, higher in the hierarchy of the intelligence agencies as they, likewise, were being fed inflammatory information about the Kennedys from Lyndon Johnson.

Shane O’Sullivan’s video also showed startling new proof that up to thirteen gunshots were fired, including the eight fired by Sirhan and four or five by the second gunman. The

pertinent part of this video is available on YouTube at the referenced website.⁷⁰¹ This video examines the result of an independent analysis by forensics expert Philip Van Praag using new technology that he shared with the FBI Forensics Laboratory. The referenced video was based on what is referred to as the “Pruszyński audiotape” made by a witness with that name, whose recorder captured sounds being created by the shooting as he walked toward the pantry to where the attack was occurring; that tape recording became the acoustical evidence analyzed and presented in this documentary. This evidence is now being used by a group led by Bobby’s friend Paul Schrade to attempt to force a reexamination of RFK’s murder. O’Sullivan’s full video, *RFK Must Die*, includes very rare photographic and film footage inside the Ambassador Hotel and the results of the intensive investigation he completed.⁷⁰²

Inside the White House—Post RFK Assassination

In his memoirs, Joseph Califano, a White House insider in both the Kennedy and Johnson administrations, made the stunning observation that, as Bobby Kennedy lay dying the next day, President Johnson repeatedly asked—not whether Bobby would recover, but—“Is he dead yet?” Johnson himself made several calls to the Secret Service to ask them to check on whether Bobby was dead yet and asked Califano to call Larry Levinson, another aide, to do the same.⁷⁰³

Califano was even more candid with Robert Caro,^{****} who substantively added to that colloquy by stating that Califano or his aide Larry Levinson had repeatedly called the Secret Service on Johnson’s behalf to inquire as to Bobby’s status, prompting Levinson to ask, in exasperation, “*Joe, is this something that he’s wishing to have happen? Why is he asking it that way?*”⁷⁰⁴ [Emphasis added.] Levinson, like so many others caught up in the intrinsically charismatic presidential aura automatically conferred upon whoever occupies that majestic office, was unaware of the maniacal persona of this particular president; he had evidently been misled into thinking that Lyndon Johnson was a normal, rational, discreet, and honorable man who might at least pretend that he cared about the survival of his political rival, a person who would be above such morbid talk, particularly the suggestion that he wished the worst for someone near death. It is unclear how Califano handled this delicate question, given that it reflected typical Johnsonian boorishness.

The following morning, Johnson called the new secretary of defense, Clark Clifford, to tell him that the Kennedy family had requested that Bobby be buried next to JFK in Arlington and he (LBJ) wanted to know whether Robert had the right to be buried in Arlington. Clifford said in his memoirs that he received a troubling phone call the next day from Johnson, who wanted his opinion of whether or not Bobby Kennedy had a right to be buried in Arlington Cemetery. “I was stunned—not only was I unaware of the exact regulations concerning who was permitted burial... I was dumbfounded that he was concerned with such an issue. The regulations were irrelevant, and in any case could be suspended by the Commander in Chief.”⁷⁰⁵ Johnson was apparently still not satisfied with that answer; it wasn’t until the next day, June 6, that Clifford telephoned him to give him

the specific legal citation that gave Robert Kennedy the right to be buried there.⁷⁰⁶ Johnson finally went grudgingly along with the request but held up any appropriation of federal funds for the creation of a permanent gravesite for Bobby, even refusing to discuss it with his aides. Finally, in his last weeks as president, on January 12, 1969, he approved a request to fund it out of the president's contingency fund for 1970—which ensured it was paid for out of Richard Nixon's budget, not his own.⁷⁰⁷

Joseph Califano noted Johnson's attempts to leverage the assassinations of Robert Kennedy and Martin Luther King Jr., to his political advantage. In Martin Luther King Jr.'s case, it was the opportunity to push a fair housing bill through Congress; in Robert Kennedy's case, it was gun control legislation. Though he did not specifically include JFK in his point, that was clearly the first and best example of it, when he pushed the Civil Rights Act of 1964 through Congress, followed by numerous other acts in the next two years.⁷⁰⁸ For Johnson, the efficacy of the laws passed was not as important as the passage of a bill, even if it was so watered down as to make it impotent. It was important to him to have as many "bullets" as he could muster to fill out his list of "accomplishments" for his legacy, and there were plenty of authors he could depend on to extol all of them, irrespective of their value or effectiveness.

Beginning right after Bobby's death, Johnson began playing up the "Bobby Did It" angle, attempting to put the blame for JFK's assassination back on Bobby himself for having taken actions that led to his brother's assassination. By doing this, he created any number of possible scenarios, from pro-Castro exiles seeking retribution for the previous assassination attempts, to anti-Castro exiles angry because they felt abandoned by the Kennedys. Bobby's dogged pursuit of Mafiosi and the "appeasement" of both Kennedys to the Communists in allowing Castro to continue in place were viable scenarios as well. The talk of any conspiracy involving Castro automatically evoked the specter of nuclear war starting with Cuba, implicitly one that would be immediately joined by the Soviet Union. It was this perceived threat that Lyndon Johnson had used to manipulate some members of the Warren Commission into participating, even while Johnson did nothing to indicate this was ever a real concern; it was his actions—more accurately, his inactions—related to this that suggest that it was simply another canard that he used for multiple purposes, the most important one being to deepen the implication that Bobby Kennedy himself bore the primary responsibility for his brother's murder.

The resulting chaos was exactly what Lyndon Johnson had counted on to occur. It explains how he kept adding to the list of possible conspirators (excluding himself, naturally) for the rest of his life. He might have envisioned it metaphorically as a big ball of yarn that would be diced, sliced, and mixed around so much that the real truth—analogueous to the chances of that ball of yarn ever being restored to its original condition—would become safe from full discovery. Truth was replaced by a meticulously crafted lie, one that would be protected from discovery by the most rudimentary rules of deception Lyndon had learned as a child. They could probably be characterized as: "lie often and brazenly; lie so convincingly that you convince even yourself that the lie is the truth, and the lie will ultimately become the truth." Lyndon Johnson seemed to have much in

common with Joseph Goebbels, whose own quote in the epigraph of [Chapter 3](#) is eerily similar—actually, precisely the same—to what Johnson routinely practiced:

If you tell a lie big enough and keep repeating it, people will eventually come to believe it. The lie can be maintained only for such time as the State can shield the people from the political, economic and/or military consequences of the lie. It thus becomes vitally important for the State to use all of its powers to repress dissent, for the truth is the mortal enemy of the lie, and thus by extension, the truth is the greatest enemy of the State.

This trait of Johnson's was confirmed and independently described by many of his aides, as recounted here and the earlier work; it is axiomatic now, that to understand how JFK's, RFK's, and MLK's assassinations occurred, one must first understand Lyndon B. Johnson and that can only be done by examining all of his traits, starting with this one—his intrinsic dishonesty, his “lying even when he didn't have to lie”—which explains how a massive, long-term effort was launched to cover up the origins of all three of the assassinations done under his reign of terror.

The questions raised here are intriguing, though not necessarily proof of “Who Killed Bobby?” Arguably the most curious one is something reported by Shane O'Sullivan in his book of that name:⁷⁰⁹

When they retired, two legendary figures of American intelligence also held photographs of Robert Kennedy's autopsy in their personal safes—FBI chief J. Edgar Hoover and CIA counterintelligence chief James Angleton. As author Anthony Summers noted, of all the famous deaths in Hoover's long career, the gruesome color pictures of the RFK autopsy are the only death pictures preserved in his official and confidential files, segregated from the main FBI filing system.

Angleton's colleagues were astonished by their bizarre find in his personal safe when he retired. They had no idea why Angleton had the pictures or “why it was appropriate for CIA staff files to contain them. They were accordingly destroyed.”

It has never been determined, to the author's knowledge, whether another copy of those photographs were kept in Lyndon Johnson's personal files, however, a hint of the answer may be deduced by Joseph Califano's comment noted previously, about how—as Bobby was fighting for his life—Johnson, to the disgust of everyone around him, repeatedly asked, “Is he dead yet?”

That was not the only indication that Lyndon Johnson hoped for only the worst for Bobby Kennedy. In his book, *RFK: A Candid Biography of Robert F. Kennedy*, author C. David Heymann quoted a senior aide to Vice President Hubert Humphrey, the highly credible Ted Van Dyk, who told the story of how Humphrey was incredibly upset and concerned for Robert Kennedy's life in the hours after the shooting. It was then that Bobby's brother-in-law Steve Smith and former press aide Pierre Salinger urged Humphrey to authorize a military jet to fly a famous brain surgeon from Boston to Los Angeles to try to save him, which Humphrey immediately attempted to do. Unfortunately for Humphrey, and worse for Robert Kennedy, President Lyndon Johnson had apparently

alerted the entire military high command to advise him if anyone attempted to do anything that might save RFK's life; he acted just as quickly to cancel the flight that Humphrey had arranged, leaving Kennedy to fight for his life. Van Dyk lamented, "The fact was, Johnson preferred Robert Kennedy dead. It was one of the most heinous acts I've ever experienced in my life, and it all but broke Humphrey's heart."⁷¹⁰ Hubert Humphrey probably had his heart broken hundreds of times during his tenure as the vice president under Lyndon Johnson, since it is well known that Johnson cut him off early in that period, leaving him floundering and without presidential support. This extended to giving him only tepid public support when Humphrey ran against Richard Nixon in 1968 while privately backing Nixon.

Another glimmer of truth can be found in the following comment from Robert Caro, who included this observation in his newest book, *The Passage of Power*, where he stated that, when asked about Robert Kennedy, Johnson would make a gesture, moving his hand across his neck and stating, "I'll cut his throat if it's the last thing I do."⁷¹¹ Unfortunately, Mr. Caro offered no further comment about the implications of Johnson's deadly threat; the narrative then moved on to his account of the 1960 Democratic convention.

Clearly, these anecdotes affirm Lyndon Johnson's intense hatred of Bobby Kennedy and, had they been made by anyone else being tried for someone's murder, would have been used by prosecutors to obtain a guilty verdict. Now, nearly five decades too late, they clearly put Johnson at the top of the hierarchy of the plotters who developed a very sophisticated plan to permanently remove Robert F. Kennedy from the possibility of ever becoming president.

RFK's murder, based upon the totality of the evidence presented here, should be added as another "bullet" on the list of ignominious accomplishments of the "Colossus" President Lyndon B. Johnson.

* Although, it should be pointed out, despite his reputation as an honorable man and journalist, his initial support of the Vietnam buildup was because he had been brought "into the fold" of the CIA's propaganda effort called Operation Mockingbird, as explained in *LBJ: The Mastermind of the JFK Assassination*.

** *The Manchurian Candidate*, by Richard Condon, was first published in 1959. It was about an ex-POW being brainwashed and programmed to kill a presidential nominee. A movie of the same title, starring Frank Sinatra and Angela Lansbury, opened in 1962 but, after JFK's assassination, was not shown for twenty-five years afterward. It joined other "Cold War" books and/or classic movies (*Seven Days in May*, *Dr. Strangelove*, and *Fail-Safe*) that were scorned by the military and intelligence leaders of the time as being unrealistic depictions, and a number of movie reviewers found it to be too disturbing for commentary. JFK had actively supported the making of *Seven Days in May*, to send a message to the military as well as awaken the nation to the threat of a coup d'état by extremists on the far right by conveniently leaving the White House on weekends when it was used for filming the movie. Author David Talbot, previously noted, stated that "One writer, in the *Los Angeles Herald-Examiner* questioned whether movies like *Seven Days in May* should be made." "The world is on too short a fuse," he argued, and pictures like this damaged 'the American image abroad.'" (Talbot, pp. 148–150)

*** This term refers to a secret society that has a doctrine or theology "built on esoteric truths of the ancient past," which, "concealed from the average man, provide insight into nature, the physical universe and the spiritual realm." ([Wikipedia.com](https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Esotericism))

**** Or, perhaps that statement came from Levinson; Caro's notes are unclear on this point.

LYNDON JOHNSON'S WAR

Among the many important lessons Thucydides teaches in his History of the Peloponnesian War is that what starts a war is different from what causes it. To think that wars must start over important places is to misread Thucydides. Places like Corcyra and Potidaea ... didn't matter. They were pretexts... . What starts conflicts is public, and therefore much less interesting—and less crucial—than the causes of conflicts, which are not often public.

—ROBERT D. KAPLAN, *THE ORIGIN OF WARS*

After World War II America's political leaders had to learn for the first time how to control the extremely powerful military and intelligence organizations that had been developed for winning that war. Their existence had suddenly materialized with that war and then grown so much by the end of the 1940s that they had practically overtaken their civilian leadership. This was exemplified in 1951 when General Douglas MacArthur openly criticized President Truman's strategies for conducting the Korean War, when he pressed Truman for permission to cross the Yalu River in order to bomb Chinese bases in Manchuria. Truman refused, and because MacArthur had taken the matter public, Truman was forced to fire him to ensure that the principle of civilian control over the military would not be compromised. Even Eisenhower experienced confrontations with his own military leaders, of whom many felt, as early as 1953–54, that the United States should intervene to assist the French to defend their outpost at Dien Bien Phu in Vietnam. Just as American military officials would grossly underestimate the capabilities of the Vietcong a decade later, French officers ridiculed the very idea that their men, or the garrison itself, were vulnerable to the Vietminh, claiming that they could not even get their artillery through the mountainous jungle, much less keep it supplied with ammunition if they did. When the garrison came under attack in April 1954, and the French had to surrender on May 7, recriminations flew between France, Britain, and the United States for allowing the end of French colonialism to come about. All were bitter at the others for not doing something to keep that garrison, which was no longer of much value to them anyway.⁷¹²

The US military leaders who actually understood the situation in Vietnam, drawing from their experiences from World War II and, even more importantly, Korea, were not eager for another Asian war. Eisenhower, for example, according to David Halberstam in his book *The Fifties*, “had just finished in Korea, for which there had been little public support from the start. Indochina promised, if anything, to be even worse.”⁷¹³ Eisenhower managed to hold off doing anything of consequence as a result of his misgivings. Even Allen Dulles, the CIA director, had doubts about the proposal for intervention that his brother John Foster Dulles, the secretary of state, had advanced. General Douglas McArthur strongly advised JFK against committing combat troops into a land war in Indochina. General Matthew Ridgway was similarly against intervention,

seeing the area as “a complete political and military mess:”⁷¹⁴ In 1954, General Ridgway sent a team of planners to Vietnam to determine what it would take to achieve a military victory in terms of manpower requirements. The answer he got was “devastating” because he determined that it would require as big a commitment as Korea (six divisions) and possibly more, up to ten divisions, of 100,000 men per division. That meant between half a million to one million men to “win” the civil war for the despotic dictator then running South Vietnam. He also determined that there would be an enormous cost in making the infrastructure improvements (which Johnson probably liked, given his close association with Brown & Root, later merged with Halliburton). According to author David Halberstam, “When [Ridgway] briefed Eisenhower on what the cost would be, a groan seemed to come from the President. Ike was, Ridgway noted laconically years later, a much better listener than Lyndon Johnson.”⁷¹⁵

General Ridgway went even further than that estimate when he told Senator George Aiken of Vermont that “even if two million men were sent to Vietnam they would be swallowed up.”⁷¹⁶ Ridgway understood the geo-political side of Vietnam, just as he did the overall hazardous terrain, as a result of his first hand experience. Unlike the younger generation of military officers, who placed too much faith in the greater technological capacity of the US military machine, Ridgway factored in the social, geographic, and economic conditions existent in other parts of the world where the fighting would take place.⁷¹⁷ Despite the opinions of these experts, Lyndon B. Johnson thought he could intervene successfully while “limiting” the number of troops so the fighting could be sustained over many years, thus ensuring great profits for those who had invested in the right companies (e.g., General Dynamics, Haliburton, and Bell Helicopter Corp) as he had done.*

The great generals of World War II had worried about the course of events when John F. Kennedy became president and appointed Robert S. McNamara to head the Pentagon. A lot of old-timers there did not appreciate the invasion of McNamara’s “whiz kids,” whose experience was not in the military, but in academia: concepts such as budget cycles, posture statements, logistics management, equipment compromises for sophisticated armaments to achieve lower unit costs, PERT (Program Evaluation Review Techniques) Charts, and other forms of operations research were their specialties. Kennedy’s administration was in virtual warfare with the military and intelligence agencies from January 1961 to November 22, 1963.

But what the generals and admirals did not yet appreciate (even though many of them pined for it to happen) was how much worse the situation would become once Kennedy, with his broad understanding of the global socio-economic and historical implications of US foreign policy, was no longer there to control that policy. At that point, the entire military and intelligence apparatus of the United States would be turned over to the “interventionists,” one of whom was quite mad.

JFK’s Military and National Security Decision Process: Why It Worked for Him, but Not LBJ

By the time John F. Kennedy became president, the White House decision-making process for national security and military issues had become a rigid, detail-oriented structure run by President Eisenhower's assistant for NSC affairs, Robert Cutler, who was described by Townsend Hoopes, then the undersecretary of the Air Force, in his 1969 book *The Limits of Intervention* thusly: [Cutler was a man] "whose fussy attention to minutiae brought to mind an elegant Old World dowager."⁷¹⁸ The bureaucratic process was in tune with President Eisenhower's preference for military orderliness and staff assignments designed to assure formal statements of US policy with respect to every major country in the world, however it entailed inflexible procedures and non dynamic processes that were not responsive to changing conditions.⁷¹⁹

Historian Richard Reeves described the changes JFK made after his inauguration, "Kennedy thought this structure was too bureaucratic and slow—with too many debates and decisions outside the president's reach and control."⁷²⁰ JFK quickly scrapped this structure and replaced it with a more informal system, which suited his dislike of too much organization and structured decision making. Those changes fit his penchant for a more fluid decision-making process that allowed him to interject his own directional choices. Missing were the rigidly structured, consistently scheduled processes and meetings to ensure the bureaucratic process was kept charged and proactive. Arguably, Kennedy went too far with dismantling Ike's organization: As author Hoopes alluded to in his book, JFK's management of his own informal bureaucracy worked for him and those with whom he worked closely, however, as he cut his ties with certain of his subordinates in the Pentagon and the CIA, the lack of coordination put the process at high risk of failure, which demonstrably occurred early in his presidency with the Bay of Pigs fiasco in 1961.⁷²¹

Author Hoopes even overestimated the effectiveness of Kennedy's "highly informal system," which others have characterized as essentially non existent: As CBS correspondent Nancy Dickerson put it, "[W]hen the old apparatus was thrown out, it wasn't replaced with anything, which produced a vacuum of consultation that was directly responsible for the ill-conceived and ill-fated Bay of Pigs invasion in April."⁷²² The dislike for the rigidity of Eisenhower's decision-making process led to Kennedy making, by default, a "free-flowing" non symmetric climate where academics would exchange ideas borne and vetted through this fresh, honest and transparent intellectual forum. Lyndon Johnson inherited that fluid and informal structure but was hindered by his own provincial views of the world and his lack of Kennedy's broad knowledge of foreign affairs. Johnson might have been more well suited to the Eisenhower model that JFK dismantled, but it is not clear that it would have protected him either, given his "shoot from the hip" modus operandi. As Townsend Hoopes further observed, Johnson's "galvanic temperament, irregular administrative habits," and "secretiveness" was not conducive to controlled and systematic vetting of core strategic decisions and therefore the Eisenhower model would not have worked for him even if he had attempted to reinstall them.⁷²³ Mr. Hoopes's not-so-subtle assessment of Lyndon Johnson's presidential style suggests he was a bit sharper than most of the other, more obsequious, less critical, more insecure aides in

the Oval Office.

Despite Mr. Hoopes's caveat, it is not speculative to point out that there was nothing in Johnson's narrowly political, provincial, completely self-centered ambitions, and fragmented worldview, that had ever prepared him to have a broad understanding of the geopolitical, economic, historic, and cultural milieu of anywhere on earth, save Austin, Texas, and its environs and, certainly, every political institution of Washington, DC. Johnson's inexperience in foreign policy caused him to lack the confidence that Eisenhower and Kennedy had in their own evaluations of unfolding events, enabling them to overrule their military advisers as they found necessary on the most important issues. Johnson had to rely on his advisers to develop his decisions, yet he still formed independent opinions based on nothing but his own gut instincts and kneejerk reactions. As Nancy Dickerson observed, Johnson's self-doubts and lack of confidence in his own judgment led him to defer strategic decisions to his subordinates, Walt Rostow and McGeorge Bundy, effectively neutralizing himself from real control of strategy as he attempted to make up for that through his efforts to micro manage the day-to-day decisions regarding bombing targets, for example.⁷²⁴ In yet another tragic twist that led to the ultimate disaster, Rostow, probably the most ferocious "hawk" in the White House, had been brought to Washington, ironically, due to the efforts of one of the biggest "doves" in the Senate (at least, after he became fully aware of the disaster he had helped to create), Senator J. William Fulbright.⁷²⁵ Walter Rostow became the primary conduit through which Johnson received all written information on foreign affairs and made the choices as to who would see the president.⁷²⁶ Because he was physically close, briefing the president at least once per day, often many more times, while reinforcing Johnson's aggressive attitudes toward the Vietnam War, his patriotic pride in American military power and the "inherent righteousness of the United States" according to author Townsend Hoopes, he "seemed exactly the wrong man for the job" of helping Lyndon Johnson understand its nuances and their implications and to make major decisions on the conduct of the war.⁷²⁷ Moreover, Hoopes quoted another fellow senior official as saying that "Walt is vigorous and stimulating; he has all the trappings of intellect, but in the end no objectivity and no judgment." Hoopes's own comment on him was that he "was a fanatic in sheep's clothing."⁷²⁸

Hoopes noted that Johnson's approach to global issues was generally based on his simplistic, one-dimensional worldview of a foreign policy that was focused on a single premise: "appeasement versus military resolve."⁷²⁹ When Johnson became the self-described "King of the World," he continued using the very same loosely defined structure he had inherited from Kennedy to begin putting the "LBJ" brand on a maverick foreign policy that was dominated by himself and the notion that other countries must choose between falling into line or dealing with the might of the US military. The military, intelligence, and national security apparatus he had inherited was incapable of balancing the biases of Johnson's belligerent and domineering style, despite his own inability to appreciate the full implications of his decisions. "Nuance," "discretion," and "measured words" were concepts for which he had no real appreciation, nor experience.

These assertions are not merely the conjecture of an armchair philosopher; they are based on the statements of men who served in his cabinet, at least the few who had the intestinal fortitude to speak honestly about the decision-making process in the Johnson White House, circa 1963–69:

- Johnson himself told his cabinet, on November 24, 1963, that he had “*never been happy with our operations in Vietnam*” and that there had been “serious dissension and divisions” between the cabinet members that must be cleaned up. Furthermore, he declared that there would be “*no more divisions of opinion, no more bickering and any person that did not conform to policy should be removed.*”⁷³⁰ [First phrase emphasis in original; second phrase emphasis added.]
- He dominated the cabinet just as he had dominated every other committee he had ever chaired. A good illustration of the point was the Democratic Senatorial Campaign Committee, “It was a committee in name only, for Johnson controlled it absolutely,” *Life* said, and, “money was given only to senators and senatorial candidates whom Johnson felt he could control; in the words of a Senate insider quoted by the magazine ... ‘with no talk back. No mavericks.’”⁷³¹
- Dean Rusk, the secretary of state, said: “At most cabinet meetings Lyndon Johnson asked Bob McNamara and me to comment on Vietnam, and then he would go around the table, asking each cabinet officer, ‘Do you have any questions or comments?’ Everyone sat silently.”⁷³²
- Arthur Goldberg, who went from secretary of labor to Supreme Court justice to UN ambassador within the Johnson administration, stated that a colleague who served with him in Kennedy’s cabinet said, “Kennedy didn’t mind disagreement. It didn’t bother him. But disagreement really bothers this [LBJ] President. He is going to do what you dislike anyway; so let’s not upset him by having an argument in front of him.”⁷³³
- George Reedy said that the discussions were “very gentlemanly” and were “really monologues in which one man is getting reflections of what he sends out.”⁷³⁴
- Richard Goodwin noted that during White House meetings, Johnson’s presence dominated and immediately set the tone for every meeting, generally as a reminder not to contradict or question him; to do so was tantamount to calling him a liar, “And one didn’t call Johnson a liar, not to his face.”⁷³⁵
- Richard Goodwin also said that Johnson would begin cabinet meetings with the question: “What are you doing here? Why aren’t you out there fighting against my enemies? Don’t you realize that if they destroy me, they’ll destroy you as well? ... Questions about Vietnam were discouraged, and, if asked, went unanswered.”⁷³⁶

Richard Goodwin’s description, in his book *Remembering America*, of Robert McNamara, McGeorge Bundy, Dean Rusk, Walt Rostow, and the Pentagon generals summed up the situation in the Situation Room of the White House, circa 1966. The men Goodwin

described as being the board of directors for a man all of them suspected (or should have known by then) as being unable to control his own actions—who by then was clearly, repeatedly, having psychotic breakdowns—was almost as troubling as the condition of Johnson himself. Goodwin stated that even the much heralded Robert S. McNamara admitted to him that none of them knew anything about Vietnamese history or the culture of the people they were desperately trying to save from the peril of international Communism.⁷³⁷ Clark Clifford admitted the same thing in his memoirs, saying that he deferred to others in the cabinet who were more experienced, and “presented their views with certainty and conviction.”⁷³⁸ That they all seemed so small-minded, bereft of original thought, provincial in their general attitudes, too timid to stand up to or challenge the president, and determined to demonstrate their loyalty and “team spirit”—as they proceeded to march headlong into the war that Johnson insisted on pursuing—explains with stunning clarity how the runaway train called America, with a loose cannon at the helm, ran off its tracks almost immediately after Lyndon Johnson took over the most powerful office in the world, the one he had lusted over his entire life. Unfortunately for the country, that metaphor would not end with Johnson’s presidency.

It is clear from the descriptions of these and other insiders of the Johnson presidency that meaningful dialog, respectful debate, incisive analysis, and due diligence were not the paradigms under which his cabinet worked: The opposite tone was set, as exemplified by Johnson’s own declaration: “any person that did not conform to policy should be removed.”⁷³⁹ Thus, the country was being run during his entire presidency through the jaded mind of a man who, as previously demonstrated, was a victim of multiple psychiatric and psychological abnormalities, not the least of which were his periodic psychotic breakdowns.

Johnson’s mania propelled him, with a lot of help from the remorse felt by the entire country about the untimely death of his predecessor, and the congressmen and senators who represented that population, to produce his legendary, well-documented progressive legislation that he knew was required for his future legacy (which was the only impetus for his support). He realized that the record-making assortment of bills he pushed through Congress (after he himself had impeded many of them for years, even decades), exercising all of his legendary political skills, would enshrine him forever as one of the “greatest presidents.” His longtime goal was to achieve a position alongside his idol, the first president to be known by his initials, “FDR.” As we noted previously, quoting Richard Goodwin: “He wanted to out-Roosevelt Roosevelt.”⁷⁴⁰ Unfortunately, he had already decided that he would necessarily have to be a wartime president, just like all the greatest presidents, in order to attain that veneration.

Johnson’s puerile worldview and superficial thinking aptitude were best described by Philip Geyelin, then the diplomatic correspondent for the *Wall Street Journal*, in his 1966 book *Lyndon B. Johnson and the World*. Among other things, Geyelin said that Johnson’s skills of persuasion “work even when it isn’t convincing.” Johnson was able to reassure Senator Gruening (AK) that US troops would begin to be withdrawn by the early part of 1966. About the same time in 1965, he told another senator with a keen interest in foreign

affairs that “if we don’t stop the Reds in South Vietnam, tomorrow they will be in Hawaii, and next week they will be in San Francisco.”⁷⁴¹ The contrast in presidential styles revealed by that comment, the incredibly inane and provincial thinking behind it, to the president who succeeded John F. Kennedy to the White House, is stunning. For those who maintain the notion that he “inherited” the Vietnam War, it is impossible to reconcile with real history: His daughter, Luci Baines Johnson, stated unconvincingly, “Nobody wanted that war less than Lyndon Johnson ... No matter how hard he tried, he didn’t seem to be able to get out of that quagmire.”⁷⁴²

President Johnson’s lack of understanding, even the smallest scintilla of curiosity, about life in other cultures—their history, geography, religions, or the prevailing socioeconomic and political climate and their alliances—allowed his simplistic thinking process to make him believe that there was some intrinsic national security issue at stake in Vietnam. At least, that’s what he stipulated as the official reason for his actions in ramping up and then Americanizing their civil war; it is known now that there were other, more personal reasons related to the enormous wealth a relative handful of people could make from this adventure as well as his wish to become a “wartime president” for his demented legacy planning. Probably the most substantive “national security” rationale anyone ever came up with was the rationalization that the nation’s access to commodities like tin or rubber might be jeopardized. But such a calamity was never fully explained, probably because there were plenty of alternative sources available for these and every other indigenous commodity in Vietnam that the United States might need to acquire. The suspected CIA involvement (according to many sources), however, in the trafficking of opium and heroin through the Golden Triangle region of Southeast Asia, is a much more plausible explanation to the underlying cause of that “conflict.”

Johnson Reverses Kennedy’s Vietnam Policy

Immediately after JFK’s assassination, the Pentagon and the Joint Chiefs of Staff wasted no time in getting the country back to what they deemed to be on the “right” track and the first priority, of “national security.” After three long years of growing animus with their previous commander in chief,⁷⁴³ they were ready to celebrate their new commander in chief, Lyndon B. Johnson, the thirty-sixth president of the United States of America. The “celebration” that occurred, as the rest of the nation mourned, was manifested by a number of parties, one of which was demonstrated in one of the videos comprising the nine-volume DVD *The Men Who Killed Kennedy* (Episode 9 “The Guilty Men”), by the maid who worked for Clint Murchison: May Newman described a party that lasted a full week, complete with caviar and Champagne. The same May Newman was the very credible witness who affirmed the fact of the Murchison party the evening before the assassination, which was referenced in an earlier chapter.

The Washington manifestation of the celebration comes from a Dallas source who wishes to remain anonymous, who stated that former Dallas police officer Jack Revill later admitted that he had accompanied Dallas Mayor Earl Cabell to the Washington home of the mayor’s brother—ex-General Charles Cabell, fired by JFK after the Bay of Pigs—as a

bodyguard on a trip to attend Kennedy's funeral a day or two after the assassination. He witnessed a very large party at that house, attended by many high-ranking military officials who were "celebrating" Kennedy's death with toasts. He remembered being very tired from lack of sleep over the previous few days and, being repulsed by what he was seeing, decided to take the opportunity to catch up on his sleep in a guest bedroom, as he felt uncomfortable being there anyway. He furnished no names, but specifically mentioned other "generals" were in attendance, among other military officers.

Air Force Brigadier General Joseph J. Cappucci was likely one of those high-level officers at Cabell's party, based on statements made by the wife of another Air Force officer who told me what he said about Lyndon Johnson's involvement in JFK's assassination. In the late 1960s, General Cappucci was director of special investigations and the commander of the 1005th Special Investigations Group of the Air Force. He had been very close to many others in the intelligence community in his quest of finding communists, homosexuals, and others who were deemed as unsavory. His work in this area had brought him into a close, long-term relationship with J. Edgar Hoover, from whom he received much "inside information." During a dinner at the Hilton Hotel in Rome in August or September 1969, with Lieutenant Colonel William H. Amos and Amos's wife, General Cappucci talked at length about the then-front-page continuing story of Mary Jo Kopechne, who had died in July of that year in Senator Edward M. Kennedy's car in Chappaquiddick Island, Massachusetts. It was clear to Mrs. Amos that General Cappucci had obtained "inside" information from Hoover about the investigation of the accident and how Ms. Kopechne's parents had agreed to a generous settlement with Senator Kennedy in exchange for remaining silent about it. A few drinks loosened the general's tongue sufficiently for the caustic comments to grow to greater levels of animus about the Kennedys generally, and the conversation then turned to JFK's assassination. Finally, General Cappucci told the pair that "it was no wonder LBJ had JFK killed."**

Immediately after leaving the dinner, on their way home, Bill Amos told his wife that she must never ever repeat to anyone what General Cappucci had said; for nearly fifty years, she obeyed that instruction. She said that Bill had also told her that Johnson was "the most uncouth S.O.B. that ever was." She further stated that in 1964, Johnson had ordered all military intelligence agents, of whom Bill was one, to intercept all shipments of the book *A Texan Looks at Lyndon* by J. Evetts Haley to the PX stores of all military bases and to burn them; he was also required to watch the burning and formally verify that they were all destroyed. Mrs. Amos said that Bill had been disgusted by this incident and told her, when she asked him to give her one of the books, that they could not get that book because if it were discovered, he "would be court-martialed."⁷⁴⁴ Mrs. Amos now joins the many other lone voices who have courageously come forward to volunteer another small snippet of original evidence that, taken together, tells the real story of JFK's assassination just as it deconstructs the myth written by Lyndon Johnson.

One of the more vexing indications that the forces arrayed against JFK were already at work on reforming the executive branch came even before he left Washington for Texas on November 21, 1963. John F. Kennedy, on October 11, 1963, had signed National Security Action Memorandum (NSAM) #263, calling for "the bulk of US personnel [to] be

out of Vietnam by the end of 1965.” He had not wavered from that position, in fact—just before leaving the Oval Office for the trip to Texas, *even as NSAM #273 was being drafted*—Kennedy had reviewed a list of the most recent casualties in Vietnam and remarked to Assistant Press Secretary Malcolm Kilduff: “After I come back from Texas, that’s going to change. Vietnam is not worth another American life.”⁷⁴⁵

The document reversing Kennedy’s intent to withdraw American military advisers was being drafted by National Security Advisor McGeorge Bundy even as JFK left Andrews Air Force Base on his way to Texas.⁷⁴⁶ Kenneth O’Donnell, JFK’s White House aide, wrote that “the President’s order to reduce the American military personnel in Vietnam by one thousand before the end of 1963 was still in effect the day he went to Texas. A few days after his death ... the order was quietly rescinded.”⁷⁴⁷ The Pentagon and the Joint Chiefs of Staff wasted no time in getting the country back on the “right” track.

President Johnson signed NSAM #273, the highest-level national security document, as a revised policy within which all strategic plans and tactical policy would henceforth be guided. This directive essentially reversed Kennedy’s six-week-old Vietnam policy (NSAM #263). The contrast in how this document was originally written and how it was rewritten and executed within a few days of Kennedy’s assassination reflected clearly how Lyndon Johnson had reversed John F. Kennedy’s well-established plans to pull troops out of Vietnam even as he repeatedly vowed to “continue” JFK’s policies and while he kept telling others that he had “inherited” that war. As Fletcher Prouty, one of the authors of NSAM #263 put it: “If LBJ was merely continuing Kennedy’s policies, why was it necessary to reverse Kennedy’s October NSAM #263?”⁷⁴⁸ The original draft of NSAM #273, written by McGeorge Bundy, was prepared on November 21, 1963, as JFK was flying on Air Force One, on his last trip to Lyndon Johnson’s home state. It was supposedly written to reflect the consensus of the Honolulu Conference in a way that would “bring them into line with the words that Kennedy might want to say.” Even though it was written in the context of the worsening conditions on the battlefield, he was expected to approve a measure that would “intensify” the war, as long as it did not conflict with his objective of de-Americanizing the war.⁷⁴⁹

Considering his past statements, just hours before he left to meet his fate, it is inconceivable that Kennedy would have signed the document that Johnson signed days later. The change in policy represented by the final version of NSAM #273 may seem subtle to a casual reader of the document but it represented a fundamentally new direction in policy; the fact that it was initiated so early, while JFK was in flight to Texas, and developed by McGeorge Bundy—who, along with his brother William, was a long time disciple of Allen Dulles—suggests that the anti-Kennedy forces were already taking over in Washington just as the “wheels up” lever was pulled on Air Force One after it left the runway at Andrews Air Force Base on its way to Texas.

On Saturday, November 23, the morning after JFK’s assassination, McGeorge Bundy wrote Johnson a memo gently reminding him that members of the cabinet were grieving, and that he should handle them carefully, advising him, “*You will wish to avoid any*

suggestion of over-assertiveness.”⁷⁵⁰ (It would have been an odd comment to make if it had involved anyone else, but, since it was Johnson, somehow it was unremarkable.) Nevertheless, apparently ignoring Bundy’s advice, Johnson made some startlingly strong remarks as noted in the previous pages. He then “ordered [Ambassador Henry Cabot] Lodge to ‘tell those generals in Saigon that Lyndon Johnson intends to stand by our word’”⁷⁵¹ Johnson cunningly stated to his new cabinet that he wanted to “continue” Kennedy’s policies generally, including specifically his Vietnam policy (this despite the strong denunciation of Kennedy’s policy he had just given). He appealed to them, using their loyalty to JFK, to stay on board with him, just as he had planned to do from the earliest planning stages of his grand takeover plan.

On the basis of this inexplicable contradiction, he quickly approved NSAM #273, reversing, though the words were subtle and parsed, his predecessor’s policies. This was beyond misleading; it was an outright lie, even though it would take many years to be revealed. Kennedy had never even seen the original draft, which he might have approved, or approved with changes. But the final version of this directive was altered in ways that were “uniformly escalatory” and were based upon Johnson’s demands for “stronger” positions and completely at odds with Kennedy’s repeated actions and words. These changes were understated but immediate; the larger change—the willingness to commit many thousands of ground combat forces—would come later, after Lyndon Johnson won his seat in the Oval Office on his own in November, 1964.⁷⁵² As he went about reassuring his cabinet and the nation that he was a man of peace, he had to discreetly assure his military leaders that he was not really serious about all of that. To avoid confusing them that his peaceful intentions were in any way similar to his predecessor, Johnson would tell the Joint Chiefs of Staff, at a Christmas Eve party in 1963, “Just let me get elected, and then you can have your war.”⁷⁵³ His real attitude about many of the cabinet members, according to Anthony Summers, author of *Official and Confidential: The Secret Life of J. Edgar Hoover*, was disdain and condescension: “Johnson ... seemed more committed to Edgar [Hoover] than to his own cabinet members. Should they abandon him by resigning, he warned, two men were going to ‘follow their ass to the end of the earth’: J. Edgar Hoover and the head of the Internal Revenue Service.”⁷⁵⁴

Henry Cabot Lodge, probably sensing that he was in over his head, resigned as ambassador to Saigon in June 1964. McGeorge Bundy gave Johnson six recommendations for his successor, including Robert Kennedy, Sargent Shriver, Robert McNamara, Roswell Gilpatric, William Gaud, and himself. Johnson rejected all the names on the list and instead selected General Maxwell Taylor, previously the chairman of the Joint Chiefs of Staff under Kennedy. Bundy, disappointed that his ruse to have himself appointed—by including candidates who were either over-or under qualified—had not worked, was bitter because Johnson had appointed a military man. Johnson’s plan to become a wartime president depended on having a war far enough away to avoid any attack on the United States itself; he also wanted it to be one that would allow his personal micromanagement of it. His response to Bundy was that the ambassador to Saigon would soon be a “military job” and that Taylor was “our top military man.”⁷⁵⁵ He may have had a dual objective in

his choice, as that would not only get Taylor, a Kennedy appointee, out of Washington and into Vietnam, but would also allow him to select his own man as chief of the Joint Chiefs of Staff. As we will see shortly, Johnson's hope that Taylor, as a military man, would support his quest for a war with Vietnam, was dashed when he resisted Johnson's pressure to go to war (he was one of the few, unfortunately) and would then be forced to resign. Taylor was one of a number of advisers who had cautioned Johnson about an escalation in Vietnam. Johnson would ignore all of them, even firing many of them, like Taylor, for their "insubordination." He had stated his policy at his first cabinet meeting, as noted previously: *"No more divisions of opinion, no more bickering, and any person that did not conform to policy should be removed ... I am not going to lose Vietnam."* Lyndon Johnson knew that he was the smartest man in the room, certainly not those "Bostons and Harvards," whom he thought were merely fools, not equipped to run the country like he thought it should be run. Lyndon B. Johnson had all the answers and would not countenance any adviser who did not advise him as he wanted to be advised, just as he made it abundantly clear all along that he only wanted to hear "good news," no "bad news."

Johnson ignored the advice of anyone who did not agree with his opinion, including Director of the CIA John McCone, who debunked the "Domino Theory" in a June 11, 1964, memo that stated, "We do not believe that the loss of South Vietnam and Laos would be followed by the rapid, successive communization of the other states of the Far East."⁷⁵⁶ All during the Johnson reign the CIA believed the war was predicated on faulty assumptions and that the North Vietnamese armies were much stronger than Johnson believed to be the case,⁷⁵⁷ essentially one of the same points that the antiwar demonstrators across the street from the White House in Lafayette Park were advancing; the paranoid Johnson believed that the demonstrators were being organized by the international communist conspiracy. In fact, Johnson ordered CIA Assistant Director Richard Helms to prove that the opposition to his war was being funded and organized from abroad. Helms objected initially, pointing out that doing so might risk having the agency violate its charter forbidding domestic activities. Johnson's order to do that anyway led directly to the abuses of its charter, which were exposed during the Nixon administration by the Church Committee, giving rise to unwarranted assumptions (since then, becoming "conventional wisdom") that the worst abuses were initiated by the thirty-seventh president rather than the thirty-sixth.⁷⁵⁸

Johnson had planned for his war to commence after he was safely reelected in November 1964, but he needed to start preparing for it soon after he took office; indeed, it started just a few weeks after Johnson ascended to the Oval Office, according to Marine Corps Lieutenant Colonel William R. Corson, who wrote all about it in his 1968 book *The Betrayal*, arguably one of the best, most comprehensive books on the subject of Vietnam considering how early it was written. According to Corson, Roger Hilsman—once an assistant secretary of state for Far Eastern affairs until he left, four months into his position—believed that President Johnson made the first step toward escalation of the war only one month after taking office in December 1963, about the time that he told the Joint

Chiefs of Staff at a party on Christmas eve, “Just let me get elected, and then you can have your war.”⁷⁵⁹

Hilsman realized, and stated too bluntly, that Johnson then made the decision to begin bombing North Vietnam. There is still some question of the circumstances of Hilsman’s departure from the administration: He stated that he had resigned, but Dean Rusk claimed that he fired him and George Ball also claimed that he fired him (in his oral history interview at the LBJ Library, p. 5). Dean Rusk, always ready to curry favor with President Johnson, asked Ball to allow him the honor of claiming credit for that accomplishment. The fact that Johnson’s lieutenants were competing to take the credit for firing Hilsman proves Johnson’s angst of having anyone under him speak their minds, or get too close to truth telling when they should know that the secrecy rules prohibit such conduct. Such was the state of the affairs at the State Department in March 1964 in the new Johnson administration.⁷⁶⁰

Knowing that the polls were overwhelmingly against sending combat troops to South Vietnam, Johnson did not want to jeopardize his chances of winning in a fair election (something he had never done in an initial election for any of his previous seats, but this was not technically an exception to that record since he first acquired the office through even more brutal means). Some of his Democratic friends in leadership positions on the Hill were very wary of a war in Vietnam and had warned Johnson that a guerilla land war there was unwinnable, and he would run the risk of having China join the North Vietnamese in the fight. Within a year—after the elections during which he portrayed Barry Goldwater as a dangerous warmonger, a “raving, ranting demagogue”⁷⁶¹—Johnson would gallantly lead the military effort to win an “easy” war nine thousand miles away on behalf of peasants who were caught between the nationalistic forces of Ho Chi Minh while simultaneously many of them revolted against their tyrannical, despotic leaders (whose one endearing quality was that they favored capitalism over communism, and were therefore worthy of tremendous US military resources and national treasure, including, all told, millions of combat troops, precisely what JFK had tried so desperately to avoid).

Author and ex-Marine William Corson, referenced earlier, stated in his book that the Johnson administration had used deceptive measures “to flimflam the American public about Vietnam. A suitable pretext had to be found to justify the bombing and troop escalation.”⁷⁶²

As we will examine in more detail shortly, that pretext was put into place within six weeks of his attaining the presidency; he instructed McGeorge Bundy to plan a series of provocative acts against North Vietnam in January 1964, which led inevitably to the so-called “attacks” by North Vietnam on American warships seven months later.

Johnson promoted himself in the campaign as playing the role of the peace candidate and Goldwater as the warmonger (he said about his opponent, “Some others are eager to enlarge the conflict [in Vietnam]. They call upon us to supply American boys to do the job that Asian boys should do”). Johnson consistently portrayed Goldwater as the man who was too dangerous to guide America’s foreign relations, yet Johnson could hardly wait to

go to war himself. He decided to insure his “commander in chief” status by positioning American ships provocatively along the Vietnam coasts knowing that, through his ever-increasing moves to prepare for an inevitable war, some incident would occur, which he could parlay as an attack on US ships and sailors and from there it would be only a matter of time before he could go to Congress and get open-ended backing for him to wage war on North Vietnam. All of this maneuvering was planned from the first days after he became president, as stated at the time by Roger Hilsman and later confirmed by McGeorge Bundy.⁷⁶³

The supposed “attacks” were the result of a succession of provocations which had been planned for months by McGeorge Bundy on Johnson’s orders. One of the operations he designed was to send South Vietnamese PT boats to raid North Vietnamese naval installations along the coast. According to the plan, they had raided two such bases on July 31, 1964, as a means to provoke the North Vietnam radar system by electronically simulating an attack, which caused them to turn their radar on in response. Congress was not told that the *Maddox* was a spy ship and that it had been operating closer to the coastline than McNamara had stated when he testified that it was outside the twelve-mile limit. Johnson had used the nation’s patriotism—more correctly, exploited the patriotism of its young draft-age men—and its reaction to being told that North Vietnam had sent a gunboat to mercilessly attack two destroyers of the US Navy, in order to pressure Congress into passage of the Tonkin Gulf Resolution.

Oklahoma Congressman Carl Albert, the Speaker of the House, overheard the telephone conversation (evidently, not coincidentally: as Johnson was trying to enlist supporters for the cause, he had held Albert over after a breakfast presentation with other House leaders)⁷⁶⁴ between himself and Secretary McNamara regarding a report, on August 4, 1964, that two destroyers were under attack by North Vietnamese torpedo boats. Albert heard Johnson say, *“I’ll tell you what I want. I not only want those patrol boats that attacked the Maddox destroyed, I want everything at that harbor destroyed; I want the whole works destroyed. I want to give them a real dose.”*⁷⁶⁵ [Emphasis added.] This was before Johnson had gone to Congress to get authorization to take formal action against North Vietnam, as he awaited their response to the belligerent provocations he and McNamara had already made. By this time, it was a certainty that Johnson’s long-planned bullying and taunting would inevitably lead to the confrontation he had promised the Joint Chiefs of Staff and military leaders for seven months. Johnson loved to “talk tough.” He often used the phrase “going for the jugular” to describe how vicious he could be when he thought his honor, or political position, was under attack. “‘They thought they could frighten the President of the United States,’ he said after Vietcong terrorist attacks had brought retaliatory US air strikes to the North, adding: ‘They just didn’t know this President.’”⁷⁶⁶

Johnson immediately went to Congress, armed with the draft resolution that he had McGeorge Bundy prepare in advance of these “attacks,” which authorized him to “take all necessary measures to repel any armed attack against the forces of the United States and to prevent further aggression.” This meant that he could use the armed forces however he

wished in Vietnam. Well before the election, and as part of his strategy of winning it, he had decided to move Vietnam closer to the center stage in order to help portray his steadfastness against tyranny, in contrast to Goldwater's image as a warmonger. He outmaneuvered Congress into giving him a blank check to conduct his misadventure in Vietnam through first manipulating a fake (since it never really happened) attack by small North Vietnamese gunboats on two US Navy destroyers; but it was so well planned that it convinced almost the entire Senate that it was true (a point that should be considered by those who deny Johnson was "smart" enough to have planned and executed the assassination of JFK).

Johnson cunningly used the Vietnam issue as part of his presidential campaign, positioning himself as doing everything he could to contain America's Communist enemies while steadfastly avoiding war, in contrast to the saber-rattling Senator Goldwater. While he wanted to portray himself as prudent and cautious compared to Goldwater, he also did not want to appear to be a "pushover" for some "tin-horn dictator of a fourth rate" country.

But there was no attack on either the USS *Maddox* or USS *C. Turner Joy*, both navy destroyers sent at Johnson's direction to the Gulf of Tonkin for the very purpose of provoking a confrontation as an excuse to attack their facilities. The original incident on August 2, 1964, if it occurred at all, was little more than "a shot across the bow" set off by a local commander, not by anyone of rank in North Vietnam. Two days later, on August 4 after 9:30 p.m. (local time), the action involved imaginary boats engaging in a phantom three-hour "battle" that had more in common with modern-day video games than reality. The only shots taken—hundreds of high-explosive shells fired by American guns—were wasted as they fell into the sea. The only thing that attacked the *Maddox* or *Turner Joy* was bad weather conditions; the confusion was caused by a frantic crew that did not realize that their commander in chief had a hair-trigger finger and was anxious to portray himself as a great, wise, and patient leader who wanted the public to think that he was fighting mightily to avoid the very war that he was simultaneously, and secretly, trying desperately to provoke.

Patrick Park was an expert sonar man, the sailor who manned the guns. He stated that there were no North Vietnam boats anywhere in the area; he later spent three days studying sonar tapes trying to find any sign of a boat or a torpedo but could not. Commander (later Admiral) James Stockdale, who later spent years as a prisoner of war and ultimately ran for vice president under Ross Perot in 1992, was flying air cover over the *Maddox*. He said that he was flying so low that he had salt spray on his windshield as he looked for boats and/or torpedoes and could find none. In fact, none of the Navy planes dispatched there to assist the destroyers could spot any attacking boats.

Commander Stockdale, having spent the previous night flying over the *Maddox* and *Turner Joy*, reported on his return: "No boats, no boat wakes, no ricochets off boats—nothing but black sea and American firepower." He also stated that he and other pilots were shocked when they realized the next day that the tenor of the messages emanating from Washington did not appear to acknowledge that there had been no attack. During all

of the confusion (it isn't clear whether it was the cause or the effect), the communications network virtually collapsed due to the number of FLASH messages being transmitted; this caused the overloaded system to slow to a crawl. Among the messages that should have stopped the panic, sent by the senior officer aboard to officials in the Pentagon, the State Department and the White House stated:⁷⁶⁷

REVIEW OF ACTION MAKES MANY RECORDED CONTACTS AND TORPEDOES FIRED APPEAR DOUBTFUL. FREAK WEATHER EFFECTS AND OVEREAGER SONARMEN MAY HAVE ACCOUNTED FOR MANY REPORTS. SUGGEST COMPLETE EVALUATION BEFORE ANY FURTHER ACTION.***

The next day, as the seas calmed, the sky cleared, and the shooting stopped, the situation in Washington became more cloudy, then as stormy—figuratively—as it had literally been earlier in the Gulf of Tonkin, as intense debates began on both ends of the main section of Pennsylvania Avenue. Even though additional classified dispatches from the commanders in the Tonkin Gulf made clear that the “second attack” was nonexistent,⁷⁶⁸ it was just the opportunity that the new president had anticipated. Indeed, his pressure on the military commanders to provoke such an incident would suggest that Lyndon Johnson had been trolling for trouble in Asia, just nine months after assuming the presidency although it had started within weeks of his becoming president, with instructions to McGeorge Bundy to begin planning this exercise. By June 1, 1964—two months before the phantom attacks by invisible ships of the North Vietnamese Navy—Johnson met with his top advisers in Honolulu for three days dedicated to planning the escalation of the war. He also instructed Bundy to begin writing the first draft of what would be called the Tonkin Gulf Resolution. It was as if Johnson was so clairvoyant that he foresaw that phantom attack over eight weeks before it occurred.

More importantly, though, the phantom attack was carefully timed to occur just three months before the 1964 election, which he knew would give him a political advantage by causing the electorate to be tilted even more than it already was toward him. Now he would appear to voters as the beleaguered incumbent who had to deal with a very dangerous threat to the nation—at least in his mind it was—and this is how it was presented to those same voters.

His manipulation of the military and of his own highest-level staff—to draft a proposed congressional resolution giving him complete authority to escalate his war beyond anything Congress had anticipated—enabled him to push the “Tonkin Gulf Resolution” through almost immediately after this event that didn't actually occur. He was simply exercising the powers of the presidency as commander in chief, hoodwinking almost the entire Congress (only two senators, Wayne Morse of Oregon and Earnest Gruening of Alaska—and no congressmen—voted against it) on August 7, 1964. Just as the son of magician Harry Blackstone had once said, Johnson was an expert at the art of deception, of making all eyes watch “A” while the dirty work was occurring at “B.” The prize this time gave the new president complete power to do practically anything he wanted to do. But he knew that he would have to wait until after the November presidential election to begin using this authority to his fullest advantage.

By 1965, with Johnson safely out of jeopardy and securely elected in his own “right” to the presidency, a poignant joke was circulating: A girl was supposed to have said, “I was told that if I voted for Goldwater we would be at war in six months. I did—and we were.”⁷⁶⁹



Grand Ceremony of Signing Gulf of Tonkin Resolution (facetiously named the “Joint Resolution for the Maintenance of Peace and Security in Southeast Asia”), August 10, 1964.

One of the unsung heroes battling against the Johnsonian juggernaut was arguably one of the most honorable of the men who ever held the title, Senator Gaylord Nelson of Wisconsin, who valiantly tried to limit the power that the Tonkin Resolution granted the president by attempting to amend it to prevent its use as justification for a major change in the US mission in South Vietnam. As noted in *Lyndon B. Johnson and the World*, by author Philip Geyelin, “Nelson would have put Congress on record against ‘extension of the present conflict’ and in favor of a continuing advisory role.”⁷⁷⁰ Senator William Fulbright, the chairman of the Foreign Relations Committee, talked Senator Nelson out of pushing that amendment because, in Fulbright’s opinion, it was superfluous since he believed that President Johnson would not extend the US involvement in that war.⁷⁷¹

Contrasted to the underrated Senator Nelson, the overrated Democratic Senator from Arkansas, William Fulbright, was either gullible, unintelligent, naive, or a fool, since it took nearly two more years for him to figure out that he had been duped, that he had actually facilitated Johnson’s devious plot. By 1966, Fulbright finally admitted that he had made a mistake in not accepting Nelson’s amendment, because by then he realized that the

resolution allowed Johnson to conduct the war however he wished, and the artfully crafted wording of that resolution—precisely what Gaylord Nelson foresaw and Fulbright didn't—provided Johnson the ability to claim that he was acting completely within the scope of that very legislation.

By then, even as the attitude of the entire country was turning against Johnson's war, the hapless Fulbright could only wring his hands in despair and engage in verbal jabs at the president he had helped to empower.⁷⁷² It was about this time that he said to a colleague, "My God, I feel so alone. No one seems to give a damn. I feel at times that I am walking among the blind and the deaf."⁷⁷³ Senator Gaylord Nelson personally told me at a luncheon in Racine, Wisconsin (due to my friendship with a political science professor who invited me along for this event), in March 1966 that acquiescing to Chairman Fulbright two years earlier was his biggest regret. In that year, the Senate Foreign Relations Committee opened hearings on Vietnam, which inevitably resulted in further doubts about Johnson's credibility. The chief of staff of that committee, Pat Holt, described the situation in the Senate following Johnson's bizarre explanation for intervening in the Dominican Republic. After that experience, it finally sunk in with senators on Capitol Hill that President Johnson was prone to hyperbole and exaggeration and was seldom quick with the truth.

[This] predisposition [to grant Johnson the "benefit of the doubt"] was reversed... . An increasingly common view on Capitol Hill was, as one senator expressed in privately [sic] at the time, "If we know the President was impetuous in the Dominican Republic and exaggerated the situation there to the point of falsifying it, how can we trust him anywhere else?"⁷⁷⁴

The president of the United States, before the White House reporters, just made up a completely fictitious story about hundreds of people being murdered, some beheaded, and bullets being shot at the American embassy; it was a case of lying on the fly at a presidential news conference, though in his deluded mind, he probably thought it was all true; he habitually confused one with the other as previously noted. He could make himself believe anything, and many people he had known throughout his life—from his school days, the Congress and Senate, and on to the vice presidency and presidency—said that he could not tell the difference between truth and lies; people just didn't believe him because he was a man who just could not tell the truth.

In 2012, James G. Hershberg published a new book that described how, in 1966, President Johnson—who by then was publicly lamenting how his predecessors had set him up for a war that he could not end—purposely scuttled an attempt to negotiate a peaceful solution to the war at a time when only 6,250 Americans had perished; instead he continued the fighting, as President Nixon did following him, until eventually over 58,000 Americans had been killed in what he liked to call the Vietnam "conflict." Hershberg's book, *Marigold: The Lost Chance for Peace in Vietnam*, described a diplomatic breakthrough led by Italy and Poland, and a mutual agreement between US and North Vietnamese ambassadors to confirm a settlement. The agreement was scuttled due to Johnson's resumption of bombing Hanoi, the capitol of North Vietnam, after a five-month

suspension.⁷⁷⁵

All during his determined efforts to keep the fighting going in Vietnam, the lies that Lyndon Johnson planted would grow and grow, finally becoming the “conventional wisdom” that had just the ring of truth required for him to persist. Soon he had convinced himself, just as he had done on many other occasions, that the entry of the US military machine into the Vietnam civil war was a necessary, indeed patriotic, thing; to question such a presidential decision was, therefore, quite the opposite: it was considered unpatriotic, at least by him, as he used every opportunity to bloviate about it in speeches always begun with “My fellow Americans.”

Finally, in 2003, even Robert McNamara admitted that the whole sorry episode referred to as the “Tonkin Gulf” attack did not occur; this point will be examined further in the succeeding pages, as a case study in how Lyndon Johnson had successfully taken several of Kennedy’s men, including McNamara, through a transformative process within which he recast them as beholden to himself. In almost every case, these aides became just like Johnson’s own aides: submissive, subservient, and sycophantic. The complete truth of the “Tonkin Gulf incident” was not revealed for over forty years after the passage of the resolution, until 2005. The very fact that the real facts about this sordid historical incident were kept secret for four decades should be more than sufficient to make the point about Lyndon Johnson’s unsurpassed ability to manipulate people, from ninety-eight senators in 1964 to thousands of the, usually, politically savvy, and then to millions of people in the population of the country.

Through the release of previously classified radio intercepts, it was finally admitted that an NSA group selectively used only 15 out of 122 available intercepts to skew their conclusion that an attack had occurred. A *New York Times* article in October of that year stated that:⁷⁷⁶

[The NSA historian, Robert J. Hanyok, made] the first serious accusation that communications intercepted by the N.S.A... . were falsified so that they made it look as if North Vietnam had attacked American destroyers on Aug. 4, 1964... . President Lyndon B. Johnson cited the supposed attack to persuade Congress to authorize broad military action in Vietnam, but most historians have concluded in recent years that there was no second attack.

Johnson even knew at the time that it was part of his shell game, telling George Ball, “Hell, those dumb, stupid sailors were just shooting at flying fish!” yet he went ahead with the retaliatory air strikes on North Vietnamese targets, according to the plan laid out months in advance at his behest by McGeorge Bundy.⁷⁷⁷

The news article regarding the official pronouncement of the US government published in 2005—that the “Tonkin Gulf” incident was in fact a nonincident, staged for the benefit of a president eager to begin the escalation toward war mostly for his own financial and political gains—merely gave more credence to what many people had already concluded. Moreover, it verified and officially documented that the entire incident was an intentional lie, fabricated clearly as a result of the president’s prodding and provocations. Yet even

now, in April 2014, as previous presidents all gather in Austin, Texas, to commemorate Lyndon Johnson's accomplishments—and lament how Johnson had “inherited” the very war that John F. Kennedy had resolved to extricate the US military from—fifty years later, they must privately realize that this was all part of Johnson's big lie. It is to protect the *office of the presidency* from his shame that his lies are still repeated five decades later. Had some of the previous presidents not also been personally compromised, through their own incompetence or worse, perhaps they might have been a little less zealous in protecting Johnson's mythological legacy.

All this had been known implicitly by those who were paying attention in real time. Indeed, author and former Lieutenant-Colonel William R. Corson, whose 1968 book *Betrayal* dared expose the truth of that incident, laid it all out while Johnson was still in office, when he wrote that Johnson used the lie to push “an elaborate propaganda campaign to sell escalation to Congress and the American public.” Corson stated that the North Vietnamese PT boats in the first “attack” were merely harassing the two US destroyers *Maddox* and *Turner Joy* but did not fire guns or torpedoes at either ship [probably because they knew that doing so would be tantamount to suicide on the high seas].⁷⁷⁸

Though it was made to appear that the Gulf of Tonkin incident occurred spontaneously as the American Navy destroyers *Maddox* and the *C. Turner Joy* lumbered along minding their own business, in fact the planning for the attack had begun seven months earlier, when Johnson ordered McGeorge Bundy to plan and execute a series of provocations against North Vietnam under the code name of “34A.”⁷⁷⁹ Among the operations Bundy designed was one in which South Vietnamese PT boats started raiding North Vietnamese naval installations along the coast, beginning July 31, 1964. Just as these raids were being completed, the *Maddox* cruised into the Gulf of Tonkin, ready to be “attacked” just as everyone on board had been alerted to expect, which of course had the desired effect of putting all the sailors in the most anxious moods possible.⁷⁸⁰ The weight of the evidence even in 1967–69, from the early books by William Corson, General Nathan F. Twining, and Joseph C. Goulden, all referenced in the Bibliography, proved that the entire “attack” had been deliberately planned by Lyndon Johnson as a pretext to gin up a patriotic backlash for his own political and psychological gain.

Lyndon Johnson had proved that he was the best in the art of deception once again. After acquiring carte blanche support from Congress for a war that he planned to take over completely, he began micro managing not only the strategy but even the bombing missions themselves. He thought that he was uniquely capable of managing the war at a time in which he was barely able to control himself, as we have noted previously. He did this to convince the public that, as commander in chief, he agonized over which boys might be sacrificed in each of the raids he launched, usually about 2:00–3:00 a.m. while all the lesser officials were home asleep. He made sure that everyone knew about his concerns through the White House press reporters, leading them to the reportage he expected to appear in newspapers around the country: “What other commander in chief throughout history had ever demonstrated that level of support? How cruel it was that those college

kids and 'hippies' across the street at Lafayette Park did not see his personal pain through all these agonizing decisions he had to make?"

After "winning" his Tonkin Gulf authorization slip on August 7, through the end of 1964, Johnson knew that he would have to patiently wait a period to demonstrate his serene and tolerant side as he portrayed himself hoping and praying for peace; he also needed the public's sympathy and support as he waited until after the November elections to begin escalating his war, so he bided his time. Doing otherwise might cause too many people to notice his sleight of hand maneuvering and begin questioning his wisdom and motives, especially as he portrayed himself to be the "peace candidate." That was to contrast himself to Barry Goldwater, who was being cast—not without considerable justification—as a warmonger. So for many months, Johnson proceeded very slowly, taking relatively minor actions to escalate the war to minimize the alarm during this critical period before the election in November while putting the military on alert to begin planning for greater numbers of enlistees as well as draftees. This had the effect of incrementally increasing the military involvement, to inure the public over a long period of time to the reality of what was going on.

Simultaneously, Johnson instructed his military chiefs to keep their initial requests to a minimum, so he would not have to officially disapprove them. In March 1965, for example, he forced General Harold Johnson to back down from a request for five divisions to two, and, instead of marines, to make them army, so as to draw less attention to what they were up to. After all, there was an unlimited supply of draft-age boys he could put in the army; the marines required volunteers. Within a few months, by the middle of 1965 (after having a prolonged depression and manic attacks earlier in the year), Johnson had decided that it was time to bring his plan to fruition and gave the Joint Chiefs of Staff the official assignment to develop wartime planning.

On June 23, 1965, he complained that no one on his staff could be trusted: "The other day ... the *New York Times* spent four hours and twenty-five minutes ... with my people. Preparing to castrate me.' The following day he declared that he could no longer talk to anyone in the State Department: 'So we just have to ... act without it... . Don't repeat it to anybody, but that's how dangerous our State Department is now.'" ⁷⁸¹ A month later, he said the military were also untrustworthy: "Some of them are awfully irresponsible. They'll just scare you. They're ready to put a million men in (Vietnam) right quick." ⁷⁸²

The attitude of McNamara had changed since the Kennedy White House and by 1965 he gave in to Johnson's preference for reaction over pro action when he declared, "There is no longer any such thing as strategy, only crisis management." ⁷⁸³ During this period, Johnson was attempting to balance the military's repeated requests for many thousands of additional troops to fulfill his own policies with what he perceived he could commit with minimal political risk. He tried to do it as secretly as possible, while using hapless draftees instead of volunteers. ⁷⁸⁴ Throughout 1965, the false signals and lack of direction led to deep divisions between the Joint Chiefs of Staff and the president and his divided staff. Johnson's repeated commands for unified proposals, despite the lack of his leadership in

making key decisions at the macro level, the resulting conflict, and tensions caused the Joint Chiefs to produce proposals that did little more than buy time. Johnson continued trimming the proposals they did submit and rejecting without discussion several measures that they felt were essential, including mobilization of reserves. All the top officials, including Johnson, miscalculated the resolve of the North Vietnamese resistance. Although the Joint Chiefs were bitterly disappointed with Johnson's cutbacks, they quietly acquiesced, on the assumption that when the "going got tough" they could maneuver him into doing what they wanted.⁷⁸⁵

During June and July 1965, high-level strategy meetings took place in the White House that were narrowly focused on how many troops could be politically justified to commit to a war effort that had never been systematically discussed in order to formulate an answer to the more fundamental question of how the war should be fought.⁷⁸⁶ The reason for this, according to Professor George C. Herring (author of the book *America's Longest War: the United States and Vietnam, 1950–1975*), was simple overconfidence, from the president on down the military hierarchy: "Americans could not conceive that they would be unable to impose their will on what Lyndon Johnson once dismissed as that 'raggedy-ass little fourth-rate country.' There was no need to think in terms of strategy."⁷⁸⁷ He took a very superficial, though serious attitude regarding his role as commander in chief; his intent was merely to *portray* himself as being "in charge" to the public, as he made the choices of bombing targets and agonizing for reporters about lost US airmen, even having a scale model of a besieged Khe Sanh built in the White House situation room. Though he desperately tried to portray himself as expertly commanding the war, Lyndon Johnson never really took effective command and control of it, because he had little real appreciation of military matters and certainly no expertise in strategic military planning.⁷⁸⁸

By November 1965, according to Professor Herring, National Security Advisor McGeorge Bundy "literally pleaded with him ... to make clear his positions on the big issues so that Secretary of Defense Robert McNamara could be certain he was running the war 'the right way for the right reasons, in your view.'"⁷⁸⁹ Shortly after that, Johnson agreed to meet with the Joint Chiefs of Staff to hear their recommendations for the conduct of the war. Marine Corps Lieutenant General Charles G. Cooper attended that meeting and subsequently wrote one of the most revealing, and troubling, accounts of the decision-making process in the Johnson White House for the conduct of the war.

Johnson Goes Ballistic: Military Generals "Idiots" Giving Him "Stupid Advice"

Lieutenant General Cooper's 2002 book, *A Marine's Story of Combat in Peace and War*, written with Richard E. Goodspeed, provides a vivid description of the inner workings of the White House/Pentagon decision-making process in 1965. It also revealed something even more important than the chaotic manner in which the White House made decisions; it documented yet another of Lyndon Johnson's manic—clearly psychotic—episodes as he screamed obscenities at the very officers who had struggled to come up with an effective

plan to achieve the results that Johnson had demanded of them despite severely limiting their options. Cooper had accompanied the Joint Chiefs of Staff to the White House meeting, which they had requested, to resolve a problem they felt was caused by the existing policy of “piling on forces in Vietnam without understanding the consequences.” The Joint Chiefs were led by the chairman, General Earle Wheeler of the US Army. The other chiefs of their respective military organizations were: General Harold Johnson, the Army chief of staff; General John P. McConnell, the Air Force chief of staff; General Wallace Greene Jr., the commandant of the Marine Corps; Admiral David McDonald, the chief of naval operations. Secretary McNamara had reluctantly acceded to their request after discussing and preparing the president for the meeting. While seeking the opinions of these generals and admirals, and pretending to understand the strategic planning they had put together, Johnson seemed to appear in deep thought as he processed the information, briefly turning his back on them. The following passages provide a vivid account of what happened next, as Cooper held a map of Vietnam for the presentation by General Wheeler. As soon as Wheeler finished, Johnson began his vicious assault, suddenly whirling around, screaming and cursing each of them in turn. Lieutenant General Cooper summarized his recollections of that frightening day:⁷⁹⁰

Noting that it was he who was carrying the weight of the free world on his shoulders, he called them filthy names—shitheads, dumb shits, pompous assholes—and used “the F-word” as an adjective more freely than a Marine in boot camp would use it. It was unnerving, degrading.

Author Cooper’s stunning description of presidential behavior to his visitors that day, as he quoted Johnson’s statements—for example, those “idiots gave him stupid advice, [adding that] he had the whole damn world to worry about”—bespeaks more than the words in this excerpt say. This was yet another Johnsonian meltdown, an incident that suggests the “Colossus” was in another psychotic rage, just like those that Richard Goodwin wrote about in his book, or the account of lobbyist Robert Winter-Berger as he told of Johnson’s meltdown in Speaker McCormack’s office in March 1964 covered elsewhere, that other historians go to great lengths to avoid because it does not fit in well with the paradigm that they have attempted to construct.

Author Cooper’s description of Lyndon Johnson—exploding in front of his highest-ranking-level military leaders as a result of his own failures of leadership in the direction of *his* war, one that many in the Pentagon didn’t want and feared would lead down an impossible path to certain defeat—speaks volumes about how the whole “Vietnam Quagmire” came about. General Wheeler attempted to empathize with the president’s situation and the tremendous pressure Johnson was under, but the president was not moved from his antagonistic attitude; Johnson asked the other participants if they agreed with General Wheeler and each of them dispassionately explained the rationale for their concerns. During this discussion he had briefly returned to a calmer demeanor, but before they were dismissed from the meeting by their commander in chief, he returned to his attack mode, screaming and cursing, throwing the “F-bomb” at each of them, telling them he was “disgusted” with all of them. They had tried to make a serious presentation about the options available to him as the commander in chief, assuming that he wanted to hear

the different alternatives that might “win the peace” with war, but he made it clear that he didn’t want to hear them, and felt it necessary to demean and belittle them in the process. All in all, it was probably the worst experience that each of them had ever endured, including whatever nastiness they had encountered during their time in boot camp as fresh young recruits, not to mention the horrific wartime memories some of them retained. In fact, on the drive back to the Pentagon, Admiral McDonald even said as much, declaring that it “was the worst experience that I could ever imagine.”⁷⁹¹

Johnson’s Mental Health During the Vietnam Escalation

A comment like that from Admiral McDonald suggests that there was more than his personal hurt feelings behind his observation. Perhaps it was due to him having seen a side of Johnson so frightening, worse than, to use his expression, “I could ever imagine,” that his concern was related to the larger dilemma of having witnessed the most powerful person in the world having a psychotic breakdown during the process of making the momentous decisions to proceed with his war agenda, just as several others—including some of his closest aides—during this same period have also reported.^{****} McDonald wasn’t the only senior official who described him in ways that could be interpreted as “frightening.” New Jersey Congressman Frank Thompson told of a meeting he attended at the White House, where Dean Rusk and Robert McNamara had given their usual passive and perfunctory reports on casualty statistics, enemy body counts, and the “pacification” program. Thompson then stood up and asked if anyone would be willing to tell the truth about the status of the war and the real costs of men and materiel. At that point, President Johnson came over to him, grabbed him by his arm, and escorted him out of the meeting, saying “I want you out of my house right now,” as he proceeded to shove him down the corridor and out the door. “*God, he was a frightening man.*” Congressman Thompson said.⁷⁹² [Emphasis added.]

Richard Goodwin’s first reference to Johnson’s deteriorating mental condition came as he described his actions during the summer of 1965, the point at which the Vietnam War became officially the highest priority of the American military. Goodwin wrote, in *Remembering America*, that Johnson’s “eccentricities” had morphed over the line, into “unreason.” Like many other aides, who apparently were so enamored of the overpowering nature of the “colossus,” he, and they, were quick to forgive him because, after all, he had worked such magic in crafting all of that progressive legislation, which in reality had been kept shelved by this same man over several years as he “waited until the time was right.” At least Richard Goodwin recognized what many others ignored or simply didn’t care to acknowledge, which Goodwin described as “periodic disruptions of Lyndon Johnson’s mind and spirit.”⁷⁹³ Within the pages of his book, Goodwin described one of Johnson’s trademark behaviors, reported by many others: Repeatedly lying about something to the point that he actually came to believe the lie. Goodwin noted that he observed Johnson’s conduct during a period of two years that he worked for him, concluding that Johnson’s conduct was “frighteningly different” than anything he had ever experienced before, and that his conclusion was shared by others working in a similar capacity.⁷⁹⁴ Goodwin then

described how Johnson, in April 1965, cancelled the scheduled visits of the president of Pakistan, Mohammed Ayub Khan, and the prime minister of India, Lal Bahadur Shastri, because both of them had disagreed with Johnson's war policies in Vietnam. Then Johnson denied, falsely, at a press conference that they had been cancelled. A week later, the president stated to Goodwin that it was all due to "some disloyal Kennedy people over at the State Department."

Goodwin then revealed that the columnist Hugh Sidey had told him that many others "around town" had similar fears that Johnson's quirks were starting to affect policy decisions and that, regarding "the Ayub and Shastri affair, Johnson had said to reporters: 'After all, what would Jim Eastland say if I brought those two niggers over here.'" (Eastland was a staunch segregationist senator from Mississippi, once dubbed "The Voice of the White South.") Goodwin then commented that "it was such a stupid remark for LBJ to say" and that he was "a little out of control to say it at all."⁷⁹⁵

A few days later, Johnson received two telegrams suggesting a visit from Vice President Hubert Humphrey to demonstrate goodwill to Asian nations. Goodwin and Moyers were in the Oval Office when Johnson read them: Then, describing what happened afterward, Goodwin reported that Johnson's violent reaction caused his face to reflect his "fury" as he screamed, "I don't want telegrams like that." Immediately after that, he called Dean Rusk and told him that if his people ever sent him any more telegrams of that sort, they should all be fired. Goodwin also noted that the president's most "irrational moments" were always characterized by facial contortions and a change in his normal voice, which shifted quickly in tone and intensity, as he began speaking very slowly and deliberately.⁷⁹⁶ This chapter in Goodwin's book continues on for twenty-four pages, citing numerous other incidents that clearly showed Johnson's deep state of paranoia, his hatred of Robert Kennedy—and anyone who associated with him—and the many instances of how Johnson's mental state directly affected American policy (e.g., initiatives toward arms control cancelled "simply because Bobby Kennedy had made a speech" in support of them; his sending the Marines into the Dominican Republic after lying to the American public about how insurgents there were attacking the American embassy; the decisions to escalate the Vietnam War; his purposefully understated troop commitments, and his instruction to McNamara ordering him to "underestimate the cost of the war by a factor of at least 50 percent"; finally Goodwin made the observation that the president seemed to think that, because he thought these things, and verbalized them, and pressed others to accept them, that made them somehow transform into truth.⁷⁹⁷ It is precisely the same point that others have stated, and that we have collected and presented throughout this book. It is essential for the reader to understand because it reflects the intrinsic dishonesty of the man who was then making decisions that affected the lives of tens of millions of people living within the United States and many millions more who lost their lives in other countries as a direct result of his aberrant behavior; it goes to the heart of the Johnson persona, and it is the essence of the person some people consider, somehow positively, as the "Colossus."

All of this led Richard Goodwin to conclude that the president he worked for in 1964–65 was "a very dangerous man" and that he suspected that his own efforts to keep these

secrets during that same period might have caused him to have made a mistake in judgment.⁷⁹⁸ The points raised by Richard Goodwin in 1988, fifteen years after Lyndon Johnson's death, must be brought out into the open and closely examined again, twenty-six years later. It must also be noted that Richard Goodwin was far from the only person who observed these same troubling behavior of Lyndon Johnson. Goodwin repeatedly invokes the name of Bill Moyers and states that Moyers was simpatico with all of Goodwin's concerns and that they had independently consulted psychiatrists. (Moyers, not content with talking with only one, talked to two psychiatrists according to Goodwin.) Goodwin stated that "In all cases the diagnosis was the same: We were describing a textbook case of paranoid disintegration, the eruption of long-suppressed irrationalities."⁷⁹⁹

Arthur Schlesinger Jr. wrote a similar account in his diary on January 14, 1969, explaining that after a panel discussion for a National Education Television broadcast, he and Moyers went to their hotel, the Algonquin in New York City, to share a drink and some shop talk about Johnson and the problem with writing about the reality of Johnson's character was that "no one would believe it." Schlesinger quoted Bill Moyers as saying, "He is a sick man."⁸⁰⁰ It is a disturbing commentary that these men were all aware that the president of the United States, who they worked for, was a "sick man" who could not adequately control himself, much less the nation that he had taken to war.

The stories told by Richard Goodwin and furtively, through a sort of vicarious journey through Goodwin's and Arthur Schlesinger's books, by Bill Moyers, must also be juxtaposed to those told by others, including Billie Sol Estes, Madeleine Brown, Lt. General Charles Cooper, Colonel Ralph Albertazzie, Barr McClellan, Robert Winter-Berger, and the many others noted elsewhere. When examined as a whole and in context, the true story of Lyndon B. Johnson, the thirty-sixth president of the United States, becomes melded into a singular chronicle of a man that is unlike the portrait one finds in the numerous other "biographies" of him, some written primarily for the purpose of mythmaking.

The portrait of Johnson rendered by many other books is as superficial as physical portraits, because they were written as paeans to the man who brought forth so many "good things" through his Great Society legislation, and how he was thus uniquely able to accomplish such a massive and fundamental change in American society. They all ignore his real motives, and the lack of real principle behind the legislation. The most obsequious of these books uniformly ignore the fact that the source of his success in the creation of his "legacy" was his paranoia, his obsessive-compulsive mania, the narcissism, and sociopathic personality disorders, aided by his enablers who were willing to protect him at all costs, due to how he had compromised them. The product of his successes was the incalculable but enormous cost to the country of Lyndon Johnson's "successes."

Johnson's Arrogance: The Real Cause of His Leadership Failure

Throughout this book we have returned to the question of Johnson's demeanor and mental state during his presidency and at the time of his death. It is important at this

juncture, however, to note that many of the “insiders” who had regular contact with him had noticed that, starting shortly after the 1964 election victory, through the spring of 1965, Johnson had demonstrated all the classic symptoms of his depressive cycle. Johnson became more and more frustrated, he worked frenetically but always feeling that he could not keep up with unfolding events, and he continually, and increasingly, manipulated his aides, reporters, and other government officials to keep passing more and more bills to add to his legacy all while he attempted to Americanize, then personally micromanage, the Vietnam War. His frantic efforts to accomplish his legacy and to micromanage the war came despite his having *failed* to make sound management decisions on the macro level—caused in part by his failure to employ the more elaborate process used by President Eisenhower, since he did not have the breadth of knowledge and perspective that allowed President Kennedy—when he wasn’t being deceived and manipulated by the CIA, to make informed decisions—that might have stopped the nation from becoming bogged down into the “quagmire.” Instead, Johnson decided that a “seat of the pants” approach worked best for someone of his brilliance. The disturbing colloquy of the 1965 White House conference, at which the Joint Chiefs of Staff were attempting to get Johnson to make fundamental strategic decisions, as described previously by Lt. General Cooper, is yet another example of how Johnson’s volatile mental condition contributed to one of this country’s most regrettable chapters. As author D. Jablow Hershman in her book *Power Beyond Reason: The Mental Collapse of Lyndon Johnson* put it, “Paranoia was closing over the President like a steel net.” ⁸⁰¹

By 1966, even Army Chief of Staff Harold Johnson had grown skeptical about General Westmoreland’s strategy of attrition, and he began questioning the wastefulness and futility of the search-and-destroy missions. Many high-level officers also “bristled at Johnson’s refusal to mobilize the reserves and chafed under restrictions on the bombing, troop levels, and the use of troops in Laos, Cambodia and across the DMZ (Demilitarized Zone). They protested bitterly Washington’s micromanagement of the war.” Marine General Victor Krulak derisively described Johnson’s management style in 1967, “The idea is to take more and more items of less and less significance to higher and higher levels so that more and more decisions on smaller and smaller matters may be made by fewer and fewer people.”⁸⁰² When these statements were made, the fact that President Johnson had in fact allowed bombing these neighboring, officially neutral, countries was still a state secret that was not released until President Bill Clinton did so in 2000, in an effort to assist in the search for unexploded ordnance that had maimed or killed farmers and made much valuable land essentially unusable.

During the 1966–67 period of the Vietnam military build up, the resistance of Johnson’s own military officers—from the highest to the mid and lower levels of the hierarchy—had increased to “the point of no return.” At first, Johnson had shamelessly exploited the natural patriotism of the nation’s young men as reason enough to back their president, and it had worked. By 1967, however, many of them—especially the academy graduates or other college graduates who had begun to question the wisdom of their commander in chief—began to have misgivings about the entire mission, considering the stark realities about the (so-called) government they were attempting to support. Naturally, the young

officers were put into the very difficult position of having to try to execute their jobs while putting aside any misgivings they may have held.

By this time, J. William Fulbright, who had been LBJ's floor leader on the Gulf of Tonkin Resolution, realized that Johnson had also misled him and the entire Congress and the American people regarding this incident: *"It was an arranged incident to get a resolution creating unity behind any action he wanted to take"*⁸⁰³ Fulbright later added that, if Congress had known the truth of the alleged incident, *the Gulf of Tonkin Resolution would have never been passed since it was based upon a false premise: "it was not an unprovoked, deliberate attack, in fact, there was no attack at all."*⁸⁰⁴

What this tells us is that Lyndon Johnson had once again created a massive and complex lie to achieve his own long-planned agenda. In this case, it was to assure himself that he could thereafter bring the United States into a major war for the benefit of the very "military-industrial complex" President Eisenhower had warned the nation about. The fact that Johnson acted so quickly, within three days of becoming president, to reverse Kennedy's plans to withdraw troops from Vietnam, should be considered part of the evidence of his lengthy planning, in collaboration with senior members of the Joint Chiefs of Staff, for the November 22, 1963, coup d'état, just three weeks after the one they had effected in Saigon.

That Johnson was heavily invested in a number of companies that would benefit from a military build up was not merely a coincidence, after all, his investments were being controlled by a trustee (but not to a "blind" one, since the trustee happened to be his old friend Judge A. W. Moursand).^{*****} Those investments eventually led to his downfall and broke the very legacy that he had attempted to create through his "Great Society" programs. His aide George Reedy observed that very point, when he wrote that Johnson had become the "victim" of his own Gulf of Tonkin resolution, because he could never admit that the entire operation had been a mistake, and the continuing escalations were really caused by his need to continue trying to prove that he was right to begin with and that victory was in hand, if only a few hundred thousand more troops were sent over there to finish the job.⁸⁰⁵

Author H. R. McMaster described, in brutally candid, carefully chosen and precise words, the results of Johnson's approach, with the concurrence of the Joint Chiefs of Staff, as they collaborated to deceive the Congress and the American public:⁸⁰⁶

[Johnson] had misrepresented the mission of US ground forces in Vietnam, distorted the views of the Chiefs to lend credibility to his decision against mobilization, grossly understated the numbers of troops General Westmoreland had requested, and lied to the Congress about the monetary cost of actions already approved and of those awaiting final decision.

Johnson had used the Gulf of Tonkin resolution as evidence of congressional support for his policy and maintained that the government was unified behind his war decisions; his response to the few early journalists who were skeptical about his Vietnam policy was to

question their patriotism and their disregard of “our soldiers who are dying” in Vietnam. Johnson exploited the patriotism of the young soldiers, mostly draftees, and played on the fear of their families and others who would not believe they had been misled, to fight a war that he arrogantly assumed the United States would inevitably win. Neither he nor his top advisers who favored intervention understood the history or culture of Vietnam, other than perhaps what they picked up in the honky-tonk clubs of Saigon. It was an ironic understatement that President Johnson and his advisers underestimated the strength and resolve of the Vietcong, the very point General Douglas MacArthur had, successfully, warned President Kennedy about.

Since he knowingly seized upon the patriotism of young men to fight the war, it is astonishing that he would then claim that failing to do that was his biggest mistake: According to Robert Dallek, “Johnson told Robert Manning of the *Atlantic* that ‘If history indicts us for Vietnam, it will be for fighting a war without trying to stir up patriotism.’ *Nothing could have been further from the truth... . On one hand, he approved a campaign to discredit antiwar demonstrators, and on the other, he tried to convince the country that the war was being won*”⁸⁰⁷ [Emphasis added.] He communicated—clearly—that he wanted to hear good news, even if it meant hearing lies about body counts and that victory was within reach. His attempt to blame students, and anyone else unconvinced about the worthiness of his war, by questioning their patriotism, was among his most despicable actions, second only to his duplicitous claims of feeling remorse for the loss of young American lives. If that had been his uppermost concern, it could have been easily mended by stopping the carnage and bringing the boys home, given that there was no essential national interest in being there in the first place. While he repeatedly exhorted the military to “kill more Viet Cong,”⁸⁰⁸ and promised unfettered cooperation with them to do that, he consistently refused to approve their recommendations for an early commitment of the required level of men and materiel to accomplish that. As noted previously, he continually coerced them to reduce their requests before they submitted them, so he would not have to officially disapprove them.

Throughout 1967, despite the steadily deteriorating military situation, the result of his retaining only the most malleable men—only those who would subordinate their own judgments to Johnson’s, without question, and to give him only the advice that he wanted to hear—the president led the rest of the country deeper and deeper into the quagmire known as Vietnam. The actual facts became less important than the salable data; thus, the inflated body counts of the enemy, the false claims of imminent victory, and the understated need for troops to complete the misdirected mission handed to them, all became part of Johnson’s and McNamara’s deceptions to Congress and the public about the nature and commitment of resources necessary to “win” the war, or as they put it, “win the peace.”

By 1968, more and more people, even many journalists who had originally backed the administration, became less malleable to Johnson’s deceptions. Columnist Max Lerner described the situation very eloquently: “The rituals of reappraisal, the dispatch of a high official to Vietnam, and the decision to hold tight, interpret the new situation as a

substantive gain, and probably call for more American soldiers... . To fight a war of corpse statistics on Asian terrain, with China's endless millions in the background, *is to move ever farther away from the world of reality.*"⁸⁰⁹ [Emphasis added.] Mr. Lerner probably didn't realize at the time how close to "farther away from the world of reality" those last several words were.

According to H. R. McMaster, among others who have made similar observations, in his book *Dereliction of Duty: Lyndon Johnson, Robert McNamara, the Joint Chiefs of Staff, and the Lies That Led to Vietnam*, stories that appeared in the newspapers that came close to revealing the real truth of what was going on in Vietnam upset Johnson because those truths were supposed to be kept secret from the public. He called unauthorized leaks of those real facts to the press "irresponsible" and pressed McNamara and General Westmoreland to apply severe disciplinary measures to anyone caught doing that.⁸¹⁰

Secretary of Defense McNamara would eventually admit that there were mistakes made, yet he never admitted the real truth of his role in facilitating the fraud perpetrated by Lyndon Johnson's inexorable move toward a "limited" war. It was this incremental escalation of the war—based on Johnson's and McNamara's willful ignorance of its complexities—that led to decisions that weakened the military position. The reality was those strategies had more to do with political purposes and his own obsession for a strong legacy as a "wartime president," which inevitably backfired on him, since the "enemies" we attacked wanted to play the game for keeps while he simply wanted to keep it going at a level he believed could be sustained just enough to exploit the patriotism of the people and increase the return on investments of the owners of companies like Brown and Root/Haliburton, General Dynamics and Bell Helicopter.

Johnson's demands to "kill more Viet Cong"—a constant refrain heard by all military officers he came into contact with—arguably led, directly or indirectly, to wartime atrocities, including the horrific killing of civilians, as exemplified by the My Lai 4 massacre on March 16, 1968, during which approximately 300 old men, women of all ages, and children (but no young men of military age) were machine-gunned to death by American soldiers. On the very same day, just a few miles away at another village called My Khe 4, American soldiers slaughtered ninety of the one hundred residents. One soldier described what happened there: "A chopper brought in TNT, a hundred sticks of it ... and it was thrown in bunkers and stuff, and blowing everything up and burning." Another soldier said, "we just flattened that village, and that was it." Still another said, "We were more or less having a contest to see which one could get the shortest fuse on the TNT." "About twenty to thirty houses were blown up, one ex-GI said, utilizing more than one hundred and fifty pounds of TNT. The operation lasted through lunch."⁸¹¹

There were other such incidents, some that apparently grew out of the CIA's Operation Phoenix, originally intended to target key Vietcong leaders but eventually became "out of control," undoubtedly the ultimate manifestation of reactions down the ranks of frustrated soldiers to the demands of the commander in chief for more dead Vietcong. The two summarized in the previous paragraph were the most widely reported of these, thanks to the iconoclastic investigative journalist Seymour Hersh, who wrote a number of articles for

the *New York Times* and two books that detailed the events and the cover-up (*My Lai 4: A Report on the Massacre and Its Aftermath*, and *Cover-Up*) that finally helped to convince the majority of Americans that the war had been a huge mistake and had gotten completely off track due in large part to its micromanagement by Johnson himself. Many books have since been written on this subject, one of the latest being *Kill Anything That Moves: The Real American War in Vietnam*, by Nick Turse, which validates the claims made originally by Hersh.

According to author Turse, it didn't take long for Johnson's order to "kill more Cong" to filter down through the hierarchy, culminating in attitudes throughout the army and marines that put things into that kind of perspective as early as the summer of 1965, when a film crew from CBS, including correspondent Morley Safer interviewed marines who said: "They told us if you receive one round from the village, you level it," The mission was to "take out" the entire village, and Turse described how every home there was set afire, some with the inhabitants still inside.

Vietnamese sources estimated that by August 1966, the marines in Quang Nam [province] had killed more than 4,600 civilians and wounded more than 5,200, the overwhelming majority of them women and children... . The next year only brought more death and destruction to Quang Nam.⁸¹²

Turse's book has been given rave reviews by many for describing what really happened there, however it fails to trace the true genesis of the orders that treated great numbers of corpses as an indication of military success and progress toward achieving a military victory. Indeed, a man at the center of the Oval Office command center during the build up, Bill Moyers, has even weighed in with a very positive review of the book, possibly for this very reason:

There have been many memorable accounts of the terrible things done in Vietnam—memoirs, histories, documentaries and movies. But Nick Turse has given us a fresh holistic work that stands alone for its blending of history and journalism, for the integrity of research brought to life through the diligence of first-person interviews... . Here is a powerful message for us today—a reminder of what war really costs.

—Bill Moyers, *Moyers & Company*

The book comes closest to pinpointing the origin of such orders with its reference to a retired army general, Telford Taylor, who had served as chief counsel for the prosecution at the Nuremberg trials, and who was, in 1971, speaking out on the *Dick Cavett Show* and in the pages of the *New York Times* about the "potential guilt of General Westmoreland." One of the standards established at Nuremberg, which Taylor referenced, was called the Yamashita precedent: The Japanese general Yamashita was found guilty of failing to prevent atrocities by his troops, and was executed for it in 1946, even though he had lost communication with the soldiers and had no direct control over them when those acts took place. Taylor argued that under the Yamashita rules, war crimes such as these "could leave American commanders like Westmoreland in the dock."⁸¹³ That's where the line stops, for this book, yet that is not where the germ of the ensuing orders started: That was

in the Oval Office, where the president repeatedly told his military chiefs that they needed to “kill more Cong,” and in 1965–66, Bill Moyers was functioning as the chief facilitator for orders coming from the deeply troubled, usually drunk, and occasionally psychotic commander in chief.

Seymour Hersh elegantly stated the paradox: “My Lai 4 was out of the ordinary, but it was not isolated... . Even the best generals in the Army and its highest civilian officials have a point at which they, like the Vietnamese at My Lai 4 and My Khe 4, become victims.”⁸¹⁴ In this case, they were all victims of the “highest civilian official,” the one man responsible for all of it, Commander in Chief Lyndon B. Johnson.

Why China Welcomed Johnson to Wage War in Vietnam

Chinese Premier Chou En Lai met with Egyptian President Gamal Nasser in Alexandria, Egypt, on June 23, 1965. The two men had become friends by then and the Chinese leader admitted to him that they welcomed Johnson’s escalation of the Vietnam War because they felt the advantages outweighed the disadvantages, especially the advantage given them by having American GIs hooked on opium. According to Arab scholar Mohamed Heikal, Chou En Lai made this comment to Nasser:⁸¹⁵

American involvement in Indochina is an insurance policy against such an attack because we will have a lot of their flesh close to our nails. So the more troops they send to Vietnam, the happier we will be, for we feel that we will have them in our power, we can have their blood.

The counter productive results of the bombing campaigns launched by Lyndon Johnson between 1965 and 1967—including one four-month period in which 55,000 sorties were flown, delivering 100,000 tons of ordnance, according to Townsend Hoopes’s 1969 book, *The Limits of Intervention: An Inside Account of How the Johnson Policy of Escalation in Vietnam Was Reversed*—not only had no significant effect on Hanoi’s ability to continue their fight to reunify their country but the opposite seemed to materialize: On the point of North Vietnamese determination to fight on, evidence suggested that the bombing had recreated in Hanoi something rather like the spirit of London during the 1940–41 Blitz. A society under siege was being drawn closer together by a clear and present danger in ways that emphasized common interests and subordinated factional differences and grievances. The bombing seemed to be strengthening the social fabric of North Vietnam.”⁸¹⁶

It did not take long for many people to realize, as the troops returned in due course—the lucky ones who were able to return—that they had changed in many ways, in many cases, not for the better. The Chinese premier’s comments, previously stated, discussing his fear of a nuclear attack, juxtaposed with Lyndon Johnson’s well-known fear that the escalation, if pressed too aggressively, would cause the Chinese Army to enter the war and lead to nuclear war, add to the poignancy of those American men—mostly drafted kids—caught in the middle of “Johnson’s War,” being fed “the best kinds of opium” by an enemy they never knew.

In March 1968, shortly before he decided to not run for reelection, Johnson met with

Dean Acheson, a former secretary of state (under Truman) and a dedicated Cold Warrior, and a leading member of the group known as “The Wise Men,” to discuss Vietnam. He had met with him a few weeks earlier and Acheson had already informed him that Johnson’s Joint Chiefs of Staff “don’t know what they’re talking about.”⁸¹⁷ After having previously supported Johnson’s Vietnam agenda, because of the sea change created by the Tet Offensive, when Johnson asked his opinion in a February White House meeting, Acheson responded by saying that his opinion had been based on “the misinformation that Johnson had been handed before Tet. He told Johnson that he was tired of getting erroneous canned briefs” (i.e., precisely the kind that Johnson had demanded all along, as amply demonstrated within these pages). Johnson said that he was shocked that the Pentagon would have lied to him (a conundrum that he had personally created) and Acheson replied, “Then maybe you should be shocked.”⁸¹⁸

Acheson was uniquely able to talk candidly with Johnson without fear of igniting his rage, which was the inhibiting factor that caused everyone else extreme discomfort and the least of their reactions was to simply be very guarded in what they said. That enabled Acheson to brutally explain to Johnson that he had lost his credibility, that no one believed anything he said in his speeches, and that he had lost the support of most citizens for the war. Acheson said that he needed to have “access to all the data on Vietnam, not just the drivel the joint chiefs and Rostow had been feeding him.”⁸¹⁹ In his biography of Dean Acheson, historian Douglas Brinkley further noted that on February 27, 1968, Acheson wrote to his friend John Cowles, the publisher of the *Minneapolis Star and Tribune*, “The situation in VN is very bad.” As Acheson examined the data, the correspondence and communications, he became persuaded that the United States had run out of options and had to begin curtailing its commitments in Vietnam.⁸²⁰

When he completed his study, Acheson told Johnson on March 14 that “he was being led down a garden path by the JCS, that what Westmoreland was attempting in Vietnam was simply not possible—without the application of totally unlimited resources ‘and maybe five years.’”⁸²¹ In its March 15 edition, *Time* magazine reported on Johnson’s isolation from his highest aides and stated that the debate was being held “in a vacuum, that the President had retreated into an ever-narrowing circle of advisers and no one outside the coterie knowing what was on his mind, what questions he was asking or what alternatives he foresaw. *The New York Times* called the situation a ‘man-made disaster.’”⁸²²

The Real Lessons of Vietnam: The Ultimate Shell Game

One of the premises of this book is that the real reason the Vietnam War was fought was because the new president was intent on pushing through major initiatives on all fronts as a way to redirect the attention of the American people away from the calamity that brought him into the White House, and secure his position—at least in his own mind—as “the greatest American president.” He was delusional enough to think that he could accomplish everything that his predecessor could not, and force the entire country into

backing the war as their patriotic duty. No amount of reasoning could ever allow him, Lyndon “Bull” Johnson (a nickname given to him by his classmates back in high school and college), to change course and become the first president to have “lost” a war. The epic work of H. R. McMaster in chronicling the early history of how the United States became involved in the Vietnam “quagmire” is summarized in the last two paragraphs of the book. McMaster’s findings, consolidated further, were that Johnson sought to control all aspects of the war, beginning with having it “Americanized” to facilitate that and, even though his entry into the war was planned with the Joint Chiefs, he soon cast them aside to allow himself total control, effectively becoming the micromanager of the entire effort. At the heart of it were all the attributes of Johnson himself: The pursuit of self-interest (personal wealth), through arrogance and abdication of what should have been his foremost responsibility: honesty to the American public, the people who gave him his landslide election.⁸²³

The Tet offensive in January 1968 was the game changer. Finally, the truth of North Vietnam’s strength and resolve brought squarely into the public’s face the fact that there was really no “light at the end of the tunnel” after all. After Tet, the public was suddenly made aware of the disturbing fact that their president had not been truthful, and perhaps all those protesting students were the ones who were on the “right side” of the issue after all. It was at this point that even Walter Cronkite, the confident and trusted newsman at CBS—albeit tainted by, as we know now, the residue of CBS News president William Paley’s and Time/Life’s president C. D. Jackson’s involvement with Operation Mockingbird, whereby they became mere conduits for whatever propaganda the CIA wished to dish out—had his epiphany about the hopelessness of the misbegotten war. Before long, most of the rest of the country would come to understand that as well, though some more grudgingly than others, afraid to admit their own earlier naïveté. The “credibility gap” had grown wider than ever. “Tet laid bare the lies and false optimism of the administration’s policy in Vietnam, and LBJ stood exposed and virtually alone. ‘The fig leaf was gone,’ [Peter] Edelman [Bobby’s legislative assistant] observed triumphantly. ‘Tet just ripped the fig leaf right off.’”⁸²⁴

Although he helped achieve passage of the Gulf of Tonkin Resolution, Senator J. William Fulbright also eventually came to understand how he had been manipulated by the president and that the resolution would not have passed if he, and Congress, had known the truth of the alleged incident—that there had been no unprovoked, deliberate attack on a US warship. In fact, there had been no attack at all. It was during 1966 that many people, inside and outside of his administration, had finally figured out that the Vietnam War had been staged by the grand master and his accomplices. President Johnson, always the consummate politician, kept his ear to the ground as he monitored the growing animosity toward him and his policies by his “subjects.” He thought he had bought a lot of political capital with his Great Society legislation, and expected more loyalty from the nation. He planned to spend it as he wished, in a war that would ensure his legacy forever; he believed that one had to be a wartime president to get near that top slot on the pantheon of great presidents. To achieve his goal, from the start of his presidency, Johnson had insisted on the most rigid standards of loyalty from all of his

aides and associates, using one of his favorite clichés about wanting only those assistants willing to “kiss his ass in Macy’s window at high noon and say it smells like roses.”

By this time, Robert McNamara had adopted the same perverted ideas of “team play.” He once said, *“I don’t believe the government of a complicated state can operate effectively if those in charge of the departments of the government express disagreement with decisions of the established head of that government.”*⁸²⁵ [Emphasis added.] In other words, he had come to agree with Johnson that only “Yes” men could be tolerated throughout his administration. George Ball, for two years the in-house devil’s advocate, later recalled that “McNamara treated his [Ball’s] dissenting memos rather like ‘poisonous snakes.’ He was ‘absolutely horrified’ by them, considered them ‘next to treason.’ We met then for two Saturday afternoons to discuss this thing. As I say, the general attitude of the conferees was to treat it as something that really shouldn’t have been done. Although I think that Rusk and Bundy were more tolerant of my effort to put it on paper than Bob was. He really just regarded it as next to treason, that this had been put down on paper.”⁸²⁶ Johnson’s aversion to leaving “paper trails” had obviously been adopted by McNamara for the same reasons as his boss.

Another example of how Johnson had exerted total control over others was Robert Strauss, who was a longtime “Johnson man” from when Johnson first campaigned for Congress, in 1937. He told an interviewer that “Lyndon Johnson intimidated me like no one ever had before him and no one since. I found him the most intimidating human being I had ever been around. He had my number, and he knew it and I knew it, so that’s a bad combination. But I was devoted to him, with all his warts, just like everyone who he touched was. I think he was the most powerful man in whose company I have been. Everyone had that same impression. He would overpower you with his personality and his ability. He was not always right, but he was always effective.” Strauss also admitted telling Johnson “what he wanted to hear” about his Vietnam policies late in his term, on October 8, 1968, and readily admitted that “not one word of which did I really believe.” That comment from the widely respected Robert Strauss—who headed the Democratic Party in the late 1970s, bringing it back to life after the disastrous campaign of George McGovern in 1972—speaks volumes about how he felt around Johnson, which was doubtlessly similar to what many others felt: in complete suspension of even the semblance of candid and independent thought, capitulating their own free will as they submitted themselves to his.*****

Johnson’s attitude and facile understanding of global issues were formed and strengthened by a number of men in his cabinet or White House staff. For example, he kept the unctuous Dean Rusk at the State Department throughout his administration. Rusk was the very embodiment of the stereotypical Cold Warrior with rigid, inflexible views of the world seen through a provincial prism common to many others of his background in Cherokee County Georgia. Rusk was a man who possessed a mania about the imminent threat of China [which was then a very backward, isolationist country] and how it was actively engaged in sponsoring aggression in Vietnam, never mind that the fighting was the result of a nationalistic effort by Ho Chi Minh to unite his country and

had nothing to do with the “international Communist movement.” Like many highly credentialed but myopic, students of fact but not reason, and other “smarter by half” people who take themselves too seriously, Rusk must not have noticed the nuances of the differing geopolitical culture of Southeast Asia; he considered the nationalistic political environment there comparable to Hitler’s aggression in Europe, and that steps to appease that aggression would be tantamount to Chamberlain’s unsuccessful attempt to do the same with Hitler.⁸²⁷ On October 12, 1967, Rusk still maintained that China was an “expansionist menace” and that justified a full-blown commitment to help a corrupt, artificially installed government in South Vietnam fight its civil war against the northerners who endeavored to keep their country unified; all of it had parallels to a similar civil war one hundred years earlier.⁸²⁸

Yet, at that time, according to Townsend Hoopes’s incisive analysis, most scholars, diplomats, and other informed observers “saw China as a clumsy, backward country whose primary focus was of necessity on domestic problems ... Rusk’s leaky thesis could not stand the test of historical analysis. It ignored, among other truths, the historical enmity between Vietnam and China and the fact that Vietnam’s principal foreign policy problem throughout history had been how to cope with Chinese encroachment.”⁸²⁹

Throughout 1967, despite the steadily deteriorating military situation in Vietnam, the result of his retaining only the most malleable men—only those who would subordinate their own judgments to Johnson’s, without question, and to give him only the advice that he wanted to hear—the president led the rest of the country deeper and deeper into the quagmire, a term that is now almost synonymous with the word “Vietnam.” The actual facts became less important than the salable data; thus, the inflated body counts of the enemy, the false claims of imminent victory, and the understated need for troops to complete the misdirected mission handed to them, all became part of Johnson’s and McNamara’s deceptions to Congress and the public about the nature and commitment of resources necessary to “win” the war.

In the meantime, it was becoming more and more obvious to all Americans—whether civilians or military officers or enlisted men—that a major part of the problem in achieving “success” in Vietnam was the apparent ambivalence of much of the Vietnamese population and the intransigence and corruption of their government. The corruption of the government of Vietnam was reflected in a UPI story datelined October 13, 1967, Saigon, which stated that an anonymous high US official said South Vietnamese relief workers who were supposed to distribute donated food were selling it to refugees. He further said that they were unable to control these workers, since they did not have command over them as merely “advisers.” When he was asked how much of the relief funds were getting to the refugees, the official replied, “I frankly don’t have the foggiest notion.”⁸³⁰

The young Pulitzer Prize-winning reporter Peter Arnett adroitly described the situation: “The South Vietnamese Army is sick. Like the society which created it, it is riddled with factionism, nepotism, corruption, inefficiency, incompetence, and cowardice

... It often lacks the will for combat and is increasingly prone to let Americans do the fighting.”⁸³¹ Author and former Lieutenant Colonel William R. Corson added specific context to that point when he wrote that the 25th Division of the Vietnamese army (Army of the Republic of Vietnam—ARVN) participated in approximately 100,000 operations during 1966, yet engaged in enemy contact less than 100 times. Of all the conventional military terms such as “combat patrol,” “raid,” “search-and-destroy” and “reconnaissance patrol,” the one that best described their “combat” operations was “*search and avoid*.”⁸³²

How Johnson Bent Facts and Redefined Reality

It must be remembered here that, to Lyndon’s Johnson, the “truth” had a somewhat convoluted meaning, and was not based on actual facts as much as what he “perceived” happened; George Reedy explained it by his admission that Johnson had the ability to “persuade himself that the ‘truth’ as he had seen it was in fact true, even though his own view of the situation ‘frequently shifted’ and conformed to whatever paradigm he had invented: “he was a master at imposing his will upon the people, the society, and the world around him, he saw no reason for history to be exempt from the process.”⁸³³

In other words, George Reedy believed that President Johnson “literally” bent facts and redefined reality to whatever meanings he wished were true and, consequently, that contrived scenario became the “truth” that was used for the basis of profound decisions he made about the conduct of the war and the country. Yet Reedy then proceeded to exonerate him from ever “deliberately lying” about that false reality created by his “fantastic capacity” and he did it because he gave Johnson “the benefit of the doubt,” accepted the revised reality, and strolled down the same yellow brick road side by side with the delusional President Lyndon Johnson. Evidently, he found this easier than getting a job elsewhere that did not require such prevarication.

But, by 1966, the devolving “new reality” became harder for Reedy and several other Johnson aides to continually adjust to. Evidently, they each had a personal epiphany after a couple of years and figured out that the war was ill conceived and undermanned and they had each played a role in facilitating it: McGeorge Bundy, George Reedy, Bill Moyers, and George Ball were gone before the end of the year. Instead of boasting about these men, Johnson began mercilessly disparaging them after they left. Johnson stated that “Moyers is not a foreign policy expert. I never had one hour’s discussion of foreign policy with Moyers... . I have had ten times that amount with George Christian.”⁸³⁴

This tendency of Johnson was described further by Eric Goldman, a former Johnson aide, who wrote in his memoirs, *The Tragedy of Lyndon Johnson* in 1969, that Johnson could lash out at his aides either in single fashion, or in groups. Once he attacked three of them at once, asking how they could be so “goddamn stupid.” Many times Goldman saw grown men emerging from meetings with Johnson “white-faced and shaking,” vowing to never return ... but they usually did.⁸³⁵ Bill Moyers has not written or spoken at length about his time in the White House when he observed Lyndon Johnson’s behavior, but he did confirm much of what Richard Goodwin had written in his interviews with Robert

Dallek, which appeared in the April 1998 issue of the *Atlantic Monthly* magazine, in an article titled “Three New Revelations About LBJ.” Dallek wrote that Johnson’s fragile ego kept him from acknowledging the failure of his Vietnam policy, which resulted in the loss of over thirty thousand American men by the time Johnson left the presidency in 1969. In fact, he blamed all of his problems on what he said were Communists who were in charge of all the major news outlets, both print and broadcast media; he also told Richard Goodwin that people who opposed his policy were traitors. Dallek then asked Moyers if he knew of others in the administration who were disturbed by Johnson’s behavior.⁸³⁶

I asked Moyers if others in the White House were as troubled by Johnson’s behavior as he and Goodwin. Yes, Moyers replied, and “when they were deeply concerned about his behavior, they would call me—Cabinet officers and others. Rusk would call me and tell me about some exchange he just had with the President that was very disturbing, and he would say that he seemed to be very depressed.”

For some of the Johnson men, it was difficult to determine the circumstances of their departure since they became very reticent to candidly discuss their time with the volatile president after they left. Aside from what he told Robert Dallek, Arthur Schlesinger Jr., and Richard Goodwin, Bill Moyers is probably the best example of that phenomenon. He has said very little about his experiences in the Johnson White House on his public radio broadcasts, despite being extremely loquacious about practically every other political subject over the last four decades. His experience with Johnson was probably one of the more volatile, having one of the highest staff positions in the White House, though he eventually got into Johnson’s craw when he began partying with Bobby Kennedy at Hickory Hill. According to the book *Lyndon*, by Richard Harwood and Haynes Johnson, “Moyers was flirting with the Kennedys. That was unforgiveable.”⁸³⁷ Nevertheless, as previously noted, four decades after he left the White House, Bill D. Moyers still extols Johnson as “the colossus of his time” and now remembers all the “good things,” and, evidently, not so much the “bad things.” This is consistent with the lessons he learned from the master mentor and mythmaker, Lyndon B. Johnson, who had taught him such tricks over half a century earlier.

Robert McNamara’s “Awakening”

Secretary of Defense McNamara would eventually admit that there were mistakes made, yet he never admitted the real truth of his role in facilitating the fraud perpetrated by Lyndon Johnson’s inexorable move toward a “limited” war. It was this incremental escalation of the war—based on Johnson’s (and arguably, McNamara’s as well) ignorance of its complexities—that led to decisions which weakened the military position. The reality was those strategies had more to do with political purposes and Johnson’s own obsession for a strong perception by the public as a great “wartime president” whose contrived “legacy” would replace the criminal means from which it sprung. Of course, the reality was a house of cards built on quicksand that inevitably fell, and the faux legacy backfired on him, eventually bestowing on him the very real negative legacy that he had earned. By the end of December 1968, there had been over 30,800 soldiers and sailors and airmen killed in hostile action in Vietnam, and another 5,000 dead from “nonhostile” actions. Over

200,000 more had suffered bodily injuries. Countless others (and their families) would suffer from mental stress or disability, the proximate cause of which was derived from their service in Vietnam. Those young men had gone there as an act of patriotism because they had been told it was necessary for “National Security” reasons. The “falling dominos” fallacy had been used to bolster that assertion, since the only conceivable invasion of Vietnamese people was through peaceful migration, which actually did finally occur immediately after the last American troops were finally brought home.

After four years of being a supplicant for and enabler to Lyndon Johnson, McNamara had belatedly begun changing his views of the war. His earliest known awakening, according to his response under oath in the libel trial brought by General Westmoreland in 1984 against CBS to the question of what he believed, and when did he have this epiphany, was: “My view was that it was unlikely that the war could be won by military means... . I certainly held that view at times in 1966, if not earlier.”⁸³⁸

Many years later, as part of his efforts to rehabilitate his “legacy,” McNamara admitted: “Events afterwards showed that our judgment that we had been attacked that day was wrong ... it didn’t happen.” In other words, the former secretary of defense finally admitted that the single most futile and meaningless war ever fought by a major power—and one of the most costly—was a fraud perpetrated by Lyndon B. Johnson. McNamara blamed it all on “confusion and miscommunication.” In fact, except for Johnson’s need to show his machismo against the hawkish Barry Goldwater, his opponent in the 1964 election, there was no basis for his escalation of the war and, were it not for him, it would have been de-escalated throughout the mid and latter part of the decade. It is the epitome of understatement to say that Lyndon Johnson immediately changed the course of history—arguably, even the very culture of the United States, permanently—with his ascension to the presidency. He was clearly planning for it since he took office, having immediately signed NSAM #273 to reverse JFK’s policies as he told Ambassador Henry Cabot Lodge to advise Vietnamese President Diem that we would enter the war; within six months he had moved General Maxwell Taylor from the army to the diplomatic corps with his appointment as the new ambassador to Vietnam.

By November 1967, McNamara was tormented by his realization that he had been an enabler to Johnson. Their inability to understand the situation they had found themselves in was now morphing into McNamara’s conviction that the war was unwinnable. After he began to realize how wrong he and his boss had been about the war, McNamara recommended freezing troop levels, discontinuing the bombing of North Vietnam, and to handing ground fighting back to the army of South Vietnam. These recommendations were rejected outright by Johnson, who felt that this was an admittance that his war strategy had failed. McNamara announced his resignation on November 29, although, years later, he still didn’t know if he had resigned or had been fired. The president’s announcement of McNamara’s move to the World Bank noted his service and stated that he deserved a change after seven years as secretary of defense. The question of whether his leaving was “voluntary” or not was never directly answered, but it soon became clear that it was by mutual, anger-inspired consent. It quickly drew enormous press attention and a flurry of reaction from the newspapers. The archived documents of the situation suggest

that Johnson felt betrayed by McNamara, who had apparently concluded that the war was ill-conceived, fraudulently justified, ignominiously pursued, and ultimately futile: It was unwinnable.

It was his friendship with Bobby Kennedy that eventually caused McNamara's epiphany about the pointlessness of the war. McNamara had reached that point almost two years before he resigned, when he asked Richard Goodwin, "'Would [it] make any difference to American security, Dick, if this entire place went communist?' McNamara gestured with a sweep of his arm across a huge hanging map of Asia. Goodwin, stunned, stuttered in response until McNamara cut him off. 'It wouldn't make the slightest bit of difference,' McNamara declared, and sank deep into his leather chair."⁸³⁹ News of McNamara's leaving the president's cabinet, suddenly and at the height of his career, left millions of people practically in a state of shock. Rumors were rampant about the meaning of it all and what the possible "real" reason might be for such a dramatic resignation of the secretary of defense in the middle of a war. Questions were met with obfuscation and boilerplate denials, the real reasons would not be discussed. A revealing memo discovered at the LBJ Library by the author, written to President Johnson by his aide Tom Johnson on November 29, 1967, casts more light on the background situation and reflects the enormity of the reaction:⁸⁴⁰

Bill Moyers called... . He said he did not want to get into anybody's hair—or have anybody think he was minding anybody's business. He said Kay Graham called him in tears. She said "It is absolutely horrible how the President is treating Bob McNamara. It's the worst thing that ever happened in this town." Mrs. Graham said the *Post* was trying to decide whether or not to run a front-page editorial in the paper tomorrow deploring the President's treatment of McNamara: "He doesn't even have the decency to say anything about it." Mrs. Graham said the *New York Times* insists that McNamara was fired—Scotty Reston is saying so. Kay said the President is treating McNamara "like a janitor working for a subsidiary company." She told Moyers that the *Post* wants to tell the whole story—but nobody at the White House will tell the truth. Bill said he has nothing on this at all although he knows the President well enough—and so does Mrs. Graham—that the President would never do what is being said. Bill said before the *Post* runs any story like a front page editorial denouncing the President she should call the President.

Little known vignettes like this speak volumes about what was really happening "behind the scenes." This memo is much more revealing about what had happened than anything that the *Washington Post* printed about it at the time, especially with regard to Mrs. Meyer's reaction to the actions of Johnson. This memo clears up the previous ambiguity of why McNamara left: It is evidence that in fact President Johnson fired McNamara, something never actually acknowledged, but generally accepted as fact, although he then arranged for him to be placed as head of the World Bank—even though the incumbent, George Wood, had already been given extended tenure there, until December 31, 1968.⁸⁴¹ So it was really the hapless George Wood who was indirectly tagged to "take the fall" for all of those mistakes in Vietnam.

McNamara's personal chagrin about a number of issues***** had started becoming apparent for several months. It showed clearly by the ambivalence with which his staff meetings were run, as described by an attendee, Undersecretary of the Air Force Townsend Hoopes:

[E]ntirely barren affairs: a technical briefing, for example, on the growing strength of air defenses around Hanoi, but no debate on what this implied for the US bombing effort, and never the slightest disclosure of what the President or the Secretary of State might consider the broad domestic and international implications to be.⁸⁴²

Hoopes then wrote a metaphor in 1968–69 about how a huge monster (the Great Leviathan) had taken control of the United States and the free will of the men who ran it, then threatened to break it apart, putting all aboard at risk of running aground. There had to be an explanation for why the late Mr. Hoopes took the time and trouble to craft those words, clearly analogizing LBJ himself as “the Great Leviathan,” thereby clearly identifying himself as another highly placed presidential aide who had serious concerns about the state of the President’s mind. Hoopes was a prolific author, military adviser, and an assistant secretary of the Air Force; one can only conclude that he was deeply troubled by what was happening to his country in 1968–69 and he knew that description would communicate those concerns to those who read it closely enough. Evidently, he had no concern that Johnson, McNamara, Rusk, or either of the Rostow brothers would ever do so, because they would have been in a position to make Hoopes’s life very difficult at that point. Hoopes must have decided that, even if any of them did read it, they would doubtlessly miss the nuances of his metaphor, and therefore the point that he was trying to communicate.

The ambivalence of McNamara that author Hoopes described was a manifestation of the same malaise that could be found throughout the military hierarchy by 1967–68. It would become more and more insidious to the morale of the entire armed forces at each step downward through the “org charts,” and it was an attitude that was simultaneously rising among the entire population. It was the product of citizens finally becoming increasingly aware of things like the new term that had been added to dictionaries: “Credibility Gap” had been coined by journalists and soon became part of the lexicon of the day, a term that clearly reflected the untrustworthiness of the president. The national mood then was also framed by the troubling questions being asked around the country regarding the growing suspicions of the new president. Some of it was the result of more and more stories that had appeared in national magazines that raised disturbing questions about such things as his astonishing accumulation of wealth, given that he had started out poor and had never earned more than his government salary.

In his memoir *In Retrospect*, published in 1995, McNamara attempted to portray his involvement as that of a loyal servant of the president, but it seemed to knowledgeable readers to be more of an attempt to shift the blame to others. There was clearly another reason for his sudden departure, probably having its roots in the subconscious mind of Robert McNamara. He had obviously been an anxious overachiever in the early years under Kennedy, intent on showing the world how his brilliance could reshape the military

into an efficient and mobile force that would control and protect the world. Years later, he finally realized the depth of the obscenity of the fraudulent war, which he had helped to propagate onto the world in collusion with Lyndon Johnson, and he finally realized that the horrors he experienced during his tenure could be laid almost entirely on this man's massive—albeit fragile—ego and his conniving, duplicitous ways.

Finally, in 1995, McNamara confessed in his memoir that it was all a mistake, it was “wrong, terribly wrong.” That did not meet with universal gratefulness, as demonstrated by the *New York Times* editorial writer at the time, Howell Raines, who wrote:

Mr. McNamara must not escape the lasting moral condemnation of his countrymen. Surely he must in every quiet and prosperous moment hear the ceaseless whispers of those poor boys in the infantry, dying in the tall grass, platoon by platoon, for no purpose. What he took from them cannot be repaid by prime-time apology and stale tears, three decades late.

McNamara then appeared in a film, *Fog of War*, in 2003 in which he commiserated about an interesting conversation he had with a man of comparable rank as himself, a former foreign minister of Vietnam, Nguyen Co Thach, who played a leading role in the 1973 Paris peace talks, which eventually led to the end of the Vietnam War:⁸⁴³

There aren't many examples in which you bring two former enemies together, at the highest levels, and discuss what might have been. I formed the hypothesis that each of us could have achieved our objectives without the terrible loss of life. And I wanted to test that by going to Vietnam. The former Foreign Minister of Vietnam, a wonderful man named Thach said, “You're totally wrong. We were fighting for our independence. You were fighting to enslave us.” We almost came to blows. That was noon on the first day.

“Do you mean to say it was not a tragedy for you, when you lost three million four hundred thousand Vietnamese killed, which on our population base is the equivalent of 27 million Americans? What did you accomplish? You didn't get any more than we were willing to give you at the beginning of the war. You could have had the whole damn thing: independence, unification.”

[Mr. Thach:] “Mr. McNamara, You *must never have read a history book. If you'd had, you'd know we weren't pawns of the Chinese or the Russians. McNamara, didn't you know that? Don't you understand that we have been fighting the Chinese for 1000 years?* We were fighting for our independence. And we would fight to the last man. And we were determined to do so. And no amount of bombing, no amount of US pressure would ever have stopped us.” [Emphasis added.]

Finally, Robert McNamara had it explained to him by a person who told him the truth about Vietnam: It was always merely a civil war, one that had been going on for a thousand years, unbeknownst to these “Best and Brightest” men who were running the world, at least in their minds. The “international Communist movement” had nothing to do with it, yet that was the putative reason given at the time.

It was unfortunate that neither he nor President Johnson had heard that same message

from the protestors across the street from the White House; it was also spoken by millions of young people across the country on college campuses at the same time, many of whom were being drafted for conscription into fighting in that civil war on the other side of the world.

McNamara finally conceded his innate distrust of Johnson when he admitted to Noel Twyman in 1994 that Johnson had some questionable, and criminal, character traits; “I can believe that, but it’s a big leap going from that to the assassination of Kennedy.”⁸⁴⁴ Twyman did not review with him the details of Johnson’s assorted criminal activities, including murder, that many have attributed to him over several decades. But there was much more, according to Twyman, that McNamara still did not understand, despite the fact that he had been close to both John and Robert Kennedy. It was apparent that he did not follow the many books that had already been written about the assassination:

It appeared that McNamara had accepted the results of the Warren Commission because it was comprised of such honorable men. Like millions of other Americans, including myself until I wrote this book, McNamara had put the tragic event behind him, moving on to the present from the past.⁸⁴⁵

David Talbot also interviewed McNamara, who answered the question “Did the Warren Report get it right” by saying, “Well, you know, the answer is that I have made no effort to find out... . The answer is I do believe it’s the most likely [explanation]. I just don’t know.’ Then he laughed—a queer, uncomfortable laugh. So, in his mind, the case has been settled? ‘You know, it was a terrible loss. I think the world would be different today had not the two Kennedys been assassinated. But it’s done, it’s past. I can’t do anything about it.’”⁸⁴⁶

This is the best illustration possible of how one man, a powerful and influential man who lived right through the most traumatic events that affected the United States in the middle of the twentieth century, had never bothered to even attempt to actually understand any of it in real time, and assumed implicitly that the government would figure it out and exact justice. Only years later, in retrospect, would he even seriously consider that there had been a conspiracy to murder JFK but that “it did not make sense to him that such distinguished people would have been appointed to the Warren Commission.”⁸⁴⁷

Knowing what we know now about some of those “distinguished men,” particularly Allen Dulles (whose brazenly reckless, negligent, and illegal conduct of the CIA should have caused him to serve hard time in federal prison), explains the cause of McNamara’s faulty reasoning: their full use of secrecy protocols and “plausible deniability” cleansed their records of their most despicable and illegal conduct. It should also be remembered that Lyndon Johnson, after decades of perfecting his famed “Johnson Treatment,” knew that he would only appoint men to the commission who he could control; in some cases he simply knew that members such as Dulles and New York banker John McCloy (both of whom once worked closely with German Nazi-connected corporations, including the chemical combine I. G. Farben) were simpatico with his own objectives, probably even complicit to the overall strategy related to the assassination they were purportedly

investigating. The often retold lie, started by Johnson himself after Robert Kennedy's assassination, was that Bobby had chosen Dulles and McCloy to serve on the commission; Lyndon always liked to mention how that was such a "surprise" to him, given the hatred between both of these men toward Robert Kennedy. The fact that the lie has been retold many times over—including by Max Holland, whose close work for the CIA should be sufficient to discredit many of his assertions—has almost manifested decades later into its becoming the "truth," as happened with so many other Johnsonian canards.

That lie was debunked, as noted by David Talbot, and by the biographer of Allen Dulles, in his book *Gentleman Spy: The Life of Allen Dulles*. Author Peter Grose, said that he "concluded that there is no evidence that the younger Kennedy played any role in the composition of the commission."⁸⁴⁸ It is utterly impossible that this Johnson lie had a petal of truth behind it. In fact, the most obvious giveaway of that is that he did not start saying it until after Bobby was murdered. No one had a basis to refute this presidential lie, so it naturally became part of the LBJ legend in the same way that other lies became official "truth." It is not an overstatement to say that Johnson's mythmaking talent was legendary, and this is merely one of the manifestations of it that conclusively proves the point.

McNamara's naiveté was evidently caused by his avoidance of reading any of the numerous critical books that documented the malfeasance of the Warren Commission. Had he actually read any of the earliest books⁸⁴⁹ he might have had a better grasp of just how extensively the commission further corrupted the bogus FBI "investigation" of the assassination. By 1994, when Noel Twyman interviewed him, most people with a modicum of interest in the JFK assassination knew of the many ways in which the commission had failed to consider any evidence that was not congruent with the pre-established objective of finding Oswald guilty, yet Robert S. McNamara, one of the "best and brightest" men John F. Kennedy brought to Washington to serve his country, somehow missed all of that.

When McNamara died in 2009, he had probably not even heard of the most complete and thorough rebuke of the Warren Commission's findings—Gerald McKnight's 2005 *Breach of Trust: How the Warren Commission Failed the Nation and Why*. This book remains the "final word" on the many instances of incompetence or malfeasance that occurred during the FBI's handling of the investigation. Moreover, it details further troubling evidence of subtle conflicts of interest between the FBI and the Secret Service vis-à-vis the commission members and its staff. Throughout this book are references to the fact that the commission itself, and J. Lee Rankin, its general counsel, were beholden to the FBI and to J. Edgar Hoover, which caused them to have to be exceedingly deferential to him, lest he become upset and withhold his and/or the FBI's assistance to the commission. Rankin was acutely aware that the commission's timetable and its mandate (ostensibly to find out the truth of the assassination, but in reality to return a "guilty" verdict for the dead Oswald, with plenty of paper to back it up), required that he have the FBI's full cooperation.⁸⁵⁰ All of that was undoubtedly anticipated, of course, by Lyndon Johnson when he decided on how he would set up the commission to assure that he could ultimately control it.

The totality of the evidence presented in these very thoroughly documented works does not give one a sense of confidence that Robert McNamara—who many have considered an honest, intelligent, and honorable man, one who witnessed a national nightmare unfold—was aware of even the most fundamental issues related to Kennedy’s murder. He is far from alone in that respect, but his closeness to JFK—and his position as secretary of defense—makes his ignorance of the enormity of evidence of a coup d’état that unfolded before his eyes, as the secretary of defense, inexcusable. Of course, another possibility was that he, too, was aware of what so many others, working in the same building as he, were planning during the months before November 1963. In any event, as a parting gift that Johnson surely knew would keep McNamara from ever saying anything about the most despicable things he had witnessed under Lyndon Johnson, the president bestowed the Medal of Freedom on him on March 1, 1968, as he left for the World Bank presidency.⁸⁵¹ Johnson probably would not have done that if he had known then that Robert McNamara had already been pressing Bobby Kennedy to run for the presidency for several weeks.⁸⁵²

* An excellent resource for understanding the dynamics of the dramatic shift in Vietnam policies between the Kennedy and Johnson administrations can be found on YouTube at “Gordon Goldstein on Lessons in Disaster” (<http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=zdp6K9reBSg&list=PL6C74E18A396E9E48&index=7>).

** See [YouTube.com](https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=ZVIaxNX3WRU), “Jan Amos interview about Gen Joseph J. Capucci stating that Lyndon Johnson had JFK killed.” <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=ZVIaxNX3WRU>.

*** In his book *Tonkin Gulf and Escalation of the Vietnam War*, Edward Moise said that images known as “Tonkin spooks” are a phenomena that are characteristic of certain areas of Asia; it produces a radar image that is smaller, more clearly defined than normal weather effects, making the image appear to be a surface vessel(s) that is difficult to interpret.

**** See *LBJ: The Mastermind of the JFK Assassination* for a review of other such incidents.

***** According to Robert Caro (*The Passage ...* p. 531) Moursand talked business investments with Johnson daily, on a direct line he had to the Oval Office (similar lines were installed on the desks of Jesse Kellam, the general manager of KTBC, and Ed Clark, Don Thomas, and Earl Deathe, of the law firm Clark, Thomas, Harris, Denius & Winters in Austin).

***** Academy of Achievement website: <http://www.achievement.org/autodoc/page/str0bio-1>

***** Vietnam, was of course at the top of the list, but the Arab-Israeli Six-Day War in June 1967 arguably gave him greater fits of discomfort, as we will examine in a later chapter.

Chapter 8

THE SIX-DAY WAR AND THE ATTACK ON THE USS *LIBERTY*

I am compelled to speak out about one of US history's most shocking cover-ups. On June 8, 1967, Israel attacked our proud naval ship—the USS Liberty—killing 34 American servicemen and wounding 172. Those men were then betrayed and left to die by our own government.

—ADMIRAL THOMAS MOORER



USS *Liberty* before the attack

Every year a week or so after Memorial Day—at noon on June 8, to be precise—a small group (which becomes smaller each year) meets in Section 34 of Arlington National Cemetery to observe the anniversary of one of the most mysterious, and still unresolved, attacks on a US Navy ship in the country's history. In the annals of US military history, there are no doubt many unsolved and perplexing mysteries, but few could compare to the fate of the US Navy spy ship that was mercilessly attacked by one of its closest allies intentionally and without warning. One of the reasons it is still a mystery is because it is also the only peacetime attack on a US naval vessel that, to this day, has never been investigated by the Congress of the United States. A very superficial Navy investigation was conducted that was steered, by the highest levels of the military hierarchy, to accept the apology of Israel, which claimed that the attack was a case of “mistaken identity.” To keep the real story of what happened on June 8, 1967, from becoming known, an official “cover-up” was designed by its chief architect, Lyndon B. Johnson. The cover-up included personally delivered threats by a US Navy admiral to all the officers and sailors aboard to

keep their mouths shut about it forever, under penalty of courts martial, “or worse,”⁸⁵³

The USS *Liberty* was a 455-foot, 10,150-ton electronic intercept spy ship, originally a standard-design Victory Ship—a more evolved version of the World War II Liberty Ships—which were built as supply ships, not intended for direct fighting. The *Liberty* had been converted to an Auxiliary Technical Research Ship (AGTR), known colloquially as a “spy ship,” first deployed in 1965. The unique profile of the *Liberty*, together with the dozens of antennae and other electronic communications gear—including a unique steerable dish that could bounce signals off the moon and back to the United States—on the top decks, made it one of the most distinctive ships in the world, as anyone having access to the universal mariner’s guide, *Jane’s Fighting Ships*, would have known, had they looked it up. The *Liberty* was nearly five times larger than the old and rusty 2,180-ton Egyptian ship *El Quseir*, which, according to the dubious explanation offered by Israel, the Israeli navy mistakenly confused it with. At the time of the attack, the *Liberty* was sailing along at five knots in international waters, seventeen to thirty miles off the coast of Egypt.

In 1966, Egypt (then called the United Arab Republic, or U) and Syria had concluded a mutual defense treaty, just before Syrian and Israeli attacks and counterattacks intensified in 1967. A series of clashes occurred along the Israeli-Syrian border for the first five months of 1967, ranging from potshots at farm tractors to gunfire between tanks, ground artillery, and fighter jets from both sides. Israel attempted to portray the attacks on those tractors as if they were driven by farmers eking out a living by plowing a little extra ground, but they were actually armored and they were being driven by Israeli soldiers who were put there to “exacerbate tension.”⁸⁵⁴

Israel had been at work since its birth attempting to expand its agricultural sector and by the 1950s and early ’60s, began using a disproportionate (in the opinion of the leaders of Jordan and Syria) share of the Jordan River’s water. To retaliate, and restore what they felt was their share of the water, Syria began to divert water at its source originating in the Golan Heights before it reached the river, which, according to Wikipedia, “would have reduced the installed capacity of Israel’s carrier [aqueduct system] by about 35%, and Israel’s overall water supply by about 11%.” Israel then began sporadic bombing raids on the diversion sites in November 1964 and August, 1965 and again bombed Syrian military installations in April and May of 1967. Although the Six-Day War officially started on June 5, 1967, it really began a few months, even years, earlier, when the skirmishes related to the water diversion, and redirection, began. Even Ariel Sharon, an Israeli statesman and retired general, who served as Israel’s eleventh prime minister, agreed with that, when he said that it started when Syrian engineers began diverting part of the water flow away from Israel. “People generally regard 5 June 1967 as the day the Six-Day war began. That is the official date. But, in reality, it started two-and-a-half years earlier, on the day Israel decided to act against the diversion of the Jordan.”⁸⁵⁵

In the summer of 2000, British journalist Peter Hounam began an investigation into the attack on the USS *Liberty* for broadcast on British television. That film, a BBC documentary titled *Dead in the Water*, the best video made on this subject, is available on YouTube and other Internet sites. Hounam concluded that the attack was the result of a

secret plan concocted by the United States with concurrence by Israel to provide a justification for the United States to enter the war against Egypt.⁸⁵⁶ Hounam subsequently wrote a book titled *Operation Cyanide*, published only in England, which is a fascinating account of this appalling, unresolved piece of American history that is still not known to the majority of American citizens; this seminal work explores the larger context of the pre planning for the war and how deeply Johnson would become involved in assisting his many Zionist friends accomplish their mission and how the cover-up he initiated kept it secret for twelve years. The delay assured that when it was revealed, it quickly became “old news” and soon disappeared under the public radar.

According to author Hounam, a letter written by Moshe Dayan was released after his death in 1997 by his daughter Yael Dayan, a Knesset member, which admitted that most of the incidents were caused by Israeli provocations. Moshe Dayan was a popular Israeli political figure who was appointed minister of defense in 1967. According to Dayan, at least eighty percent of the clashes were the result of Israeli provocations, mostly the result of sending their armored tractors to plow ground along the Syrian border in the demilitarized zone. If that didn’t cause them to begin shooting at the tractors, they would tell the soldier (disguised as a farmer) driving the tractor to go farther toward or over the border, until finally “the Syrians would get annoyed and shoot. And then we would use artillery and later the air force also, and that’s how it was.”⁸⁵⁷

Author Hounam also stated that this was all part of a high-level strategy to provoke an eventual war.⁸⁵⁸ Further affirmation that the Israeli provocations were planned months before the break out of war came from another high-level official, Ezer Weizman, chief of the operations staff under Israeli prime minister Yitzak Rabin, who said “the attack on Egypt, Jordan and Syria was so that Israel ‘could exist according to the scale, spirit and quality she now embodies.’”⁸⁵⁹

Neither side allowed the UN to intervene to settle the disputes as the battles continued. On April 7, 1967, a Syrian-Israeli clash between tanks led to counter attacks by both Syrian and Israeli aircraft. Six Syrian planes were shot down on that day alone.⁸⁶⁰ This incident caused further retaliatory actions by both sides and Egypt started moving troops into the Sinai Peninsula, increasing tensions between Israel and all the neighboring Arab countries. On May 14, 1967, President Gamal Abdel Nasser of Egypt started moving his army closer to Israel on the Sinai Peninsula and subsequently demanded the withdrawal of 3,400 United Nations troops then stationed at the border. After weeks of troop movements and other provocations (and reactions to similar actions by Israel) by Egypt, Syria, Jordan, and Iraq, Egypt declared the Gulf of Aqaba closed to Israeli shipping on May 22, 1967.⁸⁶¹

That was quickly followed by Egypt’s signing of another mutual defense treaty, this one with Nasser’s former enemy, King Ibn Talal Hussein of Jordan.⁸⁶² Nasser was very popular throughout Arab countries after he nationalized the Suez Canal in 1956, but in Washington, DC, he was viewed suspiciously, and thought to be more and more aligned under the Soviet Union’s umbrella and he therefore became a larger target to the CIA and

others who were simpatico with the “Agency’s” agenda, including Lyndon B. Johnson.

During all the build up to the war, Israel responded in kind to each attack until, on June 5, 1967, it launched a preemptive strike against Egypt’s air force (a point that disproves the original Israeli claim that Egypt acted first, since that attack practically destroyed their entire air force, making such a claim impossible on its face). The four hundred fighter jets of the Israeli air force were mostly concentrated on Egyptian (UAR) targets, with the remaining Israeli jets attacking airfields in Jordan, Syria, and Iraq. Israeli raids against Arab air bases continued throughout June 5 and by nightfall Israel had essentially won the war against Egypt on the first day; then against Jordan the second, and Syria the third; by the fourth day Israel was clearly winning the entire war, and both Egypt and Syria had accepted a cease-fire. Peace negotiations were already underway at the United Nations, and it appeared the war was practically over after the third day.

But the United States, guided by the hand of Lyndon B. Johnson, strangely resisted such an early end to the war. The night of June 7 the USS *Liberty* had finally arrived on the scene after a harrowing two-week journey from West Africa and was sailing right into the edge of the battle lines, keeping away from the coast by at least thirteen miles, just enough to stay in international waters.⁸⁶³ Its captain, William McGonagle, had requested armed escorts but had been turned down by his superiors without explanation.⁸⁶⁴

George Ball, a senior White House official under Presidents Kennedy and Johnson, described the scene as the *Liberty* sailed into the Eastern Mediterranean on the morning of June 8, 1967, affirming that by then, the fourth day of the war, “Jordan and Egypt [were] routed” and that the United Nations had already adopted a cease-fire resolution. He also stated that Israel was by then only tending to Syria, to silence the guns that had been fired on Galilee from the Golan Heights; he further said that Israel had known all about the USS *Liberty* and its function.⁸⁶⁵

The USS Liberty Goes to War, Armed with Four Guns

On May 23, 1967—two weeks before the Six-Day War started on June 5—the spy ship USS *Liberty* had been docked in Abidjan, the capital, at that time, of Côte d’Ivoire (the Ivory Coast) on the west coast of Africa. Many of its sailors were on routine leave in the city of over three million people, which made it the third largest French-speaking city in the world, after Paris and Montreal. It was at this point that war seemed inevitable, and the highly unusual decision, by the Joint Chiefs of Staff, to move the *Liberty* to the Mediterranean Sea off the coast of Egypt was made after only two days in port (half its scheduled resting and maintenance period). Shore patrolmen from the *Liberty* searched the city to find the crew members and ordered them to report back to the ship immediately. The unusual haste, and the stern, urgent demeanor of the shore patrolmen, implicitly warned the crew members—who had become used to uneventful, routine missions—that a dangerous mission now loomed. The mission required the ship to be moved 6,000 miles, to the Eastern Mediterranean, in anticipation of a war that had not started and would be almost over by the time the *Liberty* reached its destination; oddly, it had just begun its assignment to gather radio transmissions of the combatants, normally a

task that is done before war breaks out rather than after peace has been achieved.

The speed at which it proceeded, first to Rota, Spain, to take on supplies and four additional crew members—eighteen knots for eight straight days, a highly unusual event—put the crew on high alert, leading to tensions between the crew members. The second part of their journey, 2,300 miles across the Mediterranean against headwinds of thirty to forty knots, was also completed at full speed.

Strangely, on the evening of June 7, when they finally reached their destination thirteen miles off the coast of Gaza, they found that other ships, including another spy ship—the USNS *Private Jose F. Valdez*^{*}—had been simultaneously ordered to leave the area.⁸⁶⁶ In fact, except for the *Liberty*, and the reported sighting of an American submarine(s) nearby, to be examined shortly, all US ships were ordered to remain one hundred miles off shore. That order was supposedly intended for the *Liberty* as well, but for other mysterious reasons, it was never received by the ship.

The *Valdez* had just been moved from its normal position off the eastern coast of Africa, up through the Suez Canal on its way back to Norfolk. Though its sophistication was not quite at the level of the *Liberty*'s, between it and the NSA aircraft that were also monitoring radio traffic, there was little technical advantage that the *Liberty* would have brought to the scene, given the great distance it had to move in a very limited period of time. Since the *Valdez* had just transited the area and was still in the Mediterranean Sea, it could have much more easily been held, or returned to a position in the eastern Mediterranean. Instead it steamed on past the very area where someone then decided that another spy ship was needed to pick up the narrow line-of-sight signals used by air defense radar, microwave communications, and other targets.⁸⁶⁷ In fact, on its way through the area, the *Valdez* had conducted “hearability studies” for NSA to identify the best locations from which to intercept messages, suggesting that it had already been determined that such a resource would be needed at that very site shortly.

According to author James Bamford, author of *Body of Secrets: Anatomy of the Ultra-Secret National Security Agency, from the Cold War through the Dawn of a New Century*, the crew of the *Valdez* found a position to the east of the island of Crete that provided them excellent reception to radio and television broadcasts from Cairo. The chief of the NSA G Group, Frank Raven, confirmed that the information provided them all the details they needed regarding who was using which of the various bandwidth signals.⁸⁶⁸ It should be acknowledged that atmospheric conditions would have contributed to the “aural pipeline,” and that, of course, would be subject to change. The official reasons stated by the Navy for selecting the *Liberty* was that “she had superior speed (eighteen knots as opposed to eight knots for the *Valdez*), because her VHF/UHF multichannel collection capability was better, and because she was, unlike *Valdez*, at the beginning of a deployment.”⁸⁶⁹

It may be that the *Liberty* was twice as fast as the *Valdez*, but the latter was already in the target area only a few days earlier, before it then steamed on across the Mediterranean toward Gibraltar when the decision was made to send the *Liberty* to the area at full speed (the *Valdez* was still within 2,000 miles of the target area, compared to 6,000 for the

Liberty). Regardless of their “top speeds,” when either ship arrived at the patrol area, it would only need to cruise along with just enough speed to keep the rudder functional. The point of this trip “into the weeds” of the officially stated reasoning on this issue is that the official rationale for bringing the *Liberty* such a long distance appears to be specious, and likely more the result of an “after the fact” effort to justify an action that was otherwise inexplicable.

For reasons that remain unclear, the Joint Chiefs of Staff, in a highly unusual move (as one of the officers on board recalled telling his cabin-mate “Whoever heard of the JCS taking direct control of a ship”) assumed direct control over the ship⁸⁷⁰ and on May 23 ordered the *Liberty* to proceed at full steam from the coast of west Africa to the same location that the *Valdez* had just transited. It would stop only at Rota, Spain, to exchange the French and Portuguese linguists for five Arabic linguists and another Russian linguist to join the others⁸⁷¹ (only one of these, Allen Blue, spoke both Arabic and Hebrew).⁸⁷² As the ship left Rota on its way to the war zone, Captain McGonagle asked Vice Admiral William I. Martin to send a destroyer to accompany the *Liberty* and serve as its armed escort and as an auxiliary communications center. The following day, June 6, Admiral Martin replied: “*Liberty* is a clearly marked United States ship in international waters, not a participant in the conflict and not a reasonable subject for attack by any nation. Request denied.”⁸⁷³

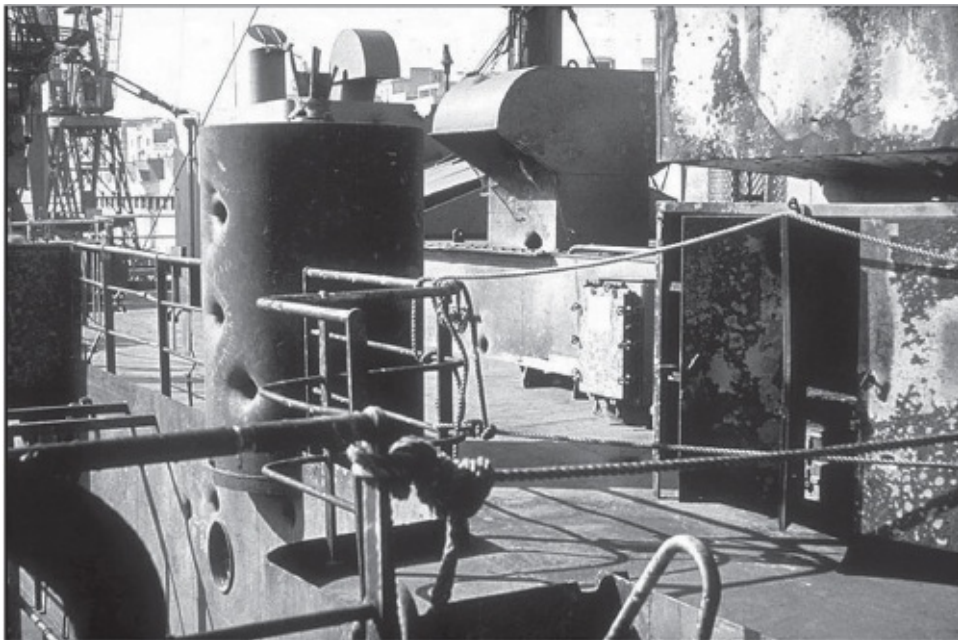
At 2:00 p.m. Sinai time (8:00 a.m. in Washington) on June 8, 1967, after eleven to thirteen over flights to identify and monitor the *Liberty*, Israeli jets attacked it with 30 mm cannons, rockets, and napalm. The official records stated that the three Mirage fighter jets that attacked the ship were unmarked, however, one of the survivors said he had seen a Star of David insignia on one of the Mirages.⁸⁷⁴ The first attack came as a complete surprise to the crewmen—some of whom were sunbathing on the top deck—and was targeted to taking out gun mounts, the ship’s antennae, and the bridge with heat-seeking missiles. Just before the attack, the five radio frequencies used by the *Liberty* were jammed by the attackers—as well as the international distress frequency, used for Mayday messages—a fact that proved conclusively that the Israeli high command knew precisely which ship they were attacking.⁸⁷⁵ By destroying the radio antennae on the deck, they intended to eliminate the ship’s ability to immediately call for help. The initial attack killed about ten men who were on the top deck, leaving only piles of body parts strewn about the deck. This was followed by a secondary attack by three torpedo boats—which were flying the Israeli Star of David flag—using cannons, 50-caliber machine guns and torpedoes. The ship managed to outmaneuver four torpedoes, but the fifth one could not be avoided; it left a twenty-two-foot by thirty-nine-foot hole on the starboard side that should have sunk the ship.

Gunboats then circled the wounded *Liberty*, firing at crewmen who were trying to fight the fires, and strafing the lifeboats that were filling with sailors who had been ordered to abandon ship, sinking two of them and destroying the nondeployed rest with gunfire.⁸⁷⁶ Intentional destruction of the lifeboats was contrary to international rules of engagement

for any reason. For the following hour and a half, the *Liberty* sailors fought to keep the ship afloat and avoid being shot at by the Israeli gun boats while its radio technicians scrambled to fix the communications equipment in order to call for help.



USS *Liberty* after the attack, upon arrival in Malta“



British researcher and author Peter Hounam quoted one of the injured USS *Liberty* crew members, Joe Lentini.⁸⁷⁷

“I felt something blow on my leg,” he said. “I looked down and the upper thigh on my left pant leg had a six-inch tear in it—and so did my upper thigh. That saved my life. A guy was coming toward me with a bandage. And that’s the last thing I remember until I came to.

“I woke up, it was pitch black and I was in water. I tried to stand up and put my weight on my left leg and it wouldn’t support me, obviously I fell back down; I didn’t know at the time I had six broken ribs, a collapsed lung, a fractured skull, both tympanic membranes in my ears were blown out, shrapnel all over me in my body ... it never occurred to me that I didn’t have a leg and it never occurred to me that I was about to die.”

It was only then that he realized that everyone else he had been working with at that moment had died, and as he pondered it, he became conscious of the fact that he had been the lucky one. After the eighteen-hour wait for help to arrive, he was finally evacuated to the Portsmouth Naval Hospital in Virginia, where he met a submarine sailor who told him:

“We were there, [on] our submarine. We saw the whole thing. We took pictures. Then we sent an officer back to the Pentagon to deliver them.” Lentini was astonished; so much so that he failed to ask the man’s name or his vessel, and he never saw him again.⁸⁷⁸

That sailor had been on a submarine, one of three, possibly more, that, according to him and others, had been positioned in the area, although this much larger presence in the area of the war zone has never been acknowledged by anyone at the Pentagon, or anywhere else in Washington. In fact, the *Requin*, one of the submarines, according to author Peter Hounam, was allegedly involved in filming the attack and to have allegedly delivered that film to the USS *Davis*, the Sixth Fleet commander’s flag ship.⁸⁷⁹ The Sixth Fleet, positioned off the coast of Crete, consisted of a huge US Navy flotilla that included two aircraft carriers, the USS *America* and the USS *Saratoga*, and many support ships as well as those submarines.

The crew of the *Liberty* did manage to jury-rig a new antenna and fix a broken transmitter sufficiently to broadcast a call for help within thirty minutes of the attack. One of the transmitters and its antenna was temporarily out of commission when the attack occurred, which prevented that transmitter from being destroyed since the heat-seeking missiles used by the fighter jets to destroy all transmitters were attracted only to those that were then functional, because only their transformers would produce the heat sought by the missiles.⁸⁸⁰ The crew quickly repaired the broken transmitter, and a new wire was strung to the antenna even while the deck was afire with napalm and the Israeli gunboats continued their attack during the first half hour. Finally, the transmitter and antenna were powered up and a message was transmitted to other ships in the area. This took repeated

attempts because the Israelis continued jamming not only the frequencies that had been in use by the ship and its sister ships and aircraft, but even the international distress frequency used for Mayday messages; this fact alone proves the advance knowledge of the planners in knowing exactly which radio frequencies to put out of commission.⁸⁸¹

The crew managed to get a message out when it was noticed that, as the attacking planes were firing missiles, the jamming stopped momentarily; this allowed signalmen James Halman, Joseph Ward, and Richard Sturman to use that opportunity to pound out the message: "Any station, this is Rockstar. We are under attack by unidentified jet aircraft and require immediate assistance."⁸⁸² A CIA report stated that the "Sixth Fleet Commander had notified Washington at 8:30 a.m. [EDT] that the *Liberty* had been hit by a torpedo. A National Security Agency Report said the aircraft carrier USS *Saratoga* relayed a message to its London naval headquarters that Rockstar (*Liberty*'s call-sign) was requesting immediate assistance, and it added: 'I AM UNDER ATTACK MY POSIT 31 23N 33 25E. I HAVE BEEN HIT.' London headquarters recorded that *Saratoga* relayed a signal from the *Liberty* at 8:40 a.m. saying 'UNIDENTIFIED GUN BOATS APPROACHING ... NOW.' At 8:45 [EDT] another message reported the torpedo hit, asking for immediate assistance.⁸⁸³

After several SOS attempts the radiomen took comfort in the belief that their plight would now be known throughout the Sixth Fleet. They assumed that the Pentagon and White House would quickly react and cause help to be dispatched to them soon.⁸⁸⁴ And there was an immediate response, though it was not apparent to the sailors on the *Liberty*: The first carrier-based bombers and fighter jets of the Sixth Fleet, stationed off the coast of Crete, were launched from only 500 miles away, soon after the SOS signals that the *Liberty* transmitted had been received. In addition to a squadron of fighter jets, two A-4 bomber aircraft were launched from the USS *America*, which carried nuclear weapons and were bound for Cairo, according to Mike Ratigan, who served on board that carrier as a center-deck catapult operator responsible for maintaining the catapult in working order. He remembered the call to general quarters (battle stations) in the early afternoon of June 8, 1967, later learning that this was due to the attack on the *Liberty*. The A-4 bombers were each fitted with two bombs having a gold-colored tip, a type that he had never seen before. "I'd never seen that particular type of ordnance, and as we had gone into Condition November (notice of imminent nuclear war) subsequent to being in general quarters, it was definitely not a drill. Marine guards were escorting the A-4, and that was a very unusual experience. I'd never seen anything like that in the four years that I was in the Navy as a Cat operator."⁸⁸⁵ When all the Navy aircraft were recalled by McNamara, almost immediately after they took off, the fighter jets returned but the A-4s did not reappear for another four or five days. The reason for that was explained by one of the pilots of the A-4s, who admitted that he had been carrying nuclear bombs and had been ordered to target Cairo. After being recalled, they had to be diverted to a land-based airstrip because the nuclear bombs made the aircraft too heavy, and dangerous, to land back on the aircraft carrier.⁸⁸⁶

In the meantime, as the *Liberty* was still being attacked, the word about its attack spread quickly to the sailors on ships throughout the Sixth Fleet. Gilad Atzmon, the author of *Remembering the Liberty: 45 Years Later and Still No Answers*, on the website maintained for the *Liberty* survivors, described a former Navy pilot who affirmed this: “I was a 6th [Fleet] Navy’s pilot,” he said. “We were deployed to the Mediterranean Sea. On that day in June 1967, we heard it all, the sailors on board of the *Liberty*, they were begging for help, it was a real agony, we were fuming, we wanted to get on the planes, we were about 10–12 minutes away, we wanted to save our brothers, but they didn’t let us onto the deck.”⁸⁸⁷ This lament came after the squadron of fighter jets had returned to the carrier immediately following the first launch, pursuant to the orders of Secretary McNamara, acting on behalf of President Lyndon B. Johnson, who was apparently upset that the *Liberty* had still not sunk.

Lyndon Johnson’s reactions to the reality that the ship was not sinking as it was supposed to do, evidenced by the recall of all the navy aircraft and the subsequent delays in sending other ships to the *Liberty*’s rescue, were also apparent in the numerous discrepancies regarding the official logs of the president and his cabinet officers, beginning with the time that the White House was notified of the attacks. The official records state that Walt Rostow, Johnson’s special adviser, phoned the president about the attack at 9:49 a.m., stating that the *Liberty* had been torpedoed, even though it made no mention of the air attack that began thirty minutes before the torpedoes were launched. As author Hounam noted, “A record at the Pentagon showed it learned of the attack at 9 a.m., but that clashes with a number of official reports released over the years. The deck log of the USS *America* records that *Liberty* sent a flash message that it was under attack to the CNO (Chief Naval Officer) by ‘HI COM’ at 8:32 [Washington time]. The signal had also been picked up by the aircraft carrier USS *Saratoga*.”⁸⁸⁸ Such a signal, that an American naval vessel was under attack, should have been sent immediately to the White House. But, according to longtime presidential adviser and McNamara’s successor as secretary of defense Clark Clifford’s 1991 memoir, a communication breakdown caused a two-hour delay in notifying Johnson of arguably the single-most important calamity, out of the many, in the Johnson administration.⁸⁸⁹ This statement only adds to the confusion, since Clifford had also stated that the White House called him “at home around 6 a.m. and asked me, without further explanation, to come to the White House immediately.”⁸⁹⁰ Since the attack occurred shortly after 8:00 a.m. Washington time, an obvious question arises about why Clifford would have been called two hours before it had happened. It also raises suspicions that the alleged delay in notifying Johnson was merely another part of the plan to give his involvement “plausible deniability” because of the incriminating statements, to be detailed shortly, about his direct involvement in recalling the squadrons of fighter jets immediately deployed to protect the *Liberty*.

That was not the only “timing irregularity” that belied the truth of what had occurred. Author Hounam also revealed another critical point that corroborates that assertion, when he identified a retired US Air Force pilot, Jim Nanjo, who stated that he and other pilots were awakened “between 2 and 4 a.m.” California time, where he was stationed at Beale

Air Force Base, north of Sacramento, (or 5:00 a.m. to 7:00 a.m. in Washington) by sirens and klaxons sounding alarms to go to their designations and remain on alert for further orders; as he jumped out of bed, it was “absolutely pitch dark in my room.” He quickly dressed and ran out to the half dozen B-52 bombers, and an even larger number of KC-135 tanker planes that were standing on the tarmac; they were given two and a half minutes to prepare to fly.⁸⁹¹ Nanjo confirmed that the bombers were carrying thermonuclear weapons, the Mark 28 (RI) version, which was designed with special fusing and parachute systems to allow them to be dropped by a low-flying bomber. Nanjo made it very clear that this alarm, the first of its kind since the day JFK was assassinated, was not just another practice, it “was one of the most hair-raising moments of his career.” One of the first steps to prepare for the mission was to cover all the windows of the cockpit with brass shades having only a peephole for visual reference to the horizon.⁸⁹² The most stunning, and revealing, point Nanjo made was his certainty that in the early morning of June 8, 1967, the alarms were sounded between 2:00 a.m. and 4:00 a.m. at his home air base near Sacramento, California, only one of the bases where B-52s carrying nuclear bombs were stationed, in this case, approximately 7,400 miles (6,430 nautical miles) away from Cairo. Yet the attack on the *Liberty* did not occur until 5:00 a.m. in that time zone, one to three hours after the alert was sounded. Those bombers would have been destined for either Cairo or Moscow if the *Liberty* had sunk, and yet they were sitting on the tarmac ready to launch at least one hour before the supposedly “surprise” attack had begun. It should be noted that the mid point of the range that Nanjo referenced, 3:00 a.m. on the Pacific coast, is exactly the same time that Clark Clifford said he had inexplicably been called to the White House, at 6:00 a.m. in Washington.

Author Hounam noted the timing discrepancies and the fact that White House records were “glaringly” inconsistent with the records that the *Saratoga*’s captain, Joe Tully, had maintained, copies of which he kept, that indicated twelve fighter jets and/or bombers had immediately been launched before Admiral Lawrence Geis, the commander of the Sixth Fleet, radioed Tully and ordered him to have all the aircraft returned, about 8:20 a.m. [EDT], minutes after the attack; he told Tully that he could relaunch the fighter jets in ninety minutes, at 9:50 a.m. (Interestingly, this is one minute after the edited White House logs stated that President Johnson was informed of the incident.) Moreover, Hounam stated that Joe Tully remained furious for the rest of his life that he had been prevented from rescuing the *Liberty*; he never realized that Lyndon Johnson was behind the order recalling that mission, despite the White House version that he had not been given the messages, a falsified record that stands as a testament to one of the most cowardly actions of a president of the United States in its history.⁸⁹³

The president, who usually did not wish to receive “bad news”—as many of his former aides have conceded—had proclaimed, nevertheless, that he had demanded to be told of bad news at any hour. He was portrayed in these records as hearing of this tragic military blunder nearly ninety minutes after the first flash messages were received in Washington. As author Hounam continued his examination of these anomalies he seemed to come to a better understanding of what might have accounted for them, inexorably concluding that

President Lyndon B. Johnson's actions were more than puzzling. Instead of gathering his military advisers, he called his secretary and ordered her to begin compiling information about his reelection campaign plans for the following year, beginning with a listing of all the states he had visited, by year, since he became president. He gave her twenty minutes to complete the task; it was done in fifteen minutes.⁸⁹⁴

The natural inference one might make, based on these statements about Johnson's reactions to these events, is that he was not terribly concerned about the situation, to even take a break from his political campaign planning for his reelection eighteen months away (he had not yet realized that his waning popularity, and the nascent thoughts of Eugene McCarthy and Bobby Kennedy of running against him, would prevent that). His instruction, to have this detailed information about his frequency of visiting every state for the past four years tabulated, typed, and ready for his review in twenty minutes, is equally noteworthy and was probably a typical "off the cuff" order. It reflects his manic nature, despite his apparent disinterest in the unfolding tragedy. But it must be remembered that his mood could turn on a dime and he could fly into a rage at the drop of a hat, so his ambivalence at this point should not be misconstrued as indicating that he was therefore in a mellow mood all that day.

At 10:00 a.m. in Washington (4 p.m. in the eastern Mediterranean) Deputy Director Louis Tordella was informed by the deputy director of the Joint Reconnaissance Center, Captain Vineyard, that "*consideration was then being given by some unnamed Washington authorities to sink the Liberty in order that newspaper men would be unable to photograph her and thus inflame public opinion against the Israelis.*"⁸⁹⁵ [Emphasis added.] Tordella makes an "impolite" comment about the idea, writes a memo of the conversation for the record, and stores it away.

The import of this record cannot be overstated: The very idea of sinking the ship to avoid inflaming public opinion about *anything* gets as close to "unthinkable thoughts" that one can get; but the notion that it was being "considered" by *anyone* makes it doubly bizarre. This critical communication is the key to the mystery of the USS *Liberty* that still persists. It is not a terribly long leap of logic to suggest that the "unnamed Washington authority" could only and uniquely be a reference to the consummate (some say "colossus") politician and poll watcher, and occasional psychotic, Lyndon B. Johnson and his first "gut" reaction to the news: To destroy his own ship and nearly 300 men aboard to save Israel "embarrassment," as if doing so would erase the entire event.

At this point in the narrative, just such a reaction might now seem even predictable—and probably was at the time—to a handful of men then close enough to Johnson to intimately know all about his mental condition. It might even explain why a number of them had already left the White House, and more did the same shortly after this incident. Perhaps they were too frightened by the prospect of being around when the Johnson train would inevitably "run off the tracks." At 11:29 a.m., as the *Liberty* lay smoldering, literally at the sharp edge of its tipping point of sinking beneath the surface of the Mediterranean, President Lyndon Johnson ordered the fighter jets to return to their carrier. James Bamford, the author of *Body of Secrets*, described that scene more fully, and even more

graphically:

“President Lyndon Johnson came on with a comment that he didn’t give a damn if the ship sank, he would not embarrass his allies.” Admiral Geis told Lieutenant Commander David Lewis, the head of the NSA group on the *Liberty*, about the comment but asked him to keep it secret until after Geis died. It was a promise that Lewis kept.⁸⁹⁶ [Emphasis added.]

There are a number of websites devoted to keeping the mystery of the unresolved attack on the USS *Liberty* in the public eye, many of which include a detailed timeline of events.⁸⁹⁷ What the timelines reveal is that, as US sailors were being massacred in cold blood, Robert S. McNamara, US secretary of defense, as demanded by President Lyndon B. Johnson, cancelled a rescue mission from the Sixth Fleet carrier aircraft, ordering them to abandon the mission.⁸⁹⁸ Some people now evaluating this long held secret—one that is only now becoming known to more and more people—might even dare call it “Treason.”

But this single order to abandon all protection for a US Navy spy ship is, lamentably, only incidental to an overall story about greater deceptions and treachery on the high seas, and in high places, one that remains “unresolved.” The timeline referenced in the previous citation goes on, to include much of the continuing developments covered within this chapter.

There is one entry in particular on that extended timeline that is of more than the usual interest, under the date of June 14, 1967, six days after the attack: *“Liberty arrives in Malta. Total news blackout imposed. Rear Admiral [Isaac] Kidd, acting on orders from John McCain II, warns crew: ‘You are never, repeat never, to discuss this with anyone, not even your wives. If you do, you will be court-martialed and will end your lives in prison, or worse.’* Secretary of Defense McNamara informs media that, *‘Department of Defense will have no further comment.’*” [Emphasis added.]

It is sobering to ponder what could possibly be “worse” than “ending your life in prison,” and why would McNamara announce that the Department of Defense would have no further comment; this was a rather unusual statement, considering the circumstances. The last entry on that timeline was from November 1998: *“Captain McGonagle breaks his long silence: ‘After many years I finally believe that the attack was deliberate. I don’t think there has been an adequate investigation of the incident... . The flag was flying prior to the attack...’* McGonagle will die four months later, on March 3, 1999.”

Lloyd Painter, a survivor of the attack who later became a Secret Service agent, lamented the fact that his skipper was not completely honest about what had happened. Painter said that he “witnessed a cover-up take place of the highest magnitude” and that in exchange for McGonagle’s silence, he was given his choice of duty in the Navy. Furthermore, author Hounam also wrote that a US intelligence agent who studied the attack on the *Liberty* determined that McGonagle was briefed to expect a superficial strafing attack, that would be used as a pretext for attacking Egypt, a repeat of the same kind of maneuver that Johnson had used at the Gulf of Tonkin to produce a surge of patriotic fury that enabled him to take complete authority over another war. McGonagle had not been expecting the

kind of vicious attack that actually occurred.

This same source stated that the war had started ten days prematurely; in fact that was the reason the operational code name was “Frontlet 615,” which was the date that hostilities were to begin, a name that had been adopted the previous year, in a secret political agreement between the United States and Israel, one objective of which was to destroy Nasser. The code name given for the execution of the plan by the military was Operation Cyanide.⁸⁹⁹

The experiences of the officers and sailors aboard the USS *Liberty* are readily available at the website of an organization representing the survivors, called the Liberty Foundation, one of several devoted to this subject.⁹⁰⁰ There is a wealth of information in these sites containing full details of the incident. Several other websites, including one called World Independent News Group (WING), also contain many very vivid details of what those sailors experienced, which is summarized below:

The US Naval official inquiry was deliberately falsified to complement the Israeli story (as testified by retired Navy Lawyer, Captain Ward Boston). Details acquired were either changed or dropped so that the Israeli version which became public was that the attack was a tragic mistake. The orders to falsify came directly from President Johnson for political reasons.

Israeli pilot Evan Toni told Congressman Pete McCloskey ... that while on air patrol that day, he immediately recognized the USS *Liberty*, informed headquarters of its status, and was told to *ignore the American flag* and attack. When he refused and returned to base, he was arrested on the spot for refusing to follow orders. Another pilot confirmed this report, stating that orders came directly from IDF—the Israeli Defense Force—to attack the *Liberty*, and when he said that he saw an American flag, they once again told him to “attack it.”⁹⁰¹

If it had not been for the heroic efforts of the surviving sailors and officers, the USS *Liberty* would have gone to the bottom of the sea, taking all 294 men with it, including the thirty-four already dead. The exterior surface of the hull had been shattered with a torpedo hole measuring twenty-two by thirty-nine feet and the ship listed ten degrees, able to keep afloat only due to the fact that the ship listed toward the portside bow, allowing the torpedo hole on the starboard side to remain mostly above the waterline. Mercifully, that probably saved the ship, as well as the fact that when the torpedo hit it struck precisely where a part of the ship’s superstructure—its skeleton—was positioned. The I-beam underneath the exterior skin kept the torpedo from also destroying the interior bulkhead walls, that let seawater enter only into some forward compartments (those that contained the “secret spaces,” drowning and entombing many of the bodies of the men who worked there) and into the cavity between the ship’s walls. Ron Kukal survived the torpedo hit only to be caught immersed in seawater within one of the forward compartments as it flooded, however, another sailor opened a hatch from above just in time for him to escape. He said, “This was the third miracle I saw that day.”⁹⁰²

One of the heroic seamen aboard the *Liberty*, Phillip F. Tourney (author of the book, *What I Saw That Day*, cowritten by Mark Glenn) described the steel interior bulkheads, less than one inch thick, wet and heaving from the cold ocean water, as the only thing keeping the seawater from flooding into the interior of the ship and taking it to the bottom of the sea. He and the other crew members pitched in to keep the ship afloat.⁹⁰³

Author and survivor Tourney explained how, after waiting overnight and well into the next day, two other navy ships came to their rescue, taking the wounded sailors away for medical treatment and what was left of the dead ones. They also brought shoring timbers and tools, and assisted them in building an improvised wooden structure to enhance its strength sufficiently to get the ship into dry dock. The huge torpedo hole in the starboard side was covered by a canvas tarp that was secured with straps wrapped around the bottom of the ship and up around the port side; the straps could not hold the tarp adequately, which resulted in some of the bodies of dead crewmembers floating out the torpedo hole as it steamed off to the dry dock facility for repair.

The crew had naively assumed, given the extremely crippled condition of the ship, that they would be allowed passage to the nearest facility available to conduct more permanent repairs, which would have been in Crete, a day's passage from where they were attacked. Instead, they were ordered to proceed to Malta, about 540 miles to the west, which required nearly a week of sailing through the deepest, choppiest waters of the Mediterranean. (The facilities themselves, as well as the logistics and scheduling issues at each may have been the determining factors, however, assuming that the bases had similar capabilities and availability, there is no question that Crete would have been the best, safer, choice.) As author and survivor Tourney observed, "*Obviously, someone was hoping we would sink along the way, making the cover-up of what happened all the easier to accomplish.*"⁹⁰⁴ [Emphasis added.]

Perhaps if they had not been made to wait nearly eighteen hours for help to arrive, Mr. Tourney might not have seemed so cynical in his comment. It is his reference to "someone" possibly choreographing the operation that will become the focus of our analysis in the following pages.

Author and *Liberty* survivor James Ennes, referencing a contemporaneous newsletter, the *Counterattack*, that briefly leaked some of the darkest secrets within a month of the attack (but which thereafter immediately stopped), stated that McNamara ordered Admiral David L. McDonald, the chief of naval operations and Admiral William I. Martin, commanding the Sixth Fleet, to recall the planes that had been dispatched by Admiral Geis. *Counterattack* concluded, "The American Navy was prevented, in a new era of military compliance, from going to the rescue of one of its own crews."⁹⁰⁵ It can be deduced from these statements that the "someone" referenced in the previous paragraph was blithely unaware of the military precept of "never leaving a fellow soldier, sailor or marine behind," and it was that broken bond which would inevitably create a break in his order of complete secrecy.

Despite this grotesque piece of the puzzle, all the secrecy orders and all the medals

bestowed on the survivors were not enough to keep the lies intact. And that led the cover-up to begin unraveling over a decade after the event. For twelve years, no one said anything more about what had happened, other than the fabricated and now completely discredited “official” Navy investigation. Some of the survivors began writing books about it, and the story lost its secrecy over thirty years ago when the first book on the subject, James M. Ennes’s *Assault on the Liberty*, was published in 1979. But, since it had been hidden for so many years, the stunning news story that once was, had become stale to most of the “mainstream news media,” and a once colossally destructive event became little more than a correction news piece little noticed outside, even inside, the beltway. Consequently, reportage of an extraordinary “game-changing” event has almost been swept aside, into the bottomless dustbin of history. The upshot is, of course, that even now, over four decades after the attack, the majority of Americans remain completely unaware of it.

In his book, Peter Hounam revealed, among many other intriguing and lingering issues, a particularly troubling question, one that parallels the story told by Air Force pilot Jim Nanjo previously: He cited Egyptian President Nasser’s close associate Mohamed Hassanein Heikal, who stated that Lyndon Johnson had sent a hot-line message to Nasser via Soviet Premier Alexei Kosygin, advising that “two American fighters had been obliged to pass over Egyptian positions on their way to help the American communications ship *Liberty*.” Since there was no overflight of Egypt necessary between the Sixth Fleet and the *Liberty*, it meant that American aircraft flying over any Egypt territory would have to involve other airplanes, from other bases.⁹⁰⁶ It should be noted that, unless these were bombers, fighter jets would not have had the range, without aerial refueling in route, to have flown the required distances. Heikal wrote that Nasser thought this was all part of the deception being foisted on both Egypt and the Soviet Union by the highest echelons of the US military command. Nasser had already believed that the United States and Britain had been directly assisting Israel in preparing to launch the war after the hot-line exchange, even though he wasn’t aware that those US airplanes had been on their way to Cairo before they had been called back at nearly the last minute. A more likely explanation of that message—the timing of which was puzzling since the attack was already over by the time it was sent—was that it would provide a pretext for other aircraft which were simultaneously being deployed with nuclear bombs that Egypt might have detected. Perhaps some that had been bound for Cairo before being recalled at the last minute.

What Really Caused the Attack?

Unlike any other attack on a US Navy vessel, there has never been an official congressional investigation on the USS *Liberty* attack. The perfunctory initial Navy investigation, lasted only eight days, which was, according to author James Scott, the son of survivor John Scott, “less time than it took to bury some of the dead. The Navy’s top-secret final report proved a muddled mess with typos, misspellings, and contradictory findings.”⁹⁰⁷ It has since been acknowledged to have been an intentional cover-up by, the attorney who originally oversaw it, Captain Ward Boston. That was precisely what Lyndon Johnson had ordered, and what Robert McNamara assigned to Admiral John McCain II, who then

commanded others to create: a superficial, noninvestigation to create a bogus report that was designed to hide the real story in an elaborate “official” account presented ceremoniously to the highest government officials. And all of it was done simultaneously with orders to everyone involved to clamp the lid of secrecy on everything connected to it.

Another attempt to investigate the incident was completed thirteen years later when, in 1980, an eighty-three-page secret report was completed (which was only released to the public in 2011, though still heavily redacted, with many entire pages blank). Titled *United States Cryptologic History—Attack on a Sigint Collector*⁹⁰⁸ it does contain much basic information, even though it stops short of insightful explanations. For example, on page 13, it states that “The decision to deploy [the USS *Liberty*], it should be noted, came before the Six-Day War erupted.” Technically, and narrowly that is correct, but not completely honest, since that is far from the complete truth as we know it now: The decision to deploy it was merely one step toward initiating a war that had been planned for months. Another example, on page 40—after noting the messages sent to Moscow regarding the attack, to explain that aircraft were sent to investigate it—the report blithely states “Thereafter instructions were issued by JCS and Commander, Sixth Fleet to withdraw the aircraft launched to defend the *Liberty*. By 1849 hours Sixth Fleet reported all planes recalled and accounted for.”

Just as so many other puzzling questions were never answered, this report glosses right over the most obvious one: *No explanation whatsoever was given as to why the US Navy was abandoning its own ship.* It should also be noted, for the record, that the heavily redacted report makes no mention of the strafing attacks on the lifeboats. That was likely in the excised material since it only “adds fuel to the fire” of extreme outrage that such information might otherwise ignite.

Also missing are the profane quotes from the president of the United States, as were reported elsewhere by Admiral Geis and others, regarding his orders to “recall the wings.” As evidenced by the number of pages that have been either entirely redacted or nearly so, there is much that the government is still hiding forty-seven years after the attack. This report also includes several pages outlining the Israeli military court “charges” and the rationale it used to dismiss every single one of them in order to avoid actually making criminal charges against any of its officers.

One example of this, to illustrate how it decided to hold no one culpable of even mere negligence—never mind gross negligence or extreme, willful criminal conduct—the court ruled as follows on charge number 6:

6. Charge: That it was negligent to order the torpedo boat to attack the ship upon an unfounded presumption that it was an Egyptian warship, and this as a consequence of not taking reasonable steps to make proper identification.

Finding: The examining judge considered it noteworthy that the identification of the target as the El-Kasir [sic] was made both by the division commander and the commander of a second torpedo boat. Upon examining photos of the two ships, he was satisfied that a likeness existed between them, and that an error of identification

was possible ...

The irrefutable fact that the *Liberty* was nearly five times larger than the rusty old horse transport ship, flying an American flag (originally five feet by eight feet, until that was shot down, at which point the Holiday Flag, seven feet by thirteen feet, was then hoisted up the flagpole to replace it), that it was clearly marked in large lettering on the bow, its name emblazoned on the stern, and that it “bristled with antennae” (forty-five of them in all, according to this very report) and that it was slowly proceeding in international waters, or that Israeli planes had surveilled the ship with up to thirteen over flights before the attack—the pilots even exchanging smiles and hand waves at the men on the top deck—none of that entered into the judge’s deliberation of this issue. As the report concludes, regarding the Israeli court findings, “When NSA’s Deputy Director read the decision of the Israeli Defence Forces Preliminary Inquiry, he summed up his personal feelings on the subject by calling it ‘a nice whitewash.’”⁹⁰⁹

Due to the token “investigation” ordered by Admiral McCain—directed only to the issue of the crew’s actions before and during the attack—the question of what really caused the attack on the *Liberty* has never been settled, despite the assumptions of many that it was what it (seemingly) was: an unprovoked act by Israel because someone didn’t want that ship so close to the Sinai Peninsula. But what possible pretext might explain “why” that someone decided it had to be sunk as a result of its position? None of them which have been suggested, and which are commonly known among researchers, make any sense realistically, if one accepts the statements of all the sailors and officers on board the *Liberty* that a large American flag was shown continuously as the Israelis flew numerous reconnaissance flights over it for nearly eight hours before launching the attack. One *Liberty* deck officer stated that they were circled up to thirteen times that morning.⁹¹⁰

The subject of the still-unexplained *Liberty* attack continues to arouse passions among many, not only those who actually survived the attack. Most of the books on the subject were written, consciously or not, to support one side or the other in this debate; to one degree or another, all can be said to be tendentiously weighted to an unstated agenda: The same one originally ordered by Lyndon B. Johnson, to replace historic truths with transparently fabricated lies in order to hide what really happened. Mr. Ennes has been accused by other survivors of being too circumspect in some respects, as though he was too afraid of being called “anti-Semitic” to criticize Israel, or any individuals within its government or military. The result of the in-fighting among the survivors, due in part to the sensitivities referenced by Mr. Ennes, has led to further bitterness among many people directly affected by this tragedy.

Many books focused on the details of that specific war, which one might assume would address this issue, do not even go near it. An example is a 1992 book, *Six Days in June: How Israel Won the 1967 Arab-Israeli War*, by Eric Hammel, which contains the most minute details of much of the war (though absent any footnotes, endnotes, or even a bibliography) yet it does not even include an entry for the USS *Liberty* in the index, or anywhere else between its covers.

Another book, one of the most acclaimed yet deeply flawed books that do address it, was written in 2003 by Michael B. Oren, the Israeli ambassador to the United States from 2009 until 2013, titled *Six Days of War*, which explicitly admits an inherent bias: Oren acknowledged that he wasn't completely objective and that he took "strong stands" regarding war and peace but that he attempted to overcome his biases.⁹¹¹ The book does address what the author portrayed as a succession of events that preceded the attack on the *Liberty* but claimed that all of the overflights occurring in the eight hours before the attack were involved only in looking for Egyptian submarines. It did not state the obvious discrepancy—that they would have at least noticed the *Liberty*—given the fact that the Israeli aircraft had flown directly above it all morning, at altitudes of 1,000 feet or less. Ultimately, according to author Oren, shortly before the attack, an Israeli fighter jet observed it as an "unidentified ship ... sighted northeast of al-Arish" where an ammunition dump had exploded and it was assumed that it had been hit by a nearby enemy ship.

Oren's description was clearly written to conform to the incredulous official account that has been demonstrated, over and over, to be false on numerous counts. For example, author Oren stated that the only reconnaissance flight to identify the ship described it as "'a military vessel, battleship gray with four gun mounts, with its bow pointed toward Port Said ... [and] one mast and one smokestack.' Apart from some 'black letters' on the hull, *the ship had no other markings ...*" and the pilot "requested additional jets loaded with iron bombs"⁹¹² [Implicitly to attack the ship]. [Emphasis added.] Summarily dismissing the obvious obfuscation regarding "some black letters" on the hull, but "no other markings" it is difficult to conclude this book was even intended to bring finality to the puzzle.





Liberty's clear identification belies Israeli "misidentification."

Oren stated that the ship was steaming toward Egypt, at an estimated speed of thirty knots (the *Liberty's* maximum speed was eighteen knots). Oren also claimed that Israeli torpedo boats gave chase at their maximum speed of thirty-six knots but that it was not possible to catch up to the ship because of its speed.⁹¹³ Author Oren may have tried to be "fair and balanced" as he explained, but all of his explanations hinge on the assertion that the ship could not be identified as an American warship and the Israelis got confused and thought it was an old Egyptian horse ferry about a quarter of the size of the *Liberty* that was speeding away at a rate clearly impossible for such a boat. As explained previously, that claim—that the Israeli military leaders who had been surveilling the *Liberty* the entire morning, somehow confused a US Navy ship with a rusty old horse ferry that had already been slated for destruction, which was the keystone of his argument, is specious, one might even stretch the point and call it laughable; it has been thoroughly debunked by every one of the sailors who survived the tragedy. And it has been contested by the high officials, noted elsewhere, within the US government and military, both contemporaneously and in the later, more honest investigations of it, not to mention a number of Israeli pilots and military officials who admitted their knowledge, that it was a clearly marked US warship, proudly flying the US flag.

Oren did not explain his relationship, if any, with the captain of the lead torpedo boat, "Comdr. Moshe Oren." It was these same torpedo boats that launched five torpedoes, one of which almost sunk its target, in their attack on the USS *Liberty*. He could have clarified that, for the record, and made his clearly specious claim of nonbias a bit more persuasive. Additionally, the veracity of his account of this incident would have gained credibility if he had addressed the issues raised in James Ennes's book, which was written over two decades before *Six Days of War*. Or, better yet, the assertions of James Bamford in his book *Body of Secrets*, written two years before Oren's, including allegations of war crimes that had become well known by then: "Aryeh Yitzhaki [an Israeli military historian] said, 'The whole army leadership, including [then] Defense Minister Moshe Dayan and Chief of Staff [and later Prime Minister Yitzhak] Rabin and the generals knew about these things ...

senior Israeli officials tried their best to cover them up by not releasing a report he had prepared on the murders in 1968.”⁹¹⁴

These allegations gave rise, for some critics, to a presumption that the primary reason that Israel initiated the attack on the *Liberty* was to contain its ability to eavesdrop on the alleged massacres that were said to be going on at El Arish. The presumption was that, if Israel (i.e., someone high up in the hierarchy of the Israeli government or its military) ordered the attack, this might explain why they would want to destroy the capability of the *Liberty* to intercept or transmit reports of such activities. But there were other ways to accomplish that without sinking the ship of an ally and all the men aboard, including simply jamming the radio frequencies used by the ship, which is exactly what occurred just before and during the attack.

It is essential to remember the context: the war was practically over, and would have been over had Johnson not purposely delayed work on a cease-fire treaty as revealed by Nicholas Katzenbach in his 2008 memoirs. The Katzenbach book only mentioned the *Liberty* affair in passing since it was not focused on this incident, but it did provide more clues to what really happened in the White House during this period. Katzenbach, who had replaced Robert Kennedy as attorney general, was moved by Johnson from the Justice Department and appointed as an assistant secretary of state a few months before this incident, may have inadvertently left some of the most revealing clues as to what was really going on “behind the scenes” during the USS *Liberty* episode. He stated that most administration officials, including Navy personnel, did not believe the Israeli explanation that it was “a case of mistaken identity.” He acknowledged that Johnson accepted the apology for political reasons but that they should offer the families “generous compensation,” undoubtedly with the understanding that they would be reimbursed for that by the United States anyway as part of the annual aid package they received. Moreover, he admitted that the State Department had angered many in the Jewish community through its issuance of a statement of neutrality, which was considered in retrospect as unwise. That controversy apparently caused Johnson to back off efforts to obtain a ceasefire at the United Nations, where a disagreement regarding the language about the definition of territories had materialized.⁹¹⁵

A number of points raised by Katzenbach must be considered in relation to tracing the events as they unfolded in the White House. First, he stated that Israel initially refused to pay anything toward compensation for the victims because it was a regrettable accident. Another was the “unfortunate” neutrality statement released by the State Department that had angered the Israelis—for which Assistant Secretary of State Katzenbach claimed he had “no idea” of how it happened. Yet his fellow State Department official, spokesman Robert McCloskey, had told reporters: “Our position is neutral in thought, word and deed.”⁹¹⁶ Thirdly, Katzenbach stated that President Johnson, curiously, did not want to anger the Israelis any further. Finally, the most confusing of all was what he stated about Johnson’s decision “to make little effort to obtain a ceasefire” for several days. Whether taken separately, or together as a whole, these confusing and contradictory statements should have raised multiple red flags, alerting someone, even everyone, to the reality that

everything about this made no sense whatsoever in relation to the story being portrayed:

- If Israel had been at fault for this egregious, inexplicable “error”—given the close dependency it had to the United States as its primary ally, from which they received millions of dollars annually and much in the way of military equipment and other forms of assistance—then a natural and logical presumption would suggest that they would have implicitly understood the need to at least act contritely, acknowledge the error, and offer to make a financial settlement with the victims of such an accident involving their most important patron, without the need to be coerced into doing that. However, there is a counterpoint to that: If the Israeli officials felt that they had been put into an impossible position in the first place by the American president to attack his own ship, for his own political purposes, and that they were being forced into having to accept the blame and “bite the bullet” when things went wrong and the ship didn’t sink, then it follows that their reaction was not as insensitive as Katzenbach and others have interpreted it. Perhaps they felt that they had been “had” by the American president.
- How would Katzenbach, in his high-level position within the State Department, not have known the origin of the neutrality statement made by a spokesman from his own bureaucracy? According to Joseph Califano, the reason it was such a “political problem [that] reached white heat” was because it could be interpreted as an invocation of the Neutrality Act, which meant that Israelis would be constrained from raising money in the United States and that might prevent the United States from shipping supplies to Israel. Califano said that Abe Fortas was among those who expressed concern to him about that issue, however it was in the context of his having “deep reservations” that it applied.⁹¹⁷ This was the same Abe Fortas who, as a sitting Supreme Court justice, was simultaneously serving as one of Johnson’s primary advisers, and had been directly involved in the planning of that war. He had also previously been Johnson’s personal lawyer for twenty years, including playing a primary role in Johnson’s theft of the 1948 senatorial “election” and being his chief collaborator in the months after JFK’s assassination to squelch the multiple Senate investigations into Johnson’s criminal past. By his actions, Fortas was still acting in his capacity as Johnson’s personal protector, in contrast to what he should have been engaged in: Preventing involvement of the US military in foisting a war of aggression, contrary to international law, on the part of a US ally to its neighbors.
- Clearly, the most important concern on Johnson’s mind at that point was the risk of *further angering Israel*, one of America’s closest allies (and dependents). Why would the man famously known for his “Johnson Treatment” not have been able to convince the fawning Israeli ambassador and all the Jewish aides and advisers he had surrounding him in the White House that this pro-forma statement did not represent a threat to continued American support? Was it because they might have feared, at that point, that Johnson would not go along with their acquisition of additional territory, which would later become known as “spoils of war”?
- Katzenbach also stated that Johnson *withheld any effort to work toward a ceasefire*

for several days. What possible explanation could exist for him acting to lengthen the duration of that war? Had he already laid plans for a grand move in a chess game he was playing, acting as the “King of the World,” involving one of his pawns (one disguised as a US Navy spy ship), which he was moving into place for his own Machiavellian, purely political purposes? Was he so afraid of President Nasser that he viewed him as a threat to his own position as “King of the World”?

Into the mix of assorted facts and opinions, a 2004 CNN report on the incident made another inadvertently revealing statement, quoting an unnamed State Department official, a portion of which stated:

“In many respects this is kind of a classic bi-national case of Murphy’s Law,” a State Department official said Monday. “Everything that could possibly go wrong, on either side, did.” The official said that though Israel should be held responsible for the attack, the United States was also negligent for failing to notify Israel the *Liberty* was in international waters and for failing to withdraw the ship from the war zone. “*This is a ship that should have been hundreds of miles away from the war zone,*” the official said.⁹¹⁸

The import of this report is what it did not say: That the ship was ordered to the area and had been moved 6,000 miles at full speed to get there, given no protection (other than the four 50-caliber machine guns on its deck) once it got there and, apparently, cutting it off from the crucial military communications through which it was supposedly ordered to remain more than one hundred miles offshore. Here we have an official in the State Department seemingly portraying this as an inadvertent error, an act of “omission,” as if to say that the whole incident was just a case of sloppy management, implicitly laying the blame on midlevel naval officers who should have foreseen the calamity that was about to occur. It is relevant to the analysis now only because it represents the kind of confusion that exists due to the lack of a full and honest inquiry at the time; that inquiry was replaced by a concerted “CYA” (cover your ass) effort to avoid identifying the name(s) of those who ordered the ship into the area for what must have been an intentional “act of war.”

The latest book, and one of the most detailed, comprehensive, dispassionately objective analytical examinations of the incident and the legal issues it entails, was written in 2012 by retired Michigan attorney and law enforcement official, Robert J. Allen. He wrote, in *Beyond Treason: Reflection on the Cover-up of the June 1967 Israeli Attack on the USS Liberty, an American Spy Ship*, that the issue now is whether President Johnson “engaged in a conspiracy to obstruct justice, or worse, destroying evidence of crimes against the United States military personnel.” Furthermore, he asserted that the key objective at this point is for Congress to finally hold hearings and conduct a serious investigation of the incident to determine the truth of what occurred and the reasons behind it. “*Did the President as Commander-in-chief adhere to his duty and oath of office?*”⁹¹⁹ [Emphasis added.]

Allen’s book adds much more information regarding the incident, including the fact that at least two of the three recordings made by NSA aircraft during the course of the

attack were “missing” and, citing NSA linguist Michael Prostinak, through a 2007 online *Chicago Tribune* article, asserted that there were possibly half a dozen films made of the attack, which were probably the ones that recorded the actual attack.⁹²⁰ Allen’s plaintive question, after considering the many possible explanations for the missing tapes, was: “Alternatively, were the tapes ordered confiscated at the direction of President Johnson?”⁹²¹ The one element that is missing from Mr. Allen’s very rational and logical presentation—the single essential piece that brings it all together—was the condition of Lyndon Johnson’s psyche at this point in time and the fact that he viewed everything, and everyone, from the perspective of political gamesmanship through a prism of paranoia while suffering psychotic attacks that had been left untreated for years. The two perspectives cannot coexist without first being reconciled, and the only way to do that is to factor in the “Colossus” (albeit Machiavellian) nature of Lyndon B. Johnson.

The focus on Israel by most other authors who even dare bring up this subject, as the only possible instigator of the attack, ignores other possibilities and may be the reason the case has never been resolved to anyone’s satisfaction. After so many years of deceit and denial, it is essential now to examine the *Liberty* attack from the perspective of fixing blame *not* on Israel but on the one person who had the power over all the others to have it done. Lyndon Johnson believed he could do anything he wanted to do and then have it reframed to put the blame on others—with a series of destroyed or fabricated evidence, deceit, lies, and secrecy oaths—just as he had done three and a half years earlier, and many other times for less momentous events.

Inescapable Conclusions

The strange actions by Lyndon Johnson and Robert McNamara to be examined next went well beyond their mere refusal to order protection for the ship after the initial attack, that killed about ten sailors. Had they allowed the fighter jets to complete their mission, the subsequent torpedo attack might have been averted, which would have saved the lives of twenty-four men. It has finally become obvious that their own actions in the aftermath proved that they had ordered the ship into the area for the very purpose of having it attacked; and when it didn’t sink, they abandoned it for over seventeen hours and then ordered a massive cover-up of the entire incident and collaborated with Israel in fabricating a story blaming the attack on a “series of blunders” by both the United States and Israel. The lies were then pieced together and written into a book, which has rightfully been attacked by practically everyone familiar with the real facts of the attack; the long-discredited book is titled *The Liberty Incident*, by A. Jay Cristol, a US federal bankruptcy judge who some have described as being an Israeli agent. A campaign has also commenced to keep the disjointed distortion of this contrived story alive, one that none of the survivors support because it is one based on the most negative kinds of pettifoggery and is an insult to the intelligence of the victims of this sordid event (the extended list being “all of us”). It can be found at places like the *Times of Israel* in an article titled “The Lie That Won’t Die: The USS *Liberty* Attack Slander, Continued,” dated February 22, 2013.⁹²² The tone and tenor of this article is essentially, “Anyone who believes those stories from the survivors and others who have intensively examined this incident is an anti-Semitic

bastard.” Clearly, these articles, like those on the other side of the argument, which insist that it was done by individual Jews for unstated religious reasons, miss the point: It was done, probably very, very reluctantly, by the highest echelons of Israeli leadership, upon the insistence of a psychotic and delusional president of the United States, who forced them to attack his own ship. It had nothing to do with Semitism or anti-Semitism on anyone’s part.

In contrast to these works of propaganda, the most clearly detailed and honest government report on the incident was published in the *Congressional Record* on October 7, 2004, thirty-seven years after the attack. Admiral Thomas Moorer (whose own memorandum is shown in Appendix B) was the chairman of the Independent Commission of Inquiry into the *Liberty* attack, which produced this report.⁹²³ Because even that report has been partly redacted, the real and complete reasons for the attack on the USS *Liberty* will probably never be known, but one thing is certain: the reason claimed by Israel for the attack—a simple case of mistaken identity—is generally agreed to be farcical and absurd, for all the reasons previously noted. Given that conclusion, one shared by all the survivors and the senior Navy officials cited (other than those, like the elder McCain, who were given the orders to cover up the truth by Johnson himself and considered their sworn duty to carry out treasonous orders from above to be of higher priority than the fundamental issues of ethics and morality, not to mention international treaties), using a simple process of deductive reasoning leads us to inescapable conclusions:

- Israel had no discernible, rational reason to attack the *Liberty* on the fourth day of a six-day war, with victory in sight; in fact, it had an abundance of reasons *not* to attack a military ship of its primary benefactor, working in tandem with them to win the war they were engaged in. The suggestion that the attack was ordered to keep the United States unaware of Israel’s plans for other attacks makes no sense, considering that the United States was its strongest supporter, despite the official claims of neutrality. To presume that Israel plotted to sink the ship so quickly that no one would find that out, for the purpose of forcing the United States to join the war—even at the point that Israel had practically won it already—makes even less sense. Any suggestion that the attack was made to keep the United States from monitoring Israeli communications also ignores the fact that ELINT aircraft were also monitoring all radio communications in the area.
- Lyndon Johnson had previously established a pattern of reckless use of military assets; just three years before this, in “creating” an attack on the USS *Maddox* in order to insert the US military machine into a war in Vietnam, which he thought he could micromanage and stretch out for several years as a way to make himself and select friends very rich. He exploited the patriotism of Americans into initially following him as he portrayed himself heroically saving Southeast Asia, at a distance of nine thousand miles, from the menace of communism (and doing this while simultaneously ignoring the “communist menace” then being established in Cuba, a mere ninety miles from US shores). After JFK’s assassination, Johnson completely broke off any further relations or entreaties with Cuba and ignored

those initiated by Castro.

- It is entirely consistent with his previous actions—rational or not—to believe that having an American ship attacked so that Egypt could be blamed, would give him the reason he needed to insert the US military machine into that war on behalf of Israel and to support it in whatever way possible. As bizarre as this scenario sounds, it makes a certain “sense” in the paradoxical context presented in this hypothesis: it was being micromanaged within the mind of a man then considered by several of his closest aides to be certifiably psychotic, as previously noted. The notion of Johnson *forcing* Israel to attack his own ship in order to achieve this goal should not be summarily discarded absent the release of all relevant records. At this point, it makes more sense, in context, than any other conceivable scenario.
- Perhaps the reason that the *Liberty* was tagged by Johnson as a “sacrificial lamb” was because of its name: As suggested by author Tourney, a survivor, “Remember the *Liberty*,” like the Alamo, or the *Maine*, would be a much better battle cry to rally the troops than the name of the ship it replaced.⁹²⁴ “Remember the *Private Jose F. Valdez*” just did not have the same panache.
- Another reason for not sinking the *Valdez* was that it had a civilian crew running the ship; the only military personnel were the technicians running the electronic systems related to its communications-gathering function. There was probably a distinction, in Johnson’s twisted mind, between the two that might have been part of his choice (that attacking the *Liberty* was clearly an act of war; not so the *Valdez*) and it may have been that he knew that survivors, if any, could only be sworn to secrecy if they could be commanded by military authority to keep their lips sealed under threat of courts-martial, “or worse.”

Regardless of these reasoned speculations regarding *why* the *Liberty* was attacked, it must be remembered that Lyndon Johnson’s documented treachery toward this US Navy vessel and nearly 300 sailors on it *after it was attacked* has already been conclusively proven by none other than Sixth Fleet Rear Admiral Lawrence Geis⁹²⁵ in his observations that *Johnson did not care if every man drowned and the ship sank, but that he would not embarrass his allies when he screamed, “I want that Goddamn ship going to the bottom. No help. Recall the wings.”*

Furthermore, Admiral Thomas Moorer finally investigated the incident and made a scathing statement (see Appendix B for the complete *statement*). A short quote from it says *all that one needs to know to understand why he was obviously still furious* about what he had found out about the incident:

I am compelled to speak out about one of US history’s most shocking cover-ups. On June 8, 1967, Israel attacked our proud naval ship—the USS *Liberty*—killing 34 American servicemen and wounding 172. Those men were then betrayed and left to die by our own government. US military rescue aircraft were recalled—not once, but twice—through direct intervention by the Johnson administration. Secretary of Defense Robert McNamara’s cancellation of the Navy’s attempt to rescue the *Liberty*,

which I confirmed from the commanders of the aircraft carriers *America* and *Saratoga*, was the most disgraceful act I witnessed in my entire military career. [Emphasis added.]

Johnson's sole focus throughout his career—indeed, his entire lifetime—was the “politics” of everything that happened. In this case, in the middle of the crisis, according to his domestic affairs aide at the time, Joseph Califano, Johnson ordered press secretary George Christian and Secretary of State Rusk to back away from the previous statement of neutrality. Moreover, he stated that Johnson had told him to call Arthur Krim, Lew Wasserman, and Edwin Weisl, and to reassure them that he would stand by Israel and that their help was needed to make this known to the Jewish community in order to get them “off his back.”⁹²⁶ Califano also made some revealing comments about events in the White House during this period relating to Johnson's reaction to advice he had received from two Jewish staff members, Larry Levinson and Ben Wattenberg, who had suggested that he address a meeting of American Jews in Lafayette Park about his intent to support Israel. The idea was that this would “neutralize” the State Department's neutrality statement, and reap political benefits through negating some of the Vietnam protests.⁹²⁷

An indication of Johnson's psychological state of mind at that point (the memo referenced was dated June 7, 1967, and it is unclear whether Johnson read it that day or the next, which was the day the *Liberty* was attacked) is revealed in what Califano then reported: Johnson then told him how disappointed he was in how some of his Jewish friends and staff had not been very helpful in drumming up more support for him. Just after this exchange, Johnson spotted Levinson leaving Califano's office and, as he jabbed his fist into the air, he yelled down a hall at him, saying, “*You Zionist dupe! You and Wattenberg are Zionist dupes in the White House! Why can't you see I'm doing all I can for Israel. That's what you should be telling people when they ask for a message from the President for their rally.*” Levinson told Califano afterward that he felt “shaken to the marrow of my bones.”⁹²⁸ [Emphasis added.]

Johnson's state of mind on June 8 was highly agitated by other events that had taken place on the day before that. Congress had remained split over many issues, including the on going racial divide, the stalled Great Society initiatives, and of course the growing quagmire called Vietnam. On June 7, the House voted against the Johnson administration's bid to increase the debt limit, which was a “major setback” that stalled the federal government at many levels because, within three weeks, its ability to borrow money would come to a halt. Johnson demanded to see a list of all the Democrats who had not voted for his bill and found that the representative of the affluent New York district of Westchester County, Richard Ottinger, had voted against it as a jab against the war because it was taking priority over domestic spending. Johnson, of course, was furious and swung back at him, threatening to build a public housing project in the middle of Ottinger's Westchester district.⁹²⁹

These other highly charged issues would have indubitably caused Johnson to become even more agitated than his normal irritable mania swings, perhaps contributing to the

events of the following day, June 8, 1967. Walter Rostow, Johnson's special assistant for National Security Affairs, had sent the president a memo deriding the entire battle on the first day, as Israeli fighter jets destroyed the Egyptian air force on the ground at their air bases, as a "turkey shoot."⁹³⁰ On the next day, he sent another memo to Johnson, recommending that Israel be allowed to keep the captured territories.

This was a recommendation for a "sea change" in US policy since the previous clash in 1956, when Eisenhower had forced Israel, threatening economic sanctions, to return the captured territories in that skirmish. Rostow's memo became the basis for the de facto US policy subsequently assumed from that date on: Lyndon Johnson immediately acquiesced to Israel's new position. It was no wonder, then, that Ephraim "Eppie" Evron (as noted earlier, the minister in the Israeli embassy, second in rank but of equal influence as Ambassador Avraham Harman) so loved Lyndon Johnson that he actually volunteered to remain in the United States and campaign for him in 1968. Presidential counsel Harry McPherson pleaded with Johnson to authorize "Eppie" to "spill the beans," sending him a long memorandum; Johnson marked it up with "No, no, no!" in the margins, but Eppie still went around to Miami, New York, and Los Angeles, meeting with large groups of Jews, telling them how great a man LBJ was.⁹³¹

* There is a difference in ship designations that should be explained at this point. The USNS designation refers to support ships that are unarmed, whereas the USS designation applies to any armed warship, and an attack on one of them is an act of war according to international admiralty law. The USS *Liberty*, though technically armed and classified as a warship, was very lightly armed, having only two .50 caliber machine guns on the forecastle and two aft, a total of four guns. It was practically defenseless, except perhaps to keep pirates at bay. Yet an attack on it would be considered an act of war; that distinction was a very important difference between it and the USNS *Jose F. Valdez* and may be the very reason that the *Liberty* was chosen for this "mission" in lieu of the *Valdez*.

A HYPOTHESIS OF PRESIDENTIAL TREASON

I want that Goddamn ship going to the bottom. No help. Recall the wings.

—PRESIDENT LYNDON B. JOHNSON

The veil of secrecy was doomed to fail eventually because it was meant to protect the highest possible criminal act to the United States of America: It was really about treason conducted by the president himself.

As we contemplate the disparate facts presented in the previous chapters and the possible implications of their meaning, a “most likely” explanation that encompasses the overall situation crystallizes into a framework within which these pieces of the puzzle fall into place. It is one that has eluded researchers, survivors, and others for several decades—probably because the implications of this thesis are nearly unthinkable—and people resist considering the worst possible scenarios because of those implications. Though many attempted to “connect the dots” of this enigmatic puzzle, they either failed, or came too close to the appalling facts and have apparently decided to continue to “let the sleeping dog lie.” This hypothesis seems ever more plausible when one considers the numerous other instances of Johnsonian treachery for which he was consistently given the benefit of the doubt. Ultimately, this otherwise inexplicable chain of circumstances was not merely the result of happenstance; no *rational* person—either Israeli or American—could have been the culprit of such an unspeakably outrageous action. Under that premise, it follows that the person responsible for it *was* irrational, indubitably someone with a history of emotional insecurities and known to have experienced psychotic breakdowns.

The reasoned conclusion described next, based on facts that have survived the cleansing process, point directly to the treasonous actions by Lyndon B. Johnson—as he exploited the loyalty and secrecy demanded of all cabinet, intelligence and military officials, and the enlisted men and women on down the hierarchy—which show that he either planned the attack or acquiesced to a master plan written by others within the White House. All the signs previously noted point to Lyndon Johnson as the instigator and the others as merely the planners and facilitators. This assertion is based on the descriptions furnished by some of Johnson’s closest aides of what can be called his “documented psychosis” during this period of time.

The scenario described here uniquely fills in all the “missing links” that exist in other theories. Naturally, these assertions are subject to the scrutiny of others and, pending further investigation and the complete release of all files still being withheld, it will probably remain a mystery for years to come. The ultimate test of its veracity—and any rebuttals to it—must address the previous points, specifically the known mental condition of Lyndon B. Johnson during this period.⁹³² As to the issue of Israel’s culpability—arguably nonculpability, even being the victim of an enormous dosage of Johnsonian manipulation, according to this thesis—it becomes the only realistic alternative to the

present widely held presumption that such a close ally would betray its primary benefactor at a point when the war was essentially already won and therefore there was nothing about the attack that could be imputed to it having been in the interest of Israel or any of its leaders.

It has been established, beyond a shadow of a doubt, that the attack on the USS *Liberty* was not a case of “mistaken identity,” for all the reasons outlined in the previous chapter and especially the convincing testimony of two Navy admirals, including Admiral Thomas H. Moorer who served as chief of naval operations from 1967–70 and subsequently as chairman of the Joint Chiefs of Staff through 1974 and who investigated it intensely in 2003. The fact that after the initial attack gunboats returned to shoot the life rafts, proves conclusively that the Israeli military orders were to make the ship sink and take everyone on board with it: Clearly, the plan was to allow no survivors. What rational Israeli official, knowing that victory was already in hand, would have initiated orders to knowingly and mercilessly attack and sink an American Navy ship with the specific intent to murder every one of its officers and enlisted men? The only realistic answer is “none” of them.

The only logical explanation for this sordid chapter in American history is that the person responsible for it was an irrational, embittered, sociopathic, narcissistic, paranoid, and psychotic individual in the middle of a major manic-depressive meltdown. The only man who was known to have suffered from this amalgamation of psychic disorders was the man who had placed himself at the pinnacle of power within the military apparatus of the most powerful nation in the world and subsequently deemed himself, before a handful of reporters on Air Force One, the “King of the World.” The best candidate for the question “Who ordered the attack on the *Liberty*” was the commander in chief of the United States of America. And that person, on June 8, 1967, was Lyndon B. Johnson.

The meeting Johnson had in Ottawa with Canadian Prime Minister Lester Pearson, described earlier, should be recalled here because of something that had just happened a few days earlier: On May 23, 1967, Lyndon Johnson, acting through the Joint Chiefs of Staff and in concert with Robert McNamara, had ordered the Navy spy ship USS *Liberty* off of its routine patrol on the West Coast of Africa and into what they knew would soon be a war zone off the coast of the Sinai Peninsula, over six thousand nautical miles away. Two days before that, Yitzhak Rabin, the Israeli chief of staff, had visited David Ben-Gurion, the elder statesman and revered godfather of Israel, to brief him on the current military situation. This visit did not turn out well, and Rabin said something to Ben-Gurion that caused him to become very upset with Rabin. The key to what had upset Ben-Gurion was in this paragraph of Peter Hounam’s seminal book, *Operation Cyanide*:

Rabin felt he was being pushed and pulled by dividing loyalties and no doubt hoped Ben-Gurion would provide him with some solace. He was utterly wrong. His recollection of what happened is dramatic: “The Old Man received me warmly, but instead of fortifying my spirits he gave me a dressing-down. ‘*We have been forced into a very grave situation,*’ he warned ... Ben-Gurion kept hammering away. ‘*You made a mistake,*’ he said, referring to our mobilization of the reserves... . ‘*You have led the state into a grave situation. We must not go to war. We are isolated ...*’”⁹³³ [Emphasis

added.]

David Ben-Gurion was obviously furious with Rabin for agreeing to Johnson's audacious, dangerous plan that had the potential to become the "critical mass" that might lead to World War III, with Jerusalem and Tel Aviv targeted by the missiles of the Soviet Union, planted in multiple Arab countries that surrounded Israel. He undoubtedly foresaw the "mushroom clouds" that would inevitably destroy the country of which he had been considered the "Godfather."

When Johnson then went to Ottawa to attempt to enlist the support of Canadian Prime Minister Pearson, he was unsuccessful and it follows that this failure upset Johnson tremendously. It is likely that Johnson used the same strong-arm tactics to persuade Rabin to go along with him and to which he apparently acceded that so upset Ben-Gurion. Obviously they were very secret plans, which have remained buried, or destroyed, but enough ancillary records and artifacts of history have survived to conclude that the plan began to unfold too rapidly, and suddenly the Six-Day War was moved up by ten days, from June 15 to June 5, 1967.⁹³⁴ This caused the war to be over much faster than originally planned and that may have contributed to the curiously poor timing anomaly related to the "something outrageous" action Johnson had evidently forced on Israel.

The "something outrageous" action that apparently triggered this succession of events was most likely related to Johnson's ordering the Israelis to have their Air Force and Navy attack and sink his own ship, the USS *Liberty*, as a way to justify a US attack on Egypt—and any other Arab nation that might want to join their side.⁹³⁵ In Johnson's demented mind, he might have even anticipated a Soviet response, and perhaps he even believed General Curtis LeMay's earlier prediction (he had retired by this point in time) of an inevitable nuclear war between the two superpowers, along with his expectation of immediate victory through a "Sunday punch," LeMay's term for a "first strike." It must be remembered that others who worked with Johnson during this period have stated that he was essentially psychotic, or had unpredictable periods where he slipped into and out of that condition. Johnson's eye was always focused on the implications any action would have on domestic politics; he knew that helping Israel win the pending war—something that remained an official secret to the rest of the world even after the fact, for decades, yet nonetheless "known" to the politically savvy—was a way to guarantee, indefinitely and permanently, his own popularity with Jews within the United States and the many non-Jewish Zionists as well, including many of the Christian faith. The late evangelist Jerry Falwell, for example, proudly called himself a "Christian Zionist."

In Johnson's deluded state of mind, he would also see that it would be a way to create empathy for himself, in the minds of the young people who had taken to camping out across the street from the White House chanting, "Hey, Hey, LBJ, how many kids did you kill today?" He believed that many of the protestors were Jewish, according to J. J. Goldberg, in his book *Jewish Power: Inside the American Jewish Establishment*: "In private meetings, Lyndon Johnson complained about the prominence of Jews in the antiwar movement, calling it hypocritical for Jews to demand that America support Israel but abandon South Vietnam."⁹³⁶ He could not understand why they were not grateful to him

and had become very upset with their inability to understand the complex issues related to the world's problems; he desperately needed to see that everybody "liked him," which to him meant that they should agree with him on everything and question him on nothing. In 1967, Johnson still expected to run again in 1968 for the office he had always known was his destiny. Johnson's paranoia caused him to think that the protestors were being guided by foreign communists and ordered the CIA—contrary to its charter—to begin surveillance of the anti war leadership. This program was named Operation Chaos, and, despite desperate attempts to do so, failed to produce any such evidence.⁹³⁷ Johnson then turned to the FBI, which jumped at the chance to infiltrate peace organizations to disrupt their operations.⁹³⁸

The only solace in the failure to sink the USS *Liberty*, if anything comforting can possibly be said about that sordid episode—which so many people still either don't know about, or, if they do, prefer not to talk about—is that the toughness of the survivors on board kept it from sinking, which Lyndon Johnson had expected and wanted to happen, and their heroism just might have saved planet earth from World War III.

The Development of a Working Hypothesis

Based on the information that has surfaced over the last four decades, it is now possible to begin developing a hypothesis about the still lingering mystery of what went wrong, and why the *Liberty* was attacked. Consider the "someone" who *Liberty* sailor Philip Tourney, in the previous chapter, ominously posited was behind the entire episode, a person who apparently still wanted the ship sunk even after help finally arrived, eighteen hours later, to evacuate the wounded. The use of elementary logic inexorably leads to the conclusive presumption that that "someone" was a man of enormous political power—a man necessarily very high up in the command hierarchy of the US military—and a man whose demented mind decided that the ship and its sailors were not quite done fighting for their lives, and for the ship itself.

Could it have been the same person who had already wished that the ship would "go to the bottom" as a means of ending the international political disaster he had created? He must have been frustrated when the ship did not sink as expected, an event that would have given him the unquestioned authority to order a retaliatory action against Egypt. The fact that help would not arrive for almost eighteen hours, when fighter jets were within fifteen minutes of its location, is proof enough of that point. When Israel called off its attack due to the appearance of a Russian ship on the scene, followed by two US Navy ships, the USS *Davis* and the USS *Massey*, making it impossible to sink the *Liberty* undetected, that same "someone," in a final act of desperation, evidently decided first that no help would be dispatched until the following day and that the ship would then have to fight its way to Malta and, with any luck, would not make it.

At this point—after the wounded had been removed from the ship—the decision to risk exposing the ship further was simply a vengeful act of a desperate and embittered man. Only someone capable of enormous acts of self-delusion would even think that making the ship disappear would somehow help to make the entire episode go away. Only a person

who had repeatedly demonstrated that he thought he could replace truths with lies, and that the lies would become the truth, could have possibly been behind this tragic story. Only a person whose hold on sanity—and the last traces of rationality were intermittent and tenuous at best and completely lost at worst—could come to believe that an outrageous act of treason such as this could be politically beneficial to himself and therefore worth the risk of failure, or worse, public exposure. Johnson's real legacy should be taken from lessons like this: Giving psychotics the keys to the White House, or even put into positions of power on the other end of Pennsylvania Avenue, will come back to bite the democracy that allowed them such easy access.

There was only one person who met those criteria, and he was not in the Israeli military or government. The "someone" referenced by the sailor/survivor/author Phillip Tourney could have only been the president of the United States, Lyndon B. Johnson. But could such a "preposterous" theory actually become the Occam's Razor (i.e., the simplest theory that best fits the evidence is the most likely to be true)?

The problem with other theories on why Israel knowingly attacked an American ship with the intent to sink it fail to consider that it would require that the man having such authority to do something so peculiar—utterly nonsensical—necessarily had to have been in a dangerously psychotic state of mind. Yet, no evidence of previous instances of such behavior is known to exist in the cases of the then-still influential and legendary founder of Israel, David Ben-Gurion, or the then current Prime Minister Levi Eshkol, or the Defense Minister Moshe Dayan, or the Chief of Staff (later Prime Minister) Yitzhak Rabin (except as noted in the next paragraph), or Foreign Minister Abba Eban, arguably the only men who might have had sufficient authority to do something so bizarre. This is not to say that each of them had never done or condoned questionable, probably illegal acts in times of war, but that is not at issue here: The benchmark being set for this case is simply that the perpetrator must have been someone known to be "psychotic"—in this case, no other possible cause makes sense. Just as there is also no known evidence to support an assertion that some lesser, maverick military officer made such a stunning and intrinsically outrageous order on his own.

Yitzhak Rabin did experience a brief nervous breakdown, ironically, on May 23, 1967, just two weeks before the attack and two days after his "dressing-down" by David Ben-Gurion. He had been exhausted from having planned the military build up, all while attending numerous political and strategic military meetings. On May 21, seeking support from the revered David Ben-Gurion, he became upset with the response he received, as described previously, and it became so debilitating to him that he essentially "sat out" the war. Rabin looked "broken and depressed" after the stinging rebuke of Ben-Gurion and fell into a depression that caused him to take several days off. It is noteworthy that his breakdown was of the "depressed" kind, not one of excited outrage. Ezer Weizman, whose duties as Rabin's subordinate in managing and coordinating operations, visited Rabin the evening of May 23, 1967, at Rabin's apartment after Rabin had called him to ask him to take over his post as chief of staff due to an "error" he had committed that had left Israel vulnerable to attack by the USSR just as it was preparing for a fight with its neighboring nations. Weizman stated that the error involved the Israeli air force, which "will decide the

war” and that he had made a “series of mistakes,” the sum total of which, he believed, had compromised their ability to accomplish their mission. Weizman said that Rabin’s voice was faint and weak, that he was clearly depressed and operating “below par” but that he refused to allow him to resign; instead, he said that Rabin agreed to take a few days off to recover from the stress of the moment.⁹³⁹ That “series of errors” probably included having at least three fighter jets exposed to a mission that, if discovered, would have disastrous results for the future of Israel. One facet of that might have involved—or led to the decision to minimize the risk through—the repainting of those jets to eliminate the Star of David from their tail section as a means to keep their identities secret, to give them the “plausible deniability” that certain people so craved.

Neither this nor any other temporary or occasional depression or mildly erratic behavior on his part, or any of the other Israeli leaders, was comparable to one of the thunderous “psychotic episodes” that Lyndon Johnson had experienced during this same period, as reported by credible witnesses and previously described.

The fact that Rabin’s nervous breakdown occurred on May 23, 1967, precisely the same day that Lyndon Johnson, through the Joint Chiefs of Staff and Robert McNamara, ordered the USS *Liberty* off of its routine patrol on the West Coast of Africa, and to proceed at full speed to the Eastern Mediterranean Sea, suggests a cause-effect relationship between the two events. Perhaps Rabin’s psyche had become upset by Ben-Gurion’s furious response two days earlier to a military plan that was already underway, one that he now realized was highly audacious and potentially extremely dangerous to Israel, one that he had been forced to accede to despite his own reservations. Only the most stoic—and morally flexible, strong-willed—man in Israel could have withstood the pushing and pulling that was thrust upon him by Johnson, catching him in an impossible “Catch 22” situation.

Using basic deductive reasoning processes, it can be posited that there was a connection between these events: That Lyndon Johnson, using the most polished facets of his formidable “Johnson Treatment,” doubtlessly ordered Yitzhak Rabin to do something so outrageous that when Ben-Gurion heard of it he reacted very strongly—uncharacteristically so—which so upset Rabin that, within two days, he suffered a nervous breakdown. All of this occurred just as the lead-up to the Six-Day War was fully underway, and that knowledge was too much for Rabin to come to terms with, leading to the tension and stress described by Ezer Weizman and inevitably to the depression and the near-total incapacitation and mental collapse of Yitzhak Rabin.

This overall context of the events leading up to the attack on the USS *Liberty* puts the situation into a clear perspective: That attack was merely one aspect of a much wider plot intended to establish expanded borders for Israel, strengthen its military and intelligence capabilities, secure a stronger relationship with the United States, and diminish the military power of its immediate neighbors. Given that the Six-Day War did accomplish those objectives, it is hard to deny that the goals of the plot did exist and were well executed and ultimately successful in achieving victory for Israel. That wider plot was given a title, “Operation Cyanide.”

Operation Cyanide

Operation Cyanide (so named because if it ever became public knowledge, “we would all be dead”) was planned several months—as much as a year or more⁹⁴⁰—before the *Liberty* attack and had been reviewed by a secret group called the “303 Committee.” This was a successor of the “Special Group” in the Kennedy administration, renamed the 303 Committee after National Security Action Memorandum (NSAM) 303 on June 2, 1964. By 1969 it had been renamed the “40 Committee” and has since undergone additional name changes, the latest being the “National Security Planning Group.”

During Johnson’s presidency its primary objective was to review and provide “CYA” cover for the president, to facilitate covert operations planning.⁹⁴¹ The minutes of the meeting of the “303 Committee,” dated 10 April, 1967—two months *before* the attack—obtained by James Ennes shows that someone wrote “Submarine within U.A.R. [Egypt] waters” on that document, which was part of the *Liberty* file. Irrespective of all the missing documents regarding the *Liberty*, this fact makes its fate an essential part of Operation Cyanide.⁹⁴²

In early 1967, the 303 Committee started the development of an operation to ensure that the United States would be “forced” into the war—to attack Egypt and kill its leader, Nasser—a plan that would ultimately and ignominiously fail. This near-calamitous event, had it not been kept secret by the master of secrecy and deception, would have led to the exposure of President Johnson’s direct involvement in an act of treason against his own Navy ship and the 294 sailors and officers on board. One of the tactical objectives of Operation Cyanide, according to author Peter Hounam, was to have the Israeli Air Force and Navy intentionally attack the spy ship USS *Liberty* so heavily as to ensure that it would sink, and kill all sailors on board; that “sacrifice” would then provide the necessary pretext for the United States to blame Egypt for the attack in order to justify a US attack on Cairo as “a means to an end” and a way to justify having the United States officially join Israel in its war against its Arab neighbors and the Soviet Union, which had maneuvered for years to align itself with them and against Israel. It is not clear whether the plan was expected to end with the Cairo attack or to advance on to Moscow and be the trigger for World War III, as some men in the Pentagon apparently had hoped for, and might have been the inevitable result of the secret plan.

Indeed, according to Greg Reight, a former US Air Force pilot who appears on the BBC video *Documentary on the USS Liberty: Dead in the Water*, the United States even loaned certain attack aircraft to Israel, which were painted with Israeli markings, and also secretly flew eight reconnaissance missions in support of Israel in its attack on Egypt. This was confirmed in the same video by Rafi Eitan, a man who was a member of the Israeli Secret Service, who knew what happened, and indirectly acknowledged that he knew about Operation Cyanide, but was still afraid to talk about it in 2002.⁹⁴³

This thesis posits that Lyndon Johnson, who had a penchant since his college days for closely overseeing, even micromanaging, the most intricate, and secret, plots he became involved with, evidently “took over” the mission and guided it personally, in precisely the

same way as he was then micromanaging the bombing runs in Vietnam. Johnson knew that only he was powerful enough, and capable of ensuring ultimate Israeli success at defeating Egypt, to successfully rid themselves of their biggest enemy, President Gamel Nasser. It is clear that Johnson would have been the single individual who had the cunning and guile, the power and the audacity to have been behind Operation Cyanide. As author Peter Hounam concluded, “No one I interviewed believed it was possible, even for someone like arch-conspirator Jim Angleton in the CIA, to have organised something on this scale without higher authority.”⁹⁴⁴

Johnson may have considered that, by killing Nasser, he would win a lot of votes in places like New York City, Miami, and Los Angeles, and in other cities all across the country, not just among Jews but—given the number of Christians who supported, and still do, steps to strengthen Israel—effectively among the most zealous of Zionists of every faith. Regardless of the merits of the political debates on this subject, the fact is that Lyndon Johnson was the epitome of a consummate and overly obsessive politician, one whose every thought was about the political implications and poll results of every choice he ever made. Johnson would look first at the political pros and cons of major decisions, and he would do the same for the most important of them, the “life and death decisions,” perhaps thinking, by 1967, that since the war in Vietnam wasn’t going too well, and would probably not be sufficient to put him into the same league with Lincoln and Roosevelt, he needed something else to appease the rest of his “subjects.” One must try to put himself or herself into Johnson’s deluded mind to understand his motivations, and then it becomes clear that he must have decided, for his political future, that he needed to “save Israel” and eliminate her enemies, something Americans could relate to, which was severely lacking in Vietnam.

To put it all into context, one must begin with an examination of the traces of Johnson’s actions leading up to and during the Six-Day War and the demonstrable fact that he had surrounded himself with the most zealous of the Zionists, and the most powerful men of that subset. Let’s start with his trip to Ottawa, Ontario, to meet with Canadian Prime Minister Pearson to enlist his support (an unsuccessful mission, fortunately for the Canadians). Then, we’ve noted Johnson’s actions through the Joint Chiefs of Staff to “take over” management of the *Liberty*; his personal direction to Admiral Geis to “recall the wings”; the fact that the men on the *Liberty* were abandoned for nearly eighteen hours as he waited for the ship to sink; his orders to swear all the sailors to secrecy; his decision to accept the token apology from Israel that was initially resisted by them, apparently because they felt that they had been “conned” by him and were merely carrying out his orders; his orders to Admiral McCain for a perfunctory, rushed report instead of an honest and thorough investigation; and finally, as another item in his toolbox, the bestowment of numerous medals to the men on board the ship, even though their treatment belied his true feelings toward them. All of these and his other brazen and bizarre actions underscore the basis of the assertion that Johnson was in direct control of Operation Cyanide, and was also the most likely candidate for having been the original author of the plan and the chief instigator of its execution; and the chief designer of the elaborate cover-up campaign that immediately ensued.

Survivor George Golden, the *Liberty's* chief engineer, provided the most revealing of Hounam's interviews; according to him, "*They didn't want any survivors,' he said. 'I was told when we got into Malta—and I'm not going to mention any names—that their orders were to sink that ship and kill everyone on it. I have nothing to prove it, [but] I have a lot of messages—secret messages; even in Washington they tried to get some of these from me. I won't say where some of this came from. The crew all feel that McNamara and Johnson were looking for an excuse to jump in and help Israel.'*"⁹⁴⁵ [Emphasis added.]

Golden also stated that the alleged messages to warn the *Liberty* to stay 100 miles away from the danger zone were "deliberately blocked," and when asked whether the orders not to help the *Liberty* came from the president, he responded, "Yes." He then said that he knew two of the officers who came to Malta to investigate the incident and one of them said to him, "George, they really did it to you, old boy... . You were a damned guinea pig."⁹⁴⁶ Finally, Golden told Hounam that he talked to Captain William McGonagle at length before McGonagle died, and Golden intimated to Hounam that McGonagle had been warned to expect a mild "strafing attack" as part of a set up. McGonagle went on to say that "'Those SOBs [sons of bitches] really did us in, George.' I said, 'What are you talking about?' and then *he told me that [it was] the President and McNamara—that he had straight information, through Fort Meade [NSA], that when they sent us up from over in Africa, we were there to have this happen.'*"⁹⁴⁷ [Emphasis added.]

Peter Hounam also interviewed a veteran CIA agent, John Haddon, who for ten years worked for James Angleton. Haddon confirmed that Angleton did not have the power to make such a policy decision, that such an action could only have been authorized by the president: "*It was what the President of the United States thought that had the only meaning... . There was the White House and the Pentagon all set to give the Israelis a green light*" [to invade Egypt on the fourth day and go all the way to Cairo].⁹⁴⁸

Hounam's conclusion was that the US Navy did not send its ships to the eastern Mediterranean at that point in time as part of a routine training exercise. The presence of the Sixth Fleet generally and the USS *Liberty* in particular, was all part of a prearranged deployment to support Israel in its planned war with its Arab neighbors: "It implied a degree of foreknowledge at a time when few people were expecting a war."⁹⁴⁹

This astonishing assertion, an *implied degree of foreknowledge*, applies equally to the JCS decision to move the USS *Liberty* into the area over two weeks before the war began, and whoever did that would have known the purpose behind it. To be sure, that was not a move likely championed by *any* of the joint chiefs—no one in his right mind, who valued his military career and reputation, would have risked advocating a dangerous provocation that could set off World War III. Such an audacious, extremely reckless, high risk attack could only have come from the commander in chief, trying yet again to prove his manhood because he was uniquely capable of such reckless decisions, as he had repeatedly proven throughout his life. And no one else there suffered from the deadly combination of psychosis, paranoia, manic-depression, and narcissistic-sociopathic personality, which uniquely applied to him (although General Curtis LeMay might have been a candidate for

such a plot, it couldn't have been him since he had retired two years earlier).

This plan, "Operation Cyanide," was put together by the Johnson White House to enter the war on Israel's side and provide the rationale to the American public to justify it. One part of the plan, according to the credible sources interviewed for the BBC documentary referenced previously, was to sacrifice the *Liberty* off the Sinai coast by having the Israeli military sink it and then blame Egypt and the Soviet Union. Had the *Liberty* sunk, and taken every man aboard to the bottom of the Mediterranean, Lyndon Johnson could have immediately entered the war in the Middle East (which is precisely why he had aircraft loaded with nuclear bombs that were ready for take off hours before the ship was attacked), and forced a confrontation with the Soviet Union that could have provoked a major war, possibly a nuclear war between the two superpowers. He may have been counting on Soviet Premier Alexei Kosygin to back down, but it is difficult to put oneself into the deluded mind of a man who had declared himself "King of the World."

He probably expected this confrontation to have given him the collateral benefit of distracting the students who were protesting the Vietnam War at that time. This was a period when Johnson still expected to run again for the presidency the following year, and he would have tried anything to dampen those protests by an act of deception even greater than he had already accomplished three years earlier with the contrived "attack" by North Vietnam which he then used to secure carte blanche authority from Congress to insert the US military machine into their civil war.

Operation Cyanide was a much larger operation than this critical piece of it, and involved submarines that had been positioned near the *Liberty*. The USS *Amberjack*, a diesel-powered intelligence-gathering submarine, was positioned within a mile of the *Liberty* just as another diesel-powered submarine, the USS *Requin*, and the much larger and more powerful the USS *Andrew Jackson*, a Polaris class nuclear submarine capable of launching nuclear missiles, were also nearby. According to a sailor on board the *Amberjack*—who had agreed to be interviewed for a radio program with *Liberty* survivors Phil Tourney and Ron Kukal to discuss those experiences but decided against it at the last minute—videos and photographs were taken from the submarine's periscope.⁹⁵⁰ Tourney and Kukal previously had several telephone conversations with the *Amberjack* sailor, who stated that photographs and video film were used to record the event through the submarine's periscope. Their failure to get the *Amberjack* sailor to appear on camera with this testimony was a setback to their investigation, but others, who decided to remain anonymous, did offer supporting evidence: According to author Philip Giraldi, writing in *The American Conservative*, several *Liberty* crewmen reported seeing a periscope during the attack, but they had assumed that it was an Israeli submarine, since they had no way to see any part of the ship other than the periscope:⁹⁵¹

The submarine was near enough to the incident to clearly hear throughout the ship the reverberations of every round fired into the *Liberty*'s hull... . the submarine had been equipped with a platform for the mounting of a video camera, which operated through the periscope, and the *Amberjack* both filmed and photographed the entire incident. The photos and videos of the incident made by the *Amberjack* were

subsequently couriered to Washington by a ship's officer, where they were turned over to the Pentagon.

As noted in the previous chapter, still another report of NSA aircraft making at least three, possibly up to six film recordings of the entire attack, was made in a 2007 online *Chicago Tribune* article. One can speculate about how long it might have taken Secretary McNamara to personally deliver the photos and films to the White House for the president's personal inspection; and, to extend the license to speculate a little further, to then ponder Lyndon Johnson's response to these artifacts of his treasons and how long he took to order them to be either burned or buried in the deepest vaults inside the Pentagon.

The prevarications of Lyndon "Bull" Johnson, (his nickname from his college years) can be seen throughout the numerous "discrepancies" in timelines and contradictions between the different statements of men, which still cry out for resolution and the multiple anomalies that cannot be explained by the "official" version of events but fall into a perfectly symmetrical, precisely fitted complex and complete puzzle when analyzed with all relevant factors put into context. The most important of these, Lyndon Johnson's mental state at this point in time, must be the first such factor; all others will then fill the matrix quickly.

There is ample evidence now that these records of what was one of Johnson's greatest blunders—save for Vietnam—show clearly that the reason for the cover-up was to hide his own treasonous acts. Another one of author Hounam's conclusions—that it arouses suspicions of a "pre-arranged plot and falsification of White House records" to attack Cairo—supports these assertions.⁹⁵²

Hounam revealed that a note in the White House logs indicated that Johnson aide Walt Rostow had phoned the president from home the previous evening, sharing a report he had obtained from his brother Eugene (an under secretary of state) regarding the status of the Egyptian President Gamal Abdel Nasser. Johnson was not happy that Nasser was still in his position there, because Nasser, and Egypt, had drifted away from the previous alignment with the United States and had assumed a position within the orbit of the Soviet Union. It was his fear of the expansion of Communist influence in the Middle East, just as it had been his justification of defending the tyrants running South Vietnam three years earlier, that led him to take "decisive actions" in both instances to prevent the "loss" of these sovereign countries. In early 1967, he still expected to run for reelection the following year and he still yearned to be seen as a fearless leader in times of war, just like FDR had been, whose legacy he felt had to be at least matched, if not surpassed. In his previously documented delusional state of mind, he had apparently convinced himself of the invincibility of the United States, and himself, and decided that his group of "intellectuals in residence" would be commissioned to create an action plan to address the intransigence of Nasser.

Another familiar pattern would materialize as soon as the ship was finally rescued: All the survivors of the attack were warned, in no uncertain terms, that they could not reveal the truth of what had happened that day. The BBC documentary *Dead in the Water*

previously referenced includes interviews with some of these men:⁹⁵³

[**Voiceover**] In Malta meanwhile, the *Liberty* men were alarmed by the way Admiral Kidd was steering the inquiry; he seemed to have made up his mind in advance, and was ignoring crucial evidence.

[**Lloyd Painter, survivor**] “I testified about three major items that I had witnessed. One was the Captain’s condition, I also testified about the armor-piercing projectiles that had been sent through our ship, and I also testified about the machine-gunning of the life-rafts by the Israeli torpedo boats. I testified, like I said, for about two and one-half to three hours. I didn’t know, until ... uh, I don’t remem... . months later, *that much of my testimony was never recorded.*”

[**Voiceover**] McGonagle had blacked out during the attack, so the chief engineer took command of the ship. Yet the inquiry wasn’t interested in what he had to say.

[**Chief Engineer George Golden**] “I got so peeved off I couldn’t see straight. Before it broke up, I stood outside the door and wanted to go in there so I could get my say in those minutes that were being taken but he wanted to keep me out of that, almost completely.”

Inevitable Requital: Thirty-six Years Later

The fact that the attack on the *Liberty*, in the eyes of the survivors and others affected by the controversy, remained unresolved, caused a renewed interest in seeking answers to the mystery thirty-six years later, in 2003. Much of this interest was due to the publication of several books, the latest, at that time, being Peter Hounam’s *Operation Cyanide* and video, *Dead in the Water*, both previously referenced. One of the principal critics of the official US government’s version of events was former Admiral and Chairman of the Joint Chiefs of Staff Thomas H. Moorer, who became the chairman of a new, nongovernmental investigation of the attack.

In October 2003, Captain Ward Boston, the Navy’s Chief Legal Counsel for the original board inquiry (headed by Admiral Isaac C. Kidd Jr.) investigating the attack, swore to the truth of the following statement in an affidavit: “*I know from personal conversations I had with Admiral [Isaac] Kidd [Jr.] that President Lyndon Johnson and Secretary of Defense Robert McNamara ordered him to conclude that the attack was a case of ‘mistaken identity’ despite overwhelming evidence to the contrary. Admiral Kidd told me, after returning from Washington, DC, that he had been ordered to sit down with two civilians from either the White House or the Defense Department, and rewrite portions of the court’s findings ... [he further stated that he was ordered to] ‘put the lid’ on everything having to do with the attack on USS Liberty.*”⁹⁵⁴ [Emphasis added.]

Captain Boston admitted that he met with two men from the White House and Defense Department to rewrite the court’s findings and that they were all ordered to “never speak of it” afterward, ever again. We will never know the precise words used between Lyndon Johnson, Robert McNamara, Admiral John McCain II, and on down to Admiral Kidd about the specific instructions and details concerning the necessary steps to take to cover

up this disaster; they have been redacted in the report previously noted and the original files have possibly been destroyed. But Captain Boston's sworn statement excerpted above tells us quite enough about what those orders said. The traces that are there speak loudly and clearly, there is no need for more of the details in order to prove the point any further. Those traces can be seen in the transcripts displayed previously, as well as the descriptions by the men who were there, who witnessed it in "real time" and are still screaming for justice, even if it is merely to hear the complete truth of what happened from an authority who is willing to tell it all and admit that a treason was committed, one that looks more and more like it had been concocted by the deluded commander in chief himself, for nothing but his own political purposes.

The closest we have come to that truth-telling moment, which was then immediately shut down, was recorded in the BBC film documentary *USS Liberty: Dead in the Water*, produced by Christopher Mitchell, based on the research done by Peter Hounam, when two elderly men, Richard Helms and Robert McNamara, were asked about it and both of them refused to even discuss it: Richard Helms, who died shortly after recording this film, in October 2002, and Robert McNamara, who died in July 2009, both stopped short and refused to discuss anything about the *Liberty*. Richard Helms, though appearing to be a discreet, soft-spoken and kindly gentleman in this video was, according to Thomas Powers, his biographer, a "gentlemanly planner of assassinations."⁹⁵⁵ As noted earlier, McNamara eventually admitted his role in the deceit he shared with Johnson when they misled an entire country into believing the absurd story of how small North Vietnamese gunboats attacked two US Navy destroyers as a pretext to create the fiasco called the Vietnam War; he got away with that one, because he claimed it was merely an error in judgment. In contrast to that, in the BBC video previously referenced, Helms said he wouldn't discuss the subject and referred the interviewer to McNamara, to ask him about it, and McNamara ended his interview with the words "*I am not saying anything about the Liberty. Period.*"⁹⁵⁶ [Emphasis is implicit in original video.] The video of these two old men, still unwilling to discuss this event nearly four decades later, nonetheless speaks volumes: Clearly, the reason they wouldn't discuss it was because it would have necessarily meant that they would have had to admit to their active complicity with treasons committed within the White House for the primary purpose of attempting to repair the damage done to Lyndon Johnson's political position caused by his arrogant mishandling of the Vietnam War.

The inescapable result of an objective evaluation of all the evidence accumulated to date inexorably leads to the conclusion that Lyndon Johnson masterminded Operation Cyanide (i.e., created the general plan, though not the details, which were—as before, in Dallas—delegated to the hierarchy below him). His American-Zionist and Israeli henchmen might have helped guide him toward this plan, but it is inconceivable that they could have accomplished any of it without Johnson's aggressive backing and instigation. As before, when he threw his manic support behind a high-risk plot to achieve his previous objective to become president, he would be "all in," vigorously pushing or pulling everyone else around him, threatening them with every secret he knew about them, or, failing that, patronizing and begging them and offering personalized gifts for their support. The very

same techniques already described throughout this book would be employed to anyone he knew who might need his special brand of cajolery. Their religious affiliations, if any, their racial genes, the color of their skin, eyes or hair, or any other component of their DNA, meant nothing to him, except through the political prism through which Lyndon Johnson had categorized them and how that fitted into his master plans to use them and then, if necessary, throw them under the LBJ bus, just as he had done with countless others.

This factually based story (the complete, unabridged reports and other evidence such as the films made through the periscope of the *Amberjack*, other submarines, and airplanes—if they still exist at all—are well hidden in a Pentagon vault, where they will probably remain for many more decades, possibly forever) is the most veritable possibility as to whom the instigator might have been. Given the magnitude of the attack, the risk of exposing the real truths about the thirty-sixth president, and damages wrought by the cover-up, it is doubtful that the world will ever know with absolute certainty the complete “real story.” This summary, patched together on the basis of the work of previous researchers, as cited, may be as close to the truth as we will ever get.

Paradoxically, this is one of the most fundamentally important, albeit tragic, products of Johnson’s presidency, yet one of the most secret, to this day. Some of that is due to its being ignored by every other Johnson biographer and virtually the entire “Fourth Estate,” the compromised journalism industry and individual news reporters whose constitutional function was created for the purpose of keeping politicians honest (which comes close to being the epitome of an oxymoron, at least for many of them). The reason for how such an outrageously treacherous and treasonous presidential act has been left essentially undiscovered for nearly half a century is, of course, that it is one of the clearest examples of how Johnson has been given the “benefit of the doubt” once again by those authors and reporters. The missing by-lines to this more complete, never-before-published story helped to salvage his elusive “legacy” as a great president. Had he not already been proclaimed as psychotic by some of his closest aides, this story would not have been believable. Yet that is precisely what helps to prove its veracity.

The process of evaluating this particular disaster should begin at the top, with an examination of the possible motives of President Lyndon B. Johnson who, in collaboration with his senior advisers and the Pentagon, ordered the USS *Liberty* into the area as a replacement for another (unarmed) spy ship, which was already there. We must start there because his reasons for doing this had no apparent relevance to its being better equipped to conduct spying operations than the similar ship already there; the need to replace it with another spy ship, which was six thousand miles away from the eastern Mediterranean when it was ordered to move there, must have been for other reasons. At least twice, possibly three times, before lunch in the White House that day, June 8, 1967, Lyndon Johnson and Robert McNamara ordered the recall of jet fighters dispatched to protect the *Liberty* and ordered Admiral John S. McCain II to cover up their actions, which he faithfully did. And he did so forcefully, exercising his powers as an admiral through the military chain of command; his orders would suppress the truth of what happened, by demanding silence from the 260 men who had survived the attack. These assertions stand apart from the conclusions drawn by the author, which follow, for they have all been

documented and they prove conclusively that Johnson's actions exposed his intent to abandon his men and the ship. The larger question is "What was the USS *Liberty* doing in the area in the first place, and who maneuvered her into this position and what was that person's intent in doing so?"

Admiral McCain's orders—clearly, orders having their origin in the Oval Office, for a perfunctory "official" review and to force all the sailors and officers on board to keep their mouths shut—were sufficient to keep the matter in check for a decade and a half; but the real story being hidden was too large, the pain felt by brave men who should have been treated like heroes was too enormous, and felt by too many men, to be suppressed forever. The strict military secrecy protocols were insufficient to contain the suppressed truths, because this was not just another run-of-the-mill case of official misdeeds being disguised. However, that veil of secrecy did work for a dozen years, until the first book, James M. Ennes's *Assault on the Liberty*, was published in 1979. That was long enough to make a very "hot" story become a "cold" story.

The Tension between Truth and Myth Continues, Unabated by Time

The long-suppressed yet inexorable "outing" of historic truths, boosted by the publication of Peter Hounam's book *Operation Cyanide* and the video *Dead in the Water*, resulted in much greater public interest in 2003. That attention gave rise to the 2003 reinvestigation noted previously. The results of the still-redacted "official" inquiry have proved to be inconclusive and completely unsatisfactory to the majority of the most-affected survivors and their families. Their unrequited concerns are related to those "untold" parts symbolized by the numerous redactions in that report. They are also related to the continued "taboo" status of even openly discussing the matter within the government itself.

Even to this day, the officials at US military academies refuse to allow their students to "embarrass our ally" Israel by asking about what happened to the USS *Liberty*, as evidenced in the following article by award-winning journalist Thomas E. Ricks, titled "Was There Academic Freedom at Annapolis during the Israeli Ambassador's Visit?" in the January 23, 2012, issue of the magazine *FP—National Security*.⁹⁵⁷

When the Israeli ambassador [the same Michael B. Oren who wrote the book *Six Days of War* discussed previously] visited the US Naval Academy last week, students were instructed not to bring up the USS *Liberty* incident, reports one midshipman.

The midshipman says the pre-visit instructions were along the lines of, "It is not appropriate, in a setting like this, to bring up any major points of contention during conversation, current or historical. It is okay to talk about issues like Iran or the two-state solution, where our nations have a largely common view. But it's not okay to bring up grievances like the USS *Liberty*, if you are familiar with that incident."

The irony of the actions of US Navy brass, in prohibiting even a dialog about the tragic fate of one of their own ships, speaks volumes about the nature of the real story. It is apparently still the official expectation that, in time, this will just go away and become a very distant "bump in the road" if only people would stop talking about it, which is reason

enough to explore it in depth in our examination of the real legacy of Lyndon B. Johnson. Princeton Professor Richard Falk, speaking on the forty-fifth anniversary of the *Liberty* attack, stated that:

I think it is really extraordinary that Israel, America's supposed close ally, would actually carry out such an attack. The *Liberty* was well marked and in international waters, but what is more, I think, and more revealing and most disturbing is that the American government would suppress the reality of what happened and engage in a cover up all these years, *a dynamic of misinformation originally insisted upon by Lyndon Johnson, the president at the time ...* the US government was more prepared to allow this criminal sacrifice of its own people without a whimper of protest than to tell the American people the truth about what happened and why. *It seems that even in 1967 Johnson was worried about a domestic Jewish backlash that would hurt his political standing if Israel were to be blamed for the attack.*

[The Six-Day War was portrayed] as a war in which Israel had no choice but to defend itself against the prospect of imminent Arab aggression. It's only now that we in the public are beginning to get a more accurate sense of the reality. There was an important article by Miko Peled the son of one of the leading Israeli generals at the time ... in which he recounts on the basis of very reliable documentation that *Israel did not perceive a threat in 1967 and that they understood that there was no danger at all [from] its Arab neighbors [that they] could attack them with any harmful effects on Israeli security.* But what the Israeli leadership at the time did see was an attractive opportunity for expand[ing] their territorial domain, and as well, they saw an excellent opportunity to destroy the military capabilities of their Arab neighbors. And so what was presented, again with the active complicity of our government, whose intelligence operative knew better, was a complete false conception. *Put simply, a war of aggression was portrayed as a war of necessary self-defense, the overall claim being that Israel's survival was at stake unless it struck first. To indulge such a fiction was to cast aside the most fundamental inhibition embedded in the UN Charter, namely, the absolute prohibition on a war of aggression, what the Nuremberg Judgment treated as Crimes Against the Peace.*⁹⁵⁸ [Emphasis added.]

The evolution of this story now rests with the answer to the question posed by Thomas E. Ricks in his article noted previously, about censorship of intellectual curiosity in 2012 at the US Naval Academy: "Was there academic freedom at Annapolis during the Israeli ambassador's visit?" Clearly the answer is no because the story is too embarrassing to both the officials at the Naval Academy as well as the Israeli ambassador. They are caught in a quandary brought about by the efforts on both sides to keep the lid on what really happened to the *Liberty*, and the most plausible reason can only be that revealing the complete truth of the incident would be even more embarrassing than continuing to live with the lies planted in 1967 to cover it up. It is because the real story is one of a maniacal, psychotic president who connived to create another false flag attack on a US warship, fully intending to have it sink with no survivors. And that should be within the top five bullets in his legacy for his lifetime accomplishments award, labeled "Treason No. 3" (in chronological order, regardless of the subjective question of orders of worseness).

As previously noted, Lyndon B. Johnson—based on the statements of aides, associates, enemies, friends, and mistresses—had well established patterns of such behavior. It is this singular element that other books and studies of the *Liberty* incident have either omitted inadvertently or not examined because of an unstated paradigm that all men who become president, or attain other high office, are axiomatically rational, prudent, honorable, and patriotic men of goodwill. Yet that paradigm has been disproven numerous times, especially vis-a-vis the thirty-sixth president of the United States. Indeed, the one axiom that can be gleaned from a complete and open-minded analysis of it is that only a deranged psychopath could have created such an event as an attack on his own ship, intending to sink it with all the men aboard, and doing so merely for his own political gain.

How could a prudent and rational person take the actions that Lyndon Johnson has been proven to have taken? The cover-up was quickly executed to hide what was clearly an appallingly treasonous, unthinkable cruel, abhorrently immoral, transparently illegal, and brazenly executed criminal action—an attack on his own ship. This point, that only a person functioning without an active conscience—a hardened sociopath—or one whose id was not in equilibrium with his superego, should be considered the Occam's Razor of the USS *Liberty* incident. After considering the complete picture of what transpired over several weeks leading up to the attack and, guided by the Sherlock Holmes rule of deduction—"When you have excluded the impossible, whatever remains, however improbable, must be the truth"—such a conclusion is the best, most reasonably veritable explanation of the incident (admittedly, only when viewed through the tortured and demented mind of Lyndon Johnson).

As one reflects on this thesis, some may experience an epiphany as the point becomes clear: it fits perfectly into the overall pattern of behavior repeatedly demonstrated by Lyndon Johnson in his efforts to cover up other incidents of his treacherous actions. To better understand the basis of the charge, consider the questions this conundrum begets, and the most plausible answers to those questions, which also point in a singular direction. If the truth were fully revealed, the most likely story, as one proceeds to peel the onion, would probably be reduced to the following:

- The entire scheme had been planned, in absolute secrecy in the "back rooms" of Arlington and Langley, Virginia, and the Foggy Bottom area of Washington, DC, and discreetly discussed over dinner tables in Georgetown and Tel Aviv, over a period of many months; the germ of the idea was planted, just as he had done time and time again since his college days running the "White Stars" from behind the scenes to take over the campus and throughout his political career, by Lyndon B. Johnson.
- The *Liberty* was brought 6,000 miles from its normal patrol along the coast of western Africa, to the eastern Mediterranean—a trip taking two weeks, at full speed—as other American ships, including another spy ship, were ordered out of the same area. By the time it arrived on the scene, the Six-Day War was practically over, some of the Arab nations were already in full retreat, and a "cease fire" was already being negotiated at the United Nations.

- When the *Liberty* finally showed up in the area on the fourth day of the war, Israeli military officials began, early that morning, surveilling the ship for over seven hours. After these overflights, some of which came so close to the *Liberty* that officers on the deck even waved at the Israeli pilots, who smiled and waved back, there is no question that this very unique, clearly marked American warship was positively identified.
- The story about how it was mistaken for an old, rusty Egyptian horse transport ship less than half its size, which was then rusting away at a dock, is just as absurd as other official cover-ups from Dallas, Memphis, and Los Angeles, starting with the “Magic Bullet.”
- The *Liberty*, practically defenseless, armed only with four machine guns, was not given any backup support, as requested by its captain, as it sailed directly into the war zone, barely in international waters.
- Israel had essentially defeated Egypt on the first day of the war (four days before) when the Israeli air force destroyed practically the entire Egyptian air force within eighty minutes, simultaneously with their attacks on the Jordanian and Syrian borders (which, by the third day of the war, Israel had also essentially defeated).
- The US Navy fighter jets and the A-4 bombers carrying nuclear bombs that had been sent to defend the *Liberty* were recalled by Lyndon Johnson a second time, after Robert McNamara had already recalled the first sorties.
- Israelis stated that the attack was prompted by signs that the *Liberty* was trying to make an escape at an incredible thirty knots, when it was only capable of a top speed of seventeen to eighteen knots, and was then loitering at only five knots, just enough to guide the ship by keeping its speed in sync with its rudder.
- After finally acknowledging the *Liberty*’s dire situation, it took nearly eighteen hours for help to arrive, when the fighter jets of the Sixth Fleet of the US Navy were only fifteen minutes away. The only reasonable explanation for that was because “someone” still wanted it to sink and take the sailors with it.
- The *Liberty*, in practically unsailable condition, was then ordered to proceed to Malta, a week away, instead of the island of Crete, which was nearby.
- The heroic *Liberty* crewmen, those lucky enough to have survived, were sworn to absolute secrecy, told to never discuss the incident with anyone under threat of courts-martial or life in prison, or “worse.”
- One of the crewmen was even ordered to change his name. In the video “Loss of Liberty: The Real Story About the USS *Liberty*,” Bill LeMay stated: “[In the hospital ship] I noticed that I had a name tag with ‘Smith’ on it ... an officer came in and told me from now on my name was Smith and I was never on the *Liberty* and I was never to talk about it to anyone.”⁹⁵⁹ Was someone so paranoid about the name “LeMay” that he decided that this man was ordered to change his name to “Smith”?
- The USS *Liberty* crewmen were given a total of 840 medals, ranging from the Medal

of Honor for the commander to Navy Crosses, Bronze Stars, Silver Stars, a Presidential Unit Citation, and over two hundred Purple Hearts, but not one of them indicated the whereabouts of the *Liberty* and no mention was made of Israel's involvement.⁹⁶⁰ There is no question that medals were deserved, but the numbers involved suggest a repetition of Johnson's pattern of using medals as part of his manipulation of men: "Give them enough recognition and they will keep their lips sealed."^{*}

- Rear Admiral (two stars) Isaac Kidd was promoted to a four-star admiral and commander of the Atlantic fleet and Admiral McCain was recognized for his willingness to bow to the president and carry out treasonous orders; shortly after the *Liberty* attack, he was promoted and put in charge of the US Navy's Pacific fleet.⁹⁶¹ As noted by author Jeff Gates, "By advancing the careers of senior Naval officers complicit in the cover-up, Johnson signaled future generations of military leaders that they can expect promotions if, following orders, they abandon their tradition of duty and honor ... LBJ set a precedent for rewarding military commanders who subordinate their honor to Israeli interests."⁹⁶² The last part of Gates's sentence, in my opinion, should read, "commanders who subordinate their honor to that of Lyndon B. Johnson," though that is arguably a "distinction without a difference" in this case.
- President Johnson went on television and lied repeatedly to the American people about the details of the attack. He announced to them that four sailors were killed in the "six minute accidental" attack. Did he figure that by acknowledging a few deaths instead of thirty-four, and six minutes instead of ninety minutes, the arbitrary numbers allowed him enough "wiggle room," knowing that the true facts were safely sealed away and whatever he stated would become the "official truth," which was his usual mind-set? This is a crystal-clear example of one of Johnson's hallmarks, according to many of his aides: whatever Lyndon said, even knowing it was untrue, became the truth, and anyone who questioned it was mistaken, or would become tagged as the real liar.
- Finally, Lyndon B. Johnson, after implicitly giving Commander McGonagle hero status by awarding him the Medal of Honor, then shunned him into being presented the medal at the Washington Navy Yard by the secretary of the Navy, instead of presenting it himself at the White House, according to normal protocol. [*Could it be that Lyndon Johnson was incapable of doing this presentation, the usual practice, because he would have had to look McGonagle in the eye?*]. McGonagle was also given a promotion and the command of a newly commissioned ship.⁹⁶³

Regarding the last point, Admiral Thomas Moorer stated: "I must have gone to the White House fifteen times or more to watch the president personally award the Congressional Medal of Honor to Americans of special valor... . So it irked the hell out of me when McGonagle's ceremony was relegated to the obscurity of the Washington Navy Yard and the medal was presented by the Secretary of the Navy. This was a backhanded slap.

Everyone else received their medal at the White House. President Johnson must have been concerned about the reaction of the Israeli lobby.”⁹⁶⁴ He added, “The way they did things, I’m surprised they didn’t just hand it to him under the 14th Street Bridge.”⁹⁶⁵ If it seemed that Admiral Moorer was still seething with rage about how *they* (meaning Lyndon Johnson’s administration) “did things” he can be forgiven under the circumstances.

Even at the Washington Navy Yard, there was no mention of the specific circumstances of McGonagle’s award, including any reference to Israel or the Six-Day War, even the Mediterranean Sea, where the “incident” occurred. In fact, according to Admiral Arleigh Burke, chief of naval operations, this award was stated to have been the result of McGonagle’s service in *Vietnam*. Burke went on to say, “I don’t know yet why we didn’t protect that ship ... why the Israelis would take such terrific chances. It must have been something very important to them to decide to attack without considering the probability of war.”⁹⁶⁶ It apparently didn’t occur to Admiral Burke that there might be another, more plausible, explanation for this outrageous incident.

McGonagle continued his own personal investigation for many years, attempting to find out more about what happened to his ship. According to James Scott, author of *The Attack on the Liberty: The Untold Story of Israel’s Deadly 1967 Assault on a US Spy Ship*, he secretly kept notes that he had made regarding the medical facts of how each of his men had died. As Scott described it, McGonagle discovered some of the secrets that had been hidden before he died, but he had not heard the worst of them: That some of the highest “American officials *had contemplated sinking his ship at sea to block reporters from photographing the damage and sparking public outrage against Israel.*”⁹⁶⁷ [Emphasis added.]

The decision to attack the *Liberty* was made several weeks before it occurred, as established previously in the discussion about Operation Cyanide; it may have been made months before, in the earliest planning for the operation. The rationale for that is based on the sum total of the string of facts as previously outlined; each of them, looked at in isolation and apart from the others, are enigmas that make no sense in this narrow view. But when brought together, and looked at in context—specifically including Johnson’s state of mind by 1967, as observed by Richard Goodwin, Bill Moyers and others previously described—they aggregate into a very distinct pattern. In his deluded mind, Johnson likely thought that he could gain the approbation of millions of Jews, many of whom were opposed to his Vietnam policies and had actively protested them. Johnson might have thought that he could garner their support by being aggressively proactive to assist Israel to win its war; he only needed a good excuse to justify his actions to everyone else. Simultaneously, he viewed Nasser as having “gone over” to the Soviet side and he apparently thought that killing him might bring the Egyptians to their senses so they would return to America’s fold.

But the larger thesis—that it was Johnson who cunningly choreographed the movement of the *Liberty* into harm’s way in the first place, and then persuaded someone very high up in the Israeli government (first Yitzak Rabin, until he reacted adversely to Ben-Gurion’s

fury after he had been briefed, then probably Moshe Dayan,** someone evidently having a thicker skin) to order the attack, knowing that the ship and all the men aboard would be sacrificed—explains why Israeli leaders were obviously caught unprepared for having to explain how it was all a case of “mistaken identity.” They didn’t expect to have to explain anything because there was little doubt that the mission would succeed and the *Liberty* would sink, and Egypt would be laid to waste in the ensuing attack. Despite their perseverance, creativity, and determination, none of their explanations made any sense to the professional and honorable US Navy officers cited within the various books and videos referenced who have sought out the truth of the matter. That also explains why Johnson was so frustrated when the mission “failed” because the *Liberty* did not sink as he undoubtedly had been assured would happen. He then went so far as to announce on the secured military radio link, as attested to by Admiral Lawrence Geis and others, that he “*did not care if every man drowned and the ship sank, but that he would not embarrass his allies. I want that Goddamn ship going to the bottom. No help. Recall the wings.*”⁹⁶⁸ It is admittedly unbelievable that Commander in Chief Lyndon B. Johnson said those words, but he did and there are multiple links to various websites at which this assertion can be verified, and was verified by the men who heard it, should the reader remain in a state of shock and disbelief.

It was these frantic reactions, a pattern that he had demonstrated time after time as previously documented, that proves this thesis: Johnson not only placed the *Liberty* in jeopardy in the first place, through his usual cunning, guile, and cowardly machismo, but he then persuaded high Israeli officials to attack and sink it. And then, twice (through McNamara’s voice the first time), Johnson personally ordered the fighter jets to be recalled, which were already on their way to defend the *Liberty*. And finally, apart from all previous frantic actions and reactions, he then stated that he wanted the ship to “go to the bottom,” sailors and all.

When the totality of evidence of his treasonous actions is juxtaposed to this hypothesis, the dots summarized here form a familiar pattern, one that is consonant with other instances of Johnson’s enigmatic past, as previously reviewed. The product of this exercise is not unlike resolving other “unsolvable enigmas” through the rigorous application of fundamental logic and deductive reasoning processes. One need not have a PhD in philosophy, political science, or history to understand this thesis; it is the only reasonably conceivable explanation for a tragic, still unresolved, event that is otherwise inexplicable and therefore, it is the most realistic explanation for the continuing mystery about the attack on the USS *Liberty*.

The pattern he established three years earlier, having planned for months how he would incite the Vietnamese “attacks” on his own ships, the USS *Maddox* and the USS *C. Turner Joy*, is an obvious precedent. The clearest of the patterns—the cunning and guile reflected in the meticulous planning, the absolute secrecy entailed in its execution, especially the use of military protocols and enforcement by threats of courts-martial “or worse”—is also reminiscent of precisely the same methods used for all military men involved in the transportation, mutilation, and so called “autopsy” of John F. Kennedy’s dead body nearly four years earlier.

Had it been any other president saying that he wanted a US ship to sink and all the sailors to be killed, the account would automatically be discarded as absurdly outrageous and a transparently ridiculous lie. But it was *not* “any other president.” It is, by now, not only believable but, because the president was Lyndon B. Johnson, such actions from him come as quite believable, given that the term “credibility gap” was coined to describe the intrinsic worthlessness of his words. He was the man distrusted by practically everyone who really knew him *before* he had acquired the magical and near-universal imprimatur of public respect that is automatically conferred to whomever holds the office of the president of the United States, at least until that person destroys his own credibility through incompetence or having a tin ear to what the public really wants. This included people who had known him for decades, when he was called “Lying Lyndon” or “Bullshit Johnson,” the former high school bully and college leader of his own secret society that eventually ruled the campus. His followers in those early years were not much different than the sycophantic aides he used and abused in later years; the only real difference was their age and the pay scales they were able to secure in exchange for continually “swallowing their scruples.”

In his jaded mind, his loyalties and values—more than any military, diplomatic, or legislative precedent achieved by himself or any of his predecessors—were always centered on what all narcissists prize: that which would benefit himself. In this case, the financial backing and political power of his most influential supporters, specifically his long-term Jewish friends, primarily in New York, Hollywood, and Washington. It was that influence which he could not jeopardize, for losing it would mean the end of his political career, and in 1967 he was at the pinnacle of power, having achieved his lifetime dream, even having proclaimed himself “King of the World.” His political career was still worth more, to him, than the lives of a few hundred nameless sailors and officers who had the misfortune of serving on board one of his many ships that he played as pawns on a global chessboard. His apparent belief, that he could “win over” many of the critics of his Vietnam policies—who he believed were being led by young Jewish people—by defeating the enemies of Israel once and for all, was all the motive he needed to justify the highest-risk operation of his presidency and then, when it failed, one of the broadest and most brutal cover-ups of his career.

The Long Tail of Ramifications, Repetitions, and Retributions

Even after the *Liberty* disaster, Lyndon Johnson continued having a perverse view of the US military’s need to protect its ships and its own sailors. Seven months after the USS *Liberty* episode, another navy ship, the USS *Pueblo* was attacked, hijacked in international waters, and then permanently held by North Korea; the crew was then imprisoned, tortured, nearly starved, and not released for eleven months. The ship is still being held by North Korea, as a war trophy on display for visitors to that dreary nation. One explanation for this incident might have been because the North Korean leader, Kim Il Sung, being of a mind not dissimilar to Johnson’s, simply wanted to witness the fecklessness of the US government under President Johnson firsthand; Kim Il Sung was not the only head of state from around the world who must have pondered the real story about the USS *Liberty* incident, and how the most powerful albeit cowardly man in the world mishandled it and

then dithered wildly as he tried to conduct the obvious cover-up of his own treason. Johnson may have even given Kim Il Sung the confidence he needed to carry on his own audacious agenda, seeing the affirmation before him: psychotics do run much of the world.

The difference between the two incidents, both of which involved similar US spy ships, was that the *Pueblo* was attacked not by an ally, but an enemy. Instead of covering that one up, Johnson made sure that it was heavily reported, as he encouraged public outrage, even though he did nothing to protect the ship except order the drafting of fifteen thousand more reservists, and “the United States experienced a brief flush of patriotic fervor.”⁹⁶⁹ Commander Lloyd Bucher, the skipper of the *Pueblo*, acknowledged to the aforementioned author James Scott that the lack of a serious investigation of the *Liberty* was partly to blame for the *Pueblo* incident, that if the lessons that should have been learned, and analyzed—and the necessary procedural changes implemented—the *Pueblo* might have been better able to deal with the situation. Author Scott concluded by making note of the similar patterns brought out by these two attacks: “The similarities are a terrible confusion in command and control, a lack of response to desperate calls for assistance during the attack, and a cover-up for incompetency at the top.”⁹⁷⁰

When asked by a *Time* magazine correspondent, who reported the incident in the issue of that magazine dated January 29, 1968, why he wouldn’t dispatch gunboats to protect the *Pueblo*, Johnson’s response was, “If we started sending gunboats out to protect everybody gathering information we’d have a budget of five hundred billion dollars every year. That harassment is part of the job. It is just like you driving home at night and you come up to a stop light, and there’s some nigger there bumping you and scraping you.”⁹⁷¹ This unusually candid statement reveals more about Lyndon B. Johnson’s real persona than merely his desultory support of the military men he commanded; it goes to how he really felt about black people as well, belying his last-minute “turnaround” three years earlier, when he suddenly came out in support of JFK’s Civil Rights Bill once Kennedy was dead; only then did he support that legislation, after having impeded it all during his vice presidential years. Thoughtful people should detect the implicit “disconnect” of that contradiction but, to this day, Lyndon Johnson is still known by many people (because that is what they are told in their high school history classes) as the great emancipator of African Americans, right up there with Abraham Lincoln.

In his autobiography, even the doctrinaire Dean Rusk agreed that the “misidentification” excuse was not possible and asserted that the State Department did not accept it; he also implied that he and other officials had come to believe that the Israelis had lied about not having planned to use the episode to expand its borders, even though they had denied it as the war broke out. When he reminded Abba Eban, the Israeli Foreign minister, that they had previously stated that they “had no territorial ambitions,” the response he got was, “We’ve changed our minds.”⁹⁷²

The deceit about the real mission of the *Liberty* and its attack by an ally remains a sore point in the relationship between the United States and Israel to this day because of President Johnson’s deceit and his actions to destroy his own ship, with the loss of all,

nearly 300 men, aboard that vessel. The reason it still persists is the inevitable consequence of the cover-up immediately invoked by Johnson, which caused the truth to be hidden for so long, specifically the fact that all officers and enlisted men who survived the attack were sworn to secrecy in the most emphatic terms. Years later, when some of the sailors did begin talking about it, the others became involved, some of them reacting very aggressively to an attack that they believed was unilaterally caused by Israel alone. The thought that the president of the United States might have been the true instigator of an attack on his own ship had never occurred to them.

It is easy to see how this issue has exacerbated the divisions within our own nation regarding Israel, and the tenuous relationship it created between the two; this incident has become a part of the continuing and growing, ageless chasm that has long divided the world as the distrust it created has still not receded. Regardless of how one looks at it, the Six-Day War was only one battle of a very long string of battles, a centuries-old clash of civilizations. The War, in the larger context, was foretold thousands of years ago and centers on Jerusalem, which, lamentably, happens to be located at the geographic center of three major world civilizations, two of which predated even the original Biblical era. It is more than a little ironic that people of all three of these major religions of the world have, for countless generations, referred to Jerusalem as “the city of peace.”

The bottom line of the results, which can readily be tabulated from this watershed event, was that the Six-Day War, into which the USS *Liberty* had sailed, transformed Israel from a small state into a major, militarily powerful nation located in the center of the world’s most ancient civilization. Israel had steadfastly denied that, in initiating the war, there had been any intention of holding on to the lands captured after winning it. In fact, according to the research done by the aforementioned Peter Hounam, many of the highest officials and leaders of Israel, including Moshe Dayan and David Ben-Gurion, were not comfortable with the notion of retaining the occupied territories. Rather, they viewed the return of those lands as an opportunity to trade the land back, in exchange for an assurance of achieving a sustainable peace.⁹⁷³ If the foremost leaders of Israel were opposed to the expropriation of these lands, then one may reasonably ask: “Who led them in that direction, and what incentives were put before them to change their minds and retain the ‘spoils of war,’ a war that the evidence previously presented shows was started by Israel after months of planning?”

When Israeli Foreign Minister Abba Eban declared that they had “changed their minds” and decided to hold on to the new territories gained during the war—the Old City of East Jerusalem, the Sinai and the Gaza Strip, the Jordanian territory west of the Jordan River known as the West Bank, and the Golan Heights, on the Israeli-Syrian border and Sheba’s Farms—it meant not only a tremendous geographic growth but the acquisition of millions of Arabs from an area formerly part of Palestine. The premise of that decision was based on an assumption that the “Palestinian problem” that came with it could be contained eventually, though that result has still not occurred even as their proportion of the population within the “occupied” areas has grown over time.

In the weeks and months following the Six-Day War, the UN Security Council

deliberated the possible ways to force Israel to withdraw from the territories captured during the Six-Day War. UN Ambassador Arthur Goldberg (who Johnson had appointed as the successor to Adlai Stevenson in 1965) supported Resolution 242, which required that Israel withdraw “from [the] territories” taken in the war; Goldberg successfully removed the word “the” before “territories,” and with that subtle, hardly noticeable change in wording, thereby allowed Israel to redefine what land would be returned; moreover, it provided the pretext for them to delay any further actions to begin such withdrawals until the Arab nations accepted the terms of the UN resolution. The ambiguous terminology that Goldberg left for future generations to interpret could be construed in many ways—only the Sinai Peninsula has been returned as of this writing—but the remaining territories are considered as “Occupied Palestinian Territory” by Israel’s neighbors and the Palestinians living within its new borders.⁹⁷⁴

There was one other piece of real estate that was immediately returned to the Arabs, which, to this day, remains very controversial to many Israelis: Mount Moriah (commonly referred to as the Temple Mount), was returned to Muslim control almost immediately afterward, because of the actions of one man, Moshe Dayan, who was considered a war hero. His “success” in his career directly connected to his close association with James Jesus Angleton—and, in 1967, by extension, to Lyndon B. Johnson—in the planning and execution of that war. After Israel gained possession of the Temple, Prime Minister Levi Eshkol expected to keep control over it while opening it to all faiths. In fact, he wanted to create a multi faith council to run that compound, composed equally of Muslim, Christian, and Jewish clerics, which would ensure that all faiths would be allowed to worship on top of the mount.⁹⁷⁵ But Dayan thought the Temple Mount should remain in Muslim possession. In his autobiography *Moshe Dayan: Story of My Life*, Dayan clearly stated that the last thing he wanted was the Beit Hamikdash (the Jewish Temple) rebuilt. Without consulting the prime minister or the Knesset, or anyone else, Dayan made the decision himself to give control of the Temple Mount back to the Islamic Waqf, which has since allegedly thrown out relics from the Temple.⁹⁷⁶ At this site purchased by King David thirty centuries ago, at various times during the first 1,200 years after the destruction of the Temple, “a Synagogue sat atop the Temple Mount along with the Dome of the Rock.”⁹⁷⁷ The status quo now is that Jews are allowed to go to the top of the Temple Mount however they are not allowed to pray there—” or even look as though they are praying.”⁹⁷⁸ Dayan did this to ensure that a third Temple would not be built, because that would have been contrary to Jewish tradition, which requires that a new Temple cannot be built until the coming of the messiah.⁹⁷⁹ Another take on this, by the noted author (*Who Murdered Yitzhak Rabin*, among other books), philosopher, and radio show host Barry Chamish, was that Lyndon Johnson blackmailed Dayan into doing this, as a way of penalizing him for failing to sink the *Liberty*.⁹⁸⁰ This assertion comports with everything else we have discovered about Lyndon Johnson’s methods, which also means that it will never be proven, since his most devious acts were never committed to writing.

The ownership of the contested (post-1967) lands remains the contentious issue that

still divides not only the Middle East, but, by extension, the rest of the world: Other nations around the world generally align themselves with one side or the other, while the United States, though it attempts to portray its actions as even handed toward both, clearly remains the single most important ally that Israel has, sending it hundreds of millions of dollars every year in aid, military armaments, and other forms of assistance. This facade of impartiality, which is transparent to most people who are minimally informed, has repeatedly failed in the elusive search for long-term peace in the Middle East.

In the meantime, the shattered remains of the culture that was formerly Palestine and its institutions has continued to disintegrate; perhaps that was all according to the original intent of the planners of the war that tore it apart geographically in 1967. Moreover, the new “status quo” is that millions of people throughout the rest of the world have taken such strident positions on one side or the other that they have even become unable—or simply unwilling—to understand the position of those they oppose. Beginning in 2010, the “Arab Spring” toppled long-standing regimes in that part of the world, causing a paradigm shift that—though initially viewed by many as a positive move toward democracy—has hardened the resolve of the most militant groups to seek a “final solution” that is anything but promising.

Immediately following the Six-Day War, France canceled a previous agreement to sell Israel fifty Mirage jet fighters. Israel then turned to the United States to buy fifty Phantom F-4 jet fighters and, shortly thereafter, American pilots began to teach Israeli pilots how to fly these warplanes. The end result of the war was that Israel gained the defeat of her neighbors, much new land area, and, most importantly, a new and stronger relationship with the United States; in fact, America would become its strongest partner, as it became more distanced from its former European associations. According to Richard Parker, the consular officer of the US embassy in Cairo in 1967: “It was a turning point in our relationship with Israel. Up until that point, we had avoided being a major arms supplier to Israel. Paradoxically, the security of Israel became one of our strategic objectives, which it had never been in the past.”⁹⁸¹ That paradox—despite the reckless and ill-considered attack on the USS *Liberty*, abetted by the fact that the treason was then covered up for decades—has only grown with time, and the nation of Israel has become more and more protected by the same superpower friend it attacked, as it was instructed to do by the deluded Lyndon B. Johnson.

The official “status quo” of this national embarrassment, to this day and despite the near universal consensus of its absurdity, is that the US government has explicitly agreed with the lie that the incident was an unfortunate accident and accepted Israel’s “apology” without question. It could be argued that its level of absurdity is almost as great as the specious “conclusions” of the Warren Report, or the validity of Johnson’s use of the Tonkin Gulf Resolution to justify the Americanization of Vietnam’s civil war. The families of the sailors, linguists and technicians lost, and the more fortunate survivors, probably consider it at least on the same level or even higher than the others.

Patterns of Deceit

Finally, one must observe that the patterns of deceit in this instance run exactly parallel to

the patterns seen previously in the JFK assassination and in other crimes that Johnson had engaged in before that: Perfunctory investigations performed to validate predetermined conclusions; officious reports written in such a way as to posit improbable, fantastic, or impossible scenarios to replace the actual occurrence; “facts” invented to support those canards, and only them; real trails leading elsewhere that were systematically ignored; credible witnesses whose memories were at variance with the official agenda, who were also ignored, ridiculed and discredited, in favor of incredible witnesses whose only value was their willingness to accept orders to modify their memories; stories that leaked out of how the operations in all cases were secretly filmed; similar veils of secrecy immediately put into place, just as key facilitators (whether wittingly or not, involved in the plot) given orders that they could not, or would not, decline. In some cases, they were given choices that put them in a moral dilemma directly in conflict with their sworn military oaths. It is admittedly very difficult, even with the benefit of “20–20 hindsight,” to put oneself into their difficult position, to pass judgment on military men who had a sworn duty to their country—and who had been forced to quickly make a moral choice to follow orders from above, or not—but had been out maneuvered by a particularly unscrupulous politician. All of them, from McCain on down the line, must be fairly judged by the dilemma they individually faced.

These were some of the same patterns that first appeared in Johnson’s actions decades before JFK’s murder. And some were apparent in all the previous murders: Doug Kinser’s in 1951, Sam Smithwick’s in 1952, Henry Marshall’s in 1961, his own sister’s that same year, and the numerous others previously detailed that followed in 1962, and of course JFK’s in 1963. Johnson’s motive in all of them before Kennedy’s was to eliminate those whose reckless statements, or sworn testimony, would be dangerous to his political future. He had become paranoid about anyone he felt could not be trusted to keep his or her lips sealed. A secondary benefit was to remind everyone else involved—just as he had in 1961–62, for Billie Sol Estes and all of his associates and enablers—that they were also being watched and could be on some hit man’s list. There were multiple traces of the same guile—including the use of presidential “commander in chief” authority—to order the compliance of high-level military officers and mid level, professional military personnel, even down to the enlisted men and draftees he forced into service, to follow his instructions. All of these patterns were evident in every one of the previous crimes that Lyndon Johnson had instigated and controlled. The extraordinary lengths taken—as though every critical detail of the operation and its cover-up had been planned well in advance—replicated the sophisticated level of deceit that had been practiced by Lyndon Johnson since his days at San Marcos. Back then, even as a college student, instead of matriculation, he had begun practicing skills of manipulation of people who he had personally chosen, on the basis of their vulnerabilities and weaknesses. He would entice them with promises and flattery, at times with bravado and bribery or, as a last resort, threats and blackmail. Johnson’s primary skill was in getting his quarry to take prescribed steps, compromising his target’s own ethical margins and advancing him or her further toward the goals Johnson had himself set. And it was all done with utmost secrecy, no written records were ever to be kept on any of his most criminal activities. Where there were written records, they would be highly classified and heavily redacted when at last they

were released. Many others still remain secreted away in some vault and others are doubtlessly gone forever, now merely a piece of ash at the bottom of an unmarked landfill in a secret location.

As a participant in the Six-Day War, British Secretary of State for Defence Denis Healey came to such an astonishing distrust and dislike of Lyndon Johnson, obviously during that very war, that when he wrote his memoirs, he used unusually strong language to make his point:⁹⁸²

Lyndon Johnson was a monster. [He was] one of the few politicians with whom I found it uncomfortable to be in the same room. Johnson exuded a brutal lust for power which I found most disagreeable... I could never forgive him for the way he destroyed Hubert Humphrey's personality while Hubert was Vice-President, thus costing the United States the best President it never had. [Emphasis added.]

It is doubtful that that paragraph exists anywhere, among the millions of documents and the grand and eloquent testimonies to Lyndon Johnson's brilliance and greatness, in the LBJ Museum, in any medium. If it does, it would probably be in a room where all the "mean letters" are kept, safely out of sight from the curious tourists and earnest researchers who want to learn all they can about the thirty-sixth president of the United States. After the decades of deceit, it is now apparent that Denis Healey wasn't the only one who had experienced "negative vibes" from Lyndon Johnson. Many who got to know Johnson during this period came to the realization that he was quite unstable, undoubtedly mentally ill, at times apparently even showing uncontrolled, psychotic behavior

Robert S. McNamara: "Whiz Kid" Finally Sees Through the Fog of War After Committing Treasons as Johnson's Puppet

Robert McNamara told author Peter Hounam that he admitted he found himself at odds with the immediate official assessment of the Six-Day War, which were that it had cost Gamal Nasser his status and prestige and that he had been weakened so much that he would be eventually overthrown.⁹⁸³ When Nasser died three years later of a heart attack, five million people, mostly from other Arab countries went to his funeral; evidently, someone erred in that "official assessment."

McNamara disagreed with those conclusions, but by the time he told that to Hounam, decades later, it was already clear that Nasser's position was stronger immediately after the war, both within Egypt and among other Arab nations and that the Russians would return to the Middle East stronger and in greater force than before. Yet it was by this slim thread that he claimed had put him in direct confrontation with Lyndon Johnson, and that that was the reason he left later that year.⁹⁸⁴ An alternative, more persuasive, explanation might be that he left because he finally saw through Johnson's treachery and knew that they had both committed treason in planning the attack on the *Liberty*, pressuring Defense Minister Moshe Dayan (absent the ailing Chief of Staff Rabin, who had gotten too much of a dosage of the "Johnson Treatment") to carry it out and then refusing to allow Navy airmen, or other ships, to go to its aid until nearly eighteen hours after the attack. That

delay was clearly intended to give the ship plenty of time to sink, which everyone assumed would happen but didn't.⁹⁸⁵

McNamara probably also finally figured out that he had been “brainwashed”—like presidential candidate George Romney came to realize in 1967 and whose acknowledgment of that caused so much political uproar that it brought about the end of his political career in 1968—by US military and diplomatic officials in Vietnam into believing there was a national security reason for committing the nation's resources, and young, patriotic men's lives, to fight in a third world civil war on the other side of the world for negligible American interests. And he must have realized by then that all the lies about “body counts” and how victory was just “over the horizon” or “around the corner” would not make these things true. McNamara resigned in November, and left shortly after Johnson arranged to replace him with Clark Clifford, and it was the strength of Clifford's solid character, compared to McNamara's weaker traits, that allowed him to stand stronger against Johnson's deceit, perhaps leading to Johnson's confrontation with reality and decision to retreat to his ranch in 1968.

Peter Hounam's interview with Robert McNamara exposed his complete denial and loss of memory on one of the most critical events of his period in office. In that interview he kept repeating things like, “My recollection of the circumstances around the *Liberty* is very vague ... I have nothing to say on the *Liberty* ... I don't recall it, but everything ... well, I'm not going to go further. I'm not going to say anything on the *Liberty* ... I don't know what the hell happened and I haven't taken time to find out ... I know nothing about it. I don't want to say I didn't at the time, but today I have no knowledge of it.”⁹⁸⁶ Even Richard Helms was more forthcoming than McNamara: “How can my personal view be other than my American view, which was that they intended to attack this ship and there's no excuse that can be found for saying that this was just a mistake?” He even went a little further, saying that “the White House was at first angry, but after 24 hours President Johnson just disappeared out of the picture.”⁹⁸⁷

This is an astonishing remark coming from the ex-director of the CIA, a well-established prevaricator like Richard Helms, therefore we must closely consider this comment: Lyndon Johnson was “at first angry, but after 24 hours just disappeared out of the picture.” Not only was this a very untypical Johnson response to such an enormously explosive situation, but it probably means that Johnson only “pretended” to be angry at first, because that would be expected. Then he just dropped it and immediately set in place all the blockades that would ensure the “real story” became lost in the shuffle as the “planted story” about an Israeli “mistake” replaced it. It was merely another replay of one of his most-used techniques: Planting lies to replace truths.

It is axiomatic that Lyndon Johnson would have been the first to realize that the number one priority at that point would be to order absolute secrecy to every sailor, navy officer, and NSA technician on board that ship. That this particular perfidy precisely fits what actually happened is undisputed by anyone. Indeed, it also explains why the story remained a secret for as long as it did, and a perplexing unsolved mystery for decades after that.

There was a quite rational, albeit troubling, reason for McNamara's reticence about discussing the USS *Liberty*: Doing so, he must have realized, would be tantamount to him standing on the top step of the front portico of the US Supreme Court, with hundreds of reporters present, and voluntarily announcing that he, along with former President Lyndon B. Johnson, were both guilty of the high crime of treason. It is the only realistic explanation for McNamara's complete refusal to say anything about this unforgivably, and unforgettably, shameful and treasonous incident. He must have eventually realized the enormity of the crime and the transparency of his own guilt in enabling Lyndon Johnson to have executed this "war game," played for the highest stakes imaginable. His direct knowledge of and participation in orders to attack a US Navy warship, with the intent to purposefully sink it and kill nearly 300 men aboard, and when that failed, to then cancel at least two sorties of fighter jets sent to protect it. And after brave sailors fought to keep it afloat, acting on behalf of President Lyndon B. Johnson, whose latest treachery was to shamefully stall further attempts by others to go to its rescue for eighteen more hours. McNamara then blithely and flippantly explained both his unwillingness to discuss anything about it as well as his real perception of the implications of these acts. These are the inescapable conclusions to be drawn from the facts established within these pages.

Deputy Secretary of State Cyrus Vance abruptly resigned from his position (though not his government career) one day after the *Liberty* attack, on June 9, 1967. This was an extraordinary action, undoubtedly one of the few acts of conscience by any of Johnson's advisers which could only have meant that his decision to leave immediately was due to a very profound disagreement with the administration about something deeply troubling to him. Johnson accepted his resignation without comment and replaced him immediately with Paul Nitze. Vance joined McGeorge Bundy, Bill Moyers, and George Ball, who had also resigned in 1966 and others, like Richard Goodwin the previous year. From all outward appearances, they had all come to the realization that the president they served was performing as recklessly in the Oval Office as he was when he morphed back into a drunken redneck driving his Lincoln convertibles across the Texas prairie at speeds of more than 100 miles an hour, with a six-pack of cold beer or a big glass of Cutty Sark. Lastly, it should be noted that the previous conclusions were not created out of thin air: They have been advanced by others previously mentioned, including not only British author and documentarian Peter Hounam, but also a noted Israeli author, investigative journalist and political philosopher, Barry Chamish, author of *Who Killed Yitzhak Rabin?* and an assortment of other books, who wrote:

The issue of the *Liberty* has deeply poisoned the American relationship with Israel. It is a far greater thorn than Israelis understand because, in fact, Israel did try to kill every sailor on board The *Liberty*. If I needed persuasion of that, I got it with the correspondence I began with two officers of the *Liberty*, as well as my personal meetings with British documentary maker, Peter Hounam, who made a highly damning Israel film of the incident, shown on the BBC.

My conclusion, and it gibed well with Hounam's, was that Israel was creating another Lavon Affair, trying to lure the US into the war against Egypt, as it had done by bombing American targets in Cairo during the mid-50s. But one problem gnawed

at me; The *Liberty* was hit on June 8, when Israel had already as good as won the Six Day War. In short, why bother? [Chamish's ultimate conclusion was that] ... Admiral McCain was not covering for Israel, he was protecting Pres. Lyndon Johnson, who ordered Israel to attack the *Liberty*.⁹⁸⁸

Chamish and others believe that there were others higher in the “chain of command” from whom Lyndon Johnson received his orders. The problem with that concept is that, despite the known existence of his zealously Zionist friends in the White House, his continued collaboration with key military and intelligence figures related to the “winds of war” that were gusting strongly, and the fact that many very influential men and women in organizations such as the Council on Foreign Relations remained within his orbit at this point in time, nevertheless, there was no one who had greater political supremacy or the power to try to control the events in the Mediterranean during early June 1967. For no one else had the mix of megalomania, narcissism, sociopathic, and psychiatric disorders—including the mania to use all means at his disposal to achieve his objective, regardless of the niceties of due process, or the ethics, morality, legality, or constitutionality concerns of most rational people—combined with the documented exercise of the greatest power possible to commit an act of treason as commander in chief: *ordering that the fighter jets on their way to save the Liberty to be brought back, twice*. There was only one man alive in 1967 with that kind of power: He was not Allen Dulles, James Angleton, nor W. Averell Harriman. Not even David or Nelson Rockefeller nor anyone named Rothschild either. Johnson's mantra “Power is where power goes” says it all; he had more power than all these men put together and used it autonomously but carefully, always shrouded in secrecy with many layers of men separating himself from the crimes. Lyndon B. Johnson had already declared himself “King of the World” and he clearly believed he was the omnipotent leader of the world who could do anything he wanted to do.⁹⁸⁹

The patterns that Lyndon Johnson had practiced for decades—utmost secrecy, avoidance of putting anything in writing that could be incriminating, cunning and meticulous planning for objectives he considered important to his political goals—become clear throughout this and the previous chapters: His orders were carried out by military officers from the highest to the lowest levels in the hierarchy with the same brutal force with which they were given; all lips were sealed. The so-called “investigation” was narrow in scope, pre designed for a solution and oblivious to conflicting evidence, hurried to completion and all incriminating facts kept secret—indeed, the most incriminating of them remain secret to this day.

All of this secrecy was the culmination of his decades of experience practicing the elemental patterns he learned at an early age, all of which had proven to be so fruitful in his conduct of earlier criminal operations, each iteration becoming a little more sophisticated than the time before. The only real differences were the numbers of men under his command and control and the audaciousness of the crimes he committed. Ultimately, when he became commander in chief—in direct charge of the elaborate secrecy protocols of the entire government—his power to conduct his criminal enterprises, by 1967, was virtually unlimited.

* That device had worked well for Lyndon three years earlier, when he manipulated Rufus Youngblood into going along with the lie about having jumped into the backseat to sit on Johnson all the way to Parkland Hospital; Senator Yarborough, sitting in the same seat as Johnson, steadfastly denied this for the rest of his life, even telling David Lifton that he was still “furious” about Johnson’s conceit and arrogance in saying that, while knowing that Yarborough knew the truth. Yarborough had not realized that Johnson came up with this lie because he had already ducked for cover and could not be seen in the Altgens photograph alongside Lady Bird and himself, and this was a canard that he would have used to explain why he wasn’t there.

** This proposition gains some credence when one considers that June 8, 1967, was a particularly busy day for Dayan as he directed another operation the same day that he came to regret: “Dayan bypassed both the Prime Minister and the Chief of Staff in ordering the Israeli army to attack and capture the Golan ... I made a mistake in allowing the Israel conquest of the Golan Heights. As defense minister I should have stopped it because the Syrians were not threatening us at the time [fourth day of the war].” (Eyal Zisser, “Israel’s Capture of the Golan Heights,” *Israel Studies*, Vol 7, June 1967: 168–194.)

Chapter 10

THE LEGACY OF THE “COLOSSUS” (A.K.A. THE “KING OF THE WORLD”)

Those who can make you believe absurdities can make you commit atrocities.

—VOLTAIRE

If ever a time should come, when vain and aspiring men shall possess the highest seats in Government, our country will stand in need of its experienced patriots to prevent its ruin.

—SAMUEL ADAMS

Lyndon Johnson Achieves His Destiny

One of Lyndon Johnson’s first acts as president was to get the two Senate committees investigating his shadowy past squashed; the one being led by Senator John J. McClellan (D-Arkansas) was shelved immediately, for the duration of Johnson’s presidency. The other one, being led by Senator John Williams, continued his vigorous pursuit of Johnson’s crimes for several months. But it was finally stopped by Johnson’s efforts to redirect the investigation back to the same, very courageous, “whistle-blower,” Don Reynolds, with a full-scale personal attack filled with lies and false charges, which forced Reynolds to finally leave the country, in fear for his life.

Lyndon Johnson should be given appropriate credit for the elaborate plan he conceived and had executed through the men and women he indirectly recruited; he had long known that his presidency would have to be jump-started immediately after Kennedy’s murder and that it had to launch the nation on a new mission. The noble ideas and initiatives he inherited from JFK—despite his having previously suppressed them, as the vice president and even before that, as “Master of the Senate” as we have previously demonstrated—would now be brought off the shelf and pushed aggressively, through Congress as well as to the citizenry of America. The colossal magnitude and redirection of the switch would hide the most important component of his real agenda: a massive campaign to “change the subject” while becoming the start of his long-planned legacy.

He had anticipated the collective shock and the resulting mass paranoia and confusion that the assassination would cause. And he knew instinctively that the usual political pabulum wouldn’t do, that to accomplish his goal of being a “great president” would require “great acts,” specifically to include the very same legislation that he had fought against his entire career, bills that would actually contain measures to reform laws and create new legislation to appease minorities. The residual racism that still existed one hundred years after the Civil War had made black Americans increasingly angry, and the majority of Americans—even many conservatives—had already agreed that the time for redress had come, even when JFK was still alive. George Ball, under secretary of state, and one of the few advisers who argued against escalation of the Vietnam War, in his oral

history document, alluded to the fact that Kennedy had not been able to aggressively prod Congress into passing his agenda, although he apparently did not realize that Johnson had helped, through his close congressional ties, to create the very gridlock he referenced.⁹⁹⁰

I got the impression that the President's [Johnson] instinct was to do what came naturally to him. It's easy to forget now, but at that time it was almost a constitutional crisis as far as President Kennedy's program was concerned. There was a kind of constipation on Capitol Hill that was really very serious, and the President turned immediately to the problem of how could he get the Kennedy program through. I think he felt sort of a personal responsibility to Kennedy to get his program through. I think he deeply felt this, and he did it superbly. He did it much better than Kennedy could ever have done it. Whether Kennedy could have done it at all, I'm not sure, because by that time he was very worried about it. He was not getting along well with Congress at all.

The legislative "constipation" that Mr. Ball referred to was created and sustained by Lyndon Johnson all during his period as vice president. Had he actually been a "team player" he might have been able to facilitate the legislative process, but, as Robert Kennedy observed, "He [LBJ] very rarely helped when he could help when we were trying to get votes in the Senate. He was against sending any civil rights legislation up."⁹⁹¹ If Robert Kennedy knew that this was only half of the equation, he would have instinctively surmised that the other half was how Johnson had pressed his friends in Congress to stall the same legislation. Once he became president, Johnson exploited the nation's remorse for Kennedy's murder by framing his agenda as a mandate for a whole plethora of social legislation that he himself had previously impeded, or alternatively "watered down." Even a decade earlier, when he became the "Master of the Senate," he had apparently begun to accumulate the most important bills, keeping them shelved in anticipation of one day needing to add them to a list that would become a very expansive agenda for his future term in the Oval Office. This list would eventually become the package of legislative bills that formed the "Great Society" programs.

In 1965, most people still gave President Johnson considerable leeway as he quietly and secretly went about building up the military's presence in Vietnam; meanwhile, his efforts to move the long list of progressive legislation that had previously been held up by Southern committee chairmen with Johnson's acquiescence, and forceful prodding, were highly publicized. The consensus of historians and political scientists was that Johnson uniquely had the power to move this legislation through Congress because of his enormous influence with both houses. But the primary reason for that was largely due to his knowledge of each senator or congressman and their "personal secrets," thanks to his access to Hoover's files. Given that his power over congressmen and senators existed well before he became president, one must ask themselves this disturbingly pithy question: "Since the only thing that had changed in relation to that set of pending legislation, and congressional willingness to pass it, was the death of JFK and ascension of LBJ, if Johnson had gotten behind it *foursquare before* Kennedy's assassination, could he have succeeded in getting it through *before* JFK was killed?" As the vice president, did he not have an

obligation to at least try to help his president, and use precisely the same techniques—discreetly directed blackmail, selectively applied bribery, and brazenly delivered threats—to push the legislation through as (supposedly) only he could do?

There is no evidence to indicate that he ever tried to do that with any of the Kennedy bills, and plenty of evidence that he did the opposite; that he deliberately stalled their initiatives and created the congressional gridlock. Had he done so, might not that same legislation have passed earlier, under JFK's administration, from which it sprang? Clearly, there was a reason behind Johnson's chronic delays and excuses for not acting more aggressively, before the death of Kennedy. This device, not unlike a classic "shell game" played by magicians and sorcerers for the highest stakes imaginable, seemed to have worked well for Johnson. The very historians who give him so much credit for how, immediately upon becoming president, Johnson succeeded where everyone else before him had failed, had themselves failed to notice how they had been conned, taken in through his use of JFK's memory to distract them and to soften the resolve of hesitant congressmen. He knew that he would get the benefit of having finally solved the legislative morass, which he had heretofore cunningly created. He had performed a complete reversal in the positions for which he had previously been in secret opposition, which was essentially everything on Kennedy's agenda. Like the manic he was, he pulled every possible lever, pushed every button, tugged every lapel, pleaded, begged, blackmailed, badgered or threatened, or used a mixture of all of it on practically every wavering politician, on both sides of the aisles and on both sides of the Capitol Rotunda, to get that legislation passed.

Was all of that merely the random course of events, an arbitrary consequence of serendipity in his "honeymoon" period as the new president so firmly in command, which is what practically all of his biographers claim? Or was it the climatic manifestation of a long-planned chain of events created in the demented mind of Lyndon Johnson during the period after his aborted presidential bid at the 1956 Democratic Convention and the fateful, well-planned and choreographed, 1960 Democratic Convention to put himself into the position of running, not for the presidency, but for the "safer" position of vice president?

Time magazine reported on Johnson's acclimation to his new duties just three weeks after he assumed the presidency:

Johnson was never the easiest boss to work for, despite his staffers' loyalty to him... . But for a President, his staff is painfully thin, and he repeatedly told Kennedy's aides in asking them to stay with him, "I have nobody to replace you with."

The new President works behind closed doors, does not like his men to drop in unheralded. Naturally enough, Johnson has not yet established rapport with most of the holdovers—Presidential Adviser McGeorge Bundy is one of the exceptions—but some wonder if he ever will. Comparing notes, the Kennedy aides were irritated to learn that Johnson seemed to use a set speech in asking them to stay on, always ending his pitch with the phrase, "I need your help more than President Kennedy needed it."⁹⁹²

Johnson attempted to get all of Kennedy's aides to come to work for him, using that same pitch on each one. Yet, according to Arthur Schlesinger Jr., most of those who did make the switch came to regret it. Schlesinger explained that Johnson initially treated them very politely but as soon as he felt that they had made the transition to become a "Johnson man" he would begin treating them just as shabbily as the others, to the point of mercilessly ordering them around like servants, shouting at them and humiliating them just as he did with Walter Jenkins or Jack Valenti.⁹⁹³

That point helps to explain why JFK's press secretary, Pierre Salinger, decided to leave the White House shortly after Johnson became president. While Salinger apparently made the transition easily, at first that meant he was therefore the first of the Kennedy people to understand fully what entailed: he would then have to suffer Johnson's arrogance, his violent outbursts and stultifying gamesmanship, as well as the constant risk of being on the receiving end of his vicious humiliation, including the time that Johnson delighted in making Salinger eat a bowl of bean soup, against his wishes, at a White House party. Other examples of this abound: Once Johnson made Hubert Humphrey, on a visit to his ranch, wear a cowboy hat about two sizes too large to make him the laughingstock of the party; another was the time he gave Bobby Kennedy a ten-gauge shotgun that had such a strong recoil that the gunstock hit Bobby in the head as he fell to the ground after he fired it, at which point Johnson leaned forward, his hand extended to help him up, and said, "Son, you have to learn to use a gun like a man." Had Kennedy actually hit a deer with that gun, it would have blown it in half, a point that Johnson fully appreciated, since the result—knocking RFK to the ground—is precisely what he had planned. In other words, Pierre Salinger had been treated just like the rest of Johnson's staff or, in this case, JFK's brother, had always been treated. Fortunately for him, and unlike most of Johnson's credulously "loyal" staff, Salinger had enough self-esteem to leave as soon as that kind of treatment manifested itself; four months later, in March 1964, he was gone.

The humiliation suffered by Hubert Humphrey was arguably the worst that many had to endure. In her book, *Among Those Present: A Reporter's View of 25 Years in Washington*, the former television news reporter Nancy Dickerson described one instance of it, when she attended a dinner party at Bill Moyers's house with, among several others, President Johnson and Vice President Humphrey. During one of Johnson's monologues as he talked about planning his reelection campaign the following year, with everyone present and listening intently, he alluded to the possibility of dumping Humphrey in 1968 and replacing him with Nelson Rockefeller, "the right kind of Republican," meaning one who would steadfastly back the LBJ war.⁹⁹⁴ This was merely one of many instances where Johnson intentionally and brutally humiliated Humphrey.

That Humphrey understood the risks of "straying from the fold on the Vietnam War" was demonstrated by his refusal to waver from that stance during the 1968 campaign. Author William Turner described one instance of this in his book *Rearview Mirror: Looking Back at the FBI, the CIA and Other Tails*: When Warren Hinckle, the iconoclastic publisher and editor of *Ramparts* magazine (a "stinging critic of the Vietnam War"), met with Humphrey in his airplane on the tarmac at the San Francisco Airport, "He [Hinckle]

returned to the office in a snit—Humphrey had not budged an inch. ‘Don’t ever call me a liberal,’ he fumed. ‘It’s the goddam liberals who brought us the war.’”⁹⁹⁵

It would have been doubly humiliating for Humphrey if he had known about an encounter that Marcus Raskin, an assistant to National Security Advisor McGeorge Bundy, witnessed between JFK and Nelson Rockefeller that gave him—and now us—tremendous insight into the profound differences between the two men. It had happened at a White House meeting with a delegation of state governors, when Rockefeller, irritated with the continuing attacks of the Vietcong, said: “‘Why don’t we use tactical nuclear weapons against them?’ Raskin, watching Kennedy closely, was in a position to see what happened next. JFK said simply, ‘You know we’re not going to do that.’” As author James Douglass observed in his book *JFK and the Unspeakable*: “But it was the sudden shaking hand that alerted Raskin to Kennedy’s profound uneasiness with nuclear weapons, a mark of conscience that would later turn into a commitment to disarmament.”⁹⁹⁶ Raskin’s conflicts with Bundy over the US military escalation in Indochina caused Johnson to reassign him to the Bureau of the Budget, where his voice against that folly would be muted. He left government service to cofound the Institute for Policy Studies and became a leading opponent of the Vietnam War, conducting “teach-ins” around the country.⁹⁹⁷

Reflections on Lyndon Johnson’s Personal Legacy

Johnson’s reward was received when he won election in 1964 by an actual landslide, instead of one of the parody kind with which he had been skewered by news reporters in the stolen election of 1948, which he “won” by eighty-seven votes, earning him the moniker “Landslide Lyndon.” This was a bittersweet moment for many of JFK’s staff, as recounted by Richard Goodwin, who noted that, for Johnson, the victory meant that he had finally “earned” his way into the White House with record-breaking voting margins across the country; but Goodwin’s doubts about Johnson’s grasp on reality, versus “fantasy” showed through in this passage, which reflected the change in Johnson after his “crowning glory” of winning that election with an undeniably great margin of victory and removed the cloud of being referred to as an “accidental president”:

Boy, he must feel good, I thought, watching him, not yet understanding that fantasy was different from ambition, more pervasive, more dangerous; that, once attained, it could take command, reverse the process, transform and absorb reality itself into the form of fantasy.⁹⁹⁸

Even then, in early November 1964—before he had witnessed Johnson, in mid-1965, apparently having a psychotic meltdown—Richard Goodwin was plainly troubled by something he had seen within President Johnson’s character having to do with his ability to differentiate “fantasy” from “reality.” It might have been related to other things, but one of the issues was undoubtedly Johnson’s unusually great ability to recast “lies” as “truth”—transforming “reality” into “fantasy” and back again in another state—and to manipulate people to believe these untruths: First a few key people, and, through them, the false stories would eventually be believed by the masses. How else could one interpret his words, “transform and absorb reality itself into the form of fantasy”? This is precisely how people

had described Lyndon Johnson since his school days, when he was given the nickname “Bull” for his chronic and habitual lying and deceit.⁹⁹⁹ Of all the others, it was this character trait that was the single most important defining point about him: His ability to transform reality into the form of fantasy and reverse the two; it was his ability to manufacture myths through his power over others, to seduce, cajole, argue, or simply demand their help under threat of blackmail, extortion, or even their very lives, as Billie Sol Estes certainly understood.

If anyone was ever corrupted by power, it was Lyndon Johnson. He was also good at spreading corruption through others, people who would comply with his requests and orders without question. One of the aides who admitted to some of the excesses and illegal actions was Bill Gulley, who succeeded Brent Scowcroft as head of the White House military office. Johnson put him on the payroll of the US Postal Service, however, as a means to “minimize” White House staff, (a good example of how deeply he micromanaged the entire federal bureaucracy). Gulley’s domain included the White House mess, Camp David, communications and computers, the nuclear football, the Tele-Prompters, the White House television unit, Air Force One, and the marine helicopters. As author Ronald Kessler noted, “In effect, Gulley was the mayor of the White House. While he admits to engaging in extensive illegal acts to fulfill presidential whims, Gulley himself was regarded by those who worked with him as honest and credible.”¹⁰⁰⁰

“Johnson would pick women out of a crowd... . He would spot them and send [an aide] to be the pimp.” Gulley said Johnson would spot pretty secretaries in the White House, make a play for them, and if they went to bed with him, place them on his personal staff. Of the eight secretaries around him, only three were not having sex with the president, Gulley said... . Once, Lady Bird had caught him having sex on a sofa in the Oval Office with one of the beautiful secretaries he had hired. He tried to blame the Secret Service for allowing the incident, saying, “you should have done something.” After the incident, which occurred just months after he took office, Johnson ordered the Secret Service to install a buzzer system so that agents stationed in the residence portion of the White House could warn him that his wife was approaching.¹⁰⁰¹

Air Force One steward Robert MacMillan said that Johnson would often close the door to his stateroom and spend hours alone locked up with his pretty secretaries, even when his wife was on board. Flight engineer Patrick D. O’Donnell explained that messages would sometimes be received that could not be delivered to the president because he had locked himself into the stateroom with some lady friend, even while Lady Bird was aboard the airplane, and she couldn’t even enter that room while Johnson was engaging himself with his “friend.”¹⁰⁰²

Lyndon Johnson enjoyed telling people, “I want people around me who would kiss my ass on a hot summer’s day and say it smells like roses.”¹⁰⁰³ This was one of his favorite expressions, which sometimes further stipulated that the ass kissing was to be done in a window at Macy’s. Johnson’s routine abuse of his aides, including the way he shouted at

them in public, or requiring them to attend to him even while he “sat on the ‘throne,” was widely known to reporters; yet he still managed to shock them right after he assumed the presidency as he showed them around his ranch, discussing the details of bovine sexual habits, belching, and scratching himself in his privates, undoubtedly doing so more grossly than the average unschooled cowboys who lived on his ranch.¹⁰⁰⁴ An air force flight engineer confirmed to Ronald Kessler that he was even more raunchy at his ranch than when he was in the White House. Once during a press conference at the ranch, Johnson pulled his penis out of his pants and proceeded to urinate; he turned sideways in front of the reporters so that they would have a good view of his genitals.¹⁰⁰⁵

Apparently, Johnson so liked analogies to, commentary about, and graphical images of the act of urination that he lost no opportunity to try new ways to intimidate people for his own enjoyment. Once, as he was joyriding around the ranch in one of his Lincoln convertibles, he stopped to relieve himself and in doing so, started peeing on the leg of one of his Secret Service escorts, who looked down and said, “‘Mr. President, you are urinating on me.’ And Johnson’s response was, ‘I know I am ... it’s my prerogative.’”¹⁰⁰⁶ According to former Air Force One steward, Robert M. MacMillan, after Johnson boarded Air Force One, he would often stand in the doorway—out of earshot—and, while grinning at the enraptured crowds, say, “You dumb sons of bitches. I piss on all of you.”¹⁰⁰⁷ That probably explains why most of his Secret Service guards “hated Johnson’s imperious attitude toward them.”¹⁰⁰⁸

Another noteworthy urination incident was reported by Arthur Schlesinger Jr., in his memoirs: A diary entry he made on June 17, 1969, recalled an event that occurred “early in the Johnson administration” when a visitor at a meeting with Johnson asked George Reedy where the men’s room was. Johnson overheard that and invited the visitor, Jimmy Wechsler, a party activist and writer, to join him, because, he explained, he had also wanted to go there. After following Johnson to the presidential latrine, he held back momentarily, out of deference. But then, he said that Johnson grabbed his arm and thrust him into the bathroom while telling him that they should go together, simultaneously. His note then stated that Jimmy had an uneasy feeling about how the President scrutinized his private parts until, apparently, Johnson decided that his own equipment was, as usual, superior, at which point they proceeded to relieve themselves so that the “two streams mingled” together and flowed into the toilet bowl as one. Schlesinger ended this vignette with the words “What a man! I hope that someday someone will write the true story of the Johnson White House.”¹⁰⁰⁹

Lyndon Johnson’s Proven Long-Term Planning Ability

Johnson’s prescience about the need to keep his associations with oil men and his ethically challenged friends—Billie Sol Estes and Bobby Baker in particular—at arm’s length, distanced by buffers, plausible deniability, and keeping them mostly out of the news, paid off in the 1964 presidential election.

But well before that, as previously detailed in *LBJ: The Mastermind of the JFK*

Assassination, Johnson had turned down a free interest in an oil company in 1941, then worth an estimated three quarters of a million dollars, on the basis that he could not be viewed as an “oil man” because it might one day be a liability when he ran for president.¹⁰¹⁰ Instead, he (and, ostensibly, his wife Lady Bird) invested in a near bankrupt radio station, growing it—with a lot of help and protection from a competitive market by people indebted to him in the FCC—into a multimillion-dollar enterprise. With no evidence to support their suspicions, because no investigations were ever initiated about Johnson’s monopolistic radio and television ventures in Austin, Texas, voters were left to ponder how a Texas congressman and senator—never earning more than \$22,500 per year, had managed to accumulate a fortune of \$19 million (a gross understatement by him and his family, as it was subsequently estimated to be between \$80 to \$100 million, which excluded his secret gold stash to be noted shortly). He had also managed to keep his name from being associated with Bobby Baker’s fallen empire, especially after the JFK assassination, when he forced his Senate friends to squash their investigations. The Billie Sol Estes scandals were too complicated—and Johnson’s interests were still well hidden—for them to become campaign issues. All of these illegal ventures had been carefully planned by Johnson to keep his involvement at a distance from the actual operations, yet the evidence, which did finally materialize, showed how he profited from the illegal sales of his influence.

By the end of Johnson’s term in 1968, he had achieved his boyhood dream—in a landslide 1964 election—following the assassination of JFK. Not long after, the American people got to know him, and didn’t like what they saw; his popularity declined so badly that he steadily lost public support and by 1968 couldn’t run for reelection because it would probably have meant a loss, which would have almost inevitably meant a victory for his long time nemesis, Robert F. Kennedy—at least until that possibility was eliminated when RFK was murdered just ten weeks after Johnson had decided not to run for reelection. He could not risk losing the office, knowing that it would have been too much for his psyche. Having finally proven himself “worthy” of the highest office in the land and knowing that he had left his *imprimatur* on the United States of America, he began his retirement with feelings of melancholy: He had lost his *raison d’être*.

That Robert Kennedy’s campaign would last merely two and one-half months—before he was brutally murdered by a very well-organized conspiracy with multiple parallels to JFK’s conspiracy—might have been completely coincidental to the story described here, however, it is now clear that everything about Bobby’s assassination was just as suspicious as his brother’s. The weight of the evidence and preponderance of doubt about that premise as delineated within, together with the series of other murders (or coincidental “suicides” and one-car “accidents” noted previously), strongly suggests that there was nothing coincidental about any of it.

Johnson’s Treatment of His Subordinates

Lyndon Johnson expected all of his subordinates to completely submit to his demands, required them to be available continuously and give him 100 percent loyalty. In return, they could expect neither loyalty nor protection, just a biweekly paycheck. He might

promise them both, but there were times when the cost of doing so—his own reputation, for example—was too great: Walter Jenkins and Bobby Baker, for example, were jettisoned when Johnson's own career was at stake.

Years earlier, on January 4, 1960, NBC newsman Robert W. McCormick, in his television program *Emphasis USA*, let loose a highly critical broadside of Majority Leader Lyndon Johnson and “the rawer aspects of Johnson's nature ... his ‘incredibly bad temper, his habit of snapping and snarling at his overworked staff ...’”¹⁰¹¹ This would seem to indicate that Johnson's darker side was not unknown to Washington reporters, though this was a very rare admission. Evidently, most of Johnson's assistants were aware—unbeknownst to anyone else in the rest of the country, yet suspected by many—that, in fact, the country was being run by a man incapable of controlling even himself in a rational manner, to say nothing of the nation's affairs, which he was then trying to radically change for all time. Many of them, in their oral histories or memoirs, rationalized his more outlandish actions as merely the eccentricities of an old cowboy politician, not abnormal at all.

A few observations about some of his subordinates or key aides and the “niche” they served under Johnson may provide more insight into how he used them to serve his varied purposes.

Jack Valenti

A news article written by Warren Weaver Jr. and printed by the *New York Times* on August 24, 1988, headlined “Ex-Aides Assail Depiction of Johnson as Paranoid,” described an incident that was coordinated by Jack Valenti, whose lifetime assignment directly from Johnson was being the chief protector of the grand Johnsonian image and contrived “legacy.” The article stated that Jack Valenti suggested that Richard Goodwin had used the occasion to promote sales of his book, *Remembering America*. The article quoted the unctuous Dean Rusk, who denied the assertion that Johnson was “paranoid,” saying it was “nonsense.” Horace Busby stated that the behavior of Johnson was merely a reflection of his “temperament” and how he “blew off steam” as he tried to write them off as merely the eccentricities of an old man. “Mr. Busby said writers now felt free to write anything about Mr. Johnson without fear of retaliation or correction. ‘You can't do that to any other President, including Kennedy,’ he said.” He also said that the aides who had been around Johnson longer than Goodwin (who had served two years before he decided his job was not a good fit) knew that the behaviors he witnessed were merely Johnson's known eccentricities. The article also stated that “Mr. Moyers has declined to discuss Mr. Goodwin's account.”¹⁰¹² (The two Johnson aides who have even still refused to talk to Robert Caro are Bill Moyers and Bobby Baker. Caro lamented the fact that Moyers had declined, noting that he had spoken of writing his own book about Johnson “[f]or years”).¹⁰¹³

Years later, decades after Johnson's death, the case would be made that in fact, George Reedy's belief that Johnson was a “manic depressive”¹⁰¹⁴ was correct; as has been demonstrated within, it is clear now that Johnson suffered not only from what is now

referred to as “bipolar” disease, but more generally, a combination of paranoia and sociopathic disorders.

The article ended with Mr. Goodwin’s concession “that some readers might disagree with his interpretation of events during the Johnson Presidency, but he said, ‘No one has challenged the accuracy of any of the account.’”¹⁰¹⁵ Jack Valenti resigned his White House position in 1966 to take a post in Hollywood that Johnson had arranged for him,¹⁰¹⁶ through his influential friends there in order to have “his man” in a position to monitor the film-making industry as a kind of personal censor; he knew that he would need all the help he could get on that front well into the future, and on that point he was quite prescient.

As demonstrated in earlier chapters, Valenti proved to be very effective in shutting down any film related to Johnson’s secrets: It was Valenti who was uniquely able [arguably no other man alive could have done it, except him or Lew Wasserman, and even he would have gotten his orders from either Johnson or Valenti] to do it with the 1968 Dean Martin movie *The Wrecking Crew*, deleting entire scenes and changing the credits from Jay Bert Peck (Johnson’s lookalike cousin) to “J. B. Pick,” and at least twice more, perhaps three times between 1984 and 1988, in getting movie scripts cancelled on the life and times of Texas Ranger Clint Peoples, the last of which had already been developed in detail sufficient for the scriptwriter to have been selected and already given a name: *LBJ: Accessory to Murder*.^{*}

Valenti’s biggest failure—to stop the broadcast of a film before the fact—involved the last three videos of the series *The Men Who Killed Kennedy*, including particularly “The Guilty Men,” the third part, also referred to as Episode No. 9. Almost immediately, Valenti jumped on it ferociously, with help from Bill Moyers, Lady Bird Johnson, and former Presidents Gerald Ford and Jimmy Carter, who combined to lead the 2003 effort to force The History Channel from ever broadcasting it again. The reason it was so greatly feared was because it was the best video ever made of the role of Lyndon Johnson in JFK’s assassination, and it was done purposely in secret, with no advance promotions, specifically to avoid the very kind of advance, total, and complete censorship that Valenti would uniquely have had the power to order.

John Connally

As one of the original young Texans recruited by Johnson to come to Washington, Connally’s loyalty toward him would never waver, despite the occasional tiffs noted below. That he was widely called LBJ Jr. (Lyndon’s Boy John) spoke more than other mere words

Johnson’s treatment of John Connally in a number of cases shows that he didn’t really occupy a place higher in the hierarchy than any of Johnson’s other minions: Author J. Evetts Haley, author of the best-selling 1964 book *A Texan Looks at Lyndon: A Study in Illegitimate Power*, wrote that “Once when John Connally and his wife had just arrived as house guests for an LBJ Ranch party covered by the press, without provocation Lyndon cursed him before other guests for being a sorry ‘s-o-b.’ The governor and his wife retrieved their bags and left for Austin. At times Johnson seems to take a sadistic delight in

being as crude, cruel, and boorish as possible.”¹⁰¹⁷

That crudeness was illustrated in Robert Caro’s book *Master of the Senate* by an anecdote told by his once top-level aide Walter Jenkins, who told Johnson about an uncooperative agency bureaucrat. “What does he want?—me to kiss his ass?” Johnson shouted. “Tell him I’ll kiss him on both cheeks. I’ll kiss him in the middle too, if he wants it.”¹⁰¹⁸

Robert S. McNamara

The meticulous research and detailed analysis done by Noel Twyman, specifically including his interview with Robert McNamara, for his book *Bloody Treason*, was more revealing than most others regarding McNamara’s role as the defense secretary under both Kennedy and Johnson; it was an insightful peek inside the persona of the man known for the “whiz kids” whom he brought into the Defense Department, so resented by the highly experienced military staff already there. Twyman asked him leading questions about JFK’s assassination, and the Warren Report and he seemed to know absolutely nothing about the details of the assassination, much less anything about what critics had already proven regarding such things as the “magic bullet.” Here he was, the vaunted secretary of defense, who was committed to remaking the Pentagon into a modern, well-oiled operation using his experience at Ford to create an aura of himself that no one could penetrate with meaningful insights. That interview showed, clearly and stunningly, that McNamara had no interest in learning what had really happened to JFK. His reaction to Twyman’s questions showed that it was all news to him, as Twyman tried to explain some of the “assassination basics,” before he then inadvertently acknowledged some of Johnson’s devious activities by saying, “Well, I can believe that, but it’s a big leap going from that to the assassination of Kennedy.”¹⁰¹⁹ In response to the question of why the CIA would have used Oswald as an assassin or “patsy” McNamara replied, “I absolutely don’t think the CIA assassinated Kennedy, although I don’t rule out some renegades.”¹⁰²⁰ It is interesting to note that, despite his lack of knowledge of many “basics” of the assassination, that he would not “rule out” the possibility renegade officials and operatives of the CIA might have indeed been involved in the preparation and execution. It would have been interesting to know how he might have responded to a query about the obvious continuum from pre-assassination conspiracy to post-assassination attempts to cover up the agency’s obvious involvement since the two clearly ran together in real time in Dallas before, during, and subsequent to the assassination.

As documented previously, McNamara took four years to finally see what millions of college students had seen all during that period regarding the specious reasoning and vacillating, careening escalation of military intervention in Vietnam, then personally participated in the additional treasons related to the attack on the USS *Liberty*. His refusal to even discuss the latter case is tantamount to an admission of his own crimes in executing it, just as his too-late awakening on the horrors of the Vietnam War, some forty years after the fact cannot be considered remorseful or a contrite admission of his blemished reputation.

One would have thought that a man in McNamara's position would want to know as much as possible about what happened to JFK, if only to satisfy his own mind that there were no stones left unturned in the investigation of his assassination. It seems clear that McNamara had suspicions about very-high-level governmental involvement in the conspiracy: There is a fine line between the fact that he would not "rule out" CIA renegades to accepting such an assertion. If he had had more curiosity about what happened to his friend JFK, even a cursory review of the arrows pointing in that direction would have been sufficient to cross that line.

Assorted Journalists

For many years, Johnson had maintained close and direct connections with many journalist and publishing friends and could always count on them to parrot his stories. Those relationships became very brittle in 1965, mostly as a result of their catching on to his prevarications, and they increasingly began using the term "credibility gap" as short hand code for his untrustworthiness. On June 24, 1967, reacting to syndicated newspaper columnist Joseph Alsop's article of June 17—wherein he referred to the first use of B-52s in Vietnam as a "public relations stunt" and further stating that under LBJ, "informing the American public has become a high crime"—Johnson said, "I believe that if it were a Communist agent or editor or Alsop or an enemy ... I think it's blackmail ... Pure blackmail. I think he wants some secrets that he's not getting... . I issued instructions to nobody in my office [sic] to ever talk to Teddy White because he was not a man that would tell the truth... . Yet they all sat around and talked to him."¹⁰²¹

Later on the same day, June 24—just weeks after the traumatic attack and subsequent cover-up of the USS *Liberty*—and still upset about the B-52 comment in Alsop's column, he ordered the Defense Department to stop the leaks of Vietnam secrets: "I'd rather have resignation in a bloc from all the Joint Chiefs and Secretaries concerned than have one of them give one figure to Marquis Childs^{**} ... We've got the best bunch of leakers you ever saw over here. I've got them in surplus. If I need anything leaked, I'll leak it. But I sure as hell don't want my Joint Chiefs leaking it! Do whatever you're willing to do to put these leaks at a minimum. And that means Marguerite Higgins^{***} and that means Peter Lisagor.^{****} That means Rowland Evans, and that particularly means Joe Alsop and Scotty Reston.^{*****} That doesn't mean that everybody shouldn't see them ... See them. Tell them nothing. Smile ... That's what I do when Reston comes to see me ... He can't get mad because I didn't tell him something. I have seen him. But I don't allow myself to arm the man who is going to shoot me with the pistol and with the cartridges. And if I go down, why, it's not going to look very good on you-all's part."¹⁰²²

Johnson's Attitudes Regarding People of Color

Johnson's ability to read people afforded him the opportunity to be selectively duplicitous on how he portrayed his prejudices. To the Georgetown crowd, he spoke of tolerance toward people of different nations, colors, and religions. He would speak so passionately about the plight of the less fortunate that they would believe he was actually personally empathetic toward minorities and anxious to secure their rights. Then, when pressed

about taking some sort of action, he would quickly add, “but we ain’t got the votes. Let’s wait till we get the votes.”¹⁰²³ His real sentiments were shared only very carefully with his closest friends such as those he met with in Suite 8-F of Houston’s Lamar Hotel—including Ed Clark, Herman Brown, and Frank (Posh) Oltorf, all members of that group who were interviewed by Robert Caro for his book *Master of the Senate*—who felt that “Negroes and Mexican-Americans were inherently dumb, dirty, lazy, stupid, looking only for handouts.”¹⁰²⁴ But it was precisely because of his skills of duplicity, guile, and arrogance that allowed him to project himself so dramatically differently to diverse audiences.

In his book *Master of the Senate*, Robert Caro described Johnson almost like one might describe a serpent, a snake: “Lyndon Johnson possessed not only a lash for a tongue, but a rare talent for aiming the lash, for finding a person’s most sensitive point, the rawest of his wounds, and striking it, over and over again, without mercy.” One example of how Johnson used his tongue as a violent lash was when he became angered at a black man working in his NYA (National Youth Administration) office, as reported to Robert Caro by former state Senator Welly Hopkins, who said that Johnson often lashed out at blacks in the most demeaning way possible, screaming at them and calling them “boy”: “Do this, boy. Do that, boy.”¹⁰²⁵

Another incident illustrates how Johnson could “just rip him up and down” while his victim had to stay where he was and just take it, and it speaks volumes about Johnson’s real attitudes toward blacks. Robert Parker, a native of Wichita Falls, Texas, was a black man who became maitre d’ of the Senate Dining Room in the 1960s. Before that, he was one of Johnson’s “patronage employees,” who filled in for Johnson’s regular chauffeur when he took a day off. Once, on the drive to the Capitol, according to the 1986 book *Capitol Hill in Black and White* that Parker wrote with Richard Rashke (and first quoted by Robert Caro), Johnson asked Parker if it bothered him when people didn’t address him by name and when he responded, telling him that it did bother him, Johnson angrily shouted back to him:

He leaned close to my ear. “Let me tell you one thing, nigger,” he shouted. “As long as you are black, and you’re gonna be black till the day you die, no one’s gonna call you by your goddamn name. So no matter what you are called, nigger, you just let it roll off your back like water, and you’ll make it. Just pretend you’re a goddamn piece of furniture.”¹⁰²⁶

It is difficult to reconcile this factual story reported first hand by the man who was subjected to such a vicious attack with any conceivable argument that Johnson actually liked minorities of any color or nationality, other than when pandering to them for their votes. Another story about Johnson’s real attitudes was written by author Ronald Kessler, who stated that his real motive for the sudden about-face on pushing the 1964 Civil Rights Bill was revealed in a conversation Johnson had with two governors, in which he explained why it had become so important for him: “*I’ll have them niggers voting Democratic for two hundred years.*”¹⁰²⁷ [Emphasis added.] His real attitude about blacks was expressed in

1957 during the debate over Eisenhower's attempt to pass civil rights legislation, which Majority Leader Lyndon Johnson ensured was so watered down that it became meaningless:¹⁰²⁸

These Negroes, they're getting pretty uppity these days and that's a problem for us ... *Now we've got to do something about this, we've got to give them a little something, just enough to quiet them down, not enough to make a difference.* [Emphasis added.]

Quoting former Air Force One steward Robert M. MacMillan, author Ronald Kessler wrote in *Inside the White House*, "That was the reason he was pushing the bill ... [it was] not because he wanted equality for everyone. It was strictly a political ploy for the Democratic Party. He was phony from the word go."¹⁰²⁹ MacMillan, who was privy to many of Johnson's actions and conversations, also stated that he "called the South Vietnamese those 'poor little boogers' ... He said, 'We're going to liberate those poor little boogers, and I'll be known as the great emancipator.'"¹⁰³⁰ MacMillan apparently did not think too much of Johnson's younger daughter, Luci, then seventeen: He referred to her as a "wretched witch" who once had a tantrum because she did not know where her servant was and told him, "Damn you. You go find my nigger right now ... she screamed again 'Find my nigger.'" MacMillan said, "This was the attitude of these people who were championing civil rights."¹⁰³¹ Author Kessler included Luci Johnson's response to this assertion: "I do not now, nor have I ever, subscribed to such feelings or such language and therefore could not use it." she said in a letter to the author."¹⁰³²

As president, Johnson was taped regarding his view that the poll tax being outlawed by Congress was not really discriminatory and that "more niggers voted in Texas than white folks ..." The full tape, which exemplifies Johnson's gratuitous use of racial slurs, is available on YouTube, as noted in the endnote, but the pertinent excerpt is repeated here:¹⁰³³

If you can say that you can't have a poll tax, then you can say you can't have a gas tax, or a cigarette tax, or anything else; the federal government is telling the states that, uh, it's pretty tough what their business is ... now you can say that they can't discriminate, but I've got to prove it discriminates, and I can't prove it in Texas. There's more niggers voting there than white folks and more of 'em buying poll taxes than white folks, a higher percentage of 'em, and I can't show that the literacy test, uh ... uh ... discriminates against ... 'cause they haven't got any ... they got no test a-tall ... just by God, anybody that can get up and pay a dollar and six bits can vote.

The juxtaposition of that quote with an observation once made by Nicholas Katzenbach in his memoirs, as he reflected on his visits to Johnson's ranch, brings further context to Johnson's views of minorities. Explaining how Johnson used to drive him around the ranch on an old fire engine seeing all the interesting sites, he would occasionally stop to talk to the ranch workers; when he did so with a black worker he would wave him over to join them, shouting "Come over here, boy, and meet your attorney general" as Katzenbach cringed in disbelief.¹⁰³⁴

Former Attorney General Nicholas Katzenbach, in this revealing statement, asserted for the record that Lyndon Johnson—believed by many to have undergone, from 1963 to 1964, a quick and real “conversion” from his previous history of racism of the worst kind—felt no compunction whatever, throughout his presidency and lifetime, in ridiculing, belittling, and denigrating the very minorities for whom he wanted history to show himself as having been their liberator.

Johnson’s Civil Rights Record

After the civil rights legislation was passed, in August 1965, the black section of Los Angeles known as Watts exploded into massive riots, shooting, looting, and assorted violence, which caused Johnson and his acting attorney general, Ramsey Clark, great shock and disbelief. Both of them had apparently not realized that Johnson’s provocative speeches to exhort his audiences for more “affirmative action” to redress the slights and discrimination of blacks might have been the spark that helped set off the violence. According to Robert Dallek, both Bill Moyers and Joseph Califano tried to meet with Johnson for two days after the rioting began and when Califano finally did so, Johnson was concerned about “any indication that his administration had contributed to the upheaval by indulging black anger.”¹⁰³⁵ Johnson couldn’t understand how the riots could have occurred “after all we’ve accomplished? How could it be? Is the world topsy-turvy?”¹⁰³⁶ Johnson’s biggest concern with the Watts riots was that it would make it more difficult to pass his “Great Society” programs because of possible white backlash from the violence. He feared that “‘Negroes will end up pissing in the aisles of the Senate,’ and making fools of themselves.”¹⁰³⁷ Johnson favored allusions to the act of urination, as previously noted, to express many of his thoughts, as well as to make a point more emphatically.

In any event, the Watts riots of 1965 were only the beginning of what would occur with greater frequency during the ensuing three summers, culminating in major riots in many cities throughout the country in 1968. The nation was on fire that spring and summer, after the assassinations of Martin Luther King in April and Bobby Kennedy in June, followed by the Chicago rioting as the Democratic National Convention commenced. The president of the United States at the time had to cancel his appearance at his own political party’s convention because of a public enraged at that president’s misguided handling of Vietnam.

Johnson Steals White House Property

Unlike President Clinton and wife Hillary, whose theft of a few White House furnishings was quickly publicized, Johnson managed to steal enough property to fill at least ten airplanes, which were all secretly flown at taxpayer expense to the LBJ Ranch. According to Ronald Kessler, author of *In the President’s Secret Service*, Bill Gulley, the aide responsible for systems and logistical operations, stated that he had personally handled the ten flights to fly furnishings and mementos selected by Johnson to his ranch. “A lot was sent by State,” he said. “We sent LBJ tie pins and busts and lots of furniture. There were wristwatches [including Rolex watches for the more fortunate people selected personally by Johnson], rings, cuff links, ladies’ bracelets, lipstick dispensers. It was not cheap stuff.

They all had presidential seals,” Gulley said, estimating that the gold cigarette lighters cost \$1,000 each. “There was Air Force One toilet paper, soap, and furniture,” he said.¹⁰³⁸ The former pilot of Air Force One, Colonel Ralph Albertazzi confirmed what Gulley said, explaining how, before Johnson relinquished control of the airplane, after he had been flown back to Bergstrom Air Force Base in San Antonio, Johnson had the airplane stripped of practically everything that was not needed to fly it back to Washington. Albertazzi said that when the plane returned from Texas it was empty, that everything from towels, cocktail napkins, silverware, and anything with the Air Force One logo—even toilet tissue, which did not—were all gone. The special chair that had been installed just for Johnson, called “the throne,” was unbolted and stolen, along with all the pillows and blankets. Also missing was the presidential chinaware that had been selected by Jacqueline Kennedy, a set of beige plates with gold edging, embossed with the seal of the president of the United States.¹⁰³⁹ The reason for Johnson’s interest in the souvenirs and mementos will become evident shortly.

Johnson’s Largess with Taxpayer’s Funds

The improvements made to Johnson’s ranch in the name of “national security” were worth untold millions of dollars. The airfield alone, after the fatal crash in 1961—after he had forced the pilots to land in heavy fog at his ranch so he could fly up to Midland, Texas, to meet with Billie Sol Estes, which was caused by Johnson’s arrogance, recklessness, and lack of concern for the safety of the pilots—had been outfitted with the latest navigational and landing strip instruments to assure that the vice president would not be put at risk. Bobby Baker wrote, “Taxpayers had been spared no expense in constructing the LBJ airfield and installing the latest in technical improvements. Many a small-town airport I’d visited had not been half so fine ... Hundreds of thousands of dollars’ worth of improvements had been made ... in the name of national security.”¹⁰⁴⁰

Johnson’s aide Bill Gulley admitted to helping Johnson swindle the government, using funds allocated to a secret fund that was supposed to be used to build and maintain bomb shelters. According to author Kessler’s book referenced previously, the total expenditure for all improvements to the ranch was actually \$3.7 million including a theater, roadways, water pumps, and sprinkler system.¹⁰⁴¹ Johnson was no doubt planning an infrastructure that would be worthy of a presidential monument, even though he perhaps started a little early, before he had even become president or the point where the deed to the land had passed from himself to the government.

To control the dust created by the construction of new roads and runways for his personal airport, Gulley said Johnson ordered the air force to fly in water trucks that constantly sprayed water on the roads. “They [the trucks] never left that ranch,” he said.¹⁰⁴² “Johnson was a grand thief,” Gulley said. “He knew where the money was. He had us set up a fund code named Green Ball... . They used it for whatever Johnson wanted to use it for. Fancy hunting guns were bought. Johnson and his friends kept them.”¹⁰⁴³

James R. Jones, who became one of Johnson’s highest-level assistants, said, “There were

things that you probably wouldn't do today ... For example, he wanted peacocks. They brought helicopters in to control them or capture them"¹⁰⁴⁴ Lyndon Johnson ordered marine helicopters stationed on the LBJ Ranch for the singular purpose of herding his peacocks.

The statements made by the previously noted sources regarding Lyndon Johnson's propensity for stealing property from the government for his own use, together with all the similar assertions contained in the previous book, should adequately demonstrate his skills regarding public thievery. However, even the examples from Ronald Kessler pale in comparison to the charges made in a trilogy of books titled *The Gold House: The True Story of the Victorio Peak Treasure*. According to author John Clarence, Lyndon Johnson began, and Richard Nixon continued, followed further by Gerald Ford, stealing hundreds of millions of dollars worth of gold bars (the value at the time; today's estimate for eight million troy ounces of gold bullion would be closer to \$2 billion). The gold, according to this story, had been accumulated by the government and stored in a secret cache at Victorio Peak, a small mountain located on the White Sands Missile Range in New Mexico.¹⁰⁴⁵

It was apparently the reason John F. Kennedy and Johnson, with John Connally, had taken an inspection trip to the area in June 1963 and wound up at the Cortez Hotel in El Paso, where they worked out the details for the Texas campaign trip that Johnson and Connally had pressured Kennedy to take, and which Johnson had already leaked to the press two months earlier.

Author Clarence discussed this with a CIA operative called "Mr. H.," who had facilitated the theft, and who Johnson later tried to enlist to kill Senator Ralph Yarborough and Bobby Baker as well. When asked why he took Johnson's assignment without having any intention to complete it, he explained that he "hated Johnson" for what he believed he had done to have Kennedy assassinated and just wanted to give Johnson something else to worry about, as to when and how Yarborough would be eliminated. During the same conversation he claimed that Johnson said, "Bobby Baker has been part of the family since we were kids, but that son-of-a-bitch could bury me. You might as well include him."¹⁰⁴⁶

Given all that we have learned about Lyndon Johnson's sociopathic and criminal past, this conversation about murdering his nemesis Yarborough and in the same breath, saying, in effect, "While you're at it, kill my old friend Bobby Baker too" becomes quite believable, and is completely consistent with his lifetime of murderous actions against those who had gotten into his way or who he felt "knew too much." A familiar pattern was manifested as he always couched such requests in subtle words, in this case "You might as well include him."

Reconciling Johnson's Double Personality by Those Who Knew Him

Journalists assigned to the White House are naturally protective of their continued access to the president. With Johnson, however, the line between what should, or should not, be reported became more blurred than usual due to the vagaries of his credibility gap, his volatility, and his reputation for taking retribution against those who criticized him. Most

of the White House reporters then, as is the continuing case, considered their own desire to maintain cordial relations with President Johnson in order to keep their access to the White House, a higher priority than writing a column that they knew would provoke his rages.

Thankfully, a courageous few reporters like Clark Mollenhoff—a Pulitzer Prize-winning journalist, lawyer, and columnist for the *Des Moines Register*—*Life* magazine’s Keith Wheeler, and William Lambert, were able to expose many of the sordid details related to what columnist Hugh Sidey had once euphemistically referred to as “the mixing of deceit and truth, the use of corrupt means for noble ends.” It was this rationalization of the “noble ends” by those around him that allowed Johnson to continue his presidency despite the scandals that nearly drove him out of the vice presidency, and—were it not for the power of his position after November 22, 1963—avoid impeachment as the president. But it wasn’t only journalists who gave Johnson the benefit of the doubt, in deference to his list of “noble ends,” which he must have realized would ultimately serve to erase the “corrupt means” used to accomplish them: Learned men and advisers like Clark Clifford and John Kenneth Galbraith evidently could not see the darkness at his core, or if they did, managed to avoid the obvious implications.

Johnson’s involvement in murders, particularly that of his predecessor, has been long guarded from serious inquiry. But the twisted view of Lyndon Johnson as an innocent, gallant, and magnanimous leader was not shared by most of those who knew him best. Many in the Kennedy camp, including Robert Kennedy, were reported as having suspected that Johnson was behind the assassination but lacked substantive proof^{*****} (among his reasons for wanting to run for president himself was to put himself into the only position from which he could ever solve the mystery). William Manchester’s account in *The Death of a President* of the trip back to Washington on Air Force One makes it abundantly clear that Ken O’Donnell suspected the same, and knew that Johnson was using Mrs. Kennedy for his own narcissistic purposes.¹⁰⁴⁷ General McHugh’s and Pierre Salinger’s observations noted earlier likewise show their concurrence.

Another one of the Kennedy people who suspected Johnson was the “mastermind” was Kennedy’s secretary, Evelyn Lincoln, who stated this more than once. The first time was on Air Force One, en route back to Washington on November 22, 1963, when she wrote on a notepad her list of possible candidates, which placed Lyndon Johnson at the head of the various people and organizations most likely involved in the assassination:

There is no end to the list of suspected conspirators to Pres. Kennedy murder. Many factions had their reasons for wanting the young president dead. That fact alone illustrates how the world suffers from a congenital proclivity to violence.¹⁰⁴⁸

Thirty-one years later, Mrs. Lincoln had not changed her mind regarding Lyndon Johnson’s role in the assassination; she wrote as much in a letter in October 1994, seven months before her death, pointing to Johnson as one of several men involved in the conspiracy to kill JFK: “It is my belief that there was a conspiracy because there were those that disliked him and felt the only way to get rid of him was to assassinate him. These five

conspirators, in my opinion, were Lyndon B. Johnson, J. Edgar Hoover, the Mafia, the CIA and the Cubans in Florida.”¹⁰⁴⁹

LBJ's Program to Rehabilitate His Image

Lyndon Johnson realized that his crude, boorish, and loud behavior might seem un-presidential to some and assigned his long time aide Horace Busby to work on improving his presidential image (maybe he heard someone use the phrase “noise is golden” in reference to his style, which Evelyn Lincoln was known to do).¹⁰⁵⁰ One suggestion Busby made was to have the presidential photographer take photos as he followed the president and Mrs. Johnson around the White House gardens, strolling hand in hand, or as they sat together reading books before retiring to bed. “A portrait of him bowling with one of his daughters would convey a wholesome father-daughter closeness.”¹⁰⁵¹ Johnson had previously tasked his aide George Reedy, a former journalist, and Phil Graham, publisher of the *Washington Post*, to portray himself as a thoughtful and learned man, in contrast to the man they knew he really was.¹⁰⁵² After twelve years of working for Johnson, Reedy undoubtedly knew him better than almost anyone else, but his efforts to help Johnson “reinvent” himself were doomed by the master he served.



The best and brightest at work.



In accordance with Reedy's plan to "remake his image" Johnson poses as a great thinker and agonizer.

Despite numerous accounts of Johnson's real persona, as an unscrupulous opportunist not above criminal acts to advance his career, he adroitly practiced putting just the right political "spin" on his public image and would need to ensure that there were skillful people working full time at keeping it polished for posterity. To accomplish this, he enlisted a few newspaper editor friends, or perhaps in some cases gave them veiled threats, valuable gifts, or promises of access, to write "good stories" of him, which portrayed him in a manner that could be described as the opposite of what he really was. The examples used throughout this book of his real behavior are intended to provide additional support for the assertions made elsewhere as to one of his core attributes: how he planted lies to replace truths, thereby creating "myths" about himself. To the reporters seeking answers to questions such as his relationships to Baker and Estes, or how a poor Texas boy living on a government salary accrued millions, Johnson evaded, bamboozled, and tried vainly to throw them off track.

Johnson would lecture "liberal" historians on his unprecedented accomplishments because of what he felt was the public's insufficient appreciation of his leadership. Robert Dallek wrote that "He wanted to be recognized as the greatest presidential legislator in US history."¹⁰⁵³ Lyndon Johnson wanted to be seen as the generous and magnanimous, brilliant leader of his nation, not just because of his spending on official government programs, but, as importantly, on a personal basis (though not on his dime). To that end, he prepared by having plenty of gift inventory on hand at all times. In practically all cases, these items were paid for by the US taxpayers.

LBJ's Spiritual Side—More Self-Indulgence

If his closest aides did not understand the intensity of Johnson's illusions of grandeur before he became president, they should have figured it out in the weeks after he became president, when he had the presidential photographer step up the number of photographs taken of himself. In the first seven weeks of his taking over the office, 11,000 pictures of Johnson were taken.¹⁰⁵⁴ Lyndon Johnson's visits to churches, of course, never had anything to do with worship (other than, perhaps, self-worship) despite the efforts of Marvin Watson and Jack Valenti to advance that silliness; sometimes, he would visit numerous churches on the same day, but always with a more sectarian purpose: these visits were invariably associated with election season; he would visit churches because that was where the voters were. The more believable assessment of Johnson's religiosity was offered by author Haley: "Nothing in Johnson's public record and statements emphasized any abiding spiritual and moral creed, nor dedication to any firm political and philosophical principle."¹⁰⁵⁵

There must have been other reasons why Johnson decided to visit Pope Paul VI at the Vatican just before Christmas in 1967, a visit arranged at his request by Jack Valenti, who was trying to have the pope intervene with Johnson to help end the war. In any event, Johnson's vanity was as irrepressible as ever, even at that holy site, where the pope gave him a fourteenth-century painting as a Christmas gift. Johnson's gift to His Holiness was a

plastic bust of himself: *Lyndon B. Johnson*, apparently one of a batch he had made, since he had taken two hundred of them on an earlier trip to the South Pacific.¹⁰⁵⁶ There is no record of the pope's reaction to this thoughtful gift, but it is likely that he knew more about Lyndon Johnson's demons than even Johnson himself: Was it Johnson's deeply suppressed knowledge that he had crossed over the most sacred lines of basic morality his entire lifetime, but particularly four years before, which caused him to meet with the pope? Perhaps this was simply an attempt by the self-nominated "greatest president of the United States" to buy his ticket into heaven by God's main emissary on earth. If these speculations seem a bit absurd, the subject here must be kept in context: They are realistic projections based on a long litany of factual documentation of the most powerful man on earth, as he no doubt reminded himself endlessly, the psychotic "King," Lyndon B. Johnson.

Both Marvin Watson, an aide described earlier, who considered himself "chief of staff" though no one remembers him receiving such a designation and Jack Valenti, another aide, in their respective memoirs, went to great lengths to describe their participation in Johnson's visit with the pope, yet neither one broached the delicate—and the most salient point of the story—question about the purpose of Johnson's gift of his own likeness: a foot-high plastic sculpture of himself. Perhaps that was not congruent with their strained depictions of Johnson as a humble and honorable man. There is no record of the pope's response to this magnificent gift from His Eminence, the thirty-sixth president of the United States. It is not unreasonable to ponder whether Johnson expected that this sculpture of himself would be displayed in a prominent position not only by this pope but many others for centuries to come. Is it possible that he thought that it would ensure his eternal salvation? That perhaps people around the world would worship his statue for hundreds or even thousands of years as one of the greatest of the world leaders? In any event, the pope's gift to him of a fourteenth-century painting, though much more valuable in monetary terms, probably went underappreciated by a man whose artistic side was not quite as sophisticated as his predecessor's.

Johnson's Love of Gift Giving

The description of Johnson written in Doris Kearns's biography of him, *Lyndon Johnson and the American Dream*, illustrates the gargantuan size of Johnson's ego by the end of his career. The depiction of one single facet of his personality—how he loved to give presents (purchased by taxpayers, naturally), not just any presents, but those that reflected his own greatness, to people who had come within his "presence"—speaks volumes about how deluded he had become in retirement. The author has carefully chosen her words, but the stoic description of his imperial attitude suggests that his paranoia (delusions of grandeur) had grown in the autumn of his years to the same monstrous proportions as the rest of his being. He had come to think so grandly of himself that he now thought he was original American royalty, worthy of such gestures as giving "certificates" to those who were fortunate enough to come "within the presidential presence."

Other presidents had delegated the responsibility of acquiring and distributing presidential gifts to clerical personnel, probably because most people would consider this

to be too boring for a brilliant mind such as Lyndon Johnson's. But it is clear from Kearns's biography that this was something Johnson thoroughly enjoyed, for reasons that might seem rather peculiar, including for the purpose of "*engraving my spirit on the minds and hearts of my people*." In addition to photographs of himself, his gifts included an assortment of trinkets, jewelry, cigarette lighters, watches, and, among the most precious, certificates to anyone who had ever accompanied him on trips aboard the presidential helicopter or airplane, as authentication of that person's verbal remembrances of the momentous experience of the hallowed time spent with the greatest man of his generation. His love of himself was reflected in how he expected people to value these mementos in the same way that Kearns described how he had treasured them with "unabashed pride, the way a grandfather treats pictures of his grandchildren."¹⁰⁵⁷

Johnson's assistant George Reedy explained one of Johnson's motivations for this love of gift giving—for people on his staff, or others he was attempting to manipulate—by saying that the gifts were a form of repayment for the abuses he realized they had to endure, either before the fact or afterward. Sometimes, Reedy explained, the gifts were for people who had never provided any service other than giving him adulation, which he apparently valued even more than other services rendered.¹⁰⁵⁸ Reedy may have been right to perceive this as a "weakness," which he then "atoned" for by his subsequent abuse of the person, but another explanation might have been that he knew the gift would allow him to "make up" for past abuse and simultaneously buy him credits that would allow him to continue abusing the person for an indefinite future period.

The love of gift giving was part of his mania, manifesting itself in the trinkets he gave to complete strangers in all his foreign trips. He could be counted on to take two caches of cargo with him: "dozens of cases of Cutty Sark" for himself and whomever he chose to share drinks with, and "hundreds of boxes of pens and cigarette lighters" to give away to the "little people," who he also referred to as "pissants." He once ran out of scotch in Taiwan and ordered a military plane to fly a case of the high-end scotch from Hong Kong so he wouldn't run out of it, which would definitely spoil his trip. In far-off lands where the populace could not speak English, he would run through the streets passing out pens and lighters and making speeches in English to crowds of startled people glad to receive their gift, not knowing anything about this strange, loud, giant cowboy who couldn't stop talking.¹⁰⁵⁹ In Saigon, he also handed out passes to the Senate Gallery, inviting people to visit Washington, saying, "Get your mamma and daddy to bring you to the Senate and Congress and see how the government works,"¹⁰⁶⁰ oblivious to the fact that few of them understood a word he had said, or, even if they had, would ever even consider making a trip to the United States to see what a "Senate" was. Chaos seemed to follow him around, including to Bangkok, where Johnson conducted a press conference at 2 a.m., dressed in pajamas. Then a trip scheduled for 7 a.m. was cancelled in the middle of the night, but the reporters were awakened at 6 a.m. and told that they had missed the trip.¹⁰⁶¹

Trails of Evidence: Commonalities of Treasons

All of the noted characteristics of Lyndon Johnson were the inevitable manifestation of

traits that others had observed throughout his life. His cousin who grew up with him, Ava Johnson, once observed that his obsession to “be the leader in everything he did, just *had* to, just could not *stand* not to be, had to win.”¹⁰⁶² [Emphasis in original.] This trait is precisely what drove him so frenetically to achieve his lifetime goal of the presidency. His determination to fulfill what he considered to be his destiny became even more steely resolved every time “[h]e heard his father’s acquaintances whisper as he passed on the street, ‘He’ll’ never amount to anything. Too much like Sam.”¹⁰⁶³ His grandmother Ruth Baines saw the same characteristics, except she must have also noticed his dominant side, the less altruistic, more pragmatic attitude so unlike his own father’s idealistic, populist politics; she had said more than once, “That boy is going to wind up in the penitentiary—just mark my words.”¹⁰⁶⁴ The gravity of this observation by his own grandmother is stunning: merely the fact that she was so troubled by her grandson’s behavior when he was still a boy that she made such astonishing comments, as attested to by Lyndon’s brother Sam Houston Johnson.

A Summary Review of Findings

The findings we have already established throughout this work are summarized next; they are the threads that remain loose and dangling and it is now our task to tie them all together, to bring coherence to the details and minutia, thus focusing on overall patterns that fit together like a complex jigsaw puzzle.

The first major treason, and certainly the most consequential, was the JFK assassination. The key provocateurs in the second hierarchal rung, those Johnson directly provoked and enlisted, having been fed all the dirt from Hoover’s files, did not need convincing that Kennedy was a danger to themselves. The key men from high levels in the Pentagon and the CIA, from the FBI and Secret Service, had all come to agree with Johnson that JFK was inexperienced, reckless, and a little too soft on Communism. The primary proofs to them were centered on an invasion of Cuba, which had failed despite two opportunities. Moreover, Kennedy had repeatedly refused to add combat troops and initiate plans to declare war in Vietnam, which they thought was imperative.

Was it mere serendipity that caused all of these men to come together and develop a plot to assassinate Kennedy, or was there a single man who had the forcefulness, ruthlessness, guile, and a history of criminal, even murderous, acts and the subsequent power to assure the others that it would be covered up for all time, that there was nothing to worry about? Johnson would have used JFK’s idealistic “peace speech” at American University in June to stir up the hatred that would be required of these men. He would have used Kennedy’s personal indiscretions with others, such as his known womanizing, especially with communist spies like Ellen Rometsch, which would double the political jeopardy if it became public; for others, who thought that Kennedy was preparing to lead the “Negro revolution” he would have used other, more bombastic comments to accomplish his mission.

His tactics would have been custom-fitted for the occasion and the man, whether they were on Capitol Hill, in Georgetown, New York, Dallas, Los Angeles, Chicago, New

Orleans, Houston, or Las Vegas. Johnson made sure the word had spread to all the right people in all of these places that Kennedy was a traitor and could not be trusted to protect the security of the United States. It must be remembered that this was his primary skill set; there would have been no one more skilled at people manipulation than Lyndon Johnson simply because he was the best practitioner of it in the country, as attested to by the numerous descriptions from many different observers and authors of the legendary and unique “Johnson Treatment.” Indeed, if there can be found unanimity in any one fact, in every book ever written about him, this point can be stipulated without further debate.

But there are many other trails that lead inexorably to a logically based conclusion that Lyndon Johnson was a “driving force” behind JFK’s assassination. It is almost an axiom that, because he fulfilled all the requirements for that role and that no one else was even close, he was uniquely qualified for the position of CEO of what he himself called “Murder Incorporated.” His imprint is reflected within all the patterns noted previously: the anomalies with forensic evidence, the incredible witnesses who displaced the credible witnesses, the known threats to the witnesses, especially the Parkland doctors, to change their testimony, the clear manipulation of the Warren Commission to play along with obviously contorted processes, and the numerous deceits varying in their degrees of subtlety. The fact that the entire operation required the enlistment of a number of men, both voluntarily and forcefully, is itself the proverbial “key” to the puzzle: Only Lyndon Johnson, the grandest political player in history, was able to accomplish that.

It took someone with extreme powers of persuasion, who had built a lifetime record of experience pulling people together to accomplish his schemes—the criminal ones like stolen elections, flagrant abuse of campaign fund handling, murders of people who got in his way, as well as the more conventional politicking skills—to have pulled together and led the powerful men already alluded to throughout this book to agree to the plan to kill Kennedy. Such a person had to be driven by passion, and there was no one in Washington who even came close to him in that qualification—certainly not the rather introverted, cerebral, pipe-smoking, tweed-jacketed Princeton alumnus who had *previously* presided over the CIA, nor the equally deluded and aged head of SOG (his term for “Seat of Government,” being his own government-issued heavy-duty desk chair) J. Edgar Hoover—who also had tentacles throughout the federal bureaucracy but not nearly equal to the powers that Johnson had amassed.

The catalyst behind the assassination had to have been a singular “driving force” who had to have connections to all the key people in multiple agencies of the federal government as well as to local officials in Dallas, Texas (the previous schemes in Chicago and Miami were most likely merely test runs to assure that all contingencies had been anticipated and that the men involved had been properly prepared for the real event). The “key man” had to have the ability to push all the right buttons and get those people—some unwittingly, with only a limited scope of knowledge of the overall plan—to take actions on his command. He was acting as a forceful CEO of an enterprise that would primarily benefit himself, but sold to the others as being necessary for accomplishing their own interests, whether that be a more aggressive foreign policy, especially toward Vietnam, an end to the “peace process” with the USSR that Kennedy had implemented, a stop to the

threat he had introduced to the power of the Federal Reserve, or simply a change to the apparent slippage toward socialism that many feared. Only a very powerful force, a “colossus” as described by none other than Bill Moyers, could have possibly been the driving force that was the essential ingredient, the “critical mass.”

The enterprise, like all major undertakings of humanity, required a powerful catalyst to give it momentum, direction, and the subsequent promise of protection that all the players would expect, a promise that only LBJ could make effectively. That catalyst would have to reach into not only all the federal agencies, especially the military and intelligence organizations, but just as certainly into the state and local authorities in order to simultaneously ignite the fuses within each; it would take a unified “driving force” to do that, and Lyndon Johnson was uniquely capable of providing that kind of reach into every such entity. That element could have only come from a very powerful and dedicated single person, a very forceful person, one who could bring all the elements together. Some may prefer other terms, such as a “CEO,” a “Key Man,” a “Linchpin,” or even the term I’ve used, a “Mastermind,” but that person, regardless of the label one prefers, could only have been a man consumed by power and obsessed for decades about becoming president of the United States. And such a man had to be someone known to be a sociopath, someone whose conscience was either nonexistent or whatever little of it that might have remained was so completely repressed that it would not be a factor in the eventual execution of the plan. Moreover, such a person had to be driven by a mania that could not be suppressed, someone who knew that failure to attain the objective would spell personal disaster, something that was already assured, through the vindictive attorney general who really was “out to get him.”

Yet Johnson was also already, and uniquely, in a sea of trouble that could only be eliminated if he did take power on November 22, 1963. Johnson’s first telephone calls after the assassination included several related to the status of two Senate subcommittees that were already poised to take irreparable actions that would inexorably lead to the penitentiary, just as his grandmother Baines had predicted when he was just a child. The “point of no return” had long since passed by the time Johnson spent a month in Texas, preparing for the presidential visit, with particular emphasis on one single facet: the Dallas motorcade.

It was obvious even to some of the men on the Warren Commission that there was more than one shooter, but a grudging consensus was reached to hide, destroy, or ignore real facts and the most credible witnesses and replace them with fabricated “evidence” and incredible witnesses. Any genuine reinvestigation into Kennedy’s assassination should specifically include a detailed analysis of precisely what information Johnson and Hoover had, which might have been used to blackmail the Commission members.

What was known to them about the men who would be nominated to the presidential commission, including Earl Warren himself, who had turned him down twice before, was that Johnson and Hoover held the personal secrets that gave them power over each member. Johnson himself said, according to Noel Twyman’s research, “I just pulled out what Hoover told me about a *little incident in Mexico City ... and he [Warren] started*

crying and said, well I won't turn you down, I'll just do whatever you say ..."¹⁰⁶⁵ Warren did exactly that, and subsequently went to great pains to avoid certain areas of the investigation, including refusing to allow Jack Ruby to be moved out of Dallas, to Washington, so that he would be in a position to talk freely about what had happened without fear of retribution by the Dallas police. Regarding other Warren Commission members, it is clear that a pattern existed with respect to whom Johnson thought he could control; apparently he had secrets that would compel the cooperation of those he selected:

- In the case of Gerald Ford, he had been taped by Hoover while using Fred Black's hotel suite for assignations with women other than his wife Betty, as noted in *LBJ: The Mastermind of the JFK Assassination*.
- With regard to Richard Russell, a sixty-six-year-old life time bachelor who had no known long-term companion, it might have related to whatever sexual practices, or peccadilloes, might have been hiding in his closet. It is interesting to note that in Robert Caro's latest book, *The Passage to Power*, Johnson is described recalling an incident a decade earlier, when the two men met for breakfast early one morning. Johnson asked Russell if he remembered the time when they met for breakfast at the Carlton Hotel in 1952, after which he became the minority leader; the comment, dropped after that curious statement, was suggestive of a secret only they knew about.¹⁰⁶⁶ Johnson's closeness to Senator Russell may have been manifested in more than the typical bonding between heterosexual males. According to author Twyman's interview with Madeleine Brown, Senator Russell was a "closet homosexual" who often joined his homosexual friends, oilman Sid Richardson, FBI head J. Edgar Hoover, General Edwin Walker, and others at Richardson's island paradise in Matagorda Bay, off the coast of Texas.¹⁰⁶⁷ Moreover, considering Lyndon Johnson's long history of using his "Treatment" on this lonely old bachelor, and his own peculiar, quite extensive history of sexual peccadilloes, including some suggestions that Johnson himself was bisexual, it is quite possible that Johnson was gently reminding Russell of their own secrets—"chips" he was now calling in as payback for favors received. Immediately after this revealing exchange, in a video available on the Internet, Russell seems to "give up" his strong opposition to Johnson's request, his pleas becoming more feeble before finally acquiescing to the president's already announced decision.
- Hale Boggs, who, retrospectively, seemed to be an unlikely friend and supporter of Johnson, had been exactly that, probably simply the result of pragmatism and party loyalty rather than a genuine "friendship." Boggs later realized that Hoover had "lied his eyes out" to the Warren Commission, and had even repeated rumors three years later, that the assassination plot led back to Lyndon Johnson. But in the days immediately after the assassination, it seems that Ed Butler—the man who had debated Oswald on the radio in August 1963, and was the head of a New Orleans organization set up by Dr. Alton Ochsner called INCA (the Information Council of the Americas) to distribute anti-Communist radio broadcasts to Latin America—brought a tape player to Boggs's office "so that Boggs could hear Oswald say, 'I am a

Marxist.’ As Butler told it, upon hearing the recording, Boggs called Lyndon Johnson to tell him he had just heard evidence that Oswald was a Communist.”¹⁰⁶⁸ This happened before Johnson had decided on his appointments to the Warren Commission and was undoubtedly one of the reasons Johnson selected him, given that he was already predisposed to Oswald’s guilt.

Only Lyndon Johnson could have made the decision to close down the investigations already underway by all federal, state, and city agencies into the possibility of multiple shooters and thereby prove that a conspiracy existed. That he, or his aide Cliff Carter, made numerous calls to people for just that purpose is irrefutable: the Dallas District Attorney Henry Wade even publicly admitted it. Dallas Police Captain Will Fritz, Police Chief Jesse Curry, and Sheriff Decker had been advised to close down further investigations and to keep their mouths shut about it. Though they did not publicly announce it, the individual police officers knew that at least Captain Fritz had gotten a personal call from Johnson and was ordered to shut down his investigation. Sheriff Decker’s actions, as well as his shady past, indicate that he was directly involved in pre-event planning, so post-event requests from Johnson would be guaranteed. Like everyone else, they had all been warned not to pursue other leads and told that the sooner this case was closed, the better off everyone would be ... it was declared to be a “national security” issue, and that was supposed to answer any remaining questions.

Tell-Tale Signs of a Coup d’Etat

The immediate reversal of President Kennedy’s efforts to de escalate the military build up in Vietnam, as well as a general reversal of other military policies, began not just moments after his death, but actually even before JFK left the airspace of Washington, DC, on board Air Force One. The immediacy of Johnson’s actions to effect a 180-degree reversal of Kennedy’s Vietnam policies further indicates a clear connection between the two events. Looking back at those events, from the fundamentally different course set by Johnson’s Vietnam policy, referred to as National Security Action Memorandum #273 (NSAM 273) contrasted to Kennedy’s NSAM 263, and four weeks later, his Christmas promise to the Joint Chiefs of Staff that “they would have their war” and the order given to McGeorge Bundy to begin strategizing how to provoke the North Vietnamese into “attacking” a US warship shortly after that fits the paradigm as precisely as the last piece of a jigsaw puzzle. It was an action that instigated the Gulf of Tonkin incident eight months after taking office that has now been proved to have been staged for the very purpose of getting himself full authority to ramp up the introduction of combat troops by the hundreds of thousands at a time. Together, these actions demonstrate Johnson’s intent and the war planning he began to employ immediately upon taking over the Oval Office.

His treasonous actions related to the tragically fated USS *Liberty* were a sort of “final proof” of his intrinsic dishonesty, and his ability to conduct the most outrageous, brutally heinous acts of a man as depraved as anyone in history. It should be clear by now that only Lyndon Johnson could have orchestrated it all, with the help of a number of compliant “advisers” and practically no one who would dare argue any of it with him. The only one who even tried valiantly to do that, George Ball, had already left after two years of

complete frustration.

If it weren't for all the pent-up social legislation that he had—previously, carefully filed away—then quickly pushed through Congress using every tool in his large bag of tools, he would have never been given the deference and respect of many renowned historians. Without that, his misadventure in Vietnam would have destroyed any “legacy” that he might have tried to create. But, unfortunately for the tens of thousands of American boys who were lost there—or whose life ended shortly after their return home, or their parents, some I knew personally who took their own lives out of despair for their loss—or lost their limbs there, or suffered physically and/or mentally as a result, it was clearly the most unnecessary, ultimately pointless, and costly military action in American history.

The truth of how Lyndon Johnson connived with the most militant of JFK's former advisers, starting immediately after he became president, to escalate the US presence and finally “Americanize” the Vietnam War has been proven. Though the tragic result is now generally accepted to have been a “mistake,” the real story has never been acknowledged. The conventional wisdom, that it was a case of “bad intelligence and poor judgment,” instead of the deliberate acts of a psychotic president, still persists. The lies he sowed, as he drummed up patriotic support for his war while portraying himself as a brilliant commander lamenting every dead serviceman, have grown over time. The end result is that many people still accept his lie that he had merely inherited the inevitable result of President Eisenhower's and Kennedy's mistakes, when they had actually resisted active participation in that war. The real story of how he had cunningly plotted, immediately upon becoming president, to needle and provoke the North Vietnamese into taking actions that would agitate the public, and the military already invested in Vietnam, is only now becoming understood by that public. He knew all along that those actions would eventually lead to attacks against his Navy ships—if not real attacks, then phantom attacks would do—so that he could take strong retaliatory action. And that was done immediately, right on his secret schedule, even though he knew that there had been no real attack when he said, “Hell, those dumb, stupid sailors were just shooting at flying fish!” All of this was no different than his actions as a high school bully had been; only the scale had been increased to global proportions. The timing of that action had also been planned to afford him maximum political advantage, precisely three months before the 1964 presidential election.

But the larger dynamic behind these machinations was still playing out in the Senate: His goal was to get a carte blanche approval for him to unilaterally exercise his plan to escalate the war without the need for further congressional approvals. That was the trump card that would allow him to run his war without any further oversight from Congress. All but two senators voted for that misconceived and deceitful measure, pushed through the Senate by the chairman of the Senate Foreign Relations Committee, the famed J. William Fulbright of Arkansas. It is a supreme irony that the esteemed Senator Fulbright was on the wrong side of that vote as well as being on the wrong side of the Civil Rights Act: 1964 was not a good year for him even though his reputation somehow survived his worst failures. Johnson's documented treasons, as well as the far worse accusations related to his suspected involvement in planning the attack on the USS *Liberty*, were further examples of

how a consummate politician, concerned only with his own lust for power, can produce enormous levels of corruption.

As described previously, the issue of the USS *Liberty* is still a “thorn” in the side of American-Israeli relations on many levels. One of the most troubling of them is the fact that it created a major vulnerability that Israel could subsequently use as “blackmail” against the United States. Over the course of many years and the occurrence of additional secret treasons, it appears that US exposure to Israeli blackmail increased with each subsequent iteration. A little more than a decade later—when Iran seized fifty-two Americans and held them hostage beginning in November 1979 during the presidency of Jimmy Carter, as the 1980 presidential election neared—officials of the Reagan-Bush campaign made a secret deal with Iran to delay the release of those hostages until after the election, in order to avoid the potential benefit to Carter of an “October Surprise” that would help secure his reelection. The proof of that deal is evidenced by the timing of the delay in the release of the hostages: The hostages were finally released on the very day that Ronald Reagan became president and George H. W. Bush became vice president; indeed, it happened within minutes of their swearing-in ceremony. Bush’s prior government service, according to author Russ Baker, had consisted of early work for the CIA¹⁰⁶⁹—which he has denied—including his presence in Dallas before, and immediately after, JFK’s assassination. Beginning in 1966, he served two terms as a congressman before being named as the director of the CIA by the other “accidental president,” Gerald Ford.

According to ex-CIA black-ops specialist Gene “Chip” Tatum,^{*****} Bush, working with future CIA director William Casey and others from the campaign organization, through a “shadowy Iranian Jewish arms dealer,” Hushang Lavie, engineered an agreement to ship arms, including spare parts for F-104 fighter jets, to Iran in exchange for the delay. Those shipments were made from Israel, which had helped to broker the deal. Tatum asserted that “The Reagan administration apparently was vulnerable to highly damaging Israeli blackmail, and at least some top officials of both governments knew it... . If Bush really was involved personally in illicit Reagan campaign activities to forestall an ‘October surprise,’ he would have been so vulnerable to Israeli blackmail that that American policy could be controlled by Israel.”¹⁰⁷⁰ This arrangement would be reconstituted a few years later and result in what is now referred to as the “Iran-Contra” scandal that was the largest blemish of the Reagan administration. The cumulative sum of the blackmail exposures, beginning with the *Liberty* incident, have, paradoxically, seemingly strengthened the bond between the two nations.

Lessons of History

The final lesson of this sordid piece of American history is that it portends an endless, direct involvement of the United States of American into the center of a clash of civilizations that has developed over a period of thousands of years. It has solidified a linkage between the United States and Israel that inexorably ties them together in what, if Christian scripture is to be believed, will eventually lead to Armageddon. Disbelievers will find no comfort in the fact that much of what had been prophesied in Christian theology over two thousand years ago has already become true—the very existence of the nation of

Israel itself being one such manifestation.

Among the many other blemishes in the patina of American tradition that are traceable to the Johnson presidency, one of the most consequential occurred when two lessons of history—as articulated by Presidents George Washington and Dwight D. Eisenhower—were ignored by the thirty-sixth president. In his farewell address of January 17, 1961, President Eisenhower warned that the “Military-Industrial Complex” would represent a “potential for the disastrous rise of misplaced power.” Before World War II, such a thing did not exist, to any extent much greater than the “defense industry” existed during the Civil War, when some companies developed sidelines of making cannonballs. After World War II, Eisenhower realized that this new phenomenon carried great potential for good or for evil, and was so concerned about it that he gave what is arguably his most important speech as president to warn American citizens about the peril it represented. It was a warning that has gone unheeded by most other presidents since John F. Kennedy, who repeatedly tried to observe it despite his delay in understanding thoroughly what he was up against.

Lyndon Johnson not only ignored the warning, he went out of his way to capitalize on its existence. By being hell-bent on Americanizing the Vietnam War, and exploiting the patriotism of over three million young men to fight an unnecessary and pointless war for his own narrow political and financial purposes, Johnson took the military-industrial complex to heights that President Eisenhower could have never dreamed. Inevitably, those heights became established as the new “norm” and the consequence was the superpower era that pushed other nations into similar military buildups. The many other clearly “unnecessary wars” fought since then by the United States and other world powers is sufficient proof that General, then President, Eisenhower was spot-on: Too many armaments by too many countries begets too many wars.

The second lesson was described by George Ball, the undersecretary of state who worked with both John F. Kennedy and Lyndon Johnson (until he had enough of the latter and resigned his post in 1966). Ball wrote the tragic denouement of the Israeli attack on the *Liberty* and its aftermath in his 1992 book *The Passionate Attachment*, which recalled George Washington’s admonition that the United States must avoid “a passionate attachment” to another nation that could create “the illusion of a common interest ... where no common interest exists.” It was Ball’s claim that the unparalleled cost of America’s support of Israel, and its practically unqualified commitment to help it defend itself, are precisely what Washington warned against; it was also what so concerned James Forrestal and others about the formation of the new country of Israel, whose mysterious death just after crossing paths with Lyndon Johnson is yet another unsolved cold case. George Ball admitted that Johnson had tried to downplay the enormous damage to the ship and the thirty-four dead and scores of other wounded sailors through an “elaborate charade” to silence the crew, but admitted that the “sordid affair” was too damaging to ever “possibly be concealed.” His poignant conclusion was that the Israelis decided that if they could get by with an attack of this enormity, they could “get away with almost anything” and that has, evidently, guided them ever since.¹⁰⁷¹ That the highly respected diplomat and Undersecretary of State George W. Ball would express those sentiments in

his memoir suggests how upsetting this “sordid affair” was to him and his colleagues at the time.

And yet that construct—that Israel came away from their highly productive “win” in what can only be described as a planned war of conquest, predicated on Johnson’s lies and deceit with the apparent attitude that they could then “get away with anything” from their benefactor—defined the relationship between the United States and Israel for the last forty-seven years. It is unfortunate that the foundation for this relationship was built with such a large crack through its midsection.

The continuing disregard of the two admonitions of truly “great” presidents, George Washington and Dwight Eisenhower (the contrast to them and the one being studied now is implicit and clear) should be a cause of concern to those whose duties are to protect American citizens and its Constitution, given the profound issues at stake: In an age of anticolonialism, has the United States acquired a colonialist association and “passionate attachment” with a nation centered in the most violent geographic area in the world?

Last Lamentations of the Colossus, Lyndon Johnson

For those readers who believe this book and its predecessor lose credibility because of the author’s biases against Lyndon Johnson, it is acknowledged that such a premise would be hard to deny. But it should be remembered, from the first book, the basic premise was that only a presentation made in the style of an aggressive prosecutor presenting his or her case to a jury would be effective in “making the case” against Johnson. Another traditional biography, without a coherent and critical analysis of the inter-connections of Johnson’s demonstrated history of behavior, could not have accomplished the transformative reinterpretation of real history—still hidden from the record presented in contemporary textbooks—of a president still revered by many, if not most, of the population. It was something that had to be done to reconcile factual history with the “sanitized” versions that have produced the bizarre dichotomy of the American public paying homage to a president portrayed as one of the ten or fifteen best leaders of the country who was in fact the epitome of a disgraceful criminal of the worst order.

After nearly fifty years of hidden truths, “sooner” was already too late to correct the record for those harmed or killed by Lyndon Johnson. Correcting such erroneous and deceitful “history” had to be done with the kind of finality that comes from presenting the case as brutally and forcefully as possible, as it would have been done by a prosecutor in a perfect world, had one existed in 1962. Ranger Clint Peoples had tried to conduct his investigation into Henry Marshall’s murder, but had been stymied by Johnson, whose tentacles reached directly into that trial, with the help of Sheriff Stegall and US Attorney Barefoot Sanders, both working under Johnson’s direct command. His success in making so many men, and women, beholden to him who were in exactly the positions he needed them had paid off for him, especially that time in 1962. It was then that what everyone knew was a “homicide” was affirmed to be a “suicide” by a tainted grand jury under the complete control of Sheriff Stegall and Johnson’s crony Barefoot Sanders. The layers of redundancy in Johnson’s control of that trial—from a fixed jury to a corrupted sheriff to an interloping, cross-jurisdictional, sycophantic federal judge—in order to sustain the

absurd finding of “suicide” that everyone involved had to have known was grossly erroneous, illustrates just how high a priority Johnson had assigned to that mission. Giving the devil his due, it must be considered the greatest feat of his career, for it meant the difference in attaining his lifelong goal versus certain imprisonment: It was the difference that allowed what he believed to be his destiny to beat his grandmother’s prognostication about his eventual fate.

No other political figure of the twentieth century had the immense contradictions that Lyndon Johnson repeatedly demonstrated, only a fraction of which have been described within these volumes. The baseline reference was simply this: On the one hand, most of his biographies repeat the faux legacy that has been debunked within these pages and minimize his “mistakes” (as deadly as they were, for so many millions) or attribute them to his eccentricities. Yet, even these fail to critically examine his known relationships to a number of unsolved murders that preceded John F. Kennedy’s, nor have the same authors even looked at the subsequent assassinations of Robert F. Kennedy and Martin Luther King with that same perspective. Moreover, his intentional actions to ensure the build up in preparation for the Vietnam War, starting within days of his becoming president, and the determination with which he personally involved himself in “fighting” his war, were somehow accepted as “normal” by many of his biographers.

It is the upward arc of ever-increasing levels of criminal activity that propelled Lyndon Johnson higher and higher in the political ranks from his earliest years, as he practiced his techniques in college. If plotted on a graph, they would run in parallel, in steeply ascending lines. Only by understanding the dreadful details of the persona of Lyndon Johnson is it possible to understand the real story of JFK’s assassination—and those of RFK and MLK. The character traits of Johnson never really changed from his early years, when he was a school bully on the outside, yet intrinsically a coward on the inside. He was a person given to simplistic thinking on complex issues and not particularly intelligent in the broadest sense of the term. Yet, as we have seen repeated by his closest aides, he was highly skilled, even a genius, in the most esoteric psychic senses, especially while in his manic state, when he wasn’t in a psychotic meltdown. Many people described his ability to “read” other people, always trying to find the real motives that his quarry preferred to remain hidden. By prying their innermost secrets from them in one or another of his varied methods, or obtaining them from private detectives or FBI files, he held a “special currency” custom fitted to that person’s position, which he knew he could draw on at a later time.

Moreover, the “special access” to J. Edgar Hoover’s files from about 1942 on, when Lyndon and Lady Bird moved into a house across the street from him, was undoubtedly planned beforehand for the very purpose of giving Hoover a long-term dose of the “Johnson Treatment”: Nothing like that could have—realistically, given his meticulous planning abilities that have now been well documented—just happened randomly. Johnson knew that he would need all the favors he could get from Hoover in future years, as his planning to become president proceeded. After becoming friendly with the irascible old man, his access to FBI files was essentially unlimited and he had J. Edgar Hoover’s “pecker in his pocket” from that day forward. He and Lady Bird probably even celebrated that accomplishment when they moved into that house, even more than having acquired

the house itself.

Lyndon Johnson's genius was centered on the game of politics, and how he came to craft sophisticated but unethical, immoral, or unlawful actions by many others, leading mostly from the secrecy of the backroom, in the pursuit of his dream to become president. He excelled in the exploitation of the personal ambitions of others, people he knew would cooperate with him, for their varied individual reasons, to execute a succession of criminal acts and carefully manipulated plots.

After decades of practice, he became something of an expert at choreographing complex criminal enterprises, as repeatedly demonstrated within these pages. He slotted "his men" into precisely the positions within the federal government bureaucracy or the private business sector that he knew would benefit himself the most. We have seen numerous examples of this: How, in his earliest days in Congress, he wanted his own "little fellow in the corner" who would do nothing but think up ways for Johnson to gain more power, something that his eventual appointment of John Roche as his "resident intellectual" was intended to do. Putting Mac Wallace in the Agriculture Department as an economist, knowing that, as a fellow sociopath, he would later become Johnson's hit man, was one of the most obvious, clearest examples of how he managed to deploy "Johnson men" into positions throughout the government, under the implicit proviso that they remember who they really worked for. Having Jack Valenti put in charge of monitoring and controlling the motion picture industry in Hollywood was the best example of how he accomplished the same thing in the private sector.

Perhaps Lyndon Johnson himself inadvertently provided the keys to the unraveling of real truths when he appointed the "Presidential Commission on the Assassination of President Kennedy," more commonly known as the Warren Commission. What he probably thought at the time was that this maneuver would "close the case" for all time. His skills of duplicity paid off for him when he exploited the public fears of deeper, hidden forces behind the assassination while blaming it on a "lone nut" and simultaneously using unwarranted conspiracy "theories" involving Russia and Cuba to press the commissioners to quickly find Oswald guilty as charged. His use of the nation's fears of a nuclear war that could kill "forty million people," while simultaneously pressing the commissioners to complete their task quickly, led them directly to the result that he preordained: A transparently contrived "public relations" myth that serious researchers have repeatedly demolished for decades.

Whatever devices he used to force the major news media of the day to begin denigrating anyone who questioned the conclusions of the Warren Report have certainly been effective, as evidenced by the fact that all "politically correct" media continue their support of conclusions that—to most rational and objective people (historically 70 to 80 percent or so of the population)—look like a farce, a joke to prove how stupid the public would be if they bought it. As icing on the cake, the evidence, exhibits, and documents establishing that the perpetrator was merely a malcontent, a "lone nut," were then summarily consigned to the vaults by the same Lyndon "Bull" Johnson for seventy-five years, and ordered to be withheld from that same public. It was, he maintained, for purposes of

“national security” that these records on the lone nut assassin had to be secreted away and kept from the public. These suspect actions of President Johnson were the seeds that eventually caused the public skepticism that should eventually (optimists would prefer “will inevitably”) cause the collapse of the “house of cards” he created.

At the start of Lyndon Johnson’s presidency, after he had manipulated the men he knew he could control into their positions on the Warren Commission, his friend and Senate mentor Senator Richard Russell of Georgia stated at the commission’s first meeting, on December 5, 1963: “I told the President the other day, fifty years from today people will be saying he had something to do with it so he could be President.” Senator Russell isn’t given enough credit for the accuracy of his prescience. On that same day, despite his friendship with Johnson, he was troubled about how that meeting had gone, specifically some of the actions of Earl Warren (who had taken his “marching orders” directly from Johnson), and the knowledge all of them had shared regarding Oswald’s trip to Mexico, a payment allegedly made to him while he was there, and the narrowness of their mission in looking only at Oswald as a lone assassin; he later hand wrote a note to himself, which was found in his desk after he died, which stated:

Warren asked about CIA. “Did they have anything.” When I told of Mexico & Nicaraguan NOT mentioning sums—He mentioned 5G [\$5,000] as McCone had told me. He [Warren] knew all I did & more about CIA. Something strange is happening —W. [Warren] & [Deputy Attorney General Nicholas] Katzenbach know all about F.B.I. and they are apparently through psychiatrists & others planning to show Oswald only one who even considered—this to me is untenable position—I must insist on outside counsel—“Remember Warren’s blanket indictment of South.”¹⁰⁷²

By the end of his elected term, Senator Russell had decided that his twenty-year relationship with Johnson had pretty much run its course, that Johnson was deliberately stalling him on the appointment of a federal judgeship for his nominee, Alexander Lawrence Jr. who had the endorsement of the liberal publisher of the *Atlanta Constitution*; yet Ramsey Clark was against that appointment and had pressured Johnson not to approve it. By then, as a “lame duck” president, Johnson had run into much opposition from senators of both parties who distrusted Fortas for his continuing role counseling the president in addition to his court duties.

On July 1, 1968, Russell gave up on getting Lawrence’s nomination through even though Johnson was still counting on him to support his nomination of Abe Fortas to be chief justice of the Supreme Court; he decided that Johnson had taken his support for granted and wrote a “blistering” letter to Johnson that marked the end of a twenty-year friendship. Russell expressed his resentment at “being treated as a child or a patronage-seeking ward heeler ...” Russell’s defection caused Johnson’s Supreme Court nominations of Abe Fortas and Homer Thornberry to falter; eventually, the Senate found more about some of Fortas’s involvement acting as Johnson’s consultant on political and foreign policy [notably, his unqualified support for Israel, arguably becoming its most assertive advocate] and, with the help of some questionable financial dealings with certain ethically challenged clients, Johnson’s attempt to “repack” the Supreme Court with his appointments failed. Johnson’s

nomination of Fortas to become chief justice not only failed as a result of this, he was then forced to resign his position as a justice of the Supreme Court.¹⁰⁷³

Joseph Califano concluded that Fortas thought he, like his client Johnson, was above the law, and Johnson insisted on continuing to use Fortas despite his appointment to the Supreme Court.¹⁰⁷⁴ After he realized how much trouble Fortas's nomination was in, Johnson ordered a secretary to destroy all documents reflecting his work with Fortas since he had joined the court.¹⁰⁷⁵

Even before those issues arose, we know now that Senator Russell had deep doubts about how Johnson and Hoover had conducted and controlled the Warren Commission and knew that they had prevented it from doing a thorough and independent investigation of JFK's assassination. He took it upon himself to conduct his own investigation, in secret, through his assistant, Colonel Philip Corso. In the end, Senators Richard Russell (GA), Hale Boggs (LA), and John Sherman Cooper (KY) were misled into thinking that their dissent on a number of issues would be published with the report, but it was not. It was ignored and never published. Specifically, Russell did not believe the "single bullet theory" and Boggs would later state that J. Edgar Hoover "lied his eyes out" to the Commission, "on Oswald, Ruby, on their friends, the bullets, the gun, you name it ..."¹⁰⁷⁶ It was Lyndon Johnson's intrinsic dishonesty—his primary, strongest, innate characteristic—that finally drove him from power and caused long-term friendships to dissolve as the suspicions mounted.

The Proof is in the Pudding... and the Patterns

Lyndon Johnson's frame of reference about many things throughout his career was consistently oriented to knee-jerk reactions, generally infused with Texas colloquialisms expressing simplistic thinking patterns regarding highly complex issues. His childhood in South Texas was imbued with the machismo of his youthful peers, marked by constant references (and attempts to connect his own grandfather) to the battle at the Alamo and with it, the refrain "Remember the Alamo." This battle cry had been brought up to date in 1898, with some help from William Randolph Hearst's *New York Journal*, in the false report of an attack on the American warship the USS *Maine*, now known to have been a pretext for getting the United States into the Spanish-American War. In that earlier manifestation of politically inspired warfare, a similar battle cry, "Remember the *Maine*," was adapted to ensure the appropriate patriotic reaction was achieved. It has also now been established beyond a reasonable doubt that the Japanese bombing of Pearl Harbor was not unanticipated: Indeed, it was perhaps even provoked, according to Robert Stinnett, in *Day of Deceit: The Truth About FDR and Pearl Harbor*, to get public support for joining the war.¹⁰⁷⁷ There was a reason that only aging battleships were moored there that day, none of the far more valuable aircraft carriers were left so exposed and vulnerable to an attack. In any event, the battle cry "Remember Pearl Harbor" became an instant call for volunteers to the Army and Navy in the last three weeks of 1941 and throughout the next four years.

Those incidents are all part of American history prior to Lyndon Johnson's term as president, but he must have learned something about how to use similar tactics because they were repeated again in Vietnam in 1964: The so called "Tonkin Gulf attack" in which North Vietnamese PT boats supposedly attacked the destroyer USS *Maddox* (functioning as a spy ship), which was on a mission that had been planned for seven months and designed for the very purpose of provoking the North Vietnamese into attacking it—even though that never happened in reality, only in the imaginations of a number of men, including the delusional Lyndon Johnson sitting in the Oval Office, who primed all the others.

The President's prevarications, through the shell game he played at the Tonkin Gulf, spread quickly to Capitol Hill, then throughout the country as it raised the level of patriotic calls for retaliation. It was as though he had brought the entire "ship of state" of the world's biggest superpower, through his lies, treachery, and treason, into the same condition as its leader: untethered to reality.

He did all of this through secretiveness, back room deal making and the manipulation of others to conduct his orders: A unique and brutal leadership style that Adolf Hitler would have envied. This was in stark relief to that of his murdered predecessor, whose presidential style was based upon trust and fairness; one of openness to debate, balance in decision making, and thoughtful, nuanced positions. Their leadership qualities could not have been more different, yet most historians and biographers avoid that contrast as though it is against the laws of political correctness, punishable by shunning and loss of their membership in the Council of Foreign Relations. The unfortunate yet inevitable result is that the nation is deprived of learning from its mistakes and that makes them repeatable.

Given the above history of the use of warships as "sacrificial lambs" to justify entry into war, it is consistent with Lyndon Johnson's provincial thinking that in 1967 he might have thought a new battle cry, "Remember the *Liberty*" would restore American patriotism sufficiently to justify risking all-out war with the Soviet Union; his goal then was to take the focus off the other "conflict" then referred to as "Lyndon's War," as a means to garner more support and less criticism of that, which was now being called a "quagmire." This technique, of using official propaganda to perpetrate attacks that outwardly appear to have been started by the other party to justify US intervention in war, has earned its own term: "false-flag operations." This is one of the analogous "patterns" that some historians have noticed in the general conduct of international events.

All of his major secret projects were conducted using the related techniques: the stolen elections; the brazenly criminal handling of "campaign funds" collected through wealthy supporters; the long planned attack on Leland Olds to drive him from his career as head of the Federal Power Commission; his participation in hounding James Forrestal out of his position as secretary of defense, leading to his suspected murder; the collusion with con man Billie Sol Estes to defraud the US government of millions of dollars; the mafia connections facilitated by his apprentice Bobby Baker that paid him further millions to protect their racketeering businesses; his being given monopoly power by the US

government bureaucracy over radio and television programming in Austin, Texas, initially and numerous other areas of that state eventually; his use of a personal hit man he had put on others' payroll, Mac Wallace, to order the murders of between ten and seventeen other people before his coup de grace: the murder of JFK and Johnson's take-over of the country in a secret coup d'état that many still do not realize occurred coincidentally.

These are among the many events that have now been identified as Lyndon Johnson's role in history; together, they demonstrate that his repeated involvement in a long list of treasons has been well hidden in nearly every biography ever written about him, other than those noted in the Introduction. The fundamental rules of secrecy, subterfuge, and manipulation were learned by Lyndon Johnson as a child. They were honed through his high school and then his college years with "Prexy" Evans and practiced for decades under the tutelage of Alvin Wirtz, Abe Fortas, Sam Rayburn, Richard Russell, and others, and they eventually produced the "Master of the Senate." He then turned his attention to becoming president of the United States but did not feel constrained to the use of the more mundane, traditional rules of behavior everyone else who had attained that office had observed. The hubris required to create his own path to the presidency flourished during this period, eventually paying off for him when he achieved his greatest triumph and his self-defined destiny; unfortunately, it also produced his greatest failures, including the delusion of assumed success in fighting a misbegotten war.

After achieving his lifelong dream—his promise to himself—to achieve the presidency, the patterns continued, as detailed within the earlier pages of this book and illustrated previously through the planned use of the battle cry "Remember the *Liberty*." When the *Liberty* failed to sink, the plan for entering the Six-Day War had to be scuttled, and another cover-up had to be quickly designed and executed. Just as he had used his earlier experiences of ordering the murder of people who got in his way to rationalize the murder of JFK, he had similarly ordered the destruction of his own ship to advance his plan to join Israel in its plot to secure greater power. Although that assertion—nearly unfathomable when first encountered—when looked at in the context of how he had used the phantom "attacks" on the *Maddox* and *Turner Joy* to insinuate the US military into the Vietnam War, the difference isn't such a quantum leap after all. Both were planned to fool the majority of the population of an entire nation in the process and, in the case of Vietnam, practically the entire Senate, into giving him carte blanche authority to conduct his war as only a man of his unbridled bravery and unlimited brilliance—at least within his own mind—could do.

In 1968 at age sixty Lyndon Johnson left the very office he had vowed to achieve even as a child, and had actually won in a landslide vote less than four years before. All the others were mere stepping stones to the presidency, the office he had vowed would ultimately be his. It was those same characteristics that led him to achieve his lifetime dream that, when finally exposed to American citizens, caused his downfall—this despite his never having been found guilty of criminality by a court of law.

In retirement back at the ranch, his attempts to adjust to the isolation and the loss of his power were apparently unsuccessful. During this four-year period he experienced episodic

depressions as he pretended to find enjoyment in his new and quieter lifestyle. His paranoia and the accompanying psychotic occurrences, as previously detailed, had become his predominant condition by 1971–72, to the point that he finally agreed to seek professional help to assuage the pain. Johnson, through manic consumption of alcohol and cigarettes, arguably willed his own death in January 1973, knowing that this act would mean he could never be found guilty of any of his crimes; he undoubtedly thought that that would ensure his “untarnished” legacy. He had “beaten the system” one last time, but it required that he pay for it with his own life by filling his lungs with tobacco tar and his stomach and veins abundantly with the finest alcohol and strongest pills that money could buy. He was correct, that his legacy would be protected by an early death: His nemesis, Texas Ranger Clint Peoples would convince a grand jury eleven years later that he and his colleagues Cliff Carter and Mac Wallace were implicated in Henry Marshall’s murder, and possibly in John F. Kennedy’s as well, but that case immediately became “cold” because all three of them were already dead, and nothing more could be done. Unfortunately, the mainstream media practically ignored this stunning story as though it did not exist; the vestiges of Operation Mockingbird undoubtedly had been deployed to ensure that result.

As we now turn to further reflect on his real “footprint” on America, still reverberating after half a century, to the sketch that has been completed, we can now begin to add colors, and by the end of the book the picture will be complete.

* See Appendix A for the letters found in the “Clint Peoples Collection” of the Dallas Public Library.

** A columnist and Washington correspondent for the *St. Louis Post-Dispatch*.

*** The wife of retired Lieutenant General William Hall, who “had high-ranking connections ... among the Joint Chiefs of Staff” known as “mattress-back Maggie” among her colleagues (see referenced endnote).

**** A correspondent for the *New York Herald Tribune* before becoming bureau chief for the *Chicago Daily News*.

***** Evans, Alsop, and Reston were all nationally syndicated columnists.

***** It has been alleged by some that the “White House photographer” overheard Bobby ask Johnson, “Why did you have my brother killed?” That might explain why Captain Stoughton, who had taken many thousands of photographs of Johnson, was effectively “fired” by Johnson when he demanded that his White House assignment be revoked (refer to Chapter 7). This video may be seen at: http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=ijBqqbSzq_Y.

***** “Reprise of the October Surprise: How Israel Gained Control of the Reagan and Bush Administrations” in *Veterans Today*, February 19, 2014

EPILOGUE

Until we really come to grips with the true meaning of the assassination—i.e., the coup, by military intelligence services of the country—civil liberties are necessarily restricted... . Every president since Kennedy knows what happened to him and why. Therefore, every president knows he's circumscribed in terms of what he can do and who he can oppose and how much he opposes them.

—VINCE SALANDRIA¹⁰⁷⁸

The State of the Union—Now

If Mr. Salandria is correct in the epigraph above, that every president is briefed on what really happened and how he has to maintain the secret and otherwise submit to those who maintain the original files and film, that would explain a lot of things. For example, it might explain how a presidential candidate can campaign to end a pointless and counterproductive war and, upon taking office, then proceed to escalate the fighting in terms of numbers of men, the sophistication level of armaments used, and the timeframe for extending the war well past the timeline of, for example, World War II. To complete the circle, it is not inconceivable that there is indeed a secret and sacrosanct commitment made to certain financial backers when candidates are vetted, that such decisions are to be made at a higher level than the president and only those who go along with that understanding are approved as a candidate for that office.

These “new-president” special briefings might even include an original video and photographs of each of the three major 1960s assassinations, something that has been asserted by credible sources. In the case of Dallas, a “state of the (1963) art” video was allegedly recorded by a unit of military intelligence operating out of a Texas military base according to sworn testimony of a gentleman named Steve Osborn, who appeared before the Assassinations Records Review Board (ARRB) on November 18, 1994. He stated that he learned of this in 1992 from a man who told Osborn that he had been a participant in that operation and gave him a detailed account of it. Osborn’s ARRB testimony is available on various websites, including one run by researcher John McAdams, usually not one to provide information at variance with the official story of a lone nut.¹⁰⁷⁹ Another report that my previously noted friend Gerald McKnight apprised me of was that the same thing had happened in Memphis when MLK Jr. was killed: “Military Intelligence had arranged to have a camera crew located on the roof of the Memphis Fire House/Police Station several buildings down from the Lorraine Motel.”¹⁰⁸⁰ Still other similar reports have surfaced that claim the same thing happened in Los Angeles when Robert Kennedy was killed, indeed one appearing in the *Los Angeles Times* that stated, “The shooting of Kennedy, recorded on television film and by still cameras, occurred in the pantry just off the Ambassador’s main ballroom floor.”¹⁰⁸¹ This represents still another repeating pattern, one so profound that it affirms not only traces of rigorous preplanning but, additionally, evidence of a desire for a permanent record that might be used as a “training tool” to keep future presidents under control, or as noted by Mr. Salandria, in “a

circumscribed state.” Such a paradigm, if it existed, would of course have an enormous deleterious effect on the democratic governance of the most powerful country on earth, for an indefinite period of time, possibly even “forevermore.”

With that picture of darkness in mind, we are now left to ponder how the course of history and the evolution of the American culture might have progressed had we been spared the trauma of the Vietnam War and the other bizarre, bewildering, and inexplicable actions taken during the presidency of Lyndon B. Johnson that led to the most divisive and tumultuous period—one induced intentionally, and primarily to bolster the president’s own narrow political and financial interests—in American history. While there is no way of knowing precisely how the United States “might have been” had Lyndon Johnson never become president, it is clear that his known “drunken driving” habit deeply affected the country and its direction over the last fifty years. Because of the swerving five-year test drive, as the drunken President Lyndon Johnson figuratively drove the country into the ditch—just as he had literally done with a number of government-owned automobiles at his ranch—it has taken decades for his successors to try to restore the nation’s confidence and conscience, made all the more difficult because of their own secrets that had to be hidden.

Indeed, the real reason for his first successor’s (Richard Nixon) forced resignation was arguably due to his unrestrained curiosity about the secrets known only to a few, mostly in the CIA. Nixon, apparently naively, thought that being president made him the most powerful man in America and that entitled him to know all the secrets of the vaults in Langley. Nixon’s references to “the whole Bay of Pigs thing” according to his chief of staff, H. R. Haldeman, was code for the JFK assassination and the participants still alive did not want him, or anyone else, to have access to them. Jerry Ford, who had been maneuvered into the office to replace Nixon, having never been elected to either the presidency or the vice presidency, understood that, and ensured that the secrets would be kept. It was probably under Ford that the government’s “family secrets” began being reviewed with new presidents, to make certain that Nixon’s error would never be repeated and that certain boundaries would be established regarding presidential prerogatives.

The presidents who followed had their own lesser crises—and more than a few demons in some cases—to deal with, as they struggled to recover from Johnson’s heavy footprint. The compound effect of an entire series of unhealed wounds had left the nation more profoundly damaged than might have otherwise been the case. In fact, many people feel that we collectively not only swerved onto the wrong highway as a country in the 1960s, but we are still speeding down that bumpy road even today, having never had the chance to learn from the hidden “mistakes.” Fixing that attitude, therefore the reasons for it, can only be done with real transparency, an attribute still lacking fifty years after the fact, on both sides of the political aisles. And it will require bold acts—of complete and brutal candor and honesty—and acknowledgment of the grievous mistakes made, beginning with an official recognition of the 1963 coup d’état and the real history of the thirty-sixth president.

The cracks in the foundation upon which the United States now rests, created by

Lyndon Johnson's cunning guile, innate duplicity, and intrinsic dishonesty—and the crimes including multiple murders, proven in court by the estimable US Marshall Clint Peoples, albeit too late for changing the public mind about his real legacy—can only be mended through an honest and full accounting by the government. Until that is done, and greater transparency in all its other functions is restored, the lamentable fact is that the present state of public cynicism and distrust will never end; in fact, it can only increase, given the need to create more lies to continue covering up the growing base of existing lies.

The manipulations of many key people—eventually the entire population of the United States, which elected him to the presidency in 1964—by Lyndon Johnson as he hid real truths and replaced them with a series of lies he invented, have proven to be successful. The accumulated evidence demonstrates beyond doubt that Lyndon Johnson really was smart enough to have “masterminded” the plot to kill JFK (a point that many incorrectly believe excludes him from being a worthy candidate for this title). No other candidate for that role comes close to the manic Johnson, pushing and pulling the other key people to stay on task, including the trial runs (“beta tests” as they might be called today) planned for Chicago and Miami in the weeks before the Texas trip.

For those who insist it was the introverted Allen Dulles—a man without personal connections to such other key people as James Rowley in the Secret Service, or even J. Edgar Hoover, with whom he had battled for turf that he considered his own—a man who in 1963 only had sway with others through an established linear hierarchy, within which he could receive input and issue orders, an obvious question arises: How could he do that when he had been fired two years earlier from his position of power and authority over many others? The premise would necessarily require the existence of an entirely separate organization, an enterprise dedicated to a presidential assassination. If that were the case, does it not follow that the authority residing within such a structure designed to carry out the mission of this “invisible government” had to be conferred upon him when he was chosen for the position by some very powerful men? Are we to infer, in that scenario, that Allen Dulles issued his deadly orders as the enigmatic, albeit secret, CEO, through an amorphous group of anonymous men at the helm of this invisible government? It may be instructive, as to who reported to whom, to note that Allen Dulles visited Dallas and Fort Worth and the LBJ Ranch just three weeks before the assassination. This was reported in the *Fort Worth Press* a few days before JFK's trip to Texas.¹⁰⁸² Johnson had spent the better part of four weeks at the ranch before JFK's Texas trip as he made plans, focused primarily on the Dallas motorcade. For Dulles to go there to consult with him speaks volumes about who was the CEO and who was merely a high-level facilitator.

Could the champion of the cause be a chameleon operating from the shadows of power, a man who held no official power? Such a predicate would implicitly require a secret organization, presumably run from some camouflaged boardroom on Fifth Avenue in New York, or K Street in Washington, complete with all the management tools available in 1963 in order to harness all the disparate people and entities involved. Apparently, based on what little is known about the structure of this “invisible government,” this mysterious group of men was run by a nameless board of directors, each of whom had an equal, albeit secret, vote. One might be excused for intuiting this description to be what is essentially

the “status quo” with respect to the present state of the investigation into the death of President Kennedy; that’s because it is, and it is precisely where many people would prefer to leave it. Moreover, it can be imputed that the only effective way to run such an organization and allocate its power must necessarily involve the use of standard operational procedures common to such enterprises, developed to ensure orderly deliberation and debate—such devices as Robert’s Rules of Order. Was a simple majority enough, or was a super majority vote required for such a committee to reach a consensus vote to murder the president? Yes, of course this scenario is absurd, which is why such a construct fails this elementary test of logic.

Yet it was indeed a consensus of such powerful men—a confluence of common interests—who were recruited for the purpose. But the missing element in this scenario is a nucleus for the organization: a single “driving force.” It is axiomatic that such a catalyst could only exist within a single very powerful source, a force so powerful that it could only emanate from the one man who could guarantee complete protection for the key people to be recruited; so powerful that it could only exist through a man so forceful, so “formidable” (as Robert Kennedy once admitted Johnson was), that he could control multiple departments and agencies—law enforcement, intelligence, judicial, and investigative—on the federal, state of Texas, and city of Dallas levels. Such a powerful driving force, axiomatically, could only come from a man who was manic by nature: it could only be given life by a man having a lifetime obsession to become president of the United States. That force had to have sprung from a man driven by hunger for greater power, as Robert Caro once described Lyndon B. Johnson’s lust for power: *“a hunger so fierce and consuming that no consideration of morality or ethics, no cost to himself—or to anyone else—could stand before it.”* [Emphasis added.] The best candidate for being the “driving force” was one whose favorite expression was “power is where power goes” and whose entire career was based on the inherent premise of that very expression.

That overwhelming force could only emanate from someone who derived his power from the most secretive processes, who communicated most effectively when using code words, body language, and eye contact with others—in short, a man who had perfected the art of political schmoozing and was considered its epitome, and whose own name exemplified it: the “Johnson Treatment.” And his influence crossed geographic and political lines into every bureaucracy from which support for the plan would have to come. The key people he would enlist held very powerful positions as heads of institutional power structures, such as the FBI (Hoover) and CIA (not McCone, but Helms and Angleton, and indirectly to the “unemployed” Dulles and other loyalists), the Secret Service (Rowley), the military (to certain high-level heads, such as Curtis LeMay, and down through the hierarchy to men like Howard Burris and Edward Lansdale), the Dallas police and sheriff’s office, and all the others previously named, including the Texas oil men and certain bankers on Wall Street.

In 1963, Lyndon B. Johnson was the most powerful man in the United States, in some ways even more so than John F. Kennedy, owing to the “back channel” alliances he had developed within the Pentagon and CIA. If indeed the “invisible government” were behind the assassination of the president, Lyndon B. Johnson would be at the head of the line for

being the CEO of that invisible government. His direct connections to the military and intelligence organizations and law enforcement agencies of the federal government and the state of Texas were unimpeded by the many clashes that John F. Kennedy had experienced with those same chieftains. This kind of power was best illustrated by Johnson's close connections through J. Edgar Hoover, Clint Murchison, H. L. Hunt, Irving Davidson, Fred Black, and Bobby Baker to Mafiosi throughout the country such as Carlos Marcello and Sam Giancana, et al., and through Angleton, Bill Harvey, Johnny Rosselli, and David Morales on down to the numerous Cuban exiles.

These were all men whom Lyndon Johnson had developed for many years, decades even, insinuating himself as closely and personally as he could, using methods (or Johnson "Treatments") customized for his selected prey. That kind of power was unique to Lyndon Johnson, no one else in Washington had worked so hard to accrue it and practice it and hone its edges with every iteration: He alone possessed that kind of power in 1963. The record of his astounding success stands, even now, half a century later, and thus becomes the biggest proof of his pivotal role: The claim of the title "Mastermind" is proven, ironically, by the even grander title "Colossus," which best represents his real legacy of having achieved the highest office in the land, his resolve established when he was merely a child and later a high school bully. His lifetime of corruption and criminal behavior attest to the fact that his character traits were consistent over his entire lifetime.

As president, Lyndon Johnson proceeded to bamboozle the entire nation with the canard that the murderer of JFK was a lone communist nut. He accomplished that with a lot of help from his media friends, the various federal bureaucracies he now controlled, and the Texas and Dallas police and judicial agencies within which he had long, well-established controls. And of course the key members of the Warren Commission were there to perform as he had instructed them personally. Their purposefully error-filled result still stands today despite having been discredited numerous times on multiple levels, by many independent researchers and authors; yet it is venerated by the media and credulous officials as the accepted and politically correct "conventional wisdom." This despite the fact that Johnson himself, as he admitted to Walter Cronkite in 1969, did not believe that Oswald was the lone assassin (the interview is available on the Internet and includes his prevarications about the possibility of a vague "international" conspiracy).

One need only read the turgid book *Killing Kennedy* by Bill O'Reilly, or a recent vacuous column by the journalist George F. Will to understand the simplicity with which real truths are ignored and inconvenient facts blithely dismissed. Mr. Will belittled the sea change in presidential brightness that Kennedy demonstrated—writing that "Americans often place him, absurdly, atop the presidential rankings"—as he, absurdly, put Johnson into that pantheon. By writing that "Lyndon Johnson, a child of the New Deal, drove to enactment the Civil Rights Acts, Medicare and Medicaid" he perpetuated the myth created by LBJ fifty years ago.¹⁰⁸³ Had Mr. Will been more inquisitive, candid, and honest with his readers, he might have pointed out that Johnson had in fact stalled much of that same legislation for years, even decades in the case of the Medicare legislation, as he saved it for his own legacy. In his three years as Kennedy's vice president, Johnson repeatedly cautioned JFK to wait "until the time is right," knowing that the time wouldn't be right

until he had assumed the presidency; and then it was, suddenly, exactly the right time.

The term “colossus” can be either positive or negative in its connotations, however in the Orwellian or Shakespearian context within which his legacy must be viewed, the distinction is muted and blurred because anything that his apologists construe as positive must be counter balanced with the realization that he had previously delayed passage of the grandest initiatives for his own selfish purposes, together with the toll of damages that he visited upon the country and the world.

The quotations from George Will fifty years after Lyndon B. Johnson had John F. Kennedy murdered are merely examples of the many others, on both sides of the political spectrum, all of which are adequate proof of the truth and efficacy of the Goebbels-Johnson paradigm. One significant example of the difference between Kennedy and Johnson was JFK’s handling of the missile crisis and how he had to fight with his own military and intelligence officials to reach a peaceful and lasting settlement with Cuba and the USSR; Lyndon Johnson, consistent with his spiteful attitude of President Kennedy, sided with the war hawks and pressed for a full-scale attack on Cuba, an action that would have doubtlessly triggered a nuclear conflagration that could only have ended with disastrous results. The series of essays by Doug Horne, “JFK’s War Against the National Security Establishment: Why Kennedy Was Assassinated” published by The Future of Freedom Foundation is a very sobering assessment of how close we came to the “Mutual Assured Destruction” (MAD) policies of that era, and to the ultimate realization of that concept.¹⁰⁸⁴ Had Lyndon Johnson been president in October 1962, that very result—nuclear war—would have undoubtedly occurred: This was the unanimous conclusion of a group of historians on a program broadcast on cable television October 22, 2013, titled “*What If...? LBJ Had Been President*” on the Military Channel.¹⁰⁸⁵

Mr. Will’s apparent utter lack of understanding of this essential part of American history is typical of his contemporary peers in broadcast or print journalism. A more intellectually honest commentator would have asserted that Lyndon Johnson should be blamed for helping the Southern segregationists keep those crosses and churches burning through the 1950s and early 1960s as he repeatedly blocked meaningful reform, instead of being given credit for finally getting the legislation passed that he had in fact purposely impeded. Even then, in 1964, he couldn’t get key members (including certain Democratic party legends, named earlier) of his own party to accept the historical imperative—arguably the most important legislation of that century—as they hung onto the relics of the country’s segregationist past.

The criticism of Democratic Party legends mentioned previously, and to follow, extends to many prominent Republican leaders as well, including both Bush presidents (on several levels, as chronicled in meticulous detail by Russell Baker in his book *Family of Secrets*) and the Iran-Contra scandal in Ronald Reagan’s administration. The single time that a president has been literally driven from office for his misdeeds, before his term expired, was Richard Nixon in 1974, and that was accomplished only because it was a bipartisan effort directed to a wily politician who was mistrusted by both sides and hated by the media. Yet that result was for crimes that pale in comparison to those committed by

Lyndon Johnson, a politician who was protected by his party members as well as the media, at least in the first two to three years of his administration. Even after he had left office, the lack of skepticism of Johnson's past, due to the respect for the office of president, which is the natural attitude of journalists, caused the myths to outgrow the awful truths.

There is something deeply insidious and very harmful to the tenets of democracy when powerful politicians are allowed to use their position to skirt laws that they think don't apply to them and then pull more strings to protect themselves from the justice they deserve. The tendency to "circle the wagons" around powerful politicians who commit crimes of corruption or malfeasance, then garner protection from internal investigations by authorities, or from external scrutiny by journalists, undermines the faith of people with the institutions of government and thereby become threats to its viability and democracy itself. In 1963–69, Lyndon Johnson used every tool available to him to conduct such abuse in order to defy justice for himself. The passive assent of a Democratic-controlled Congress, which halted two investigations of Lyndon Johnson—one of which was close to finishing its job with a near-certain censure that would have doubtlessly led to an indictment and a probable long prison term—allowed him to trade a likely prison term for a five-year term in the White House, where he continued his pattern of criminal behavior on a scale never seen before or since.

The 1964 leadership of the Democratic Party blocked Republican efforts to expose Johnson's criminal activity by shutting down the investigations that were already underway. Had that not been done, he would have likely been brought down before the damages were inflicted upon the country as he continued his reckless quest for more power and personal wealth. Thanks to the efforts of Senator John J. Williams of Delaware and other supportive senators, his acts had already been partially exposed when JFK was killed and there is no question that many, if not all, members of the Senate had heard the worst of the stories of his corruption; yet they capitulated, and gave him the presidency in spite of this knowledge. In a more perfect, just, and equitable world, Johnson would have been brought to justice even earlier, either through the efforts of Ranger Clint Peoples, Robert Kennedy, or the US Senate, or their combined actions, and the life of John F. Kennedy would have been spared.

The truth had to be hidden, and it was, from the earliest LBJ journalist cum-biographers to the latest researchers and historians who have either missed this point entirely or have purposely ignored these inconvenient details. This was recently demonstrated by the famed professor Larry Sabato of the University of Virginia, who wrote over six hundred pages (*The Kennedy Half Century*) defending the Warren Commission's findings, while simultaneously admitting it was full of errors, and then dismissing the House Select Committee's determination that at least one shot had to have been fired from the grassy knoll. He based this conclusion on the singular issue of whether the audio recording made from sounds picked up by the microphone on a motorcycle policeman's radio was sufficiently close to Dealey Plaza, while ignoring all the other accumulated evidence of multiple shots from at least four, possibly more, locations, not the least of which was the testimony of over sixty witnesses who heard, saw, and/or smelled gunfire from that

location. His perfunctory, stilted “analysis” does not auger well for any hope of ever discovering truths, based on his televised comments of October 14, 2013, on the *CBS Morning Show*, where he posited that “a hundred years from now” the conspiratorialists would still be propagating their “theories” (though it was probably a true statement, thanks to his own inane contributions and those of others similarly unaware of the tremendous volume of research completed independently of the government’s direction).

It has long been established that he and other “serious” journalists and historians have gotten the message: If they want to protect their reputations and professional credentials, they should avoid critical commentary on the JFK assassination, or, for that matter, any of the other 1960s assassinations. Indeed many of them have taken that one step further and go to great lengths to maintain the myths of the “official story.” That this has become the passive mind-set and the “conventional wisdom” of the very professionals who should have been leading the charge is especially troubling.

One historian, Michael Kurtz, confirmed this paradigm when he wrote that “few journalists and virtually no scholars have conducted any serious research into the assassination, and their criticisms of the advocates of a conspiracy have generally assumed the guise of name-calling and innuendo rather than legitimate scholarly dissent ...”¹⁰⁸⁷ One highly credentialed professional, though not a journalist or historian, David Mantik, in his essay “The Silence of the Historians,”¹⁰⁸⁶ eloquently described the ignominious way in which acclaimed “historians” avoid touching the JFK assassination, out of their jaded sense of political correctness, preferring instead to “let the sleeping dog lie.” A short excerpt from Mantik’s study illustrates the most salient point:

The power of the media has served its masters well; with one exception, no well-known historian has yet publicly entertained an alternate scenario in the JFK assassination. That exception is Michael R. Beschloss [who wrote]: “We will probably never know beyond a shadow of a doubt who caused John Kennedy to be murdered and why” (Beschloss 1991, p. 687). Dissenting from this [quasi] conspiracy view and probably speaking for most historians, Stephen Ambrose praised Gerald Posner’s much-ballyhooed book, *Case Closed* (1991).

Sadly, real history has been replaced by an avalanche of books, of which the O’Reilly and Sabato tomes are representative, that are now being published for the purpose of reinforcing the dogma built by Johnson himself, with the assistance of his submissive “Presidential Commission.” It raises the suspicion that an invisible but firm guiding hand has helped move them into position and that regular additions to the list are still underway, all to preserve the original myth; this is further evidenced by a second book by O’Reilly aimed at indoctrinating children in the same way. They appear to be simply more smokescreens intended to perpetuate the “shell game” that Lyndon Johnson envisioned half a century ago, knowing that there would be plenty of people determined to protect the secrets of US presidents regardless of the facts discovered by the persistent minority of people seeking historic truths.

The numerous attempts to protect the secrets by historians, journalists, and political

scientists—the aforementioned George Will, Bill O'Reilly, and Larry Sabato being merely the latest in a long line—are conclusive proof of the primacy of political correctness. That they ignore the work of hundreds of researchers who have produced irrefutable facts—a mountain of documented fallacies and obviously deceitful processes; the fabricated or destroyed forensics evidence, including JFK's "autopsy" records; the repeated use of incredible witnesses in lieu of credible witnesses—is beyond comprehension. The sum total of the disinformation is conclusive proof there are forces still at play that are intent on extending the Johnsonian myths and cover-ups for many more generations. Whether this might be related to the growth in what is apparently a new cottage industry—the perpetuation and sustenance of old, and creation of new, mythologies, as replacement for actual history—examined briefly in an earlier chapter, is open to speculation.

According to the tracking of the "greatness" of US presidents, as rated by the historians and academics who have a vote in that exercise, which is collected, tracked, and collated by Wikipedia, Lyndon Johnson usually ranks between 10–18 (the combined rating currently stands at "14" overall) among the "greatest presidents."¹⁰⁸⁸ It is lamentable that these august professionals have failed to understand the lessons that can only be comprehended when one replaces Johnson's planted lies with the correct historical facts. The gross error committed by these "learned" people can only be attributed to their acceptance of the myths that have been created about Johnson, and that reflects a lack of real scholarship and critical-thinking aptitude, caused by their failure to separate true historical fact from fiction.

It is the very absence of real truths in the latest assortment of books that has led many to conclude that it was far more than "a simple case of murder" as many books have concluded. Indeed, a book having that very title, *A Simple Case of Murder*, having the depth of a sheet of onion-skin paper, was written by Mark Fuhrman, who was made famous through an earlier series of mistakes, assorted blunders, and confused testimony related to his investigation of the O.J. Simpson murder case. Indeed, it strained credulity to such lengths that the very title of the book caused most people to cringe, although it is safe to assume that most of its sales were from bins of 50 cent/\$1.00 closeout sales. More thoughtful people knew intuitively that a not-so-subtle coup d'état accompanied that "simple case of murder" when they noticed the drastic change in direction the country took simultaneously, which then set off a sea change in American culture in the last half of that 1960s decade. Indeed, a new term was coined to capture that change, and has endured now for five decades: the "counter culture."

The very essence of that term reflects the mostly silent rebellion of American citizens to what many perceive as a culture run amok: A nation that portrays itself as peace-seeking while simultaneously possessing an arsenal of military weapons without parallel to any other nation in the world. Worse yet, the continuing use of "false-flag" operations to create wars that started with two major (and multiple lesser) bullying maneuvers detailed within these pages: Vietnam and the failed effort to insinuate the US military into the Six-Day War by the usurper Lyndon Johnson. The apparently permanent wars against "terrorism" now being conducted throughout the world are seemingly becoming accepted by the populace as the "norm," together with the expectation that this is merely the new fact of

life, since the current president has apparently come to that view after having campaigned with a promise to stop them. Can we ever expect to achieve that elusive peace if the only contingencies planned are for more war and ever more lethal weaponry? The warning of President Eisenhower was heard by President Kennedy, but then it got replaced with the new “National Security State” paradigm set by President Lyndon Baines Johnson that still remains in place. And that is really the worst aspect of Johnson’s still-celebrated faux “legacy.” It is no wonder that some have turned to ancient mythology in their attempts to make sense of it all.

Irrespective of Lyndon Johnson’s real place in actual history—as contrasted to the faux legacy (the “myth”) that he connived to create—Americans have a right to expect “transparency” from their government about all major issues related to the conduct of its presidents and others in the three branches of government. Despite the release of many records, there are more (at least 1100 “records,” which may equate to 30,000–50,000 pages or more of known files)¹⁰⁸⁹ that remain secret despite the congressional mandate, and many more files that were released with redactions that still remain “redacted.” The first, but not nearly the last, essential step in “taking back” our country is the disclosure of the continuing secrets related to the JFK assassination, as well as the other related 1960s assassinations. That may be enough to fix the cultural dysfunction they created, and the reverberations this will generate should redound to greater openness for other government secrets that remain hidden.

The objective of this book was simply to correct the record and expose the officially sanctioned disinformation related to Lyndon B. Johnson. His treasons, as documented here, must be acknowledged at some point. But there are many obvious barriers to any expectation that this will occur anytime soon, despite the precedents in other parts of the world for this kind of redemption. It would require that his name be regarded in the United States as Adolph Hitler’s is now in Germany or as Joseph Stalin’s is in Russia or as Pol Pot’s is in Cambodia and Idi Amin’s is in Uganda (who, having only killed 300,000 people, was a piker compared to Johnson). Until Americans are given the truth, the secrets will remain buried and the Orwellian nature of life in the United States and the world will continue to strengthen and grow, defining the future for generations to come. Cleansing the stains from our history can only be done with complete honesty, something the current political class is not known for.

The ironically celebrated former high school bully, Lyndon Baines Johnson, achieved his life long dream of becoming president of the United States. Unfortunately for all of mankind, his presidency was an American disgrace and a global embarrassment that will persist until the national conscience is cleansed. If and when that ever occurs, his name, along with those of J. Edgar Hoover, Allen Dulles, James J. Angleton, and all the other accomplices named within these pages should be remembered for their criminal acts, rather than their tarnished reputations as “patriots” or accomplished government officials.

The fact that America’s heritage, and all that it stands for, has been permanently tainted by the actions of a psychotic president whose manic power over so many others allowed it, must be exposed and acknowledged; it is necessary for a complete cleansing of the soul of

the nation, the only way that it can be protected from another such assault in the future.

The Last Word

The last word of this epilogue has been written by a friend of my friend, Ed Tatro. Bill Cheslock lives in a village on Cape Cod, and noticed an invitation by the *Cape Cod Times* in late October 2013, which asked its readers to submit a response to the question of “where were you” when the news about the assassination of President Kennedy was first heard. JFK was one of their neighbors there, so that question had a special meaning for the readers of that particular newspaper. Mr. Cheslock decided to send them his report, with hopes that it would be chosen, though he did not have complete confidence that it would. The paper printed several dozen others, all recounting how the writers were personally affected, usually expressed with words like “numb,” “shocked,” or “stunned.” One writer said simply, “It made no sense then, and it makes no sense now. All the theories, all the books and stories and speculation combine to still make no sense of why he was shot. What I’ve come to accept is not understanding so much. Why do bad things happen?”

Cheslock’s letter was not printed by the paper, but it may help explain to the other correspondent “why bad things happen” just as his observations might reveal why his letter was not chosen. The reason it is included here is that it reflects precisely the impasse that now exists, one that is caused by the phenomenon called “political correctness,” which is a mutation of the Orwellian term “Groupthink.” According to Wikipedia, that term was actually coined by William H. Whyte Jr. writing in *Fortune* magazine in March 1952 but was defined further in 1971 by Irving Janis:

[It] refer[s] to the mode of thinking that persons engage in when concurrence-seeking becomes so dominant in a cohesive in group that it tends to override realistic appraisal of alternative courses of action [or explanations of reality]. Groupthink is a term of the same order as the words in the newspeak vocabulary George Orwell used in his dismaying world of *1984*. In that context, groupthink takes on an invidious connotation. Exactly such a connotation is intended, since the term refers to a deterioration in mental efficiency, reality testing and moral judgments as a result of group pressures.

The single largest difference between the two terms, I think, is that political correctness is a bit more insidious because it has a greater element of the “herd mentality” that causes people on both sides of the aisle to be less independent, and willing to adopt the party leadership’s talking points, in the case of Congress; for individuals, the analogy still holds, though not so strongly on certain specific issues, like gun rights, abortion, and climate change, where deeper demographic separators come into play. From there, the dynamic grows, propelled by a de facto government-controlled mainstream media, exhorting all citizens to accept official dogma as per se truth without question; most conform for fear of being ostracized or subjected to ridicule. Myths, borne of political necessity to protect the secrets of the leaders, grow exponentially to fill the vacuum left by the denied truths ... and so it goes.

The genius of Lyndon Johnson was that he instinctively knew all of this and

undoubtedly had perfected all of the possible techniques to practice it, over and over again, throughout his lifetime, finally reaching the pinnacle of success when first he drafted, then delivered, his instructions to Chief Justice Earl Warren on November 29, 1963. Johnson had forcefully persuaded Warren to accede to his request to head up his presidential commission through a subtle form of blackmail about some “little incident in Mexico” referenced earlier; in response, Warren “started crying and said, well I won’t turn you down, I’ll just do whatever you say.” Warren revealed a glimmer of real truth when he later replied to a question of when the truth of the assassination would be known; he said, in one of the few truthful and trustworthy statements that he made on that subject, “not in your lifetime.”

The people running the *Cape Cod Times* letter selection committee, wishing to keep the project in a positive and life-vivifying mode, were clearly well schooled in how to conduct themselves in a politically correct fashion. Cheslock’s letter was different than most: Instead of explaining how the news of JFK’s death affected him personally, due to his class being cancelled or how he reacted emotionally, Cheslock chose this occasion to express how the assassination affected his country, in a much broader context. Unfortunately, his lament did not translate well with what the newspaper wanted to share with its readers, so his submission was not selected. The standard, for those interested in getting their letters chosen in future cases like this, is measured by how close such statements come to the abyss that separates truth from the official myth. The first, once considered inviolate, is now qualified, conditioned, and parsed; the second is to be exalted, spread far and wide and never doubted, just as the grandest mythmakers have decreed. In the immediate case, the many books written on the occasion of “The Fiftieth” (the euphemism used for the official 2013 Dallas ceremony of JFK’s murder, where the word “assassination” was verboten) were mostly comprised of tomes that ignored fifty years of research: The majority of them reverted to the official myth penned forty-nine years before, as requested —“demanded” would not be too strong a word—by the “Mastermind” of that enterprise: The President’s Commission on the Assassination of President John F. Kennedy, also known as the Warren Commission, produced a report within ten months that merely expanded on the verdict reached in Dallas within a few hours of the “crime of the century” just as it had been designed by the Mastermind. The Dallas authorities had declared the case closed even before the body of the president’s alleged killer was cold, and that case was crafted by none other than the president himself.

It is the primacy of political correctness—an invidious and insidious kind of conformity—and all of its progeny, including the systematic derision of and condescension to those who do not conform their thoughts as proscribed, especially anyone who is labeled as a “conspiracy theorist,” that explains why so many others do not understand: The rules do not permit that. In the new paradigm of the twenty-first century, it is important that such stories make others feel good about themselves and their country, that they foster allegiance to official myths and adulation of the “right” historic figures, just as the mythmakers noted elsewhere have decreed. Books, magazine articles, televised “investigative reports” must likewise conform to the same standards, even when they are just apocryphal grist designed to sustain those myths.

The gist of the dozens of letters that were selected by the newspaper conformed to that paradigm, while the one submitted by Bill Cheslock did not. His letter to the *Cape Cod Times* revealed a poignancy that was not consonant with the unquestioning, credulous theme to be portrayed, so it wasn't included. Mr. Cheslock's lament is simple and succinct, and it speaks volumes about what has happened to America in the five decades since JFK's assassination:

Yes, I can clearly remember where I was when President Kennedy was assassinated in Dallas, Texas. I was living in a country, the United States, where the future looked bright, and people had hope for a better life under the Kennedy administration. I was living in a country where its citizens still had basic human rights, and the Constitution was taken seriously by our law makers in Washington. I was living in a country where Republicans and Democrats actually respected each other, worked together and passed legislation that was for the benefit of the people. The above is a brief description of where I was when JFK was shot. Unfortunately, I don't recognize this country anymore, as it has been altered in a very negative way since the guns in Dealey Plaza ended the dream for millions of Americans.

APPENDIX A

Miscellaneous Documents from the Clint Peoples Collection, Courtesy of the Dallas Public Library

- A-1: Letter from Diane Walsh, Robert Greenwald Productions, May 10, 1988.
- A-2: Contract with Shari Rhodes dated November 9, 1987.
- A-3: Undated note from Shari Rhodes.
- A-4: Letter of Agreement from Sandra L. Whitlow dated August 8, 1984.
- A-5: Photograph of Clint Peoples being honored by President Ronald Reagan and Texas Senator Philip Graham.

Appendix A-1



Diane Walsh

May 10, 1988

Marshall Clint Peoples
U.S. DEPARTMENT OF JUSTICE
Northern District of Texas
16F47-110 Commerce St.
Dallas, TX 75242

Dear Marshall Peoples:

Just a note to let you know of my continued enthusiasm for bringing your story to television. Shari Rhodes and I have talked at length about the creative venues in which we can best get your project into development with a major network, and believe a four-hour mini-series to be the correct road to travel. I have interested Donald Freed, a terrific journalist/writer, in the story, but unfortunately the current writer strike has put us all in a bind as legally I cannot even have a telephone conversation with Donald about how to structure the four-hour drama. We need Donald's input and presence at selling meetings, etc., and must wait for him in order to present your story in it's best form.

Our plan is to await the settlement of the strike and then proceed with great vigor--please be patient with all these machinations. Shari, Robert Greenwald, Paul Lussier and I want nothing but to have this project bought by either ABC, NBC or CBS as soon as possible. So...keep the faith and pray for our wonderful writers to get back to work!! If you have any questions or thoughts, please feel free to call me collect at (213)204-0404 -- I look forward to talking with you in the near future.

Sincerely,

Diane M. Walsh
PRODUCER

cc: P. Lussier J. Mendowitz
L. Feyder S. Rhodes

ROBERT GREENWALD

PRODUCTIONS • INC.

1010 Culver Blvd., Culver City, CA 90232 213 • 204-0404 New York 212 • 719-6221

Appendix A-2

FOR THE SUM OF ONE DOLLAR (\$1.00), AND FOR THE PERIOD OF ONE YEAR, CLINT PEOPLES HEREBY ASSIGNS TO SHARI RHODES THE RIGHTS TO THE CLINT PEOPLES LIFE STORY, HIS CAREER AS A TEXAS RANGER, HIS CAREER AS A FEDERAL MARSHALL, THE HENRY MARSHALL/BILLY SOL ESTES CASE, AND ANY OTHER CASE WHICH MIGHT PROVE TO BE OF INTEREST AS A BOOK, A MOVIE, OR A TELEVISION PROGRAM.

IT IS UNDERSTOOD THAT MARSHALL PEOPLES HAS NOT SIGNED ANY AGREEMENTS WITH ANY OTHER PERSONS REGARDING THE RIGHTS TO ANY ASPECT OF HIS LIFE STORY AND ANY CASE CONNECTED WITH HIS LIFE, AND THAT SHARI RHODES HAS HIS PERMISSION TO PRESENT HERSELF AS HIS AGENT IN ATTEMPTING TO SECURE A PUBLISHING DEAL FOR A BOOK OR BOOKS ON HIS LIFE, PRIMARILY ON THE HENRY MARSHALL/BILLY SOL ESTES CASE. IN THE EVENT SUCH A PUBLISHING DEAL IS ARRANGED, RHODES SHALL BE PAID A COMMISSION OF 25% OF THE MONIES PAID TO MARSHALL PEOPLES IN THE FORM OF AN ADVANCE AND/OR ROYALTIES FROM THE SALE OF THE BOOK OR BOOKS.

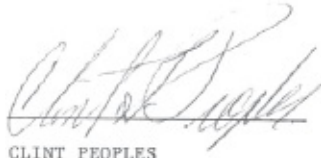
IT IS UNDERSTOOD THAT RHODES WILL FUNCTION AS PRODUCER OF ANY FILM OR TELEVISION PRODUCTION PERTAINING TO ANY ASPECT OF THE PEOPLES STORY. IN HER CAPACITY AS PRODUCER, SHE WILL NEGOTIATE THE MOST MONEY AND THE HIGHEST PERCENTAGE OF THE PROFITS POSSIBLE FOR MR. PEOPLES, BUT NO LESS THAN THE FOLLOWING:

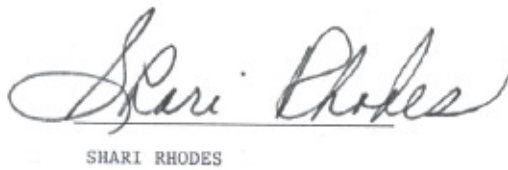
FEATURE FILM - NO LESS THAN ONE HUNDRED THOUSAND (\$100,000) TO MR. PEOPLES FOR THE RIGHTS TO HIS STORY. MR. PEOPLES WILL SHARE IN NO LESS THAN 5% OF THE PROFITS OF THE FILM, AND WILL BE EMPLOYED AS CREATIVE CONSULTANT ON THE FILM AT A SALARY OF NO LESS THAN FIFTY THOUSAND DOLLARS (\$50,000).

MOVIE OF THE WEEK - NO LESS THAN FIFTY THOUSAND DOLLARS (\$50,000) TO MR. PEOPLES. HE WILL SHARE IN NO LESS THAN 5% OF ANY PROFITS FROM THE MOVIE OF THE WEEK, AND WILL BE EMPLOYED AS CREATIVE CONSULTANT ON THE MOVIE OF THE WEEK AT A SALARY OF NO LESS THAN TWENTY-FIVE THOUSAND DOLLARS (\$25,000).

IT IS UNDERSTOOD THAT THIS AGREEMENT IS NOT A GUARANTEE THAT RHODES WILL EFFECT A BOOK OR A MOVIE AND RHODES CANNOT BE HELD LIABLE IF THIS DOES NOT HAPPEN. RHODES WILL DO EVERYTHING IN HER POWER TO ACHIEVE THE PUBLICATION OF A BOOK AND THE PRODUCTION OF A MOVIE.

SIGNED THIS 9th DAY OF NOVEMBER, 1987.


CLINT PEOPLES


SHARI RHODES

Appendix A-3

Dear Marshal Peoples:

Here is the final story treatment that I've sent out to two production companies and the Triad Agency in Los Angeles. Mr Brown in New York will have his copy by Friday. Hope you like it — I really worked hard. We should start hearing back from them soon, although it may not be until after Jan 1st because of the holidays —

I've titled it "LB J, Accessory to Murder" —

I'll call you on the 18th from the road. —

Sincerely

Shari Rhodes

Appendix A-4

SANDRA L. WHITLOW
404 Carillon Tower West
13601 Preston Road
Dallas, Texas 75240

TO THE PARTIES NAMED BELOW:

The purpose of this letter agreement is to set forth the terms of a joint venture known as "Clint Peoples Made for TV Movie" (the "venture"). We have entered into this venture for the purposes of developing and writing the script for a six hour made for TV movie depicting the life story of U.S. Marshall Clint Peoples.

The terms of said joint venture shall be as follows:

1. Clint Peoples allocates the rights of his life story to the joint venture for the purpose of researching and developing a made for T.V. movie saga approximately six hours in length. Subsequent versions of the original script; a condensed version of the script suitable for movie distribution, foreign distribution or T.V. special; or novelization of the script shall come under the terms of the joint venture.

Personal appearances or endorsements by Clint Peoples and the sale of by-products associated with the Clint Peoples story shall remain the sole property of Clint Peoples and shall not come under the terms of the joint venture.

2. Sandra L. Whitlow shall be the Manager of the joint venture ("Manager"). The Manager shall research, develop and write the script for the Clint Peoples story. A first draft and budget for production to be prepared by February 1, 1985. Manager shall have the first option to produce script upon completion. If the option to produce is waived then Manager shall have ninety days to sell the script for the best price obtainable. If at the expiration of sale time the Manager has a sale in progress, Manager will be allowed 60 additional days to close the sale.

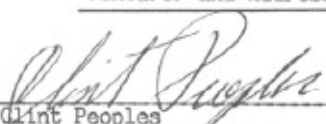
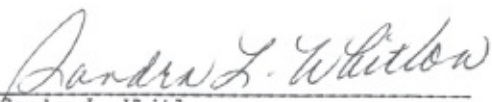
3. Sale of the script and terms of the production agreement, should one be entered into shall be approved by both Clint Peoples and Sandra Whitlow.

4. The product of the joint venture shall be owned 33% by Clint Peoples and 67% by Sandra Whitlow who may at her discretion sell portions of her pro rata share to finance the joint venture. All revenues shall be distributed accordingly, with the Manager responsible for distribution of funds.

5. Should the manager exercise her option to produce the project, then a second joint venture shall be entered into with terms approved by Clint Peoples and Sandra Whitlow, retaining the tone and intent of the first joint venture agreement.

If the foregoing terms and provision correctly set forth our agreement and the terms of our joint venture as you understand them, please execute the original of this letter agreement, and sign and return the enclosed copy to the undersigned. Upon receipt by the undersigned of your signed copy hereof within fifteen (15) days from the date of this letter agreement, the foregoing terms shall constitute a binding and effective contract and agreement among the parties who sign this letter agreement, or a counterpart hereof. This letter agreement may be executed in one or more counterparts, each of which shall be an original document, and all of which when taken together shall constitute a single instrument. This agreement shall be effective with respect to all parties executing the original or a counterpart hereof, regardless of whether all of the parties listed below shall sign the original or a counterpart hereof; in the event a party named below fails to join in this agreement the interests of the other parties shall be adjusted proportionately.

The foregoing terms are hereby accepted and agreed to this 8 day of August, 1984.

<u>Venturer and Address</u>	<u>Percentage Interest in Venture</u>
 Clint Peoples U.S. Dept. of Justice 16 F. 47 - 1100 Commerce Street Dallas, Texas 75242	33.000%
 Sandra L. Whitlow 404 Carrilon Tower West 13601 Preston Road Dallas, Texas 75240	67.000%

Appendix A-5



President Ronald Reagan, with Texas Senator Phil Gramm, presents award to Clint Peoples, October 20, 1988.

APPENDIX B

A FAIR PROBE WOULD ATTACK LIBERTY MISINFORMATION

—BY ADMIRAL THOMAS MOORER FROM THE JANUARY 16, 2004 UARY EDITION OF THE STARS AND STRIPES

While State Department officials and historians converge on Washington this week to discuss the 1967 war in the Middle East, I am compelled to speak out about one of US history's most shocking cover-ups. On June 8, 1967, Israel attacked our proud naval ship—the USS *Liberty*—killing 34 American servicemen and wounding 172. Those men were then betrayed and left to die by our own government.

US military rescue aircraft were recalled—not once, but twice—through direct intervention by the Johnson administration. Secretary of Defense Robert McNamara's cancellation of the Navy's attempt to rescue the *Liberty*, which I confirmed from the commanders of the aircraft carriers *America* and *Saratoga*, was *the most disgraceful act I witnessed in my entire military career*. [Emphasis added.]

To add insult to injury, Congress, to this day, has failed to hold formal hearings on Israel's attack on this American ship. No official investigation of the attack has ever permitted the testimony of the surviving crew members. A 1967 investigation by the Navy, upon which all other reports are based, has now been fully discredited as a cover-up by its senior attorney. Capt. Ward Boston, in a sworn affidavit, recently revealed that the court was ordered by the White House to cover up the incident and find that Israel's attack was “a case of mistaken identity.”

Some distinguished colleagues and I formed an independent commission to investigate the attack on the USS *Liberty*. After an exhaustive review of previous reports, naval and other military records, including eyewitness testimony from survivors, we recently presented our findings on Capitol Hill. They include:

- Israeli reconnaissance aircraft closely studied the *Liberty* during an eight-hour period prior to the attack, one flying within 200 feet of the ship. Weather reports confirm the day was clear with unlimited visibility. The *Liberty* was a clearly marked American ship in international waters, flying an American flag and carrying large US Navy hull letters and numbers on its bow.
- Despite claims by Israeli intelligence that they confused the *Liberty* with a small Egyptian transport, the *Liberty* was conspicuously different from any vessel in the Egyptian navy. It was the most sophisticated intelligence ship in the world in 1967. With its massive radio antennae, including a large satellite dish, it looked like a large lobster and was one of the most easily identifiable ships afloat.
- Israel attempted to prevent the *Liberty*'s radio operators from sending a call for help by jamming American emergency radio channels.
- Israeli torpedo boats machine-gunned lifeboats at close range that had been lowered

to rescue the most-seriously wounded.

As a result, our commission concluded that:

- There is compelling evidence that Israel's attack was a deliberate attempt to destroy an American ship and kill her entire crew.
- In attacking the USS *Liberty*, Israel committed acts of murder against US servicemen and an act of war against the United States.
- The White House knowingly covered up the facts of this attack from the American people.
- The truth continues to be concealed to the present day in what can only be termed a national disgrace.

What was Israel's motive in launching this attack? Congress must address this question with full cooperation from the National Security Agency, the CIA and the military intelligence services.

The men of the USS *Liberty* represented the United States. They were attacked for two hours, causing 70 percent of American casualties, and the eventual loss of our best intelligence ship.

These sailors and Marines were entitled to our best defense. We gave them no defense.

Did our government put Israel's interests ahead of our own? If so, why? Does our government continue to subordinate American interests to Israeli interests? These are important questions that should be investigated by an independent, fully empowered commission of the American government.

The American people deserve to know the truth about this attack. We must finally shed some light on one of the blackest pages in American naval history. It is a duty we owe not only to the brave men of the USS *Liberty*, but to every man and woman who is asked to wear the uniform of the United States.

Adm. Thomas Moorer was chairman of the Joint Chiefs of Staff from 1970 to 1974 and once was 7th Fleet commander. He is joined in the Independent Commission of Inquiry by Rear Adm. Merlin Staring, former judge advocate general of the Navy; and Ambassador James Akins, former US ambassador to Saudi Arabia. Gen. Ray Davis, former assistant commandant of the Marine Corps, was a member of the commission at the time of his death in September.

For complete findings and the sworn affidavit of Capt. Ward Boston, go to www.ussliberty.org.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

In the last days of the Roman Empire, “There was no corner of the known world where some interest was not alleged to be in danger or under actual attack. If the interests were not Roman, they were those of Rome’s allies; and if Rome had no allies, then allies would be invented. When it was utterly impossible to contrive such an interest—why, then it was the national honor that had been insulted. Rome was always being attacked by evil-minded neighbors, always fighting for a breathing-space. The whole world was pervaded by a host of enemies, and it was manifestly Rome’s duty to guard against their indubitably aggressive designs.”

—JOSEPH A. SCHUMPETER, *IMPERIALISM AND SOCIAL CLASSES*

- Adams, Don, and Harrison E. Livingstone. *From an Office Building with a High-Powered Rifle: A Report to the Public from an FBI Agent Involved in the Official JFK Assassination Investigation*. Walterville, OR: TrineDay LLC, 2012.
- Albertazzie, Col. Ralph and J. F. terHorst. *The Flying White House: The Story of Air Force One*, New York: Coward, McCann & Geoghegan, Inc., 1979.
- Allen, Robert J., JD. *Beyond Treason Reflections on the Cover-up of the June 1967 Israeli Attack on the USS Liberty an American Spy Ship*. CreateSpace, 2012.
- Ayers, Bradley E., *The Zenith Secret: A CIA Insider Exposes the Secret War Against Cuba and the Plot That Killed the Kennedy Brothers*. Brooklyn, NY: Vox Pop/Drench Kiss Media Corporation [www.voxpopnet.net], 2007.
- Baker, Bobby with Larry L. King. *Wheeling and Dealing: Confessions of a Capitol Hill Operator*. New York: W. W. Norton & Company, Inc., 1978.
- Baker, Russ, *Family of Secrets: The Bush Dynasty: America’s Invisible Government and the Hidden History of the Last Fifty Years*. New York: Bloomsbury Press, 2009.
- Ball, George W., with Douglas B. Ball. *The Passionate Attachment: America’s Involvement with Israel, 1947 to the Present*. New York: W. W. Norton & Co, 1992.
- Bamford, James, *Body of Secrets: Anatomy of the Ultra-Secret National Security Agency: From the Cold War Through the Dawn of a New Century*, New York: Doubleday, 2001.
- Belzer, Richard, and David Wayne. *Hit List: An In-Depth Investigation into the Mysterious Deaths of Witnesses to the JFK Assassination*. New York: Skyhorse Publishing, 2013.
- Beschloss, Michael R. *Reaching for Glory*. New York: Simon & Schuster, 2001.
- Beschloss, Michael R. *Taking Charge: The Johnson White House Tapes*. New York, Simon & Shuster, 1997.
- Bishop, Jim. *The Day Kennedy Was Shot*. New York: Greenwich House, 1968, 1983.
- Black, Edwin, *The Transfer Agreement: The Dramatic Story of the Pact Between the Third Reich and Jewish Palestine*. New York: Dialog Press, 2009.
- Bolden, Abraham. *The Echo from Dealey Plaza*. New York: Harmony Books, 2008.
- Brinkley, Douglas. *Dean Acheson: The Cold War Years, 1953–1971* New Haven, CT: Yale University Press, 1992.
- Brinkley, Douglas, and Townsend Hoopes, *Driven Patriot: The Life and Times of James Forrestal*. Annapolis, MD: US Naval Institute Press, 2000.
- Brown, Madeleine. *Texas in the Morning: The Love Story of Madeleine Brown and President Lyndon Baines Johnson*. Baltimore: The Conservatory Press, 1997.
- Brown, Madeleine, and Constance Kritzberg. *DALLAS DID IT!* (Unpublished manuscript).
- Bruck, Connie. *When Hollywood Had a King: The Reign of Lew Wasserman, Who Leveraged Talent into Power and Influence*. New York: Random House, 2003.
- Bryant, Traphes. *Dog Days at the White House: The Outrageous Memoirs of the Presidential Kennel Keeper*. New York: Macmillan Publishing, 1975.
- Bullion, John L. *In the Boat with LBJ*. Plano, TX: Republic of Texas Press, 2001.

- Burleigh, Nina. *A Very Private Woman: The Life and Unsolved Murder of Presidential Mistress Mary Meyer*. New York: Bantam Books, 1998.
- Busby, Horace. *An Intimate Portrait of Lyndon Johnson's Final Days in the Office: The Thirty-first of March*. New York: Farrar, Straus and Giroux, 2005.
- Califano, Jr., Joseph A. *The Triumph & Tragedy of Lyndon Johnson*. New York: Simon & Shuster, 1991.
- Campbell, John. *How CATV Came to Texas: "LBJ Country."* North Charleston, SC: BookSurge, LLC., 2005.
- Campbell, Joseph. *The Hero with a Thousand Faces*. New York: Fontana, 1993.
- Campbell, Joseph, with Bill Moyers. *The Power of Myth*. New York: First Anchor Books (owned by Random House), 1991.
- Caro, Robert A. *The Years of Lyndon Johnson: The Path to Power*. New York: Alfred A. Knopf, 1982.
- Caro, Robert A. *The Years of Lyndon Johnson: Means of Ascent*. New York: Alfred A. Knopf, 1990.
- Caro, Robert A. *The Years of Lyndon Johnson: The Master of the Senate*. New York: Alfred A. Knopf, 2002.
- Caro, Robert A. *The Years of Lyndon Johnson: The Passage of Power*. New York: Alfred A. Knopf, 2012.
- Churchill, Randolph S., and Churchill, Winston S., Jr. *The Six Day War*. New York: Houghton Mifflin Co., 1967.
- Clarence, John, and Tom Whittle. *The Gold House: The True Story of the Victorio Peak Treasure: The Lies, The Thefts. (Vol. II)*. Las Cruces, NM: Soledad Publishing Co., 2013.
- Clifford, Clark. *Counsel to the President: A Memoir*. New York: Random House, 1991.
- Cooper, Charles G., with Richard E. Goodspeed, *A Marine's Story of Combat in Peace and War*. Victoria, Canada: Trafford Publishing, 2002.
- Corson, William R. *The Betrayal*. New York: W. W. Norton & Co., 1968.
- Crenshaw, Charles A., and Gary J Shaw. *Trauma Room One: The JFK Medical Cover-up Exposed*. New York: Paraview Press, 2001.
- Dallek, Robert. *Lone Star Rising: Lyndon Johnson and His Times 1908–1960*. New York: Oxford University Press, 1991.
- Dallek, Robert. *Lyndon B. Johnson: Portrait of a President*. New York: Oxford University Press, 2004.
- Dallek, Robert. *Flawed Giant: Lyndon Johnson and His Times 1961–1973*. New York: Oxford University Press, 1998.
- Day, James M. *Captain Clint Peoples, Texas Ranger*. Waco, TX: Texian Press. 1980.
- Dickerson, John. *On Her Trail: My Mother, Nancy Dickerson, TV News' First Woman Star*. New York: Simon & Schuster, 2006.
- Dickerson, Nancy. *Among Those Present: A Reporter's View of 25 Years in Washington*. New York: Random House, 1976.
- Douglass, James W. *JFK and the Unspeakable: Why He Died and Why It Matters*. Maryknoll, NY: Orbis Books. 2008.
- Dugger, Ronnie. *The Politician: The Life and Times of Lyndon Johnson: The Drive for Power, from the Frontier to Master of the Senate*. New York: W. W. Norton & Company 1982.
- Dunn, Si. *Dark Signals: A Navy Radio Operator in the Tonkin Gulf and South China Sea, 1965–1965*. Austin, TX: Sagecreek Productions LLC, 2012.
- Ennes, James M. *Assault on the Liberty*. New York: Random House, 1980.
- Estes, Billie Sol, *Billie Sol Estes: A Texas Legend*. BS Productions, Granbury, TX, 2005 (Also See: Reymond, William, and Billie Sol Estes. *JFK le Dernier Témoin*)
- Fetzer, James H. (Ed.) *The Great Zapruder Film Hoax: Deceit and Deception in the Death of JFK*. Chicago: Catfeet Press, 2003.
- Fetzer, James H. (Ed.) *Murder in Dealey Plaza*. Chicago: Catfeet Press, 2000.
- Fonzi, Gaeton. *The Last Investigation*. New York: Thunder's Mouth Press, 1993.
- Garrison, Jim. *On the Trail of the Assassins*. New York: Warner Books, 1968.
- Gates, Jeff. *Guilt by Association*. Santa Barbara, CA: State Street Publications, 2008.
- Geyelin, Philip. *Lyndon B. Johnson and the World*. New York: Frederick A. Praeger, Publishers, 1966.
- Gibbons, William C. *The US Government and the Vietnam War*. Princeton University Press, 1995.

- Gillon, Steven M. *The Kennedy Assassination: 24 Hours After: Lyndon B. Johnson's Pivotal First Day as President*. New York: Basic Books, 2009.
- Goldberg, J. J. *Jewish Power: Inside the American Jewish Establishment*. New York: Basic Books, 1997.
- Goldman, Eric F. *The Tragedy of Lyndon Johnson*. New York: Alfred A. Knopf, 1969.
- Goodwin, Richard N. *Remembering America*. Boston: Little, Brown and Company, 1988.
- Goulden, Joseph C. *Truth Is the First Casualty: The Gulf of Tonkin Affair and Reality*. New York: Rand McNally, 1969.
- Groden, Robert J. *The Killing of a President: The Complete Photographic Record of the JFK Assassination, the Conspiracy, and the Cover-up*. New York: Viking Studio Books, Viking Penguin, 1993.
- Groden, Robert, and Harrison Livingstone. *High Treason: The Assassination of JFK & the Case for Conspiracy*. New York: Carroll & Graf, 1989.
- Guthman, Edwin O. and Jeffery Shulman. *Robert Kennedy in His Own Words*. New York: Bantam, 1988.
- Halberstam, David. *The Best and the Brightest*. New York: Random House, 1972.
- Halberstam, David. *The Fifties*. New York: Villard Books, 1993.
- Haley, James Evetts. *A Texan Looks at Lyndon: A Study in Illegitimate Power*. Canyon, Texas: Palo Duro Press, 1964.
- Harwood, Richard, and Haynes Johnson, *Lyndon*. New York: Praeger Publishers, 1973.
- Haslam, Edward T. *Dr. Mary's Monkey*. Walterville, OR: TrineDay Publishing, 2007.
- Heikal, Mohamed. *The Cairo Documents*. New York: Doubleday, 1973.
- Heiner, Kent. *Without Smoking Gun*. Oregon: Trine Day, 2004 (Kindle Ed. 2012).
- Henggeler, Paul R. *In His Steps: Lyndon Johnson and the Kennedy Mystique*. Lanham, MD: Ivan R. Dee, 1991.
- Herring, George C. *America's Longest War: The United States and Vietnam, 1950–1975 (4th Ed.)*. New York: McGraw-Hill, 2001.
- Hersh, Burton. *Bobby and J. Edgar: The Historic Face-Off Between the Kennedys and J. Edgar Hoover That Transformed America*. New York: Carroll & Graf, 2007.
- Hersh, Seymour M. *The Dark Side of Camelot*. Boston: Little, Brown and Company, 1997.
- Hersh, Seymour M. *The Samson Option: Israel's Nuclear Arsenal and American Foreign Policy*. New York: Random House, 1991.
- Hershberg, James G. *Marigold: The Lost Chance for Peace in Vietnam*. Palo Alto, CA: Stanford University Press/Wilson Center Press. 2012.
- Hershman, D. Jablow. *Power Beyond Reason: The Mental Collapse of Lyndon Johnson*. Fort Lee, NJ: Barricade Books, 2002.
- Hershman, D. Jablow, and Julian Lieb, MD, *A Brotherhood of Tyrants: Manic Depression and Absolute Power*. Amherst, NY: Prometheus Books, 1994.
- Heymann, C. David. *RFK: A Candid Biography of Robert F. Kennedy*. New York: Dutton Adult, 1998.
- Holland, Max. *The Kennedy Assassination Tapes*. New York: Alfred A. Knopf, 2004.
- Horne, Douglas P. *Inside the Assassination Records Review Board: The US Government's Final Attempt to Reconcile the Conflicting Medical Evidence in the Assassination of JFK*. Amazon, 2009.
- Hoopes, Townsend. *The Limits of Intervention: An inside account of How the Johnson Policy of Escalation in Vietnam Was Reversed*. New York: David McKay Company, Inc., 1969.
- Hounam, Peter, and John Simpson. *Operation Cyanide: Why the Bombing of the USS Liberty Nearly Caused World War III*. Chatham, Kent, UK: Mackays of Chatham, Ltd., 2003.
- Hunt, E. Howard, with Greg Aunapu. *American Spy: My Secret History in the CIA, Watergate & Beyond*. Hoboken, NJ: John Wiley & Sons Inc., 2007.
- Hunt, Saint John. *Bond of Secrecy*, Published electronically: <http://www.saintjohnhunt.com/index.html>
- Hurt, Henry. *Reasonable Doubt: An Investigation into the Assassination of John F. Kennedy*. New York: Holt, Rinehart and Winston, 1985.
- Joesten, Joachim. *The Dark Side of Lyndon Baines Johnson*. Iconoclastic Books, 1968, 2013.

Jones Jr., Penn. *Forgive My Grief*, vols. I–IV. Self published, Waxahachie, TX. (I. 1966; II. 1967; III. 1974; IV. 1976).

Kalman, Laura. *Abe Fortas: A Biography*. Binghamton, NY: Vail-Ballou Press, 1990 (copyright Yale University).

Karnow, Stanley. *Vietnam: A History*. New York: Viking Press, 1983.

Katzenbach, Nicholas deB., *Some of It Was Fun: Working with JFK and LBJ*. New York: W. W. Norton & Company, 2008.

Kearns Goodwin, Doris. *Lyndon Johnson and the American Dream*. New York: St. Martin's Press, 1991.

Kessler, Ronald. *In the President's Secret Service: Behind the Scenes with Agents in the Line of Fire and the Presidents They Protect*. New York: Crown Publishing Group, 2009.

Kessler, Ronald. *Inside the White House.*, New York: Pocket Books, 1995.

Klaber, William, and Philip Melanson. *Shadow Play: The Untold Story of the Robert F. Kennedy Assassination*. New York: St. Martin's Press, 1997.

Lane, Mark. *Last Word: My Indictment of the CIA in the Murder of JFK*. New York: Skyhorse Publishing, 2011.

Lane, Mark. *Plausible Denial*. New York: Thunder's Mouth Press, 1991.

Lane, Mark. *Rush to Judgment: A Critique of the Warren Commission's Inquiry into the Murders of President John F. Kennedy, Officer J. D. Tippit and Lee Harvey Oswald*. New York: Holt Rinehart & Winston, 1966.

Lasky, Victor. *It Didn't Start with Watergate*. New York: The Dial Press, 1977.

Lasky, Victor. *JFK: The Man and the Myth*. New York: The MacMillan Company, 1968.

Lasky, Victor. *Robert F. Kennedy: The Myth and the Man*. New York: Trident Press, 1968.

Lifton, David. *Best Evidence: Disguise and Deception in the Assassination of John F. Kennedy*. New York: Macmillan Publishing Co., Inc., 1980.

Lincoln, Evelyn. *Kennedy and Johnson*. New York: Holt, Rinehart and Winston, 1968.

Livingstone, Harrison Edward. *The Radical Right and the Murder of John F. Kennedy*. Victoria, BC, Canada: Trafford Publishing, 2004.

Manchester, William. *The Death of a President*. New York: Harper & Row, 1967.

Margolis, Jon. *The Last Innocent Year: America in 1964 [The Beginning of the "Sixties"]*. New York: William Morrow and Company, Inc., 1999.

Martin, David C. *Wilderness of Mirrors*. Guilford, CT: The Lyons Press, 2003.

Marrs, Jim. *Crossfire: The Plot That Killed Kennedy*. New York: Carroll & Graf, 1989.

May, Ernest R., and Philip D. Zelikow. *The Kennedy Tapes: Inside the White House During the Cuban Missile Crisis*. Cambridge, MA: The Belknap Press of Harvard University Press, 1997.

McClendon, Sarah, and Jules Minton. *Mr President, Mr. President!: My Fifty Years of Covering the White House*. New York: General Publishing Group, 1996.

McClellan, Barr. *Blood, Money & Power: How LBJ Killed JFK*. New York: Hannover House, 2003.

McKnight, Gerald D. *Breach of Trust: How the Warren Commission Failed the Nation and Why*. Lawrence, KS: University Press of Kansas, 2005.

McKnight, Gerald D. *The Last Crusade: Martin Luther King Jr., The FBI, and the Poor People's Campaign*. New York: Basic Books, 2nd. Ed. 1998.

McMaster, H. R. *Dereliction of Duty: Lyndon Johnson, Robert McNamara, the Joint Chiefs of Staff, and the Lies That Led to Vietnam*. New York: HarperCollins Publishers, 1997.

Meagher, Sylvia. *Accessories After the Fact*. New York: Warner Books, 1992.

Melanson, Philip H. *Lee Harvey Oswald and US Intelligence*. New York: Praeger Publishers, 1990.

Melanson, Philip H. *The Martin Luther King Assassination: New Revelations on the Conspiracy and Cover-up*. New York: S.P.I. Books, 1991.

Melanson, Philip H. and Klaber, William (See Klaber, William).

Miller, Merle. *Lyndon: An Oral Biography*. New York: G.P. Putnam & Sons, 1980.

MLK the Truth, LLC. *The 13th Juror: The Official Transcript of the Martin Luther King Assassination Conspiracy Trial*.

- Mollenhoff, Clark R. *Despoilers of Democracy*. Garden City, NY: Doubleday & Company, Inc., 1965.
- Morley, Jefferson. *Our Man in Mexico: Winston Scott and the Hidden History of the CIA*. Lawrence, KS: University of Kansas Press, 2008.
- Muslin, Hyman L, MD, and Thomas H. Jobe, MD. *Lyndon Johnson: The Tragic Self: A Psychohistorical Portrait*. New York: Insight Books/Plenum Press, 1991.
- Newman, John M. *JFK and Vietnam: Deception, Intrigue and the Struggle for Power*. New York: Warner Books, Inc., 1992.
- Novak, Robert. *The Prince of Darkness*. New York: Three Rivers Press/Crown Publishing Group/Random House, 2007.
- O'Donnell, Kenneth P., and David F. Powers, with Joe McCarthy. *Johnny, We Hardly Knew Ye: Memories of John Fitzgerald Kennedy*. Boston: Little, Brown, 1970, 1972.
- O'Sullivan, Shane. *Who Killed Bobby?* New York/London: Union Square Press (Sterling Publishing Co.), 2008.
- Oren, Michael B. *Six Days of War: June 1967*. New York: Presidio Press, 2003.
- Palamara, Vincent M. *Survivor's Guilt: The Secret Service and the Failure to Protect the President*. Walterville, OR: Trine Day, 2013.
- Parker, Robert, and Richard Rashke, *Capitol Hill in Black and White*. New York: Dodd, Mead & Co. 1986.
- Pearson, Drew. *Diaries, 1949–1959*. ed. Tyler Abell. New York: Holt, Rinehart and Winston, 1974.
- Pearson, Drew, and Jack Anderson. *The Case Against Congress: A Compelling Indictment of Corruption on Capitol Hill*. New York: Simon and Schuster, 1968.
- Pegues, Stephen. *Texas Mafia*. Self-published manuscript, limited circulation, 1997.
- Pepper, William F. *An Act of State: The Execution of Martin Luther King*. London and New York: Verso, 2003.
- Pepper, William F. *Orders to Kill*, New York: Carroll and Graf, 1995.
- Perlstein, Rick. *Before the Storm: Barry Goldwater and the Unmaking of the American Consensus*. New York: Hill and Wang, 2001.
- Prouty, L. Fletcher. *JFK: The CIA, Vietnam, and the Plot to Assassinate John F. Kennedy*. New York: Skyhorse Publishing, 2009.
- Provence, Harry. *Lyndon B. Johnson: A Biography*. New York: Fleet Publishing, 1964.
- Raskin, Marcus, and Robert Spero. *The Four Freedoms Under Siege: The Clear and Present Danger of Our National Security State*. Dulles, VA: Potomac Books, 2009.
- Reedy, George. *Lyndon B. Johnson: A Memoir*. New York: Andrews and McMeel, Inc., 1982.
- Reeves, Richard. *President Kennedy: Profile of Power*. New York: Touchstone, 1994.
- Reymond, William, and Billie Sol Estes. *JFK le Dernier Témoin: Assassinat de Kennedy, enfin la vérité*. Paris, Flammarion, 2003.
- Rusk, Dean. *As I Saw It*. New York: W. W. Norton & Co., 1990.
- Schlesinger Jr., Arthur M. *Journals: 1952–2000*. New York: Penquin Press, 2007.
- Schlesinger Jr., Arthur M. *Robert Kennedy and His Times*. New York: Ballentine Books, 1978.
- Schlesinger Jr., Arthur M. *The Imperial Presidency*. Boston: Houghton Mifflin, 1973.
- Schlesinger Jr., Arthur M. *A Thousand Days*. Boston: Houghton Mifflin, 1965.
- Schulman, Bruce J. *Lyndon B. Johnson and American Liberalism*, New York: Bedford Books of St. Martin's Press, 1995.
- Schumpeter, Joseph A. *Imperialism and Social Classes*. New York: Meridian, 1955.
- Scott, James, *The Attack on the Liberty: The Untold Story of Israel's Deadly 1967 Assault on a US Spy Ship*. New York: Simon & Schuster., 2009.
- Scott, Peter Dale. *Deep Politics and the Death of JFK*. Los Angeles: University of California Press, 1993.
- Sherrill, Robert. *The Accidental President*. New York: Pyramid Publication, Inc., 1968.
- Shesol, Jeff. *Mutual Contempt: Lyndon Johnson, Robert Kennedy, and the Feud That Defined a Decade*. New York: W. W.

- Norton & Company, 1997.
- Sides, Hampton. *Hellhound on His Trail: The Stalking of Martin Luther King Jr. and the International Hunt for His Assassin*. New York: Doubleday, 2010.
- Simpson, Cornell. *The Death of James Forrestal*. Western Islands, 1966.
- Sloan, Bill, with Jean Hill. *JFK: The Last Dissenting Witness*. Gretna, LA: Pelican Publishing Company, Inc., 1992.
- Smith, Matthew. *JFK: The Second Plot*. Edinburgh, Great Britain: Mainstream Publishing Company, 2002.
- Stich, Rodney. *Defrauding America*, 4th Ed., Alamo, CA: Silverpeak 2008.
- Sullivan, William C., with Bill Brown. *The Bureau: My Thirty Years in Hoover's FBI*. New York: W. W. Norton & Company, 1979.
- Summers, Anthony. *The Kennedy Conspiracy*. London: Warner Books, 1998. (Previously titled as *Not in Your Lifetime*. New York: Warner Books, 1998, and *Conspiracy*, New York: McGraw-Hill Book Company, 1980.)
- Summers, Anthony. *Official and Confidential: The Secret Life of J. Edgar Hoover*. New York: G. P. Putnam's Sons, 1993.
- Swearingen, M. Wesley. *To Kill a President*. Self Published, 2008.
- Talbot, David. *Brothers*. New York: Free Press, 2007.
- Thomas, Evan. *Robert Kennedy: His Life*. New York: Simon & Shuster, 2000.
- Thompson, Josiah. *Six Seconds in Dallas*. New York: Bernard Geis Associates for Random House, 1967.
- Tourney, Phillip F., and Mark Glenn, *What I Saw That Day: Israel's June 8th, 1967 Holocaust of US Servicemen Aboard the USS Liberty and Its Aftermath*. Careywood, ID: Liberty Publications. 2011.
- Trask, Richard B. *Pictures of the Pain*. Danvers, MA: Yeoman Press, 1994.
- Trask, Richard B. *That Day in Dallas: Three Photographers Capture on Film the Day President Kennedy Died*. Danvers, MA: Yeoman Press, 1998.
- Trento, Joseph J. *The Secret History of the CIA*. Roseville, CA: Prima Publishing, 2001.
- Turner, William W. *Hoover's FBI*. New York: Thunder's Mouth Press, 1993.
- Turner, William W., and Jonn G. Christian. *The Assassination of Robert F. Kennedy: A Searching Look at the Conspiracy and Cover-Up 1968–1978*. New York: Random House, 1978. (Republished in 2006 by Carroll & Graf, with a substantially revised and updated Introduction.)
- Turner, William W. *Rearview Mirror: Looking Back at the FBI, the CIA and Other Tails*. Granite Bay, CA: Penmarin Books, 2001.
- Turse, Nick. *Kill Anything That Moves: The Real American War in Vietnam*. New York: Metropolitan Books, Henry Holt and Company, LLC, 2013.
- Twining, General Nathan F. *Neither Liberty Nor Safety: A Hard Look at US Military Policy and Strategy*. New York: Holt, Rinehart and Winston, 1966.
- Twyman, Noel. *Bloody Treason: The Assassination of John F. Kennedy*. Rancho Santa Fe, CA: Laurel Publishing, 1997.
- Updegrove, Mark, *Indomitable Will: LBJ in the Presidency*. New York: Crown Publishing, 2012.
- Valenti, Jack. *This Time, This Place: My Life in War, the White House, and Hollywood*. New York: Harmony Books, 2007.
- Van Gelder, Lawrence. *Why the Kennedys Lost the Book Battle*. New York: Award Books, 1967.
- Watson, W. Marvin, with Markman, Sherwin. *Chief of Staff: Lyndon Johnson and His Presidency*. New York: Thomas Dunne Books—St. Martin's Press, 2004.
- Weiner, Tim. *Enemies: A History of the FBI*. New York: Random House, 2012.
- White, Theodore H. *The Making of the President: 1964*. New York: Harper Perennial; Reissue edition (October 5, 2010).
- Winter-Berger, Robert N. *The Washington Pay-off*. Secaucus, NJ: Lyle Stuart, Inc., 1972.
- Zirbel, Craig I. *The Texas Connection*. Scottsdale, AZ: The Texas Connection Co., Publishers, 1991.

MUSEUMS, RESEARCH LIBRARIES, PUBLISHED ESSAYS, ORAL HISTORIES, AND INTERNET RESOURCES

Akashah, Mary and Donald Tennant. *Madness and Politics: The Case of James Forrestal*, Stillwater, Oklahoma: Oklahoma State University, Department of Sociology, 1980 (See http://digital.library.okstate.edu/OAS/oas_pdf/v60/p89_92.pdf).

Dallas Public Library—MA84-21 Clint Peoples Collection, Texas/Dallas History & Archives Division: Clint Peoples Oral History by Gerald Saxon (11/21/1984)

Donald Marshall vs. The State Department of Health By and Through the Bureau of Vital Statistics, Case No. 377.991 52nd Judicial District, Travis County, Texas

Darwish, Adel. *Analysis: Middle East Water Wars*. BBC News, May 30, 2003.

Education Forum and Spartacus Educational Websites (Ref. various citations in endnotes).

George Mason University's History News Network (HNN).

Head, Mike. "US Orchestrated Suharto's 1965–66 Slaughter in Indonesia Part 1: New Evidence on How the Coup was Triggered," World Socialist Web Site (WSWS.ORG), July 19, 1999.

Herring, George C. "Cold Blood": *LBJ's Conduct of Limited War in Vietnam*, 25th Aviation Battalion, The Harmon Memorial Lectures, No. Thirty-Three: United States Air Force Academy, Colorado, 1990 (See <http://25thaviation.org/facts/id1140.htm>).

LBJ Library Folios:

Cliff Carter folio (vice presidential papers)

Bill Moyers folio (vice presidential papers)

LBJ Library Oral History Interviews:

Clifton C. Carter Oral History, Interview I, 10/1/68, by Dorothy L. Pierce

George Ball Oral History Interview I, 7/8/71, by Paige E. Mulhollan

Arthur Krim Oral History Interview III, 6/29/82, by Michael L. Gillette

Burke Marshall Oral History Interview I, 10/28/68, by T. H. Baker

Harry McPherson Oral History Interview III, 1/16/69, by T. H. Baker

Livingston, Harrison E., "Barefoot Sanders, Ramsey Clark, and the Dallas Invasion of Washington: The Later Cover-up of the Medical Evidence." 1996 in the Weisberg collection at Hood College in Frederick, MD: <http://jfk.hood.edu/Collection/Weisberg%20Subject%20Index%20Files/L%20Disk/Livingstone%20Harrison%20Edw%2093/Item%2022.pdf>

Margolis, Eric. *The USS Liberty: America's Most Shameful Secret* (See: <http://www.lewrockwell.com/2001/05/eric-margolis/the-uss-liberty-americas-most-shameful-secret/>).

Martin, David, "Who Killed James Forrestal?" DCDave website: (<http://www.dcdave.com/article4/021110.html>)

Mary Ferrell Foundation: http://www.maryferrell.org/wiki/index.php/JFK_Assassination

The National Security Archives. "Brazil Marks 40th Anniversary of Military Coup Declassified Documents Shed Light on US Role." Edited by Peter Kornbluh (<http://www.gwu.edu/~nsarchiv/NSAEBB/NSAEBB118/index.htm>).

Owen, Taylor, and Kiernan, Ben. "Bombs Over Cambodia," Yale University website: http://www.yale.edu/cgp/Walrus_CambodiaBombing_Oct06.pdf

Palamara, Vince M. *Boring Is Interesting* (www.maryferrell.org/mffweb/archive/viewer/showDoc.do?absPageId=519589)

Quandt, Dr. William B., "The Johnson Administration and the Six Day War," (<http://www.thejerusalemfund.org/ht/a/GetDocumentAction/i/2918>)

Sardie, Lyle. "A Closer Look at LBJ." 1998. Available on various websites, (e.g., <http://tekgnosis.typepad.com/tekgnosis/2014/01/-a-closer-look-at-lbj-by-lyle-sardie-1998-rare-documentary-now-up-on-youtube.html>).

Shane, Scott. "Vietnam Study, Casting Doubts, Remains Secret. *New York Times*, October 31, 2005.

Stratfor Global Intelligence: <http://www.stratfor.com>

United States Cryptologic History: Attack on a Sigint Collector, the USS *Liberty*:

http://www.nsa.gov/public_info/_files/uss_liberty/attack_sigint.pdf

Wikipedia website (Ref. various citations in endnotes)

YouTube Videos

“The Guilty Men: LBJ Conspiracy Theory: Banned Men Who Killed Kennedy.” (2003). <http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=AQzLBYZP3mE>

“Evidence of Revision.” (Parts 1–6). <http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=AQzLBYZP3mE>

“G.DeMohrenschildt: The Security Alarm.” <http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=37dtEpyUJU>

“Documentary on the USS *Liberty*: Dead in the Water.” <http://www.youtube.com/watch?feature=endscreen&NR=1&v=va0sHuZyJwU>

“Loss of Liberty: The Real Story About the USS *Liberty*,” 1–5 (Part 1: <http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=fOBeqvgsQas>

“RFK Assassination Acoustic Evidence on CBS.” <http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=iwvO0u8MseA&feature=endscreen&NR=1>

“Epilogue to ‘RFK Must Die’: Pruszyński Recording Reveals Second Gun.” <http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=sF4XF32yAS4>

“President Lyndon Johnson Using the ‘N’ Word.” <http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=r1rIDmDWSms&feature=related>

Wikipedia (Ref. various citations in endnotes)

Periodicals

Adler, William M. “A Texan Looks at Lyndon,” *Texas Monthly*, September 1987.

Bennett, Brian, and Mike Thompson. “A Reporter’s Last Battle,” *Time*, April 23, 2006.

Dallek, Robert, “The Presidency: Three New Revelations about LBJ,” *The Atlantic Monthly*, April 1998.

Duckworth, Allen. “Connally Wanted President to Call Off Trip to Texas.” *Dallas Morning News*, November 23, 1963, pp. 4–5.

Giraldi, Philip. “Sinking *Liberty*,” *The American Conservative*, March 17, 2011. <http://www.theamericanconservative.com/articles/the-uss-libertys-final-chapter/>

Griffith, Thomas. “Muckraking Is Hard Work.” *Time*, July 23, 1979.

Halsell, Grace. “How LBJ’s Vietnam War Paralyzed His Mideast Policymakers,” *Washington Report on Middle East Affairs*, June 1993.

Huber, Robert. “Vince Salandria: The JFK Conspiracy Theorist,” *Philadelphia* magazine online. February 27, 2014. <http://www.phillymag.com/articles/vince-salandria-jfk-conspiracy-theorist/>

Kessler, Ronald. “Hoover’s Secret Files,” *The Daily Beast*, August 2, 2011.

King, Wayne. “Estes Links Johnson to Plot,” *New York Times*, March 24, 1984.

Lambert, William, and Keith Wheeler. “How LBJ’s Family Amassed Its Fortune,” *Life*, August 14 and 21, 1964.

Meroney, John. “What Really Happened Between J. Edgar Hoover and MLK Jr.” *The Atlantic*, November 11, 2011.

Mooney, Michael J. “The Day Kennedy Died,” *D Magazine*, November 2008.

Moorer, Thomas H. “A Fair Probe Would Attack *Liberty* Misinformation.” *Stars and Stripes*, January 16, 2004.

Morley, Jefferson. “The Gentlemanly Planner of Assassinations.” *Slate*, November 1, 2002.

Parks, Scott K. “Legendary Texas Lawman’s Custom Pistols, Memorabilia up for Auction.” *Dallas News*, November 28, 2012.

“People Section.” *Time* magazine, August 2, 1968.

Phillips, Cabell. “The Senate Shocks a Senate Prober.” *New York Times Magazine*, August 9, 1964.

Prouty, L. Fletcher. “The Guns of Dallas.” *Gallery*. October 1975.

Quinn, Sally. “Doris Kearns and Richard Goodwin: A Tale of Hearts and Minds.” *Washington Post*, August 24, 1975.

Risen, Clay. “The Shrinking of Lyndon Johnson.” *New Republic*, February 9, 2014.

Sack, Kevin. "Son of Dr. King Asserts L.B.J. Role in Plot." *New York Times*, June 20, 1997.

Swartz, Mimi. "The Mythic Rise of Billy Don Moyers," *Texas Monthly*, November 1989.

Weaver, Warren Jr. "Ex-Aides Assail Depiction of Johnson as Paranoid." *New York Times*, August 24, 1988.

Wheeler, Keith. "Scandal Grows and Grows in Washington." *Life*, November 22, 1963.

Wills, Gary. *New York Review of Books*. June 24, 1976. (Also printed in his book *Lead Time: A Journalist's Education*, New York: First Mariner Books edition, 2004.)

DVD Videos

Avrich, Barry, Brian Linehan, Kathleen Sharp, Nat Brescia, and Natalie Mitrovich. *The Last Mogul: The Life and Times of Lew Wasserman*. August 8, 2006. New York: Kino Video. DVD: 114 minutes.

O'Sullivan, Shane. *Killing Oswald*. November 17, 2003. Los Angeles: E2 Studios. DVD: 120 minutes.

O' Sullivan. *RFK Must Die*. November 20, 2007. London: Soda Pictures. DVD: 102 minutes.

ENDNOTES

- ¹ Dallek, *Flawed*, ... pp. 39–40.
- ² See YouTube: “G.DeMohrenschildt: The Security Alarm.” <http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=37dtEpyUJU>
- ³ Joesten, pp. 1–2.
- ⁴ Manchester, pp. 134, 145.
- ⁵ See Education Forum. “Malcolm Wallace Part 1: JFK Online Seminars” Post #11: <http://educationforum.ipbhost.com/index.php?showtopic=2321&hl=%2Bbarefoot+%2Bsanders>
- ⁶ See http://www.dailymotion.com/video/xodiw6_jfk-autopsie-d-un-complot-john-fitzgerald-kennedy_sport
- ⁷ Estes, p. 90
- ⁸ Reymond and Estes, pp. 196–197.
- ⁹ Reymond and Estes, pp. 198–203.
- ¹⁰ Reymond and Estes, p. 204.
- ¹¹ Ibid.
- ¹² Sardie Video.
- ¹³ Reymond and Estes, p. 204.
- ¹⁴ *New York Times*, August 17, 1962.
- ¹⁵ Reymond and Estes. p. 210.
- ¹⁶ Ibid. pp. 212–213
- ¹⁷ Estes, p. 59.
- ¹⁸ Ibid.
- ¹⁹ Bobby Baker, p. 117.
- ²⁰ Ibid.
- ²¹ Estes, p. 60.
- ²² Muslim and Jobe, p. 206.
- ²³ [PBS.com](http://www.pbs.org/wgbh/americanexperience/films/lbj/player/). “The Presidents: Lyndon B. Johnson.” *American Experience*. <http://www.pbs.org/wgbh/americanexperience/films/lbj/player/> (at 1:22).
- ²⁴ Kessler, *In the President’s ...*, pp. 17–18.
- ²⁵ Margolis, J. p. 322.
- ²⁶ Dallek, *Flawed ...* p. 5 (Ref. letter to Dallek from George Reedy dated Nov. 20, 1991).
- ²⁷ Margolis, J., p. 322.
- ²⁸ Haley, p. 235.
- ²⁹ Kessler, *Inside the White House*, p. 31.
- ³⁰ Ibid.
- ³¹ Reedy, p. 36.

- ³² Caro, *Master of the Senate*, pp. 141–145.
- ³³ Dallek, *Flawed Giant*, p. 187.
- ³⁴ Kessler, *In the President's Secret Service ...*, p. 16.
- ³⁵ Albertazzie, pp. 238–239; Dickerson, John, p. 148
- ³⁶ Kessler, *In the President's Secret Service ...*, pp. 16–17.
- ³⁷ See <http://www.biography.com/people/alfred-kinsey-9365493?page=2>
- ³⁸ Dallek, *Flawed Giant*, pp. 627–28.
- ³⁹ Caro, *The Path ...*, p. 102; Dugger, p. 77.
- ⁴⁰ Dallek, *Flawed Giant*. p. 282.
- ⁴¹ Caro, *The Path ...*, p. 257.
- ⁴² Sherrill, p. 19.
- ⁴³ Transcript, John B. Connally Oral History Special Interview, 6/30/88, by Robert Dallek, Internet Copy, LBJ Library, p. 21.
- ⁴⁴ Ibid., pp. 21–22
- ⁴⁵ Pearson, *Diaries*. p. 425.
- ⁴⁶ Campbell, John, p. 118.
- ⁴⁷ Ibid., p. 121.
- ⁴⁸ See <http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Edsel>
- ⁴⁹ Twining, p. 183.
- ⁵⁰ Ibid. p. 251.
- ⁵¹ Updegrove, pp. 40–41
- ⁵² Dugger, pp. 122–124.
- ⁵³ See The Rag Blog: <http://theragblog.blogspot.com/2008/08/ronnie-dugger-lbj-texas-observer-and-me.html>
- ⁵⁴ See “The Big Book” by Chris Jones, *Esquire* magazine, April 12, 2012 (also: <http://www.esquire.com/features/robert-caro-0512-3#ixzz1sOyxGdrZ>)
- ⁵⁵ Schlesinger, *Journals*, p. 280.
- ⁵⁶ Swartz, *Texas Monthly*, p. 215.
- ⁵⁷ Schlesinger, *Journals*, p. 306.
- ⁵⁸ Ibid., p. 344.
- ⁵⁹ Dallek, *Flawed ...*, p. 491.
- ⁶⁰ Schlesinger, *Journals*, p. 267.
- ⁶¹ Kessler, *In the Presiden't Secret Service*, p. 20.
- ⁶² Muslin, p. 146.
- ⁶³ Ibid., p. 151.
- ⁶⁴ Halberstam, *The Best ...*, p. 446.

- ⁶⁵ Horwitz, Jane, “She Hopes ‘MacBird’ Flies in a New Era,” *Washington Post*, September 5, 2006.
- ⁶⁶ Spartacus Educational (See <http://www.spartacus.schoolnet.co.uk/JFKpeoples.htm>).
- ⁶⁷ Estes, p. 3.
- ⁶⁸ Ibid.
- ⁶⁹ Dallek, *Lone Star...*, p. 347.
- ⁷⁰ See <http://supreme.justia.com/cases/federal/us/381/532/case.html>
- ⁷¹ Dallas Public Library—See MA84–21 Clint Peoples Collection. Texas/Dallas History & Archives Division, Dallas Public Library. (Box 67: “Clint Peoples Oral History” by Gerald Saxon, 11/21/1984, pp. 252–253).
- ⁷² Estes, p. 86.
- ⁷³ Op. cit. Dallas Public Library, “Clint Peoples Oral History” by Gerald Saxon.
- ⁷⁴ Ibid., p. 243.
- ⁷⁵ Ibid.
- ⁷⁶ Pegues, p. 103.
- ⁷⁷ Estes, p. 91.
- ⁷⁸ Ibid. pp. 93–94.
- ⁷⁹ Reymond and Estes, p. 192.
- ⁸⁰ Caro, *Master ...*, p. 146.
- ⁸¹ Estes, p. 90.
- ⁸² Op. cit. Dallas Public Library, “Clint Peoples Oral History” by Gerald Saxon, pp. 244–245.
- ⁸³ Reymond and Estes, p. 249.
- ⁸⁴ Estes, p. 92.
- ⁸⁵ Estes, p. 93.
- ⁸⁶ Estes, p. 98.
- ⁸⁷ See Dallas Public Library, Clint Peoples Collection: Donald Marshall vs. the State, p. 7.
- ⁸⁸ Ibid.
- ⁸⁹ Ibid.
- ⁹⁰ Reymond and Estes. pp. 264–265.
- ⁹¹ Op. cit. Dallas Public Library, “Clint Peoples Oral History” by Gerald Saxon, pp. 261–263.
- ⁹² Ibid., p. 264.
- ⁹³ Ibid., pp. 256–257.
- ⁹⁴ Turner, Thomas, “US Yields to State on Estes File Fuss,” *Dallas Morning News*, May 30, 1962.
- ⁹⁵ Op. cit. Dallas Public Library, “Clint Peoples Oral History” by Gerald Saxon, pp. 255–256, 267–268.
- ⁹⁶ Ibid.
- ⁹⁷ Ibid., p. 265.

- ⁹⁸ Ibid., p. 269.
- ⁹⁹ Parks, Scott K. "Legendary Texas Lawman's Custom Pistols, Memorabilia up for auction," *Dallas News*. November 28, 2012. <http://www.dallasnews.com/news/state/headlines/20121128-legendary-texas-lawmans-custom-pistols-memorabilia-up-for-auction.ece>
- ¹⁰⁰ Op. cit. Dallas Public Library, "Clint Peoples Oral History" by Gerald Saxon, p. 248.
- ¹⁰¹ Ibid., pp. 433–435.
- ¹⁰² Estes, p. 166; Reymond and Estes, p. 269.
- ¹⁰³ Estes, p. 166.
- ¹⁰⁴ See <http://www.chron.com/news/texas/article/Flamboyant-Texas-swindler-Billie-Sol-Estes-dies-4515130.php?cmpid=hpfsln>
- ¹⁰⁵ Lifton, p. 217.
- ¹⁰⁶ See "Barefoot Sanders, Ramsey Clark, and the Dallas Invasion of Washington: The Later Coverup of the Medical Evidence" by Harrison E. Livingstone, 1996 in the Weisberg Collection at Hood College: <http://jfk.hood.edu/Collection/Weisberg%20Subject%20Index%20Files/L%20Disk/Livingstone%20Harrison%20Edward%2093/Item%20222.pdf>
- ¹⁰⁷ Ibid., pp. 4–5.
- ¹⁰⁸ Lifton, p. 288.
- ¹⁰⁹ Ibid., pp. 292–294.
- ¹¹⁰ Livingstone, Weisberg Collection, op. cit., p. 5; Lifton, p. 306.
- ¹¹¹ Lifton, p. 306.
- ¹¹² See JamesFetzerNews—Youtube "David W. Mantik, M.D., Ph.D., on the 'Official' JFK Skull X-rays." <http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=1tnG6cdKfe4>
- ¹¹³ See *The Men Who Killed Kennedy*, Episode 7, (@ 27.00), http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=DKgg6nVS_iI
- ¹¹⁴ Livingston, *High Treason 2*, p. 557.
- ¹¹⁵ See Mary Ferrell Foundation, "ARRB MD 32—Finck Privileged Communication Dated 10 Feb 67." <http://www.maryferrell.org/mffweb/archive/viewer/showDoc.do;jsessionid=531F0438577C01794210EFA1CFF856F2?docId=613&relPageId=2>
- ¹¹⁶ Horne, *Inside the ARRB ...* (Vol. 3, Chapter 10) pp. 777–802.
- ¹¹⁷ Nelson, *LBJ: The Mastermind ...*, p. 604.
- ¹¹⁸ Lifton, p. 287.
- ¹¹⁹ Ibid., p. 332
- ¹²⁰ Ibid., p. 65.
- ¹²¹ Horne, *Inside the ARRB ...* (Vol. 3) pp. 792–802.
- ¹²² Livingstone, Weisberg Collection, op. cit., pp. 10–12.
- ¹²³ *Dallas Morning News*, November 20, 1963, Sect. 4, P.1 (cited by Newcomb and Adams, *Murder From Within*, p. 274).
- ¹²⁴ Livingstone, Weisberg Collection, op. cit., p. 1–2.
- ¹²⁵ Ibid.
- ¹²⁶ Ibid. (Ref. HSCA 180-10055-10158; HSCA 180-10055-10168; HSCA 180-10055-10181; HSCA 180-10055-10193;

HSCA 180-10071-10042).

¹²⁷ Ibid., p. 11.

¹²⁸ Reymond and. Estes, pp. 282–283 and referenced in the English version of an untitled video shown at The Conspiracy Museum, November 2003 (Produced by William Reymond and Tom Bowden with Billie Sol Estes).

¹²⁹ Ibid.

¹³⁰ McClellan, Exhibit G (pp. 6–7 of 10).

¹³¹ Lasky, *RFK*, p. 299.

¹³² Updegrove, p. 31.

¹³³ Hershman, *Power ...*, pp. 216–217 (Ref. Booth Mooney: *LBJ: An Irreverent Chronicle*, New York: Thomas Y. Crowell Co., 1976, p. 221 and Hugh Sidey, *A Very Personal Presidency: Lyndon Johnson in the White House*, New York: Atheneum, 1968, p. 23).

¹³⁴ Updegrove, p. 31

¹³⁵ Ibid., p. 37.

¹³⁶ Dugger, p. 16.

¹³⁷ Caro, *The Passage...*, pp. 138–139.

¹³⁸ Caro, *The Path ...*, p. xix.

¹³⁹ Clifford, p. 317.

¹⁴⁰ Ibid., pp. 316–319.

¹⁴¹ Dickerson, Nancy, pp. 43–44.

¹⁴² Ibid. p. 44.

¹⁴³ Ibid., p. 46.

¹⁴⁴ Ibid., p. 48.

¹⁴⁵ Ibid., p. 44.

¹⁴⁶ Caro, *Passage ...*, p. 122.

¹⁴⁷ Ibid. p. 353.

¹⁴⁸ See <http://educationforum.ipbhost.com/index.php?showtopic=18833&st=0&gopid=247779>

¹⁴⁹ Caro, *Passage ...*, p. 605.

¹⁵⁰ Ibid., p. 20.

¹⁵¹ Schlesinger, *Robert Kennedy*, pp. 218–219.

¹⁵² Caro, *Master...*, p. 1055.

¹⁵³ Marrs, pp. 249–250.

¹⁵⁴ Haley, p. 181.

¹⁵⁵ Brown and Kritzberg, p. 88.

¹⁵⁶ Baker, Russ, p. 132.

¹⁵⁷ Gillon, pp. 127–128.

- ¹⁵⁸ Caro, *Passage* ..., p. 257; Ch. 23.
- ¹⁵⁹ Ibid.
- ¹⁶⁰ Dickerson, Nancy, p. 102.
- ¹⁶¹ Reedy, pp. 139–140.
- ¹⁶² Muslin, pp. 71–72.
- ¹⁶³ Ibid.
- ¹⁶⁴ Ibid. p. 155.
- ¹⁶⁶ Kilpatrick, James J. *Human Events*, August 25, 1960.
- ¹⁶⁷ Dallek, *Lone Star*..., p. 576–577.
- ¹⁶⁸ Lincoln, p. 16.
- ¹⁶⁹ Caro, *The Passage*..., p. 198.
- ¹⁷⁰ Ibid.
- ¹⁷¹ Reedy, p. 68.
- ¹⁷² Dallek, *Flawed Giant*, pp. 124–25 (Quoting Busby interview).
- ¹⁷³ Ibid., p. 45.
- ¹⁷⁴ Updegrove, p. 10.
- ¹⁷⁵ Geyelin, p. 34.
- ¹⁷⁶ Kessler, *Inside the White House*, p. 33.
- ¹⁷⁷ See *LBJ: The Mastermind* ..., pp. 21–23.
- ¹⁷⁸ Transcript, Harry McPherson Oral History Interview III, 1/16/69, by T. H. Baker, Internet Copy, LBJ Library.
- ¹⁷⁹ Kearns, p. 200.
- ¹⁸⁰ Twyman, pp. 440–441.
- ¹⁸¹ Caro, *The Passage*..., p. 265.
- ¹⁸² Novak, pp. 90–92.
- ¹⁸³ Schlesinger, *Journals* ..., p. 185.
- ¹⁸⁴ Reedy, pp. 136–137.
- ¹⁸⁵ Nelson, *LBJ: The Mastermind* ... (2011–2013 Ed.), pp. 310–312. Also see Education Forum: <http://educationforum.ipbhost.com/index.php?showtopic=14966&st=0>
- ¹⁸⁶ Newsmax Archives: <http://archive.newsmax.com/archives/articles/2003/11/18/152526.shtml>
- ¹⁸⁷ Caro, *The Passage*..., p. 265.
- ¹⁸⁸ Schlesinger, *Journals*, p. 226.
- ¹⁸⁹ See Education Forum: <http://educationforum.ipbhost.com/index.php?showtopic=14966>
- ¹⁹⁰ See Google Books, “Bobby was the Boy to See” (*Look* magazine, December 7, 1963).
- ¹⁹¹ Ibid.

- ¹⁹² Campbell, John, p. 119.
- ¹⁹³ Ibid.
- ¹⁹⁴ Lambert, William, and Wheeler, Keith. "How LBJ's Family Amassed Its Fortune," *Life* magazine, August 21, 1964, pp. 62, 63.
- ¹⁹⁵ Schlesinger, *Journals*, p. 307.
- ¹⁹⁶ Novak, p. 91.
- ¹⁹⁷ Pearson/Anderson, p. 90.
- ¹⁹⁸ Ibid., p. 91.
- ¹⁹⁹ Ibid., pp. 95–99.
- ²⁰⁰ Summers, *Official and Confidential...*, pp. 217–273.
- ²⁰¹ Pearson, *Diaries*, p. 459.
- ²⁰² Ibid. p. 472.
- ²⁰³ Ibid, p. 543.
- ²⁰⁴ Shesol, p. 147.
- ²⁰⁵ Lasky, *It Didn't Start ...*, pp. 135–137.
- ²⁰⁶ See <http://allthewaywithljb.com/lbj-and-the-bobby-baker-scandal/>
- ²⁰⁷ Phillips, Cabell, "The Senate Shocks a Senate Prober," *New York Times Magazine*, August 9, 1964, p. 20.
- ²⁰⁸ Ibid., p. 40.
- ²⁰⁹ Op Cit. <http://allthewaywithljb.com/lbj-and-the-bobby-baker-scandal>
- ²¹⁰ Dallek, *Flawed ...*, p. 415.
- ²¹¹ Caro, *The Passage ...*, pp. 346–348.
- ²¹² Schlesinger, *Robert Kennedy*, p. 162.
- ²¹³ Perlstein, p. 205.
- ²¹⁴ Caro, *Master of the Senate*, p. 739.
- ²¹⁵ Ibid.
- ²¹⁶ Sherrill, p. 40.
- ²¹⁷ Ibid., pp. 191–193.
- ²¹⁸ Guthman, p. 410 (Interview with John Bartlow Martin, May 14, 1964).
- ²¹⁹ Caro, *Master ...*, p. 160.
- ²²⁰ See <http://www.newrepublic.com/article/116404/lbjs-civil-rights-act-arm-twisting-was-myth>
- ²²¹ Ref. *Mastermind*, pp. 14–15 [2nd ed.].
- ²²² Muslin and Jobe, pp. 151–152.
- ²²³ Reedy, pp. x–xiv, 171–172.
- ²²⁴ Hershman, *Power ...*, pp. 17–20.

- ²²⁵ Schulman, *Lyndon Johnson* ..., p. 14.
- ²²⁶ Dallek, *Portrait* ..., p. 376.
- ²²⁷ Ibid., p. 377.
- ²²⁸ Schlesinger, *Journals* ... , pp 208, 227–228.
- ²²⁹ Transcript, George Ball Oral History Interview I, 7/8/71, by Paige E. Mulhollan, Internet Copy, LBJ Library, p. 6.
- ²³⁰ Schlesinger, *Journals* ..., pp. 227–228.
- ²³¹ Transcript, Arthur Krim Oral History Interview III, p. 26. 6/29/82, by Michael L. Gillette, Internet Copy, LBJ Library.
- ²³² White, p. 259.
- ²³³ Hershman, *Power* ..., p. 144.
- ²³⁴ Email correspondence with witness who wishes to remain anonymous.
- ²³⁵ FitzGerald, Frances, “The View From Out There;,” *Washington Post*, August 8, 2004.
- ²³⁶ Albertazzie, p. 247.
- ²³⁷ Muslin and Jobe, p. 207.
- ²³⁸ Albertazzie, p. 247.
- ²³⁹ Caro, *The Path* ..., pp. 175–180.
- ²⁴⁰ Ibid., p. 190.
- ²⁴¹ Ibid. pp. 192–196.
- ²⁴² Caro, *The Passage* ..., pp. 531–532.
- ²⁴³ See YouTube: “President Lyndon B. Johnson Talks About His Bunghole and Nutsack,” <http://veryserious.org/2010/02/09/president-lyndon-b-johnson-talks-about-his-bunghole-and-nutsack>
- ²⁴⁴ Estes, p. 29.
- ²⁴⁵ Updegrove, p. 226.
- ²⁴⁶ Katzenbach, p. 208.
- ²⁴⁷ Ibid.
- ²⁴⁸ Goodwin, Richard N., p. 259.
- ²⁴⁹ See National Security Archives: <http://www.gwu.edu/~nsarchiv/NSAEBB/NSAEBB118/index.htm>
- ²⁵⁰ Ibid.
- ²⁵¹ Ibid.
- ²⁵² Ibid.
- ²⁵³ See [Wikipedia.com](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Jo%C3%A3o_Goulart) (Joao Goulart): http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Jo%C3%A3o_Goulart
- ²⁵⁴ Sherrill, p. 40; Dallek, *Flawed* ..., p. 266.
- ²⁵⁵ Sherrill, p. 40.
- ²⁵⁶ See <http://www.wsws.org/en/articles/1999/07/indo1-j19.html>
- ²⁵⁷ Ibid.

- ²⁵⁸ See http://www.yale.edu/cgp/Walrus_CambodiaBombing_Oct06.pdf
- ²⁵⁹ Ibid.
- ²⁶⁰ Ibid.
- ²⁶¹ Caro, *Passage ...*, p. 324.
- ²⁶² Manchester, p. 134.
- ²⁶³ Ibid., p. 145.
- ²⁶⁴ Ibid., p. 234.
- ²⁶⁵ Bishop, p. 396.
- ²⁶⁶ Manchester, p. 270.
- ²⁶⁷ Van Gelder, pp. 82–83.
- ²⁶⁸ Laskey, *Robert F. Kennedy*, p. 373.
- ²⁶⁹ Ibid. (Ref. *New York Times*, James Reston, “The Death of Camelot,” December 18, 1966).
- ²⁷⁰ Van Gelder, pp. 82–83.
- ²⁷¹ Guthman and Shulman, p. 410 (Interview with John Barlow Martin, May 14, 1964).
- ²⁷² Schlesinger, *Robert Kennedy*, pp. 218–219.
- ²⁷³ Caro, *The Path*, p. 160.
- ²⁷⁴ Schulman, p. 147.
- ²⁷⁵ Dallek, *Flawed Giant*, pp. 391–396.
- ²⁷⁶ Herring, p. 2.
- ²⁷⁷ See Wikipedia.org: “List of Alamo Defenders.”
- ²⁷⁸ Kearns, p. 30.
- ²⁷⁹ Hershman, *Power ...*, pp. 216–217 (Ref. Booth Mooney, *LBJ: An Irreverent Chronicle*, New York: Thomas Y. Crowell Co., 1976, p. 221; and Hugh Sidey, *A Very Personal Presidency: Lyndon Johnson in the White House*, New York: Atheneum, 1968, p. 23).
- ²⁸⁰ PBS: *American Experience*: <http://www.pbs.org/wgbh/americanexperience/films/kennedys/player/> (at 1:44:30 of the video) Transcript: http://www.pbs.org/wgbh/amex/presidents/35_kennedy/filmmore/filmscript.html
- ²⁸¹ Warren Commission Hearings: 7 H 457.
- ²⁸² Nelson, *LBJ: The Mastermind ...*, pp. 375–379.
- ²⁸³ Busby, p. 140.
- ²⁸⁴ HSCA, Vol. 11, p. 526.
- ²⁸⁵ Dugger, p. 16.
- ²⁸⁶ Provence, pp. 164–465.
- ²⁸⁷ See the complete description of this story in *LBJ: The Mastermind of the JFK Assassination*, pp. 19–23.
- ²⁸⁸ Summers, *Official and Confidential*, p. 338.
- ²⁸⁹ Ibid.

- ²⁹⁰ Sullivan, p. 61.
- ²⁹¹ Wheeler, Keith, “Scandal Grows and Grows in Washington, *Life*, November 22, 1963, p. 40.
- ²⁹² Adams, p. 21.
- ²⁹³ Ibid., pp. 22–23.
- ²⁹⁴ Weiner, p. 196.
- ²⁹⁵ Guthman and Shulman, p. 415 (Interview with John Bartlow Martin, 5/14/64).
- ²⁹⁶ Goodwin, Richard N., p. 255.
- ²⁹⁷ Ibid., pp. 254–255.
- ²⁹⁸ Reedy, p. 152.
- ²⁹⁹ Schelsinger, *Journals*, p. 254.
- ³⁰⁰ Provence, p. 168.
- ³⁰¹ Ibid., p. 157.
- ³⁰² McClendon, Sarah, pp. 92–93.
- ³⁰³ *Time*, October 29, 1965.
- ³⁰⁴ Campbell, Joseph, and Bill Moyers, p. 2.
- ³⁰⁵ Ibid., p. 249.
- ³⁰⁶ Sherrill, p. 42.
- ³⁰⁷ Ibid., p. 39.
- ³⁰⁸ Lasky, *It Didn’t Start ...*, pp. 196–197.
- ³⁰⁹ Ibid., p. 198.
- ³¹⁰ Ibid.
- ³¹¹ Ibid. p. 177.
- ³¹² Ibid.
- ³¹³ See, for example <http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=dDTBnsqxZ3k>
- ³¹⁴ Dallek, *Flawed Giant*, p. 132.
- ³¹⁵ Goodwin, Richard, p. 305.
- ³¹⁶ Ibid.
- ³¹⁷ Ibid.
- ³¹⁸ Lasky, *It Didn’t Start*, p. 176.
- ³¹⁹ The video is available on YouTube “Classic Political Ad: Daisy Girl (1964)”.
- ³²⁰ White, pp. 322–323.
- ³²¹ LBJ Library, Bill Moyers folio (presidential papers).
- ³²² Adler, William M., “A Texan Looks at Lyndon,” *Texas Monthly*, Sept., 1997, p. 114.
- ³²³ Swartz, Mimi, *Texas Monthly*, November 1989, p. 213.

- ³²⁴ Ibid., p. 214.
- ³²⁵ Ibid., p. 215.
- ³²⁶ Beschloss, *Taking Charge*, pp. 30, 103.
- ³²⁷ Swartz, *Texas Monthly*, p. 215.
- ³²⁸ Goldman, pp. 268–269.
- ³²⁹ Watson, p. 54.
- ³³⁰ Ibid., p. 69.
- ³³¹ Ibid., pp. 34–38.
- ³³² Ibid., p. 43.
- ³³³ Ibid., p. 47.
- ³³⁴ Ibid., p. 48.
- ³³⁵ Valenti, p. 173.
- ³³⁶ Goldman, p. 267.
- ³³⁷ Valenti., p. 170.
- ³³⁸ Harwood, pp. 127–128.
- ³³⁹ Albertazzie, pp. 247–248.
- ³⁴⁰ Kessler, *Inside the White House*, pp. 30–31; *Inside the President’s Secret Service ...*, p. 18.
- ³⁴¹ Bryant, pp. 123–124.
- ³⁴² Kessler, *In the President’s Secret Service ...*, p. 16.
- ³⁴³ Albertazzie, pp. 207–209.
- ³⁴⁴ Valenti, p. 275.
- ³⁴⁵ Bruck, p. 231.
- ³⁴⁶ Valenti, p. 165.
- ³⁴⁷ Ibid., p. 169.
- ³⁴⁸ Ref. *Texas Monthly*, September 1987, p. 114.
- ³⁴⁹ Haley, pp. 146–156.
- ³⁵⁰ Pegues, pp. 72–77.
- ³⁵¹ Haley, pp. 150–153.
- ³⁵² Sardie video (@ 3:00).
- ³⁵³ Haley, p. 152.
- ³⁵⁴ Ibid.
- ³⁵⁵ Ibid., p. 155.
- ³⁵⁶ Ibid., p. 156.
- ³⁵⁷ Ibid.

- ³⁵⁸ Caro, *Master ...*, pp. 146–147.
- ³⁵⁹ Brown, pp. 222–223.
- ³⁶⁰ Haley, p. 156.
- ³⁶¹ Harwood, pp. 156–157.
- ³⁶² Kearns, pp. 11–14.
- ³⁶³ Ibid.
- ³⁶⁴ Kearns, p. 374.
- ³⁶⁵ Wills, Gary, *New York Review of Books*, June 24, 1976.
- ³⁶⁶ Henggeler, p. 12.
- ³⁶⁷ Ibid.
- ³⁶⁸ Ibid. p. 13.
- ³⁶⁹ Ibid. p. 15.
- ³⁷⁰ Caro, *Master ...*, p. 156.
- ³⁷¹ Quinn, Sally, “Doris Kearns and Richard Goodwin: A Tale of Hearts and Minds,” *Washington Post*, August 24, 1975.
- ³⁷² Ibid.
- ³⁷³ Ibid.
- ³⁷⁴ Ibid.
- ³⁷⁵ Lasky, *It Didn’t Start ...*, pp. 203–204.
- ³⁷⁶ Goodwin, Richard, p. 415.
- ³⁷⁷ Reedy, p. 37.
- ³⁷⁸ Updegrove, p. 23.
- ³⁷⁹ Transcript, Clifton C. Carter Oral History, Interview I, 10/1/68, by Dorothy L. Pierce, Electronic Copy, LBJ Library.
- ³⁸⁰ Transcript, George Ball Oral History Interview I, 7/8/71, by Paige E. Mulhollan, Internet Copy, LBJ Library, pp. 7–10.
- ³⁸¹ Twyman, p. 283.
- ³⁸² Caro, *The Path*, p. 376–377.
- ³⁸³ Goodwin, Richard N., p. 259.
- ³⁸⁴ Ibid., pp. 259–260.
- ³⁸⁵ Caro, *The Path*. p. 373.
- ³⁸⁶ Ibid.
- ³⁸⁷ Ibid., p. 374.
- ³⁸⁸ Ibid.
- ³⁸⁹ Caro, *The Path*, p. 377–378.
- ³⁹⁰ Ibid. p. 376.

- ³⁹¹ Ibid., pp. 283–375 (Regarding the list of nefarious activities, also see *LBJ: The Mastermind* ..., pp. xii, 29–37, 50, 183, 188–189, 207, 211–248, 599–609).
- ³⁹² Ibid., p. 375.
- ³⁹³ See *LBJ: The Mastermind* ..., p. 18, for a summary, or Caro, *The Path*, pp. 369–385, 459–462 for a more detailed review.
- ³⁹⁴ Goldman, pp. 38–39.
- ³⁹⁵ Caro, *The Path*, p. 581.
- ³⁹⁶ Ibid., pp. 581–582.
- ³⁹⁷ Ibid., p. 583.
- ³⁹⁸ Ibid., p. 584.
- ³⁹⁹ Caro, *The Path*, p. 584.
- ⁴⁰⁰ Ibid.
- ⁴⁰¹ Berke, Richard L. “Brokers in Wright Deal Run a Father-Son Empire,” *New York Times*, April 6, 1989.
- ⁴⁰² Caro, *The Path*, p. 61.
- ⁴⁰³ Transcript, Harry McPherson Oral History Interview III, 1/16/69, by T. H. Baker, Internet Copy, LBJ Library, pp. 24–25.
- ⁴⁰⁴ Foundation Stone website: <http://www.foundationstone.org/page1/page3/> (This article can be found at <http://holocaust-ww2.blogspot.com/2012/01/first-us-jewish-president-read-to.html>, for example, or <http://www.aish.com/jw/s/48942551.html>). This thesis includes the following: “A key resource for uncovering LBJ’s pro-Jewish activity is the unpublished 1989 doctoral thesis by University of Texas student Louis Gomolak, “Prologue: LBJ’s Foreign Affairs Background, 1908–1948.” Johnson’s activities were confirmed by other historians in interviews with his wife, family members and political associates.
- ⁴⁰⁵ Ibid.
- ⁴⁰⁶ Caro, *The Path*..., pp. 480–481.
- ⁴⁰⁷ Ibid., pp. 481–482.
- ⁴⁰⁸ Ibid.
- ⁴⁰⁹ The US Holocaust Museum website: <http://www.ushmm.org/outreach/en/article.php?ModuleId=10007698>
- ⁴¹⁰ Caro, *The Path*..., pp. 480–482.
- ⁴¹¹ Bruck, p. 217.
- ⁴¹² Transcript, Arthur Krim Oral History Interview I, 10/08/81, by Michael L. Gillette, Internet Copy, LBJ Library.
- ⁴¹³ Bruck, p. 217.
- ⁴¹⁴ See the DVD video: *The Last Mogul: The Life and Times of Lew Wasserman* (David Brown at about 22:20 minutes).
- ⁴¹⁵ Bruck, pp. 153–154.
- ⁴¹⁶ Ibid. p. xii.
- ⁴¹⁷ See the DVD video: *The Last Mogul: The Life and Times of Lew Wasserman* (David Brown at about 21:20 minutes).
- ⁴¹⁸ Bruck, p. 333.
- ⁴¹⁹ Ibid.

- ⁴²⁰ Bruck, pp. 349–351.
- ⁴²¹ Ibid., pp. 356–357.
- ⁴²² Ibid.
- ⁴²³ Ibid., p. 354.
- ⁴²⁴ Pearson, *Diaries*, p. 470.
- ⁴²⁵ Ibid.
- ⁴²⁶ See the DVD video: *The Last Mogul: The Life and Times of Lew Wasserman* (David Brown at about 17:15 minutes).
- ⁴²⁷ Halsell, Grace, “How LBJ’s Vietnam War Paralyzed His Mideast Policymakers,” *Washington Report on Middle East Affairs*, June 1993, p. 20.
- ⁴²⁸ Bruck, p. 235.
- ⁴²⁹ Op. cit. *The Last Mogul: The Life and Times of Lew Wasserman* (at about 56:20 to 56:40).
- ⁴³⁰ Op. cit. *The Last Mogul: The Life and Times of Lew Wasserman* (at about 41:20).
- ⁴³¹ Ibid. (at 41:45).
- ⁴³² Ibid (at 43:00 to 43:25).
- ⁴³³ Ibid (at 1:12:55 to 1:13).
- ⁴³⁴ Ibid (at 1:14:30 to 1:16:05).
- ⁴³⁵ Hounam, p. 134.
- ⁴³⁶ Gates, p. 52.
- ⁴³⁷ Hounam, p. 134 (Quoted from *Warriors for Jerusalem: The Six Days That Changed the Middle East*, by Donald Neff, Amana Books, 1988).
- ⁴³⁸ Hounam, p. 134.
- ⁴³⁹ The US Holocaust Museum website, op. cit.
- ⁴⁴⁰ Day, Peter, “Jewish Plot to Kill Bevin in London,” *The Times of London*, March 5, 2006.
- ⁴⁴¹ Halsell, op. cit.
- ⁴⁴² Black, p. 5.
- ⁴⁴³ Ibid.
- ⁴⁴⁴ Ibid., p. 6.
- ⁴⁴⁵ Ibid., pp. 13–15.
- ⁴⁴⁶ Ibid., p. 20.
- ⁴⁴⁷ Ibid., p. 21.
- ⁴⁴⁸ Ibid., p. xiii.
- ⁴⁴⁹ Chamish, Barry, “How Labor Zionists Sacrificed Europe’s Jews In WWII.” Ref. to Morrison, David, *Lies: The Rabin Assassination And Israel’s Secret Service*, p. 145 (See <http://rense.com/general49/hhee.htm>).
- ⁴⁵⁰ Dallek, *Flawed...*, pp. 544–545.
- ⁴⁵¹ Baker, Russ, p. 254.

- ⁴⁵² Schlesinger, *A Thousand Days*, p. 128.
- ⁴⁵³ Reeves, *President Kennedy*, p. 143.
- ⁴⁵⁴ Ibid.
- ⁴⁵⁵ Hersh, *The Samson Option*, pp. 27, 66, 93–95.
- ⁴⁵⁶ Ibid., pp. 78–79.
- ⁴⁵⁷ Ibid., pp. 110–111.
- ⁴⁵⁸ Gates, p. 69.
- ⁴⁵⁹ Hersh, *The Samson Option*, p. 132.
- ⁴⁶⁰ Hounam, p. 85.
- ⁴⁶¹ Hersh, *The Samson Option*, p. 179.
- ⁴⁶² Ibid., p. 192.
- ⁴⁶³ Ibid., pp. 188–191.
- ⁴⁶⁴ Halsell, op. cit.
- ⁴⁶⁵ Transcript, Arthur Krim Oral History Interview III, p. 26. 6/29/82, by Michael L. Gillette, Internet Copy, LBJ Library.
- ⁴⁶⁶ Kalman, p. 299.
- ⁴⁶⁷ Ibid.
- ⁴⁶⁸ Ibid.
- ⁴⁶⁹ Ibid., p. 300.
- ⁴⁷⁰ Halsell, op. cit.
- ⁴⁷¹ Goldberg, J. J., pp. 161–162.
- ⁴⁷² Ibid.
- ⁴⁷³ Transcript, Harry McPherson Oral History Interview III, 1/16/69, by T. H. Baker, Internet Copy, LBJ Library. pp. 24–30.
- ⁴⁷⁴ Goldberg, J. J., p. 207.
- ⁴⁷⁵ Hounam, p. 266 (Ref. *The Six-Day War: A Retrospective*, edited by Richard B. Parker, University Press of Florida, 1996).
- ⁴⁷⁶ Kalman, pp. 301–302.
- ⁴⁷⁷ Ibid.
- ⁴⁷⁸ <http://www.thejerusalemfund.org/ht/a/GetDocumentAction/i/2918>
- ⁴⁷⁹ Hounam, p. 135.
- ⁴⁸⁰ Kalman, p. 301.
- ⁴⁸¹ See “40 Years After the 1967 War: The Impact of a Prolonged Occupation,” p. 10. <http://www.thejerusalemfund.org/ht/a/GetDocumentAction/i/2918>
- ⁴⁸² Gates, p. 55.
- ⁴⁸³ Kalman, pp. 301–302; Gates, p. 57.

- ⁴⁸⁴ Janney, p. 253.
- ⁴⁸⁵ Palamara, Ch. 1.
- ⁴⁸⁶ Lincoln, pp. 192–193.
- ⁴⁸⁷ Ibid., pp. 194–195.
- ⁴⁸⁸ Ibid., p. 196.
- ⁴⁸⁹ Ibid., pp. 197–198.
- ⁴⁹⁰ Reedy, p. 147.
- ⁴⁹¹ Lincoln, pp. 196–197.
- ⁴⁹² *Dallas Morning News*, November 23, 1963. Allen Duckworth, Political Editor. Section 4–5.
- ⁴⁹³ See PBS, *American Experience*, <http://www.pbs.org/wgbh/american-experience/films/kennedys/player/>
- ⁴⁹⁴ Shesol, p. 138.
- ⁴⁹⁵ Caro, *The Passage ...*, pp. 273–274.
- ⁴⁹⁶ See http://www.opednews.com/articles/opedne_doug_tho_060330_is_deception_the_bes.htm
- ⁴⁹⁷ Ibid.
- ⁴⁹⁸ See <http://www.dcdave.com/article4/021110.html>
- ⁴⁹⁹ *Time*, July 23, 1979, p. 94; Thomas Griffith, “Muckraking Is Hard Work.”
- ⁵⁰⁰ Pearson, *Dairies*, p. 9.
- ⁵⁰¹ See Wikipedia: Drew Pearson, http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Drew_Pearson_%28journalist%29
- ⁵⁰² Pearson, *Dairies*, p. 9.
- ⁵⁰³ Ibid., p. 38.
- ⁵⁰⁴ Ibid., pp. 38–39.
- ⁵⁰⁵ Ibid., p. 51.
- ⁵⁰⁶ Ibid., p. 52.
- ⁵⁰⁷ Ibid., p. 53.
- ⁵⁰⁸ Ibid., p. 50.
- ⁵⁰⁹ Akashah, p. 2.
- ⁵¹⁰ Wikipedia: James Forrestal, http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/James_Forrestal
- ⁵¹¹ Ibid.
- ⁵¹² Akashah, p. 4.
- ⁵¹³ Ibid.
- ⁵¹⁴ Brinkley and Hoopes, pp. 402–404.
- ⁵¹⁵ Ibid.
- ⁵¹⁶ Ibid., pp. 46–48.
- ⁵¹⁷ Ibid., pp. 464–465.

⁵¹⁸ DCDave webpage, op. cit.

⁵¹⁹ Ibid.

⁵²⁰ Simpson, pp. 29–30.

⁵²¹ Ibid.

⁵²² Brinkley and Hoopes, p. 431.

⁵²³ Ibid., p. 462 (according to Forrestal's friend Marx Leva, in an interview with Hoopes, January 15, 1989).

⁵²⁴ Guthman, pp. 415, 417.

⁵²⁵ Goodwin, Richard, p. 415.

⁵²⁶ See Wikipedia: http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/James_Forrestal

⁵²⁷ See H. P. Albarelli Jr., *A Terrible Mistake: The Murder of Frank Olsen and the CIA's Secret Cold War Experiments*, Waltermil, OR: TrineDay, 2009. Also, to summarize ongoing reportage of these events:.

1) Refer to an AP story dated November 29, 2012, that indicated Olsen's family was previously reassured, in 1975, that the government had told them everything and paid them \$750,000 to assuage their pain and to dissuade them from filing a lawsuit. Regardless of this "understanding," his sons sued the CIA, claiming that they had still not been told the complete truth about the details of his death.

[http://hosted.ap.org/dynamic/stories/U/US_SCIENTISTS_DEATH_LAWSUIT?](http://hosted.ap.org/dynamic/stories/U/US_SCIENTISTS_DEATH_LAWSUIT?SITE=AP&SECTION=HOME&TEMPLATE=DEFAULT&CTIME=2012-11-28-16-47-42)

[SITE=AP&SECTION=HOME&TEMPLATE=DEFAULT&CTIME=2012-11-28-16-47-42.](http://hosted.ap.org/dynamic/stories/U/US_SCIENTISTS_DEATH_LAWSUIT?SITE=AP&SECTION=HOME&TEMPLATE=DEFAULT&CTIME=2012-11-28-16-47-42)

2) Refer to the *Los Angeles Times* obituary dated March 8, 2013, of Gerald D. Klee, a retired psychiatrist and LSD expert who participated in experiments with the hallucinogenic drug LSD, among others, which is summarized here and cited later. "In 1975, Klee made headlines when he confirmed reports that the University of Maryland School of Medicine's Psychiatric Institute had been involved in secret research between 1956 and 1959, when hundreds of soldiers were given LSD, or lysergic acid diethylamide... The LSD was slipped into cocktails at a party in the soldiers' honor. While this approach garnered criticism, Klee said the Army and civilian researchers acted responsibly. "I was there and I didn't like it, but thought I might be of help to the victims," Klee told the *Washington Post* in the 1975 interview. The civilian team quickly learned about those who had experienced 'bad trips.' He said he did not know of any lasting ill effects on the soldiers but added that university researchers followed the cases only during their month stay at Edgewood. 'What the Army did after that, I don't know. I've given many hours thought to that. I wish I did know,' he said in the interview." <http://www.latimes.com/news/obituaries/la-me-gerald-klee-20130309%2c0%2c3203268.story>.

3) Also see the website Frank Olson's son Eric maintains, <http://www.frankolsonproject.org>." See also <http://www.dcdave.com/article5/090527.htm>.

⁵²⁸ See <http://richardcharnin.wordpress.com>

⁵²⁹ See "Penn Jones" thread (Post #3) at: <http://educationforum.ipbhost.com/index.php?s=225b8ca053eab2591739155ff6dabf36&showtopic=19811>

⁵³⁰ Ibid.

⁵³¹ See <http://www.maebrussell.com/Disappearing%20Witnesses/Disappearing%20Witnesses.html>

⁵³² Ibid.

⁵³³ Ibid.

⁵³⁴ Hersh, Seymour, *The Dark Side* ..., pp. 409–410.

⁵³⁵ Bridgeport [FL] Telegram (December 3, 1963).

⁵³⁶ Hersh, Seymour, *The Dark Side* ..., p. 410.

⁵³⁷ Winter-Berger, pp. 64–69; Nelson, *LBJ: The Mastermind* ... (2nd Ed.), pp. 571–572.

⁵³⁸ Hersh, Seymour, *The Dark Side* ..., p. 409.

- ⁵³⁹ Ibid., pp. 410–411.
- ⁵⁴⁰ Ibid.
- ⁵⁴¹ Ibid.
- ⁵⁴² See John Simkin’s Spartacus Educational Website: <http://www.spartacus.schoolnet.co.uk/JFKsmathers.htm> (f/n #10 Adele Edisen, JFK Assassination Forum).
- ⁵⁴³ Ibid.
- ⁵⁴⁴ Ibid.
- ⁵⁴⁵ Hersh, Seymour, *The Dark Side ...*, p. 411.
- ⁵⁴⁶ Burleigh, p. 225.
- ⁵⁴⁷ Janney, Ch. 1 (@ 1% Kindle).
- ⁵⁴⁸ Ibid.
- ⁵⁴⁹ JFK Lancer symposium, November 2007.
- ⁵⁵⁰ Janney, (Kindle ed. @ loc. 1487, 1643).
- ⁵⁵¹ See Wikipedia: Mary Pincho Meyer, http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Mary_Pincho_Meyer
- ⁵⁵² See [@blog/”documentary,”](http://KILLJFK.com) http://www.dailymotion.com/video/xodiw6_jfk-autopsie-d-un-complot-john-fitzgerald-kennedy_sport
- ⁵⁵³ Douglass, pp. 309–310.
- ⁵⁵⁴ Ref. The Conspiracy Museum video referenced in previous paragraph.
- ⁵⁵⁵ LBJ Library, Cliff Carter folio (vice presidential papers).
- ⁵⁵⁶ Ibid.
- ⁵⁵⁷ Shesol, p. 188.
- ⁵⁵⁸ Beschloss, *Taking Charge*, p. 76.
- ⁵⁵⁹ See John Simkin’s Spartacus Educational Website: <http://www.spartacus.schoolnet.co.uk/JFKcarter.htm>
- ⁵⁶⁰ Transcript, Arthur Krim Oral History Interview III, pp. 4–5. (6/29/82, by Michael L. Gillette, Internet Copy, LBJ Library).
- ⁵⁶¹ See The Education Forum, “Estes and JFK,” <http://educationforum.ipbhost.com/index.php?showtopic=2380>
- ⁵⁶² Marrs, p. 356.
- ⁵⁶³ Estes and Reymond, p. 367.
- ⁵⁶⁴ Untitled video op. cit. (William Reymond and Tom Bowden with Billie Sol Estes).
- ⁵⁶⁵ Reymond and Estes, pp. 363–367.
- ⁵⁶⁶ Ibid., pp. 16–17.
- ⁵⁶⁷ Estes, p. 157.
- ⁵⁶⁸ Ibid., p. 164.
- ⁵⁶⁹ See “The Tonight Show starring Johnny Carson: Full Cast and Crew,” <http://www.imdb.com/title/tt0055708/fullcredits/>

- ⁵⁷⁰ Op. Cit., p. 157.
- ⁵⁷¹ Ibid., pp. 154–155.
- ⁵⁷² See *The Men Who Killed Kennedy*, Episode 7 (beginning at about 27:00), <http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=VQj2mVoSYXM>
- ⁵⁷³ Estes, p. 155.
- ⁵⁷⁴ *The Men Who Killed Kennedy*, Episode 7, op. cit. op. cit.,
- ⁵⁷⁵ Estes, p. 156.
- ⁵⁷⁶ Ibid.
- ⁵⁷⁷ See David S. Lifton Address at Bismarck State College, November 7, 2013, <http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=wTMTK9W1fyc>
- ⁵⁷⁸ See Future of Freedom Foundation, <http://fff.org/explore-freedom/article/the-afl-tapes-and-subsequent-events-at-andrews-afb-on-november-22-1963-what-was-supposed-to-happen-vs-what-did-happen/>
- ⁵⁷⁹ See *The Men Who Killed Kennedy*, Episode 7, op. cit. (@ 32:00).
- ⁵⁸⁰ Ibid.
- ⁵⁸¹ Ibid. (beginning about 34:00).
- ⁵⁸² Ibid.
- ⁵⁸³ Estes, p. 157.
- ⁵⁸⁴ Pegues, p. 121.
- ⁵⁸⁵ See “FAKE the Forged Photograph That Framed Lee Harvey Oswald,” <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=Ow8Bf6-VhXw> and <http://educationforum.ipbhost.com/index.php?showtopic=20789&hl=%2Bjack+%2Bwhite#entry281801>
- ⁵⁸⁶ Wood III, Ira D; James Fetzer (Ed.), *Murder in Dealey Plaza, Part I: 22 November, 1963: A Chronology*, p. 41.
- ⁵⁸⁷ Smith, Matthew, p. 117.
- ⁵⁸⁸ See Spartacus Educational, <http://www.spartacus.schoolnet.co.uk/JFKplumlee.htm> and also JFK Murder Solved: <http://www.jfkmurdersolved.com/TOSHTRANS1.htm>
- ⁵⁸⁹ See http://www.nola.com/crime/index.ssf/2014/07/in_the_death_of_doctor_mary_sh.html
- ⁵⁹⁰ Ibid.
- ⁵⁹¹ See <http://www.dallasobserver.com/1999-12-23/news/good-time-charlie/>
- ⁵⁹² Ibid., p. 3.
- ⁵⁹³ See YouTube video *The Men Who Killed Kennedy*, Part 7 (starting at about 38:00), <http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=wEegh6n9uVs>
- ⁵⁹⁴ Reymond and Estes, p. 329.
- ⁵⁹⁵ Ibid. (at about 42:00).
- ⁵⁹⁶ Turner, *Rearview Mirror*, pp. 150–151.
- ⁵⁹⁷ Belzer and Wayne, p. 11.
- ⁵⁹⁸ Baker, Russ, p. 109.
- ⁵⁹⁹ Baker, Russ, p. 84.

- ⁶⁰⁰ Ibid., pp. 105–107.
- ⁶⁰¹ Ibid.
- ⁶⁰² O'Reilly, Bill, *Killing Kennedy*, p. 300.
- ⁶⁰³ See Spartacus Educational, <http://www.spartacus.schoolnet.co.uk/JFKdemohrenschiltdt.htm>; Also see: <http://jfkfacts.org/assassination/news/reporters-tape-exposes-bill-oreillys-jfk-fib/#more-2557>.
- ⁶⁰⁴ See, <http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=37dtEpyvUJU> (“G. DeMohrenschiltdt: The Security Alarm”).
- ⁶⁰⁵ Pepper, William F. *Orders to Kill* (New York: Warner Books, 1998).
- ⁶⁰⁶ Pepper, William F. *An Act of State: The Execution of Martin Luther King* (Verso, 2008).
- ⁶⁰⁷ McKnight, *The Last Crusade ...*, pp. 7–8.
- ⁶⁰⁸ Ibid., p. 8.
- ⁶⁰⁹ Ibid., p. 141.
- ⁶¹⁰ Sides, pp. 22–23.
- ⁶¹¹ Shesol, p. 175.
- ⁶¹² Ibid.
- ⁶¹³ Kessler, *In the President's Secret Service ...*, p. 21.
- ⁶¹⁴ Schlesinger, *Journals*, p. 277.
- ⁶¹⁵ Ibid., p. 284.
- ⁶¹⁶ Garrison, p. 273.
- ⁶¹⁷ Garrison, pp. 188–189.
- ⁶¹⁸ Ibid. pp. 187–191.
- ⁶¹⁹ Garrison, pp. 192–198.
- ⁶²⁰ Ibid., p. 211.
- ⁶²¹ Ibid., pp. 195–199.
- ⁶²² Nelson, *LBJ: The Mastermind*, p. 158.
- ⁶²³ Nelson, *LBJ: The Mastermind*, pp. 586–589.
- ⁶²⁴ Ibid., p. 80.
- ⁶²⁵ Lane, *Last Word ...*, p. 42.
- ⁶²⁶ Ibid.
- ⁶²⁷ Ayers, pp. 85–86.
- ⁶²⁸ Shesol, pp. 126–129.
- ⁶²⁹ Boston Globe Website, http://articles.boston.com/2012-08-05/nation/33033577_1_max-kennedy-documents-papers
- ⁶³⁰ Ibid.
- ⁶³¹ See http://www.cbsnews.com/2100-500202_162-20104707.html
- ⁶³² See <http://m.usatoday.com/article/news/1828405?preferredArticleViewMode=single>

- ⁶³³ Schelsinger, *Journals*, p. 254.
- ⁶³⁴ Talbot, pp. 356–358.
- ⁶³⁵ Ibid., p. 358.
- ⁶³⁶ Ibid., p. 359.
- ⁶³⁷ Author's telephone and email correspondence with Paul Schrade.
- ⁶³⁸ Goodwin, Richard, pp. 492–493.
- ⁶³⁹ Ibid., pp. 488–490.
- ⁶⁴⁰ Califano, p. 265.
- ⁶⁴¹ Ibid., p. 268.
- ⁶⁴² Hoopes, *The Limits of Intervention*, pp. 205–207.
- ⁶⁴³ Caro, *The Passage ...*, p. xiii.
- ⁶⁴⁴ O'Sullivan, p. 159.
- ⁶⁴⁵ Ibid., p. 161.
- ⁶⁴⁶ See <http://www.theatlantic.com/past/docs/issues/98apr/lbj.htm>
- ⁶⁴⁷ Turner-Christian (1978 ed.), p. 142.
- ⁶⁴⁸ Ibid.
- ⁶⁴⁹ Turner-Christian, (2006 ed.), p. xv.
- ⁶⁵⁰ Ibid. p. 74.
- ⁶⁵¹ Ibid.
- ⁶⁵² Turner-Christian (1978 ed.), p. 54.
- ⁶⁵³ Palamara, p. 3.
- ⁶⁵⁴ Klaber and Melanson, p. 9.
- ⁶⁵⁵ O'Sullivan, p. 13.
- ⁶⁵⁶ Ibid., p. 15.
- ⁶⁵⁷ Turner-Christian (2006 ed.), p. xviii.
- ⁶⁵⁸ O'Sullivan, p. 138.
- ⁶⁵⁹ Klaber and Melanson, p. 7.
- ⁶⁶⁰ Ibid., p. 106.
- ⁶⁶¹ Ibid.
- ⁶⁶² Klaber and Melanson, p. 280.
- ⁶⁶³ Ibid., pp. 163–165.
- ⁶⁶⁴ Ibid., p. 164.
- ⁶⁶⁵ O'Sullivan, p. 280.
- ⁶⁶⁶ Ibid.

- ⁶⁶⁷ Ibid., p. 351.
- ⁶⁶⁸ Ibid., p. 350.
- ⁶⁶⁹ Klaber and Melanson, p. 91.
- ⁶⁷⁰ Ibid.
- ⁶⁷¹ Ibid., p. 93.
- ⁶⁷² Ibid., p. 108.
- ⁶⁷³ Ibid., pp. 142–143.
- ⁶⁷⁴ Ibid.
- ⁶⁷⁵ Klaber and Melanson, p. 237.
- ⁶⁷⁶ Ibid., p. 240.
- ⁶⁷⁷ Ibid.
- ⁶⁷⁸ Turner-Christian, pp. 200–201.
- ⁶⁷⁹ Klaber and Melanson, p. 280.
- ⁶⁸⁰ O’Sullivan, p. 299.
- ⁶⁸¹ Ibid., p. 300.
- ⁶⁸² Ibid., Klaber and Melanson, p. 282.
- ⁶⁸³ Klaber and Melanson, pp. 281–282.
- ⁶⁸⁴ Turner-Christian, p. 18.
- ⁶⁸⁵ Klaber and Melanson, p. 141.
- ⁶⁸⁶ Ibid., p. 142.
- ⁶⁸⁷ Ibid.
- ⁶⁸⁸ Turner-Christian (1978 ed.), p. 52.
- ⁶⁸⁹ Ibid., p. 53.
- ⁶⁹⁰ Ibid., pp. 118–119.
- ⁶⁹¹ Ibid., pp. 63–64.
- ⁶⁹² Ibid., p. 136.
- ⁶⁹³ Turner-Christian (2006 ed.), pp. 104–105.
- ⁶⁹⁴ Ibid., pp. 161–162.
- ⁶⁹⁵ *New York Times*. “The Sirhan Verdict,” April 18, 1969, p. 42.
- ⁶⁹⁶ Turner-Christian (2006 ed.), p. 215.
- ⁶⁹⁷ “The CIA in the Assassination of Robert Kennedy,” Part 1 <http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=PkkUJp2pi3Q>; “The CIA in the Assassination of Robert Kennedy,” Part 2, http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=QMOeE4qn_V4
- ⁶⁹⁸ Talbot, p. 399.
- ⁶⁹⁹ Talbot, p. 400.

⁷⁰⁰ Ibid., pp. 397–398.

⁷⁰¹ See “RFK Assassination Acoustic Evidence on CBS,” <http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=iwvO0u8MseA&feature=endscreen&NR=1>; or Epilogue To *RFK Must Die*: “Pruszyński Recording Reveals Second Gun,” <http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=sF4XF32yAS4>

⁷⁰² See <http://www.rfkmustdie.com/>

⁷⁰³ Califano, pp. 299–300.

⁷⁰⁴ Caro, *The Passage* ..., p. 587.

⁷⁰⁵ Clifford, p. 545.

⁷⁰⁶ Caro, *The Passage* ..., p. 690 (e/n ref. to Chapter 25–Telephone call to Clifford).

⁷⁰⁷ Clifford, p. 546.

⁷⁰⁸ Califano, p. 299.

⁷⁰⁹ O’Sullivan, p. 424.

⁷¹⁰ Heymann, p. 505.

⁷¹¹ Caro, *Passage* ..., pp 139–140.

⁷¹² Halberstam, *The Fifties*, pp. 405–408.

⁷¹³ Ibid., p. 405.

⁷¹⁴ Ibid., p. 407.

⁷¹⁵ Ibid.

⁷¹⁶ Goodwin, pp. 380–381.

⁷¹⁷ Ibid.

⁷¹⁸ Hoopes, p. 4.

⁷¹⁹ Ibid.

⁷²⁰ Reeves, R., p. 22.

⁷²¹ Hoopes, p. 5.

⁷²² Dickerson, Nancy, p. 72.

⁷²³ Hoopes, p. 5.

⁷²⁴ Dickerson, Nancy, p. 140.

⁷²⁵ Ibid., p. 141.

⁷²⁶ Hoopes, p. 59.

⁷²⁷ Ibid., pp. 60–61.

⁷²⁸ Ibid., p. 61.

⁷²⁹ Hoopes, p. 6.

⁷³⁰ Newman, p. 443.

⁷³¹ Wheeler, Keith, “Scandal Grows and Grows in Washington,” *Life*, November 22, 1963, p. 41.

⁷³² Rusk, p. 467.

- ⁷³³ Schlesinger, *The Imperial Presidency* ..., p. 185.
- ⁷³⁴ Ibid., p. 186.
- ⁷³⁵ Goodwin, Richard, p. 461.
- ⁷³⁶ Ibid., p. 410.
- ⁷³⁷ Ibid., p. 386.
- ⁷³⁸ Clifford, pp. 425–426.
- ⁷³⁹ Newman, op. cit.
- ⁷⁴⁰ Goodwin, Richard N., p. 259.
- ⁷⁴¹ Geyelin, p. 20.
- ⁷⁴² Nagourney, Adam, *New York Times* and the *Boston Globe*: “LBJ’s Admirers Work to Rescue His Legacy from Shadow of War,” February 16, 2014.
- ⁷⁴³ See Doug Horne’s six-part essay, “JFK’s War Against the National Security Establishment: Why Kennedy Was Assassinated” at the Future of Freedom Foundation website for a thorough yet succinct review of this issue: <http://fff.org/explore-freedom/article/jfks-war-against-the-national-security-establishment/>
- ⁷⁴⁴ Author’s recorded interview with Mrs. Amos, April 23, 2014 (v.5 of 8). Her first name and residence location is withheld to protect her privacy.
- ⁷⁴⁵ Douglass, p. xxx.
- ⁷⁴⁶ Prouty, L. Fletcher, *LBJ, JFK, & The American Coup d’état of November 22, 1963*.
- ⁷⁴⁷ O’Donnell, p. 297.
- ⁷⁴⁸ Prouty, *JFK: The CIA, Vietnam, and ...*, p. xix.
- ⁷⁴⁹ Newman, p. 441.
- ⁷⁵⁰ Newman, p. 442 (Ref. McGeorge Bundy memo to Johnson, November 23, 1963, LBJ Library, NSF, Country File, Vietnam, Box 1).
- ⁷⁵¹ Newman, pp. 442–443.
- ⁷⁵² Ibid., pp. 443–449.
- ⁷⁵³ Ref. Karnow, p. 326.
- ⁷⁵⁴ Summers, *Official and Confidential*, p. 342.
- ⁷⁵⁵ Beschloss, *Taking Charge*, pp. 407–411.
- ⁷⁵⁶ Kessler, *Inside the CIA* ..., p. 82.
- ⁷⁵⁷ Ibid., p. 315.
- ⁷⁵⁸ Ibid.
- ⁷⁵⁹ Karnow, p. 326.
- ⁷⁶⁰ Corson, p. 62.
- ⁷⁶¹ Lasky, *It Didn’t Start* ..., p. 182.
- ⁷⁶² Corson, pp. 63–65.
- ⁷⁶³ Ibid., p. 62.

- ⁷⁶⁴ Dallek, *Flawed Giant*, p. 150.
- ⁷⁶⁵ Ibid.
- ⁷⁶⁶ Geyelin, p. 113.
- ⁷⁶⁷ Dunn, p. 71.
- ⁷⁶⁸ Ibid.
- ⁷⁶⁹ Lasky, *It Didn't Start ...*, p. 183.
- ⁷⁷⁰ Geyelin, p. 192.
- ⁷⁷¹ Ibid.
- ⁷⁷² Ibid., pp. 192–193.
- ⁷⁷³ Gibbons, p. 41 (Ref. Tristram Coffin, *Senator Fulbright: Portrait of a Public Philosopher*. New York: Dutton, 1966).
- ⁷⁷⁴ Ibid., p. 42.
- ⁷⁷⁵ Hershberg, pp. 62–65.
- ⁷⁷⁶ Shane, Scott, “Vietnam Study, Casting Doubts, Remains Secret,” *New York Times*, October 31, 2005.
- ⁷⁷⁷ Ibid.
- ⁷⁷⁸ Corson, pp. 62–63.
- ⁷⁷⁹ Muslin and Jobe, p. 154.
- ⁷⁸⁰ Ibid.
- ⁷⁸¹ Beschloss, *Reaching*, pp. 368–370.
- ⁷⁸² Ibid., p. 408.
- ⁷⁸³ Herring, p. 4.
- ⁷⁸⁴ Beschloss, *Reaching*, pp. 409–411.
- ⁷⁸⁵ Herring, p. 6.
- ⁷⁸⁶ Ibid., p. 2.
- ⁷⁸⁷ Ibid.
- ⁷⁸⁸ Ibid.
- ⁷⁸⁹ Ibid. (Ref. Bundy to Johnson memo, November 5, 1965, Lyndon Baines Johnson Papers, Lyndon Baines Johnson Library, National Security File, Bundy Memoranda, Box 5).
- ⁷⁹⁰ Cooper, pp. 3–5.
- ⁷⁹¹ Ibid.
- ⁷⁹² Goodwin, p. 461.
- ⁷⁹³ Ibid., p. 393.
- ⁷⁹⁴ Ibid., p. 394.
- ⁷⁹⁵ Ibid., p. 395 (quoting columnist Hugh Sidey).
- ⁷⁹⁶ Ibid., pp. 395–396.

- ⁷⁹⁷ Ibid., pp. 398–412.
- ⁷⁹⁸ Ibid., p. 416.
- ⁷⁹⁹ Ibid., p. 403.
- ⁸⁰⁰ Schlesinger, *Journals*, p. 306.
- ⁸⁰¹ Hershman, *Power ...*, p. 188 (Ref. Beschluss, Reaching ..., pp.368–369).
- ⁸⁰² Herring, pp. 6–7.
- ⁸⁰³ Ibid., pp. 6–7.
- ⁸⁰⁴ Ibid.
- ⁸⁰⁵ Reedy, p. 165.
- ⁸⁰⁶ McMaster, pp. 323–334.
- ⁸⁰⁷ Dallek, *Flawed Giant*, p. 486.
- ⁸⁰⁸ McMaster (e.g., pp. 250, 267, 268, 272).
- ⁸⁰⁹ Hoopes, pp. 202–203 (citation to columnist Max Lerner).
- ⁸¹⁰ McMaster, p. 244.
- ⁸¹¹ Hersh, *Cover-up*, p. 17.
- ⁸¹² Turse, p. 117.
- ⁸¹³ Ibid., p. 232.
- ⁸¹⁴ Ibid., p. 268.
- ⁸¹⁵ Heikal, pp. 306–307.
- ⁸¹⁶ Hoopes, p. 107.
- ⁸¹⁷ Ibid., pp. 204–205; Brinkley, *Acheson*, p. 256.
- ⁸¹⁸ Ibid.
- ⁸¹⁹ Brinkley, *Acheson*, pp. 256–257.
- ⁸²⁰ Ibid.
- ⁸²¹ Hoopes, pp. 204–205.
- ⁸²² Ibid., p. 203.
- ⁸²³ McMaster, pp. 333–334.
- ⁸²⁴ Ibid. (e.g., pp. 250, 267, 268, 272).
- ⁸²⁵ Herring, p. 8.
- ⁸²⁶ Transcript, George Ball Oral History Interview I, 7/8/71, by Paige E. Mulhollan, Internet Copy, LBJ Library, p. 10.
- ⁸²⁷ Hoopes, p. 16.
- ⁸²⁸ Ibid., p. 93.
- ⁸²⁹ Ibid., p. 94, 97.
- ⁸³⁰ Corson, p. 125.

- ⁸³¹ Hoopes, p. 99.
- ⁸³² Corson, p. 98.
- ⁸³³ Reedy, p. 3.
- ⁸³⁴ Harwood, pp. 127–128.
- ⁸³⁵ Goldman, p. 102.
- ⁸³⁶ See *The Atlantic Monthly*, “The Presidency: Three New Revelations About LBJ,” April 1998, <http://www.theatlantic.com/past/docs/issues/98apr/lbj.htm>
- ⁸³⁷ Harwood, p. 128.
- ⁸³⁸ Clifford, p. 456 (Ref. Bob Brewin and Sydney Shaw, *Vietnam on Trial: Westmoreland vs. CBS*. New York: Athenaeum, 1987, pp. 102–103).
- ⁸³⁹ Shesol, p. 389.
- ⁸⁴⁰ LBJ Library, Letter from Tom Johnson to President Johnson dated November 29, 1967. Bill Moyers folio (presidential papers).
- ⁸⁴¹ Hoopes, p. 91.
- ⁸⁴² *Ibid.*, p. 85.
- ⁸⁴³ Transcript from film *Fog of War*, http://www.erroldmorris.com/film/fow_transcript.html
- ⁸⁴⁴ Twyman, p. 511.
- ⁸⁴⁵ *Ibid.*
- ⁸⁴⁶ Talbot, pp. 290–291.
- ⁸⁴⁷ Twyman, p. 510.
- ⁸⁴⁸ Talbot, p. 436 (f/n ref. p. 274).
- ⁸⁴⁹ Ref. Harold Weisberg’s *Whitewash* (1965), Mark Lane’s *Rush to Judgment* (1966), Sylvia Meagher’s *Accessories After the Fact* (1967).
- ⁸⁵⁰ McKnight, p. 101.
- ⁸⁵¹ Califano, p. 264.
- ⁸⁵² *Ibid.*
- ⁸⁵³ Tourney, pp. 64–65.
- ⁸⁵⁴ Hounam, p. 75.
- ⁸⁵⁵ See Darwish, Adel, “Analysis: Middle East Water Wars,” BBC News, May 30, 2003, http://news.bbc.co.uk/2/hi/middle_east/2949768.stm
- ⁸⁵⁶ See YouTube: “Documentary on USS Liberty: *Dead in the Water*,” <http://www.youtube.com/watch?feature=endscreen&NR=1&v=va0sHuZyJwU>
- ⁸⁵⁷ Shlaim, Avi. *The Iron Wall: Israel and the Arab World*, pp. 236–237, New York: W. W. Norton & Company, January 2001. Also found in Wikipedia: http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Moshe_dayan#cite_note-66
- ⁸⁵⁸ Hounam, p. 77–81.
- ⁸⁵⁹ *Ibid.*, p. 83.
- ⁸⁶⁰ “United States Cryptologic History,” op. cit., p. 9.

- ⁸⁶¹ Churchill and Churchill, *The Six Day War*, p. 38.
- ⁸⁶² Kalman, p. 300.
- ⁸⁶³ “United States Cryptologic History,” op. cit., pp. 11–12.
- ⁸⁶⁴ BBC Documentary, *Dead in the Water*, <http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=va0sHuZyJwU> (@ 3:30).
- ⁸⁶⁵ Ball, pp. 57–58.
- ⁸⁶⁶ Tourney, pp. 19–22; Ennes, p. 36.
- ⁸⁶⁷ Bamford, p. 187.
- ⁸⁶⁸ Ibid., p. 190.
- ⁸⁶⁹ “United States Cryptologic History,” op. cit., p. 13.
- ⁸⁷⁰ Bamford, p. 188.
- ⁸⁷¹ Ibid., p. 188.
- ⁸⁷² Hounam, p. 43.
- ⁸⁷³ Ennes, pp. 38–39.
- ⁸⁷⁴ Hounam, p. 26.
- ⁸⁷⁵ Hounam, p. 29.
- ⁸⁷⁶ Tourney, p. 56–57, 60–61.
- ⁸⁷⁷ Hounam, pp. 32–33.
- ⁸⁷⁸ Ibid., p. 112.
- ⁸⁷⁹ Ibid., p. 255.
- ⁸⁸⁰ Hounam, pp. 28, 38.
- ⁸⁸¹ Ibid., p. 29.
- ⁸⁸² Ibid.
- ⁸⁸³ Hounam, p. 90.
- ⁸⁸⁴ Ibid.
- ⁸⁸⁵ Hounam, p. 181.
- ⁸⁸⁶ Ibid., p. 182–183. Also See YouTube: “Documentary on the USS Liberty: *Dead in the Water*,” (@ 25.30), <http://www.youtube.com/watch?feature=endscreen&NR=1&v=va0sHuZyJwU>
- ⁸⁸⁷ See <http://uss-liberty.com>, May 30, 2012.
- ⁸⁸⁸ Ibid.
- ⁸⁸⁹ Clifford, p. 445.
- ⁸⁹⁰ Ibid.
- ⁸⁹¹ Hounam, p. 8.
- ⁸⁹² Ibid., p. 11.
- ⁸⁹³ Hounam, pp. 91–92.

- ⁸⁹⁴ Ibid., p. 92.
- ⁸⁹⁵ http://www.ifamericansknew.org/us_ints/ul-ameu.html
- ⁸⁹⁶ Bamford, p. 226. Also see YouTube: Documentary on the *USS Liberty: Dead in the Water*,” op. cit. (@ 28:20).
- ⁸⁹⁷ http://www.ifamericansknew.org/us_ints/ul-ameu.html
- ⁸⁹⁸ See http://www.ifamericansknew.org/us_ints/ul-ameu.html; also Margolis, Eric, ‘*The USS Liberty: America’s Most Shameful Secret*’; and <http://www.lewrockwell.com/orig/margolis12.html>
- ⁸⁹⁹ Hounam, p. 270.
- ⁹⁰⁰ <http://www.gtr5.com>; another is www.uss-liberty.com
- ⁹⁰¹ See <http://www.wingtv.net/documentaries.html>
- ⁹⁰² Hounam, p. 32.
- ⁹⁰³ Tourney, pp. 51, 56–57.
- ⁹⁰⁴ Ibid., p. 73.
- ⁹⁰⁵ Ennes, p. 237.
- ⁹⁰⁶ Hounam, pp. 186–187 (Ref. Heikal, no page citation).
- ⁹⁰⁷ Scott, James, p. 4.
- ⁹⁰⁸ See unclassified report *United States Cryptologic History: Attack on a Sigint Collector*, http://www.nsa.gov/public_info/_files/uss_liberty/attack_sigint.pdf
- ⁹⁰⁹ Ibid., p. 49 (p. 41 in original document).
- ⁹¹⁰ Bamford, p. 206.
- ⁹¹¹ Oren, pp. 333–334.
- ⁹¹² Ibid.
- ⁹¹³ Ibid., p. 265.
- ⁹¹⁴ Bamford, p. 203 (Ref. original cite: *Newsday*, August 17, 1995).
- ⁹¹⁵ Katzenbach, pp. 251–252.
- ⁹¹⁶ Califano, p. 204.
- ⁹¹⁷ Ibid., pp. 204–205.
- ⁹¹⁸ CNN website: <http://edition.cnn.com/2004/US/01/12/us.israel.ussliberty/>
- ⁹¹⁹ Allen, p. xxv.
- ⁹²⁰ Ibid., p. 189.
- ⁹²¹ Ibid., p. 188.
- ⁹²² See <http://blogs.timesofisrael.com/the-lie-that-wont-die-the-uss-liberty-attack-slander-continued/>
- ⁹²³ See *Congressional Record* dated October 11, 2004, pp. E1886–E1889, <http://www.gpo.gov/fdsys/pkg/CREC-2004-10-11/pdf/CREC-2004-10-11-pt1-PgE1886-3.pdf#page=1>
- ⁹²⁴ Tourney, p. 22.
- ⁹²⁵ See <http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=fRZSzdQuOqM&NR=1> Also: <http://www.youtube.com/watch?>

v=va0sHuZyJwU

⁹²⁶ Califano, p. 205.

⁹²⁷ Ibid. (Ref. personal papers of Jos. Califano: memo from Levinson and Wattenberg to LBJ, June 7, 1967).

⁹²⁸ Ibid.

⁹²⁹ Ibid., p. 206.

⁹³⁰ Hounam, p. 136.

⁹³¹ Ibid., p. 140.

⁹³² Hershman, *Power ...*, p. 212; Goodwin, Richard, pp. 402–403.

⁹³³ Hounam, pp. 72–73.

⁹³⁴ Hounam., p. 270.

⁹³⁵ Ibid., pp. 28, 38, 240.

⁹³⁶ Goldberg, p. 207.

⁹³⁷ Schulman, p. 146.

⁹³⁸ Ibid.

⁹³⁹ Hounam, pp. 72–73.

⁹⁴⁰ Ibid., p. 252.

⁹⁴¹ Ibid., pp. 122–123.

⁹⁴² See YouTube: “Documentary on the USS Liberty: *Dead in the Water*,” op. cit. (@ 47:00).

⁹⁴³ Ibid., (@ 48:25).

⁹⁴⁴ Hounam, p. 250.

⁹⁴⁵ Hounam, p. 240.

⁹⁴⁶ Ibid., p. 241.

⁹⁴⁷ Ibid., p. 242.

⁹⁴⁸ Hounam, p. 233.

⁹⁴⁹ Ibid., pp. 234–235.

⁹⁵⁰ See Jeff [Rense.com](http://www.rense.com) (Interview with Phil Tourney, June 6, 2011).

⁹⁵¹ Giraldi, Philip, The American Conservative, *Sinking Liberty*, March 17, 2011.

⁹⁵² Hounam, p. 95.

⁹⁵³ “Documentary on the USS Liberty: *Dead in the Water*,” Op. Cit. (Beginning @ 55:30). minutes.

⁹⁵⁴ Tourney and Glenn, p. 164.

⁹⁵⁵ See Jefferson Morley, “The Gentlemanly Planner of Assassinations,” *Slate*, November 1, 2002.

⁹⁵⁶ See YouTube: “Documentary on the USS Liberty: *Dead in the Water*,” op. cit. (@ 59:25)

⁹⁵⁷ See FP National Security,
http://ricks.foreignpolicy.com/posts/2012/01/23/was_there_academic_freedom_at_annapolis_during_the_israeli_ambas

- ⁹⁵⁸ Princeton University Prof. Emeritus Richard Falk speech, “The Economic, Legal and Moral Cost of War: A Forum on Israel, Palestine and the United States,” UTUMC, Seattle, June 8, 2012, recorded by Todd Boyle.
- ⁹⁵⁹ See YouTube “Loss of Liberty: The Real Story About the USS *Liberty*,” Part 5 of 5 (@ 2:40 min) <http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=QnflCwSk5r0>
- ⁹⁶⁰ Ibid., Part 5 of 5 (@ 4 min).
- ⁹⁶¹ Gates, p. 65.
- ⁹⁶² Ibid., p. 67.
- ⁹⁶³ Ibid., p. 65.
- ⁹⁶⁴ Bamford, p. 230 (Ref. original citation: memorandum from Adm. Thomas Moorer to AMEU, June 8, 1997).
- ⁹⁶⁵ Gates, p. 65.
- ⁹⁶⁶ See YouTube “Loss of Liberty,” op. cit.
- ⁹⁶⁷ Scott, James, p. 5.
- ⁹⁶⁸ Op. cit.
- ⁹⁶⁹ Shesol, p. 412.
- ⁹⁷⁰ Scott, James, p. 286.
- ⁹⁷¹ Caro, *Master of the Senate*, p. 713.
- ⁹⁷² Rusk, p. 388.
- ⁹⁷³ Hounam, p. 185.
- ⁹⁷⁴ Goldberg, J. J., p. 229.
- ⁹⁷⁵ See “Before It’s News” webpage, May 7, 2013, <http://beforeitsnews.com/opinion-conservative/2013/05/jerusalem-day-how-moshe-dayan-made-the-temple-mount-a-palestinian-issue-2636624.html>
- ⁹⁷⁶ See Jeff Dunetz, “Moshe Dayan: The Villain of Jerusalem,” *The Jewish Star*, May 9, 2013, http://www.thejewishstar.com/stories/OpinionMoshe-Dayan-The-Villain-of-Jerusalem,4058?page=1&content_source=
- ⁹⁷⁷ “Before It’s News,” op. cit.
- ⁹⁷⁸ Ibid.
- ⁹⁷⁹ Ibid.
- ⁹⁸⁰ Author’s correspondence with Barry Chamish, June 6, 2013.
- ⁹⁸¹ BBC Documentary *Dead in the Water*, (@ 3:10), <http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=va0sHuZyJwU>
- ⁹⁸² Hounam, p. 131 (Ref. *The Time of My Life*, by Denis Healy, Penquin Books, 1989).
- ⁹⁸³ Ibid., p. 264.
- ⁹⁸⁴ Ibid.
- ⁹⁸⁵ Ibid., pp. 159–164.
- ⁹⁸⁶ Ibid., pp. 236–238.
- ⁹⁸⁷ Ibid., p. 238.
- ⁹⁸⁸ See <http://barrychamish.com/> (also at <http://www.thehandstand.org/archive/february2010/articles/liberty.htm>).

- ⁹⁸⁹ Op. cit. Albertazzie, p. 247.
- ⁹⁹⁰ Transcript, George Ball Oral History Interview I, 7/8/71, by Paige E. Mulhollan, Internet Copy, LBJ Library, p. 9.
- ⁹⁹¹ Guthman and Shulman, p. 410.
- ⁹⁹² *Time* magazine, December 13, 1963. See *Time* Archives: <http://www.time.com/time/magazine/article/0,9171,875423-3,00.html#ixzz0YdL9HwR9>
- ⁹⁹³ Schlesinger, *Journals*, p. 225.
- ⁹⁹⁴ Dickerson, N., p. 260.
- ⁹⁹⁵ Turner, *Rearview Mirror*, p. 57.
- ⁹⁹⁶ Douglass, pp. 321–322.
- ⁹⁹⁷ Raskin, p. 277.
- ⁹⁹⁸ Goodwin, Richard, p. 309.
- ⁹⁹⁹ Caro, *The Path*, p. 160.
- ¹⁰⁰⁰ Kessler, *Inside the White House*, p. 10.
- ¹⁰⁰¹ Ibid., p. 1.
- ¹⁰⁰² Ibid., p. 37.
- ¹⁰⁰³ Dallek, *Flawed Giant*, p. 160.
- ¹⁰⁰⁴ Ibid., p. 124.
- ¹⁰⁰⁵ Kessler, *In the President's Secret Service* ..., pp. 18–19.
- ¹⁰⁰⁶ Ibid., p. 186.
- ¹⁰⁰⁷ Ibid., p. 17.
- ¹⁰⁰⁸ Sullivan, p. 58.
- ¹⁰⁰⁹ Schlesinger, *Journals*, p. 310.
- ¹⁰¹⁰ Caro, *Master of the Senate*, p. 111.
- ¹⁰¹¹ Haley, p. 192.
- ¹⁰¹² Weaver Jr., Warren, “Ex-Aides Assail Depiction of Johnson as Paranoid,” *New York Times*, August 24, 1988.
- ¹⁰¹³ Caro, *Passage* ..., p. 617.
- ¹⁰¹⁴ Weaver, Warren, op. cit.
- ¹⁰¹⁵ Weaver, Warren, op. cit.
- ¹⁰¹⁶ Bruck, p. 235–239.
- ¹⁰¹⁷ Haley, p. 235.
- ¹⁰¹⁸ Caro, *Master of the Senate*, p. 147.
- ¹⁰¹⁹ Twyman, p. 511.
- ¹⁰²⁰ Ibid., p. 512.
- ¹⁰²¹ Beschloss, *Reaching*, pp. 368–369.

- ¹⁰²² Ibid., pp. 370–371.
- ¹⁰²³ Caro, *Master of the Senate*, p. 711.
- ¹⁰²⁴ Ibid.
- ¹⁰²⁵ Ibid., p. 714.
- ¹⁰²⁶ Parker, p. v.
- ¹⁰²⁷ Kessler, *Inside the White House*, p. 33.
- ¹⁰²⁸ Ibid.
- ¹⁰²⁹ Ibid.
- ¹⁰³⁰ Ibid., p. 34.
- ¹⁰³¹ Ibid. pp. 33–34.
- ¹⁰³² Ibid.
- ¹⁰³³ “President Lyndon Johnson using the ‘N’ word,” <http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=r1rIDmDWSms&feature=related>
- ¹⁰³⁴ Katzenbach, p. 207.
- ¹⁰³⁵ Dallek, *Flawed Giant*, p. 223. (Ref. John Morton Blum, *Years of Discord: American Politics and Society, 1961–1975*. New York: W. W. Norton, 1991, pp. 252–54, Ramsey Clark’s remarks in *Lyndon Johnson and the Civil Rights Revolution: A Panel Discussion*, in Firestone and Vogt, eds., *LBJ and the Uses of Power*, 175. LBJ is quoted in Kearns, *LBJ*, 305. Ramsey Clark Oral History, LBJ Library, March 21, 1969).
- ¹⁰³⁶ Dallek, *Flawed Giant*, p. 223.
- ¹⁰³⁷ Ibid., p. 223.
- ¹⁰³⁸ Kessler, *In the President’s Secret Service*, pp. 20–21; *Inside the White House*, pp. 30–31.
- ¹⁰³⁹ Albertazzi, p. 249.
- ¹⁰⁴⁰ Baker, Bobby, p. 270.
- ¹⁰⁴¹ Kessler, *Inside the White House*, p. 18.
- ¹⁰⁴² Ibid., p. 20.
- ¹⁰⁴³ Kessler, *In the President’s Secret Service*, p. 20.
- ¹⁰⁴⁴ Kessler. *Inside the White House*, p. 19–20.
- ¹⁰⁴⁵ Clarence, pp. 198–199.
- ¹⁰⁴⁶ Ibid.
- ¹⁰⁴⁷ Manchester, p. 325.
- ¹⁰⁴⁸ See <http://www.listsofnote.com/2012/01/who-killed-jfk.html?m=1>
- ¹⁰⁴⁹ Twyman, p. 831.
- ¹⁰⁵⁰ Lincoln, p. 16.
- ¹⁰⁵¹ Dallek, *Flawed Giant*, pp. 124–25 (Quoting Busby interview).
- ¹⁰⁵² Op. cit. Dallek, *Flawed Giant*, p. 45.

- ¹⁰⁵³ Ibid., p. 231 (Ref. Leuchtenburg, *American Heritage*, 51–52).
- ¹⁰⁵⁴ *Newsweek*, January 27, 1964; *Washington Post*, December 25, 1963.
- ¹⁰⁵⁵ Haley, p. 254.
- ¹⁰⁵⁶ Hershman, *Power ...*, pp. 215–226 (Ref. Merle Miller, *Lyndon: An Oral Biography*, New York: G. P. Putnam’s Sons, 1980, pp. 455–456, 494).
- ¹⁰⁵⁷ Kearns, pp. ix–x.
- ¹⁰⁵⁸ Reedy, p. xiv.
- ¹⁰⁵⁹ Hershman, *Power ...*, pp. 117–118.
- ¹⁰⁶⁰ Dallek, *Flawed Giant*, p. 13.
- ¹⁰⁶¹ Miller, p. 284.
- ¹⁰⁶² Caro, *Means of ...*, p. 5.
- ¹⁰⁶³ Ibid.
- ¹⁰⁶⁴ Dugger, p. 77.
- ¹⁰⁶⁵ Twyman, pp. 820–821.
- ¹⁰⁶⁶ Caro, *The Passage to Power*, p. 448.
- ¹⁰⁶⁷ Twyman, p. 849.
- ¹⁰⁶⁸ Haslam, p. 162.
- ¹⁰⁶⁹ Russ Baker, pp. 12–22.
- ¹⁰⁷⁰ See <http://www.veteranstoday.com/2014/02/19/reprise-of-the-october-surprishow-israel-gained-control-of-the-reagan-bush-administrations/>
- ¹⁰⁷¹ Ball, pp. 57–58.
- ¹⁰⁷² See University of Georgia website at <http://onlineathens.com/uga/2013-11-11/uga-papers-reveal-senators-doubts-about-jfk-assassination>
- ¹⁰⁷³ Califano, pp. 311–312.
- ¹⁰⁷⁴ Ibid., p. 313.
- ¹⁰⁷⁵ Ibid.
- ¹⁰⁷⁶ Summers, *Official and Confidential ...*, p. 314.
- ¹⁰⁷⁷ See Stinnett, Robert, *Day of Deceit: The Truth About FDR and Pearl Harbor*, New York: Touchstone, 2000.
- ¹⁰⁷⁸ See Huber, Robert, “Vince Salandria: The JFK Conspiracy Theorist,” *Philadelphia*, February 27, 2014.
- ¹⁰⁷⁹ See <http://mcadams.posc.mu.edu/arrb/index71.htm>
- ¹⁰⁸⁰ December 30, 2013 letter from Gerald McKnight to author.
- ¹⁰⁸¹ Klaber and Melanson, p. 352 (citing “Had No Choice,” *Los Angeles Times*, May 22, 1975, p. 32).
- ¹⁰⁸² Fetzer, *The Great Zapruder Film Hoax*, p. 69.
- ¹⁰⁸³ Will, George F. See syndicated column “When Liberals Became Scolds” (October 11, 2013).
- ¹⁰⁸⁴ See <http://fff.org/explore-freedom/article/jfks-war-against-the-national-security-establishment/>

¹⁰⁸⁵ <http://press.discovery.com/us/mil/programs/what-if-armageddon-1962/>

¹⁰⁸⁶ Kurtz, Michael, in Robert Brent Toplin, ed., “Oliver Stone, JFK, and History” *Oliver Stone’s USA: Film, History and Controversy*, University Press of Kansas, 2000, p. 173 (noted in David Mantik’s essay “The Silence of the Historians” 2002).

¹⁰⁸⁷ Originally published in *Murder in Dealey Plaza*, edited by James Fetzer, Ph.D. (2000). The Internet version noted was updated in 2002, see <http://www.assassinationresearch.com/v1n1/mantik.html>

¹⁰⁸⁸ See http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Historical_rankings_of_Presidents_of_the_United_States

¹⁰⁸⁹ See <http://fff.org/2013/10/21/a-great-conference-on-the-jfk-assassination-at-duquesne-university/>

INDEX

Abidjan, [379](#)

Abilene Christian University (ACU), [59](#)

Academy of Motion Picture Arts and Sciences (AMPAS), [155](#), [190](#)

Acheson, Dean, [298](#), [359](#), [360](#)

Adams, Don, [136](#), [137](#)

Adenauer, Konrad, [107](#)

Adler, William M., [156](#), [157](#)

Agriculture, Department of (U.S.D.A.), [xxxi](#), [3](#), [24](#), [25](#)

Aiken, George, [324](#)

Akashah, Mary, [226](#)

Albert, Carl, [337](#)

Albertazzie, Ralph, [xxxviii](#), [108](#), [109](#), [152](#), [154](#), [352](#)

Alcock, James, [42](#), [43](#)

Allen, Robert J., [402](#)

Alsop, Joseph, [460](#)

Ambassador Hotel, [284](#), [299](#), [301](#), [302](#), [305](#), [309](#), [312](#), [317](#)

 Colonial Room, [304](#)

 Embassy Room, [304](#), [315](#)

Ament, Suzanne, [183](#)

American Jewish Committee, [197](#)

Americans for Democratic Action, [78](#)

Amin, Idi, [504](#)

Amos, William H., [ix](#), [331](#)

Anderson, Jack, [84](#), [92](#), [223](#), [224](#), [277](#)

Andrews Air Force Base, [102](#), [169](#), [332](#), [333](#)

Angleton, James Jesus, [xli](#), [171](#)

Arlington Cemetery, [318](#), [376](#)

Arnett, Peter, [364](#)

Arnold, Gordon, [266–267](#)

Atilano De La Garza Ranch, [160](#)

Atomic Energy Commission, [157](#)

Atzmon, Gilad, [386](#)

Auden, W. H., [145](#)

Austin American-Statesman, [181](#)

Auxiliary Technical Research Ship (AGTR), [376](#)

Ayers, Bradley, [291](#)

Aynesworth, Hugh, [287](#)

Ayub Khan, Mohammed, [350](#)

B-26 Marauder Historical Society, [134](#)

Bahmer, Robert H., [140](#)

Bailey, William, [308](#)

Baines, Ruth, [xl](#), [xli](#), [474](#)

Baker Scandal, [xxi](#), [78](#), [80](#), [84](#), [88](#), [217](#)

Baker, Bobby, [xxi](#), [xxxii](#), [xxxvii](#), [xli](#), [xlvi](#), [10](#), [68](#), [69](#), [75](#), [78–81](#), [84](#), [86–90](#), [92](#), [115](#), [136](#), [164](#), [173](#), [217](#), [234](#), [239–242](#), [245](#), [289](#), [455–457](#), [466](#), [467](#), [491](#), [498](#)

Baker, Judyth Vary, [269](#)

Baker, Russ, [273](#), [481](#)

Ball, George W., [484](#)

Bamford, James, [380](#), [389](#), [399](#)

Banister, Guy, [271](#), [272](#)

Barnes, Ben, [160](#)

Barron, John M. (Judge), [9](#)

Barry, William (“Bill”), [299](#)

Bartlett, Charles (“Charlie”), [204](#), [285](#)

Battle of the Alamo, [128](#)

Bay of Pigs, [75](#), [76](#), [326](#), [331](#), [494](#)

Begin, Menachem, [192](#)

Beit Hamikdash (The Jewish Temple), [439](#)

Bell Helicopter, [324](#), [357](#)

Belli, Melvin, [305](#)

Belzer, Richard, [234](#), [272](#)

Ben-Gurion, David, [194](#), [199](#), [201](#), [203](#), [206](#), [411](#), [414](#), [438](#)

Bennett, William Tapley, Jr., [120](#)

Beschloss, Michael, [502](#)

Bethesda Naval Hospital, [x](#), [223](#), [225](#), [265](#)

Bevin, Ernest, [193](#), [194](#)

Binkley, Marilyn, [147](#), [148](#)

Bishop, Jim, [124](#)

Bissell, Richard, [viii](#), [203](#), [292](#)

Black, Edwin, [196](#), [197](#)

Black, Fred Jr., [173](#), [239](#), [478](#), [498](#)

Blackstone, Harry Jr., [103](#), [231](#), [340](#)

 “The Great Blackstone”, [231](#)

Blackwell, Tom, [47](#)

Block, Herbert (“Herblock”), [152](#)

Blue, Allen, [381](#)

Boeing Aircraft Corporation, [xlv](#)

Boggs, Hale, [144](#), [478](#), [489](#)

Boston, Ward, [391](#), [394](#), [423](#), [517](#), [519](#)

Boswell, J. T., [40](#)

Bowden, Tom, [250](#), [256](#), [259](#)

Braden, Jim (aka “Eugene Hale Brading” and “Edgar Eugene Bradley”), [301](#)

Bradlee, Antoinette (“Tony”), [247](#)

Bradlee, Ben, [241](#), [247](#), [248](#)

Bradley, Omar, [316](#)

Branco, Humberto de Alencar Castelo, [118](#), [119](#)

Brandeis, Louis D., [215](#), [220](#)

Brant, Jeff, [314](#)

Brazilian Democratic Movement (Movimento Democrático Brasileiro, MDB), [119](#)

Brennan, Phil, [78](#), [86](#)

Breslin, James (“Jimmy”), [299](#)

Brier, Bob, [237](#)

Brinkley, Douglas, [226](#), [228](#), [294](#), [360](#)

Brown and Root Co., [373](#), [357](#)

Brown, David, [187](#)

Brown, George, [273](#)

Brown, Herman, [180](#), [181](#), [461](#)

Brown, Jack, [313](#)

Brown, Joe B., [236](#)

Brown, Kyle, [256](#)

Brown, Madeleine, [viii](#), [xix](#), [xx](#), [xxvi](#), [xxxiii](#), [2](#), [62](#), [160](#), [164](#), [172](#), [173](#), [188](#), [261](#), [352](#), [478](#)

Brown, Steven, [235](#)

Brown, Walt, [47](#)

Bruck, Connie, [186](#), [187](#), [190](#)

Bruno, Jerry, [216](#)

Brussell, Mae, [234](#), [237](#)

Bryant, Traphes, [153](#)

Bucher, Lloyd, [436](#)

Bugliosi, Vincent (“Vince”), [160](#)

Bullion, J. W. (“Waddy”), [63](#)

Bundy, McGeorge (“Mac”), [49](#), [140](#), [326](#), [328](#), [332–334](#), [337](#), [338](#), [340](#), [344](#), [345](#), [347](#), [365](#), [445](#), [450](#), [452](#), [479](#)

Bundy, Ted, [171](#)

Burke, Arleigh, [432](#)

Burleigh, Nina, [246](#)

Burns, James MacGregor, [95](#)

Burris, Howard, [xli](#), [274](#), [497](#)

Busby, Horace, [xxiv](#), [72](#), [117](#), [131](#), [132](#), [159](#), [164](#), [457](#), [469](#)

Busby, Mary V., [131](#)

Busby, Scott, [131](#)

Bush, George H. W., [274](#), [481](#)

Business Council, [209](#)

Butler, Ed, [478](#)

Byrd, Harry F.

Byrd, Robert C., [99](#)

Cabell, Charles, [331](#)

Cabell, Earl, [331](#)

Caddy, Douglas (Doug), [59](#)

Cage, Nicolas, [269](#)

Caidin, Martin, [134](#)

Califano, Joseph, [298](#), [317](#), [318](#), [320](#), [400](#), [406](#), [464](#), [488](#)

Cambodia, [121](#), [353](#), [504](#)

Campbell, Gordon, [315](#)

Campbell, John, [xliii](#), [xlv](#), [82](#), [164](#)

Campbell, Joseph, [142](#)

Canada, [106](#), [211](#), [212](#)

Cappucci, Joseph J., [331](#), [332](#)

Carbajal, Ruben (“Rocky”), [316](#)

Carnegie Foundation, [202](#)

Caro, Robert, [xvii](#), [xviii](#), [xx](#), [xiii](#), [xli](#), [xliii](#), [li](#), [52](#), [54](#), [56–58](#), [60–63](#), [71](#), [95](#), [97](#), [113](#), [114](#), [123](#), [124](#), [133](#), [159](#), [164](#), [168](#), [172](#), [179–182](#), [184](#), [220](#), [317](#), [320](#), [354](#), [457](#), [459](#), [461](#), [462](#), [478](#), [497](#)

Carousel Hotel, Ocean City, MD, [82](#)

Carpenter, Liz, [87](#), [149](#)

Casey, William, [482](#)

Carson, Johnny (See also Johnny Carson TV show), [262](#)

Carter, Cliff, [xx](#), [xxvii](#), [xxix](#), [xxx](#), [xxxi](#), [xli](#), [2–4](#), [10](#), [12–15](#), [17](#), [23](#), [25](#), [75](#), [114](#), [131](#), [140](#), [156](#), [164](#), [169](#), [173](#), [249](#), [252](#), [254–260](#), [479](#), [492](#)

Carter, Jimmy, [15](#), [46](#), [154](#), [235](#), [298](#), [458](#), [481](#)

Carter, Lyndon, [256](#)

Castro, Fidel, [77](#), [268](#), [293](#)

Cesar, Thane Eugene, [304](#)

Chamish, Barry, [ix](#), [198](#), [439](#), [445](#)

Chang, Suzy, [289](#)

Charles, Clemard Joseph, [174](#), [273](#), [274](#)

Charnin, Richard, [234](#)

Cheslock, Bill, [viii](#), [505](#), [507](#)

Chico, [1](#), [5](#)

Childs, Marquis, [224](#), [461](#)

Christian, George, [117](#), [365](#), [406](#)

Christian, Jonn G., [300](#)

Church Committee, [335](#)

Church, Frank, [274](#)

CIA

- Operation Artichoke, [315](#)
- Operation Mockingbird, [82](#), [247](#), [248](#), [297](#), [301](#), [361](#)
- Operation Mongoose, [77](#)

Operation Phoenix, [357](#)

Civil Rights Bill, [63](#), [65](#), [70](#), [95](#), [96](#), [98](#), [99](#), [170](#), [218](#), [436](#), [462](#)

Clark, Earl, [277](#), [279](#)

Clark, Edward (Ed), [5](#), [181](#)

Clark, Ramsey, [35–44](#), [188](#), [278](#), [464](#), [488](#)

Clark, Thomas and Winters (law firm), [181](#)

Clark, Tom, [188](#)

Clawson, Cary, [5](#)

Clifford, Clark, [52–55](#), [63](#), [87](#), [207](#), [318](#), [329](#), [386](#), [388](#), [443](#), [468](#)

Clinton, Hillary, [465](#)

Clinton, William (“Bill”), [187](#), [193](#), [353](#), [465](#)

Cofer, Hugh, [33](#)

Cofer, John, [xxx](#), [xxxi](#), [xxxiv](#), [8](#), [156](#)

Cohen, Mickey, [192](#)

Colapietro, Mike, [ix](#)

Colby, William, [202](#)

Commercial Solvents Corporation, [157](#)

Connally, John, [xxxvi](#), [xliv](#), [xvli](#), [72](#), [86](#), [129](#), [130](#), [131](#), [160](#), [215](#), [220](#), [458–459](#), [467](#)

Connor, “Bull”, [96](#)

Cooper, Charles G., [347](#)

Cooper, Grant, [305](#), [306](#), [307](#), [311](#)

Cooper, John Sherman, [144](#), [489](#)

Corcoran, Howard, [249](#)

Corcoran, Tommy, [249](#)

Cormier, Frank, [107](#)

Corso, Philip, [489](#)

Corson, William R., [489](#)

Cortez Hotel, El Paso, [129](#), [467](#)

Council on Foreign Relations, [xxiii](#), [203](#), [445](#)

Cowles, John, [360](#)

Crahan, Marcus, [310](#)

Craig, Roger, [viii](#), [236](#)

Cramer, Bill, [xxx](#)

Crenshaw, Charles, [xx](#), [58](#), [268](#)

Crete, [381](#), [384](#), [385](#), [392](#), [430](#)

Crider, Cynthia, [182](#)

Cronkite, Walter, [xiii](#), [297](#), [361](#), [498](#)

Crown, Henry, [188](#)

Crump, Raymond “Ray”, [248](#), [249](#)

Cuba, [75](#), [93](#), [119](#), [183](#), [184](#), [273](#), [291–294](#), [318](#), [405](#), [474](#), [487](#), [499](#)

Cuff, William F., [xxxviii](#)

Curry, Jesse, [479](#)

Cutler, Robert, [xx](#), [325](#)

Dalitz, Moe, [186](#), [190](#), [192](#)

Dallas Police Department, [44](#), [250](#), [251](#), [269](#)

Dallas Public Library, [ix](#), [15](#), [45](#)

Dallas Uranium and Oil Company, [160](#)

Dallek, Robert, [xxi](#), [xxxvi](#), [xxxviii](#), [xl](#), [xli](#), [xliv](#), [58](#), [71](#), [72](#), [91](#), [101](#), [168](#), [201](#), [299](#), [355](#), [365](#), [366](#), [464](#), [470](#)

Dal-Tex Building, [160](#), [301](#)

Danon, Davin, [192](#)

Darby, Nathan, [47](#), [48](#)

Davidson, Irving, [173](#), [498](#)

Day, James M., [4](#)

Dayan, Moshe, [214](#), [377](#), [399](#), [414](#), [433](#), [438](#), [443](#)

Dayan, Yael, [377](#)

DC Stadium (later renamed “RFK Stadium”), [89](#)

de Gaulle, Charles, [lii](#)

de Menil, Jean, [273](#)

De Mohrenschildt, George, [173](#), [272–275](#)

Demond, Walter, [181](#)

de Torres, Bernardo, [291](#)

Deathe, Earl, [354](#)

Decker, Bill, [269](#)

del Valle, Eladio, [287](#)

DeLoach, Cartha “Deke”, [135–138](#), [282](#), [288](#)

Dennison, John P., [3](#)

Department of Justice - Anti-Trust Division, [xliv](#)

Diamond, Bernard, [309](#)

Diaspora, [196](#), [197](#)

Dick Cavett Show, [358](#)

Dickerson, John, [xxxviii](#)

Dickerson, Nancy, [55](#), [56](#), [65](#), [69](#), [326](#), [451](#)

Dien Bien Phu, [323](#)

Dimona, [204–207](#)

DiPierro, Vincent, [305](#), [314](#)

Dirksen, Everett M., [99](#)

Dodd, Thomas J., [84](#)

Dominican Republic, [69](#), [184](#), [342](#), [351](#)

 1965 Invasion of, [119–120](#)

Domino Theory, [330](#), [335](#)

Douglas, Helen Gahagan, [37](#)

Douglass, James, [452](#)

Driskill Hotel, Austin, [257](#)

Duffy, LaVern, [241](#)

Dugger, Ronnie, [1](#), [52](#), [133](#)

Dulles, Allen, [xli](#), [66](#), [82](#), [144](#), [202](#), [203](#), [324](#), [333](#), [372](#), [373](#), [446](#), [496](#), [505](#)

Dulles, John Foster, [201](#), [324](#)

Dunne, Dominick, [190](#)

Duvalier, Francois “Papa Doc”, [174](#), [273](#)

Eardley, Carl, [40](#)

Early, Stephen, [181](#)

Eastwood, Clint, [280](#)

Eban, Abba, [211](#), [414](#), [437](#), [438](#)

Eberstadt, Ferdinand, [232](#)

Edelman, Peter, [361](#)

Edwards, Willard, [62](#)

Egypt, [213](#), [214](#), [359](#), [376–379](#), [390](#), [393](#), [394](#), [398](#), [405](#), [412](#), [413](#), [416](#), [418–420](#), [422](#), [430](#), [433](#), [443](#), [445](#)

Eisenhower, Dwight D., [482](#)

Eitan, Rafi, [417](#)

El Arish, [399](#)

Eleftheriades, Steve, [32](#)

El Quseir, [376](#)

Elliott, Maurine Joyce, [265–266](#)

Empire Oil Company, [301](#)

Ennes, James, [392](#), [393](#), [396](#), [399](#), [416](#), [426](#)

Epstein, Edward Jay, [274](#)

Eshkol, Levi, [204](#), [414](#), [439](#)

Estes Scandal, [xxi](#), [xxx](#), [9](#), [156](#), [235](#), [455](#)

Estes, Billie Sol, [viii](#), [x](#), [xix](#), [xx](#), [xxi](#), [xxvi](#), [xxvii–xxxii](#), [2–15](#), [17–22](#), [24–27](#), [32](#), [34](#), [58](#), [59](#), [68](#), [75](#), [82](#), [83](#), [86](#), [114](#), [115](#), [156](#), [157](#), [158](#), [164](#), [172](#), [173](#), [182](#), [188](#), [235](#), [250](#), [252](#), [253](#), [256–264](#), [266](#), [352](#), [441](#), [453](#), [455](#), [465](#), [491](#)

Evans, Elizabeth, [304](#)

Evancoe, Paul, [x](#)

Evans, Cecil (“Prexy”), [xxv](#), [72](#)

Evans, Elizabeth, [304](#)

Evans, Roland, [69](#)

Evron, Ephraim (“Eppie”), [407](#)

Falk, Richard, [427](#)

Falwell, Jerry, [412](#)

Federal Bureau of Investigation (FBI), [xv](#), [xxi](#), [xxv](#), [xxix](#), [xxx](#), [xliv](#), [13](#), [14](#), [32](#), [35](#), [36](#), [39](#), [44](#), [61](#), [67](#), [75](#), [82](#), [85](#), [124](#), [135–138](#), [144](#), [145](#), [167](#), [188](#), [190](#), [191](#), [221](#), [246](#), [250](#), [251](#), [264](#), [267](#), [272](#), [275–277](#), [280–282](#), [285](#), [287–289](#), [293](#), [299–301](#), [308](#), [312–314](#), [317](#), [320](#), [373](#), [374](#), [413](#), [451](#), [474](#), [478](#), [486](#), [497](#)

Federal Communication Commission (FCC), [xliv](#), [455](#)

Federal Power Commission (FPC), [70](#), [222](#), [233](#), [491](#)

Feinberg, Abraham (Abe), [206](#), [207](#), [210](#)

Ferrie, David, [265](#), [271](#), [286](#), [287](#)

Finch, Bernard, [306](#), [311](#)

Finck, Pierre, [40](#), [42](#)

Finkelstein, Louis, [209](#)
Fleming, Ian, [234](#), [315](#)
Flowers, Betty Sue, [142](#)
Fonzi, Gaeton, [274](#)
Ford Foundation, [202](#)
Ford, Gerald, [46](#), [140](#), [144](#), [154](#), [202](#), [23](#), [235](#), [458](#), [466](#), [478](#), [482](#)
Foreman, Percy, [305](#)
Forrestal, James, [228](#)
Fortas, Abe, [87](#), [91](#), [164](#), [168](#), [19](#), [180](#), [209](#), [210](#), [212](#), [213](#), [230](#), [401](#), [488](#), [491](#)
Fox, Sylvan, [39](#)
Frank, Leo, [183](#)
Frates, William, [243](#),
Fratiano, Jimmy “The Weasel”, [301](#)
Freed, Evan, [309](#)
Friars Club (UT), [112](#)
Fritz, Will, [236](#), [479](#)
Fuelberg, Bennie, [181](#)
Fuhrman, Mark, [160](#), [503](#)
Fulbright, William J., [99](#), [327](#), [341](#), [342](#), [354](#), [361](#), [481](#)
Future of Freedom Foundation, [265](#), [499](#)
Gacy, John Wayne, [171](#)
Gaither, Billy, [243](#)
Galbraith, John Kenneth, [xlvii](#), [133](#), [468](#)
Garner, John, [180](#), [181](#)
Garrison, Homer, [8](#), [11](#)
Garrison, Jim, [xxiii](#), [37](#), [40](#), [238](#), [271](#), [286–290](#), [293](#), [295](#)
Garson, Barbara, [liii](#)
Gates, Jeff, [192](#), [431](#)
Gaud, William, [334](#)
Geis, Lawrence, [388](#), [406](#), [434](#)
General Dynamics, [xl](#), [xlvi](#), [xlvii](#), [xlix](#), [86](#), [91](#), [92](#), [188](#), [324](#), [357](#)
Georgia (Clint Peoples’s Assistant), [47](#)
Germany, [183](#), [198–200](#), [241](#), [242](#), [289](#), [313](#), [504](#)
Gerth, Jeff, [187](#)
Geyelin, Philip, [72](#), [329](#), [341](#)
Giancana, Sam, [186](#), [188](#), [498](#)
Gillette, Michael L., [254](#), [255](#)
Gillon, Steven M., [63](#)
Gilpatric, Roswell, [334](#)
Giraldi, Philip, [421](#)
Glass, Alice, [xxxvii](#), [183–185](#)
Glenn, Mark, [392](#)

Godwin, Debra, [264](#), [265](#)

Goebbels, Joseph, [111](#), [122](#), [319](#), [499](#)

Goldberg, Arthur, [210](#), [328](#), [438](#)

Goldberg, J. J., [210](#), [412](#),

Golden, George, [418](#), [422](#)

Goldman, Eric F., [xxiii](#)

Goldstein, Ira, [304](#)

Goldwater, Barry, [xlv](#), [128](#), [147](#), [336](#), [345](#), [367](#)

Goodspeed, Richard E., [347](#)

Gordon, Lincoln, [118](#)

Gore, Albert, Sr., [99](#)

Goulart, Joao, [118](#), [119](#)

Goulden, Joseph C., [345](#)

Graham, Phil, [72](#), [247](#), [248](#), [469](#), [509](#)

Great Britain, [106](#), [206](#)

Great Society Legislation (Major parts of), [123](#), [128](#), [352](#), [362](#)

 Civil Rights Act, [73](#), [99](#), [115](#), [134](#), [169](#), [281](#), [318](#), [481](#), [499](#)

 Voting Rights Act, [73](#), [281](#)

Greene, Wallace, Jr., [348](#)

Greenwald, Robert, [45](#), [509](#)

Grier, Roosevelt, [303](#)

Griffin, John Howard, [237](#)

Grills, Herbert L., [158](#)

Gronouski, John A., [217](#)

Grose, Peter, [373](#)

Gruening, Ernest, [340](#)

Gulf of Aqaba, [201](#), [378](#)

Gulley, Bill, [453](#), [465](#), [466](#)

GVN (Government of Vietnam), [364](#)

Haddon, John, [419](#)

Haganah, [192](#)

Haiti, [174](#), [273](#), [274](#)

Halberstam, David, [liii](#), [52](#), [69](#), [324](#)

Haldeman, H. R., [494](#)

Haley, J. Evetts, [xix](#), [xxiii](#), [xxxvii](#), [148](#), [156](#), [164](#), [332](#), [458](#)

Haliburton, [324](#), [357](#)

Halman, James, [385](#)

Halsell, Grace, [209](#)

Hammel, Eric, [396](#)

Hanschman, Nancy (See Dickerson, Nancy)

Hanyok, Robert J., [344](#)

Harrison, Harold, [288](#)

Harman, Avraham, [203](#), [213](#), [408](#)

Harper, William W., [308](#)

Harrelson, Charles, [viii](#)

Harriman, W. Averell, [446](#)

Harrison, J. “Jay”, [xx](#), [47](#), [250](#), [251](#)

Harwood, Richard, [74](#), [151](#), [161](#), [165](#), [366](#)

Haslam, Edward T., [268](#)

Hauser, Mary Ruth, [244](#)

Head, Mike, [120](#)

Healey, Denis, [442](#)

Hearst, William Randolph, [489](#)

Hecht, Ben, [196](#)

Heep, Uriah (Dickens character), [72](#)

Heikal, Mohamed, [359](#), [393](#)

Heller, Walter E. Company (See Walter E. Heller Co.)

Heller, Walter W., [xxix](#)

Helms, Richard, [xli](#), [201](#), [288](#), [292](#), [335](#), [424](#), [443](#), [444](#)

Hemming, Gerry Patrick, [291](#)

Hernandez, Enrique (Hank), [304](#), [314](#)

Herring, George C., [347](#)

Hersh, Seymour, [187](#), [206](#), [240](#), [241](#), [242](#), [245](#), [357](#), [358](#)

Hershberg, James G., [343](#)

Hershman, D. Jablow, [xix](#), [64](#), [353](#)

Hewitt, Don, [190](#)

Heymann, C. David, [320](#)

Higgins, Marguerite, [461](#)

Hill, Ralph, [68](#), [79](#), [240](#), [241](#)

Hill, Ray, [xxxix](#), [xl](#)

Hill, Robert (Judge), [19](#), [20](#), [23](#)

Hilsman, Roger, [336](#), [337](#)

Hinckle, Warren, [236](#), [451](#)

Hitler, Adolph, [171](#), [176](#), [198](#), [504](#)

Hoffa, James (Jimmy), [186](#), [187](#)

Hogaboom, William, [315](#)

Hollamon, Tom, [177](#)

Holland, Max, [373](#)

Holleman, Jerry, [158](#)

Holt, Chauncey, [viii](#)

Holt, Pat, [342](#)

Hoopes, Townsend, [226](#), [228](#), [230](#), [298](#), [325](#), [326](#), [327](#), [359](#), [363](#), [369](#)

Hoover, J. Edgar, [xxv](#), [xxx](#), [xliv](#), [43](#), [75](#), [76](#), [78](#), [135](#), [136](#), [138](#), [160](#), [188](#), [241](#), [253](#), [272](#), [275](#), [277](#), [278](#), [280](#), [282](#), [284](#), [288](#), [320](#), [331](#), [334](#), [374](#), [469](#), [476](#), [478](#), [486](#), [489](#), [496](#), [498](#), [505](#)

Personal and Confidential Files, [85](#)
Seat of Government (SOG), [137](#), [138](#), [476](#)
Wiretapping, Bugs, Telephone surveillance, [145](#)
Hopkins, Welly K., [462](#)
Horne, Douglas P. (Doug), [x](#), [xv](#), [40](#), [41](#), [265](#), [499](#)
Horstmann, Beth, [160](#), [161](#)
Hounam, Peter, [192](#), [212](#), [377](#), [383](#), [384](#), [393](#), [411](#), [417](#), [419](#), [423](#), [424](#), [426](#), [437](#), [442](#), [443](#), [445](#)
Howard, Larry, [xx](#)
Howard, Tom, [236](#), [237](#), [238](#)
Hudson, Gail, [142](#)
Huffman, John S., [183](#)
Huffman, Ruth Ament, [xl](#)
Humes, James, [40](#)
Humphrey, Hubert, [201](#), [300](#), [320](#), [350](#), [442](#), [451](#)
Hunt, E. Howard, [247](#)
Hunt, H. L., [160](#), [273](#), [301](#), [498](#)
Hunt, Lamar, [301](#)
Hunt, Nelson Bunker, [301](#)
Hunter, Bill, [236](#), [237](#)
Hussein, Ibn Talal, [378](#)
Hymoff, Edward, [134](#)
Ickes, Harold, [181](#)
Imus in the Morning Show, [166](#)
Imus, Don, [166](#)
Irgun Zvai Leumi, [192](#)
Israel, [xvi](#), [106](#), [175–177](#), [183](#), [191–196](#), [200](#), [201](#), [204–214](#), [225–227](#), [229](#), [230](#), [232](#), [233](#), [376–379](#), [389](#), [391](#), [393](#), [396](#), [399–419](#), [426](#), [427](#), [430](#), [432](#), [433](#), [435](#), [437–440](#), [445](#), [481–484](#), [488](#), [491](#), [517](#), [518](#)
Jachmiczyk, Joseph, [11](#)
Jackson, C. D., [82](#)
Jacobsen, Jake, [210](#)
Jaffe, Morris D., [xx](#), [156–161](#), [182](#), [208](#), [301](#)
Jagger-Chiles-Stoval Company, [266](#)
James Bond (character), [234](#)
Janeway, Eliot, [71](#)
Janney, Frederick Wistar, [245](#), [247](#)
Janney, Peter, [215](#), [245](#), [246](#), [249](#)
Jenkins, Walter, [xxvii](#), [17](#), [29](#), [33](#), [131](#), [173](#), [252](#), [274](#), [450](#), [456](#), [459](#)
Jenner, Albert E., Jr., [188](#)
Jerusalem, [194](#), [195](#), [197](#), [199](#), [214](#), [232](#), [411](#), [437](#), [438](#)
Jewish Theological Seminary, [209](#)
Joannides, George, [272](#), [315](#), [316](#)
Jobe, Thomas H., [xx](#), [xxxv](#), [69](#), [107](#)

Joesten, Joachim, [xix](#), [xxiv](#), [39](#)

Johnny Carson TV Show, [2](#), [262](#)

Johnson, D. L., [xxxiii](#)

Johnson, Harold, [346](#), [348](#), [353](#)

Johnson, Haynes, [74](#), [151](#), [161](#), [165](#), [366](#)

Johnson, Josefa, [33](#), [234](#)

Johnson, Lady Bird, [46](#), [154](#), [458](#)

Johnson, Louis, [223](#), [224](#), [228](#), [230](#)

Johnson, Luci B., [330](#), [463](#)

Johnson, Lyndon B.

- Alcoholism of, [xxxvi](#)
- Attempted rape by, [xxxix](#)
- Bent facts and redefined reality, how he, [364–366](#)
- Cigarettes, whiskey, use of, [xxxvi–xxxvii](#)
- Colossus, The, [101–103](#)
- Connections to Mob, [190](#)
- Elms, The, [77](#)
- Gift giving, LBJ's love of, [472–473](#)
- Johnson City, Texas, LBJ's use of, [51](#), [104](#), [105](#), [344](#)
- Johnson Treatment, [62–65](#)
- “King of the world”, LBJ's declaration of, [106–109](#)
- Patterns - Commonalities of Criminal Activities Throughout LBJ's History, [474](#)
- Psychological / Psychiatric Issues of, [xxxvi](#)
- Reckless Behaviors of, [xxxvi](#)
- Silver Star, misrepresentations of, [52](#), [134](#)
- Shakespeare plays about, comparisons to:
 - Macbeth, [liii–liv](#)
 - Richard III, [liii–liv](#)
 - MacBird! At Village Gate Theater, [liii](#)
- Taj Mahal, aka “Nookie Room” called by reporters, [38](#), [95](#)
- Treasons of, [xvi](#), [442–446](#), [474](#),

Johnson, Rafer, [303](#)

Johnson, Rebecca Baines, [183](#)

Johnson, Sam Houston, [474](#)

Johnson, Tom, [164](#), [368](#)

Joint Chiefs of Staff (JCS), [xlvii](#), [226](#), [294](#), [330](#), [332](#), [334–336](#), [338](#), [346–348](#), [353](#), [354](#), [360](#), [379](#), [381](#), [410](#), [411](#), [415](#), [418](#), [423](#), [461](#), [479](#), [519](#)

Jones, James R., [466](#)

Jones, L. E., [99](#)

Jones, Penn, Jr., [39](#), [234](#), [235](#), [236](#), [237](#), [238](#), [258](#)

Jordan, [377–379](#), [438](#)

Jowers, Loyd, [277](#), [279](#)

Justice Department, [x](#), [xxi](#), [37](#), [38](#), [42](#), [85](#), [86](#), [186](#), [190](#), [215](#), [280](#), [287](#), [399](#)

Justice Department Anti-Trust Division, [xliv](#)

Kaplan, Robert D., [323](#)

Katzenbach, Nicholas deB., [116](#), [297](#), [399](#), [400](#), [401](#), [463](#), [464](#), [488](#)

Kearns, Doris (See also Kearns-Goodwin, Doris), [52](#), [75](#), [161–167](#), [472](#)

Kearns-Goodwin, Doris, [161](#), [166](#)

Kefauver, Estes, [85](#)

Kennedy Jacqueline “Jackie”, [246](#), [294](#), [465](#)

Kennedy, Edward M. (“Ted”), [331](#)

Kennedy, Ethel, [303](#)

Kennedy, John F., [xiv](#), [xv](#), [xxvii](#), [16](#), [18](#), [35](#), [39](#), [48](#), [52](#), [53](#), [55](#), [60](#), [65](#), [79](#), [88](#), [94](#), [111](#), [113](#), [127](#), [131](#), [140](#), [142](#), [167](#), [169](#), [202](#), [203](#)

Kennedy, Joseph P., Sr., [186](#)

Kennedy, Robert F. (“Bobby”, “RFK”), [xvi](#), [xxvii](#), [6](#), [63](#), [79](#), [283–321](#), [456](#), [485](#)

Kennedy, Robert F., Jr. (“RFK Jr.”), [295](#)

Kessler, Ronald, [xxxviii](#), [152](#), [153](#), [277](#), [453](#), [454](#), [462](#), [463](#), [465](#), [466](#)

Khmer Rouge, [121](#)

Kidd, Isaac, [390](#), [423](#), [431](#)

Kiernan, Ben, [121](#),

Kilday, Owen, [xxxi](#)

Kilduff, Malcolm, [332](#)

Kilgallen, Dorothy, [44](#), [236](#)

Kilpatrick, James J., [70](#)

King, Coretta Scott, [279](#)

King, Dexter, [279](#)

King, Martin Luther, Jr., [xvi](#), [73](#), [144](#), [272](#), [275–282](#), [283](#), [297](#), [318](#), [464](#), [485](#)

Kinser, John (“Doug”), [xxxiii](#), [2](#), [6](#), [7](#), [26](#), [33](#), [172](#), [234](#), [249](#), [441](#)

Kinsey, Alfred, [xxxix](#)

Kinsey Institute, [xxxix](#)

Kissinger, Henry, [lii](#)

Klaber, William, [300](#), [305](#), [307](#), [308](#)

Kleberg, Richard, [177](#)

Klein’s Sporting Goods store, [76](#)

Koethe, Jim, [236](#), [237](#)

Kopechne, Mary Jo, [331](#)

Korshak, Sidney, [187](#), [190](#), [191](#)

Korth, Fred, [86](#)

Kosygin, Alexei, [393](#), [420](#)

Krim, Arthur, [xxxviii](#), [104](#), [186](#), [192](#), [193](#), [207](#), [208](#), [212](#), [254](#), [256](#), [258](#), [406](#)

Krim, Mathilde, [xxxviii](#), [212](#), [213](#)

Kritzberg, Connie, [ix](#), [xx](#)

Krugman, Paul, [175](#), [206](#)

Krulak, Victor, [353](#)

Krutilek, George, [xxix](#), [6](#), [33](#), [82](#)

Ku Klux Klan (KKK), [183](#)

Kukal, Ron, [392](#), [420](#)

Kupcinet, Karyn, [236](#)

Kurtz, Michael, [502](#)

Lackland Air Force Base, [157](#)

Lafayette Park, [210](#), [335](#), [345](#), [406](#)

LaJeunesse, Roger J., [314](#)

Lambert, William, [68](#), [82](#), [91](#), [467](#)

Lane, Mark, [39](#), [275](#), [291](#), [295](#)

Lansdale, Edward, [292](#), [497](#)

Lansky, Meyer, [186](#), [192](#)

Lasky, Victor, [49](#), [125](#), [144](#), [145](#), [164](#)

Lavie, Hushang, [482](#)

Lawrence, Alexander, [488](#)

Lazarus, Ralph, [209](#)

LBJ Library, [xxiii](#), [xxiv](#), [xlii](#), [1](#), [74](#), [97](#), [147](#), [169](#), [182](#), [210](#), [252](#), [253](#), [368](#)

Leinsdorf, Erich, [184](#)

LeMay, Bill, [430](#),

LeMay, Curtis, [xlvi](#), [412](#), [420](#), [497](#)

Lentini, Joe, [383](#), [384](#)

Lerner, Max, [356](#)

Leva, Marx, [230](#), [232](#)

Levine, Roy, [liii](#)

Levinson, Eddie, [239](#)

Levinson, Larry, [210](#), [317](#), [406](#)

Levinson, Sanford, [161](#)

Levison, Stanley David, [280](#)

Lewis, David, [389](#)

Liberty Foundation, [391](#)

Liebler, Wesley, [36](#), [37](#)

Lifton, David S., [x](#), [xv](#), [36](#), [39](#), [61](#), [264](#), [431](#)

Liggett, John M., [263–265](#), [267](#), [269–272](#)

Liggett, Leona, [270](#)

Liggett, Lois, [265](#)

Liggett, Malcolm, [270](#), [271](#)

Lincoln, Abraham, [84](#), [117](#), [437](#)

Lincoln, Evelyn, [52](#), [81](#), [155](#), [217](#), [218](#), [468](#), [469](#)

Lindsay, John, [299](#)

Lisagor, Peter, [461](#)

Little Congress, [11](#)

Livingstone, Harrison, [37](#), [44](#), [136](#)
Lodge, Henry Cabot, [333](#), [334](#), [367](#)
Loeb, John, [213](#)
Lopez, Ed, [316](#)
Lovett, Robert, [202](#), [227](#), [232](#)
Lowry, Peter, [31](#)
Lubic, Richard, [296](#)
Luce, Henry, [82](#)
Lundberg, Ferdinand, [84](#)
MacArthur, Douglas, [52](#), [323](#), [355](#)
Mack, Gary, [236](#)
MacMillan, Robert M., [152](#), [454](#), [463](#)
Mae Brussell website, [234](#), [237](#)
Maguire, Dick, [255](#)
Malta, [382](#), [390](#), [392](#), [413](#), [419](#), [422](#), [430](#)
Manchester, William, [37](#), [63](#), [123](#), [124](#), [286](#), [289](#), [290](#), [468](#)
Manchurian Candidate, [310](#)
Mankiewicz, Frank, [296](#)
Manning, Robert, [355](#)
Mansfield, Jayne, [263](#)
Mansfield, Michael (“Mike”), [94](#), [95](#)
Mantik, David, [xv](#), [39](#), [40](#), [502](#)
Manuel, Robert, [xxx](#)
Marcello, Carlos, [xli](#), [271](#), [498](#)
Margolis, Eric, [xxxiii](#)
Marrs, Jim, [xv](#), [238](#)
Marsh, Charles, [xxxvii](#), [183](#), [185](#)
Marshall, Burke, [37](#), [125](#)
Marshall, Donald, [11](#)
Marshall, George, [194](#)
Marshall, Henry, [x](#), [xxi](#), [xxvii](#), [xxviii](#), [xxxiv](#), [2–6](#), [8–11](#), [15](#), [17](#), [23–30](#), [32](#), [33](#), [35](#), [43–46](#), [48](#), [58](#), [82](#), [235](#), [260](#), [441](#), [492](#)
Martin, David (Dave), [x](#), [229](#)
Martin, Dean, [261](#), [458](#)
Martin, William I., [381](#), [393](#)
Marvin, Dan, [36](#)
Mashek, John, [253](#)
Matagorda Bay, [478](#)
Matthews, Goree, [11](#)
Max-Neef, Manfred, [139](#)
MCA / Universal Studios, [155](#), [186](#)
McAdams, John, [493](#)
McCain II, John S., [390](#), [394](#), [423](#), [426](#)

McCarthy, Eugene, [286](#), [297](#), [388](#)

McClellan Committee (Senate), [87](#), [91](#)

McClellan, Barr, [xv](#), [xix](#), [xxiv](#), [xxvi](#), [47](#), [59](#), [60](#), [352](#)

McClellan, John L., [xlv](#)

McClendon, Sarah, [141](#)

McCloskey, Matthew (“Matt”), [89](#)

McCloskey, Pete, [391](#)

McCloskey, Robert, [400](#)

McCloy, John, [144](#), [202](#), [203](#), [373](#)

McCone, John, [118](#), [335](#)

McConnell, John P., [348](#)

McCormack, John, [95](#)

McCormick, Robert W., [456](#)

McDermott, John B., [243](#)

McDonald, David, [348](#)

McDonald, James G., [233](#)

McGonagle, William, [379](#), [381](#), [390](#), [419](#), [422](#), [432](#)

McGovern, George, [202](#), [363](#)

McHugh, Godfrey, [63](#), [103](#)

McKnight, Gerald (Jerry), [x](#), [280](#), [494](#)

McLendon, Lennox Polk (“Major”), [88](#), [89](#)

McMaster, H. R., [354](#), [356](#), [361](#)

McNamara, Robert S., [xlix](#), [325](#), [329](#), [373](#), [390](#), [442–446](#), [459–460](#)

McPherson, Harry, [74](#), [75](#), [182](#), [210](#), [211](#), [408](#)

Mecom, John, [273](#)

Medicare Program, [169](#)

Melanson, Philip H., [300](#), [305](#), [307](#), [308](#)

Mellenhoff, Clark, [68](#), [92](#), [467](#)

Menninger, William, [225](#)

Menu Campaign, [121](#)

Meredith, James, [64](#)

Meroney, John, [280](#)

Metcalf, Pryce, [11](#)

Mexico, [32](#), [183](#), [188](#), [467](#), [488](#), [506](#)

Meyer, Cord, [76](#), [203](#), [245](#), [246](#), [247](#), [272](#)

Meyer, Mary Pinchot, [245](#), [247](#), [248](#)

Midland, Texas airport, [xxix](#), [xxx](#)

Miller, Carl, [xxxi](#)

Miller, Herbert, [44](#)

Miller, Merle, [xix](#), [18](#), [52](#), [53](#), [133](#)

Mills, Wilbur, [162](#)

Minh, Ho Chi, [336](#), [363](#)

Mitchell, Christopher, [424](#)

Moise, Edward, [339](#)

Mollenhoff, Clark, [68](#), [92](#), [467](#)

Moody Foundation, [59](#)

Moore, Elmer, [250](#)

Moorer, Thomas, [375](#), [404](#), [406](#), [432](#), [517](#), [519](#)

Moorman, Mary, [266](#)

Morales, David Sanchez, [315](#), [316](#)

Morrow, Robert P., [ix](#)

Morse, Wayne, [340](#)

Mossad, [205](#), [206](#), [213](#), [214](#)

Mount Moriah (The Temple Mount), [438](#)

Moursand, A. W., [354](#)

Moyers, Bill, [xli](#), [li](#), [lii](#), [46](#), [68](#), [125](#), [126](#), [132](#), [134](#), [140–149](#), [154](#), [166](#), [351](#), [352](#), [358](#), [365](#), [366](#), [368](#), [433](#), [445](#), [451](#), [457](#), [458](#), [464](#), [476](#)

Murchison, Clint, [174](#), [273](#), [274](#), [331](#), [498](#)

Murphy, Grace, [271](#)

Murret, Charles “Dutch”, [271](#)

Muslin, Hyman L., [xx](#), [xxxv](#), [liii](#), [69](#), [107](#)

My Khe 4 [Hamlet], [357](#), [358](#)

My Lai 4 [Hamlet], [357](#), [358](#)

Nanjo, Jim, [387](#), [393](#)

Nasser, Gamal Abdel, [378](#), [422](#)

National Archives, [35](#), [39](#), [44](#), [78](#), [264](#), [293](#)

National Navy Medical Center Hospital (Bethesda), [39](#)

National Renewal Alliance Party (Alianca Renovadora Nacional - ARENA), [119](#)

National Security Agency (NSA), [117](#), [385](#), [518](#)

303 Committee, [416](#)

National Security Action Memorandums (NSAM)

 NSAM #263 (JFK authorizes call-down of troops), [332](#), [333](#)

 NSAM #273 (LBJ authorizes continued support of S. Vietnam), [140](#), [332](#), [333](#), [334](#), [367](#), [479](#)

 NSAM #303 (Planning for Operation Cyanide), [416](#)

Negev desert, [204](#), [206](#)

Nehru, Jawaharlal, [107](#)

Nelson, Gaylord, [341](#), [342](#)

Neuberger, Richard, [85](#)

Neustadt, Richard, [116](#)

Nevins, Allan, [84](#)

Newcomb, Fred, [xv](#)

Newman, May, [331](#)

New Zealand, [74](#)

Niles, David K., [181](#)

Nixon, Richard, [37](#), [57](#), [121](#), [122](#), [145](#), [201](#), [272](#), [300](#), [318](#), [320](#), [466](#), [494](#), [500](#)

Noguchi, Thomas T., [306](#), [307](#)

Novak, Alfred S., [81](#)

Novak, Robert, [69](#), [77](#), [84](#)

Novel, Gordon, [viii](#)

Novotny, Maria, [289](#)

Noyes, Peter, [301](#)

NSAM 273, [140](#), [332](#), [333](#), [334](#), [367](#), [479](#)

Nuclear Non Proliferation Treaty (NPT), [206](#), [207](#)

Occam's Razor, [xxxv](#), [414](#), [429](#)

Ochsner, Alton, [478](#)

O'Dell, Jack, [280](#)

O'Donnell, Kenneth, [63](#), [102](#), [130](#), [131](#), [332](#)

O'Donnell, Patrick D., [454](#)

Old Jerusalem, [194](#), [195](#), [438](#)

Olds, Leland, [70](#), [222](#), [231](#), [233](#), [491](#)

Olson, Frank, [233](#)

Oltorf, Frank (Posh), [461](#)

O'Neill, Francis X., [36](#)

Operation Chaos, [412](#)

Operation Cyanide, [391](#), [416–426](#)

O'Reilly, Bill, [xxiii](#), [160](#), [274](#), [275](#), [498](#), [502](#)

Oren, Michael B., [396](#), [427](#)

Oren, Moshe, [398](#)

Orion Pictures, [186](#)

Orr, Harold, [xxxiv](#), [6](#), [33](#)

Osborn, Steve, [493](#)

O'Sullivan, Shane, [x](#), [300](#), [303](#), [306](#), [315](#), [316](#), [319](#)

Oswald, Lee Harvey, [xiv](#), [37](#), [173](#), [188](#), [205](#), [236](#), [237](#), [247](#), [249](#), [265](#), [266](#), [271](#), [273](#), [275](#), [278](#), [286](#), [287](#), [288](#), [295](#), [302](#), [313](#)

Oswald, Marguerite, [viii](#)

Oswald, Marina, [viii](#)

Ottoman Empire, [194](#), [197](#)

Overholser, Winfred, [225](#)

Owen, Jerry, [312](#), [313](#), [314](#)

Owen, Taylor, [121](#)

P. J. Clarke's saloon, [295](#)

Pacific Finance Co., [xxix](#), [157](#)

Painter, Lloyd, [390](#), [422](#)

Palamara, Vince, [xv](#), [216](#)

Palestine, [176](#), [192](#), [193](#), [196–197](#), [199](#), [226](#), [231](#), [438](#), [439–440](#)

Paley, William, [361](#)

Paramount Pictures, [186](#)

Park, James W. L., [311](#)

Park, Patrick, [339](#)

Park, Sam, [160](#)

Parker, Richard, [440](#)

Parker, Robert, [462](#)

Parkland Hospital, [39](#), [41](#), [61](#), [103](#), [235](#), [261](#), [431](#)

Parks, Scott K., [28](#)

Parr, George, [7](#)

Parsons, Russell, [311](#), [314](#)

Paterno, Joe, [171](#)

Paul VI, (Pope), [471](#)

Payne, Susan Thompson, [265](#)

Pearl Harbor, [489](#)

Pearson, Drew, [xliv](#), [52](#), [84](#), [85](#), [91](#), [188](#), [223](#), [224](#), [230](#), [233](#)

Pearson, Lester, [106](#), [211](#), [411](#)

Peck, Dorothy, [263](#), [265](#), [268](#), [269](#)

Peck, J. (Jay) Bert, [260–263](#), [458](#)

Pegler, Westbrook, [224](#)

Pegues, Stephen, [xx](#), [11](#), [157](#), [266](#)

Pena, Manuel, [xxxi](#)

Pentagon, [41](#), [48](#), [67](#), [92](#), [140](#), [142](#), [158](#), [325](#), [326](#), [328](#), [330](#), [332](#), [339](#), [347–349](#), [360](#), [384–386](#), [417](#), [419](#), [421](#), [425](#), [459](#), [474](#), [497](#)

Peoples, Clint

- accolades, awards, etc., [4](#)
- 1962 grand jury, [xi](#), [11](#)
- confrontation with Barefoot Sanders, [19–27](#)
- 1984 grand jury, [4](#), [15](#), [17](#), [19](#), [28](#), [35](#), [45](#), [59](#), [260](#)
- Peoples's assistant (“Georgia”), [47](#)

Peoples, Donna, [5](#)

Pepper, William F. “Bill”, [276](#)

Perlstein, Rick, [97](#)

Permindex, [205](#)

Perot, Ross, [339](#)

Perrin, Mary Elizabeth, [183](#)

Perry, Dave, [268](#)

Phelan, James, [286](#)

“Pisello Case” (Sixty Minutes Show), [190](#)

Phillips, Cabell B. H., [88](#)

Phillips, David Atlee, [288](#)

Piper, Michael Collins, [205](#)

Pisha, Gerald F., [xxxvii](#)

Pitzer, William Bruce, [35](#), [36](#), [39](#), [41](#)

Plimpton, George, [303](#)
Popkin, Richard, [39](#)
Portsmouth Naval Hospital, [384](#)
Posner, Gerald, [160](#), [502](#)
Pot, Pol, [121](#), [504](#)
Potter, Lee, [xxxi](#)
Powers, Bill, [312](#)
Powers, Thomas, [424](#)
Pratt, Howard, [6](#), [33](#)
Prostinak, Michael, [402](#)
Provence, Harry, [xix](#), [18](#), [52](#), [53](#), [133](#), [141](#)
Pruszyński audiotope, [317](#)
Psychological warfare, [202](#)
Public Broadcasting System (PBS), [134](#), [142](#), [219](#)
Quandt, William B., [212](#)
Quang Nam [Province], [358](#)
Quinn, Sally, [166](#)
Quorum Club, [10](#), [92](#), [242](#)
Rabin, Yitzhak, [399](#), [411](#), [414](#), [416](#)
Ragen, Jack, [188](#)
Randolph, A. Philip, [98](#)
Rankin, J. Lee, [36](#), [374](#)
Raskin, Hyman, [52](#)
Raskin, Marcus, [451](#)
Rather, Mary, [159](#)
Ratigan, Mike, [385](#)
Rauh, Joseph (Joe), [78](#)
Raven, Frank, [381](#)
Ray, James Earl, [249](#), [276](#), [277](#), [278](#), [279](#), [302](#), [305](#)
Rayburn, Sam, [xxv](#), [xliv](#), [54](#), [157](#), [181](#), [185](#), [491](#)
Reagan, Ronald, [187](#), [287](#), [481](#), [482](#), [500](#), [516](#)
Reddin, Thomas, [302](#)
Reedy, George, [xxxvii](#), [67](#), [72](#), [77](#), [78](#), [97](#), [100](#), [108](#), [116](#), [139](#), [159](#), [168](#), [218](#), [328](#), [354](#), [364](#), [365](#), [454](#), [457](#), [469](#), [473](#)
Reeves, Richard, [204](#), [325](#)
Reight, Greg, [417](#)
Reston, James (“Scotty”), [125](#)
Revill, Jack, [331](#)
Reymond, William, [xxvi–xxxii](#), [13](#), [19](#), [47](#), [250](#), [251](#), [258](#)
Reynolds, Donald (Don), [xlv](#), [68](#), [86](#), [89](#), [90](#), [91](#), [93](#), [173](#), [239](#), [447](#)
Rhodes, Nina, [312](#), [313](#)
Richardson, Sid, [273](#), [478](#)
Ricks, Thompas E., [426](#), [428](#)

Ridgway, Matthew, [324](#)

Risen, Clay, [99](#)

Robert Greenwald Productions, [45](#), [509](#)

Roberts, Delphine, [271](#)

Robertson County Sheriff's Department, [16](#)

Robinson, David W., [ix](#)

Roche, John P., [145](#), [210](#), [486](#)

Rockefeller Foundation

Rockefeller, John D., [84](#)

Rockefeller, Nelson A., [lii](#), [67](#), [201](#), [202](#), [446](#), [451](#), [452](#)

Rogow, Arnold A., [228](#)

Rometsch, Ellen, [241](#), [245](#), [289](#), [475](#)

Romney, George, [91](#), [443](#)

Roosevelt, Elliott, [xliv](#), [265-266](#)

Roosevelt, Franklin D. (FDR), [117](#)

Root, Elihu, [202](#)

Rose, Charlie, [295](#)

Rosicrucians, [313](#)

Rosi, Wendy, [ix](#)

Rosselli, Johnny, [77](#), [186](#), [188](#), [272](#), [498](#)

Rosthal, Robert J., [24](#)

Rostow, Walter (Walt), [140](#), [207](#), [210](#), [326](#), [328](#), [386](#), [407](#), [421](#)

Rota, Spain, [380](#), [381](#)

Rothermel, Paul, [viii](#)

Rothschild (family of), [446](#)

Roundtree, Dovey, [249](#)

Rowe, James (Jim), [300](#)

Rowley, James, [76](#), [138](#), [496](#)

Ruby, Earl, [viii](#)

Ruby, Jack, [44](#), [188](#), [236](#), [237](#), [265](#), [267](#), [269](#), [270](#), [271](#), [273](#), [305](#), [477](#)

Rusk, Dean, [213](#), [328](#), [336](#), [349](#), [350](#), [363](#), [437](#), [457](#)

Russell, Richard, [115](#), [144](#), [185](#), [478](#), [487](#), [489](#), [491](#)

Russo, Perry, [287](#)

Russo, Rick, [xv](#)

Sabato, Larry, [502](#)

Sauvage, Leo, [39](#)

Safer, Morley, [357](#)

Salandria, Vincent (Vince), [xv](#), [35](#)

Salinger, Pierre, [52](#), [63](#), [125](#), [320](#), [450](#), [451](#), [468](#)

Samuel Insull scandal, [90](#), [177](#)

San Fernando Valley State College, Northridge, California, [295](#)

Sanders, H. Barefoot, [8-19](#)

Sandusky, Jerry, [171](#)

Saxon, Gerald, [8–10](#), [19](#), [27](#), [29](#)

Schlesinger, Arthur Jr., [li](#), [50](#), [102](#), [125](#), [139](#), [164](#), [294](#), [295](#), [351](#), [366](#), [450](#), [454](#)

Schrade, Paul, [x](#), [296](#), [304](#), [308](#), [317](#)

Schulman, Donald, [314](#)

Schwartz, Harry H., [207](#)

Schwartz, Tony, [145](#)

Scott, John, [394](#)

Scowcroft, Brent, [453](#)

Secret Service, [xv](#), [xxv](#), [xxix](#), [xxxviii](#), [liii](#), [61](#), [67](#), [75](#), [104](#), [131](#), [138](#), [145](#), [153](#), [193](#), [216](#), [217](#), [250](#), [251](#), [261](#), [285](#), [287](#), [291](#), [302](#), [303](#), [317](#), [374](#), [390](#), [417](#), [453](#), [454](#), [465](#), [474](#), [496](#), [497](#)

Segni, Antonio, [107](#)

Senate Ethics Committee, [85n](#)

Senate Select Committee on Improper Activities in Labor or Management, [186](#)

Senate Sub-Committee on Military Preparedness, [157](#)

Senator, George, [219](#), [237](#), [324](#)

Serrano, Sandra, [304](#)

Sexual Behavior in the Human Female, [xxxix](#)

Sexual Behavior in the Human Male, [xxxix](#)

Shapiro, Walter, [188](#)

Sharaga, Paul, [302](#)

Shastri, Lal Bahadur, [350](#)

Shaw, Clay, [viii](#), [40](#), [42](#), [205](#), [271](#), [286–288](#)

Sheehy, Maurice [Monsignor], [229](#)

Sheridan, Walter, [287](#), [291](#)

Sherman, Mary, [268–269](#), [287](#)

Sherrill, Robert, [xliii](#), [97](#), [144](#), [164](#)

Shesol, Jeff, [xxiii](#), [219](#), [292](#)

Shimon, Joseph W., [215](#)

Shimon, Toni, [215](#)

Shires, George T., [58](#)

Shivers, Allan, [6](#)

Short, Alex, [160](#), [161](#)

Shriver, Sargent, [334](#)

Sides, Hampton, [281](#), [282](#)

Sidey, Hugh, [128](#), [281](#), [350](#), [468](#)

Sibert, James W., [36](#)

Sibert-O'Neill Report, [36–38](#)

Siegel, Bugsy, [192](#)

Siegelbaum, Ben, [239](#)

Sigma Delta Chi Journalism Society

“Credibility Gap” term created, [127](#), [128](#)

Silvia, Mike, [82](#)

Simpson, Cornell, [228](#), [229](#)

Simson-Kallas, Eduard, [310](#), [311](#)

Sirhan, Sirhan B., [284](#), [300](#), [311](#), [314](#), [315](#)

Six Day War, [151](#), [183](#), [195](#), [207](#), [208](#), [211](#), [213](#), [375–408](#), [416](#), [418](#), [427](#), [429](#), [432](#), [437](#), [438](#), [440](#), [442](#), [445](#), [491](#), [503](#)

Sixth Fleet, [384–386](#), [388](#), [390](#), [393](#), [394](#), [406](#), [419](#), [430](#)

Skull and Bones Club, [113](#)

Slawson, David, [38](#)

Small, Clint Jr., [xlv](#)

Smallwood, James M., [183](#)

Smathers, George A., [130](#), [219](#), [239](#), [244](#)

Smith, Florence Pritchett, [236](#)

Smith, Matthew, [266](#), [267](#)

Smith, Steve, [320](#)

Smithwick, Sam, [6](#), [7](#), [115](#), [234](#), [441](#)

Smyrl, James A., [158](#)

Sommer, Elke, [261](#), [262](#)

Sorensen, Ted, [87](#)

Southwestern Baptist Seminary, [147](#)

Southwestern Historical Wax Museum, [5](#)

Special Unit Senator (SUS), [314](#)

Specter, Arlen, [36](#), [131](#)

Speer, Albert, [49](#)

Stack, Jack, [xxxix](#)

Stalin, Joseph, [171](#), [504](#)

Staring, Merlin, [519](#)

Stegall, Glynn, [4](#), [13](#), [159](#)

Stegall, Howard, [4](#), [11](#), [48](#), [285](#)

Stegall, Mildred, [12](#), [17](#), [159](#)

Stein, Jules, [186](#)

Stern Gang, [192](#), [193](#)

Stimson, Henry, [202](#)

Stinnett, Robert, [489](#)

Stockdale, Grant, [234](#), [239–245](#)

Stockdale, James, [339](#)

Stoddard, Michele, [ix](#)

Stockdale, Jr., Grant, [240](#), [242](#)

Stone III, C. Frank, [274](#)

Stone, Roger, [ix](#), [xix](#), [65](#)

Stratton, Lewis T., [265–266](#)

Strauss, Robert, [362](#), [363](#)

Stroll, Irwin, [304](#)

Sturman, Richard, [385](#)

Suharto, [120](#)

Sullivan, William, [136](#)

Summers, Anthony, [320](#), [334](#)

Svengali, [7](#), [71](#), [177](#)

Swartz, Mimi, [148](#)

Swindel, James, [261](#)

Symington, Stuart, [xxv](#), [53–62](#)

Syria, [376–379](#)

Talbot, David, [295](#), [296](#), [316](#), [372](#), [373](#)

Tarnavsky, Alex, [303](#)

Tatro, Ed, [viii](#), [xv](#), [xx](#), [505](#)

Tatum, Gene “Chip”, [482](#)

Taylor, Maxwell, [334](#), [367](#)

Taylor, Myron C., [184](#)

Taylor, Telford, [358](#)

Teague, James, [160](#)

Teapot Dome scandal, [90](#)

Tennant, Donald, [226](#)

ter Horst, J. F., [180](#)

Tessmer, Charles, [269](#)

Tet Offensive, [296](#), [297](#), [360](#), [361](#)

Texas Ranger Hall of Fame and Museum, [5](#)

Texas School Book Depository Building, [160](#), [236](#), [250](#), [301](#)

TFX Scandal, [9](#), [87](#), [92](#)

Thach, Nguyen Co, [371](#)

the Alamo, [51](#), [128](#), [129](#), [405](#), [489](#)

The Conspiracy Museum, [xxvi](#), [250](#), [258](#)

The Men Who Killed Kennedy

 Smoking Guns (Episode 7), [36](#), [39](#), [45](#), [191](#), [265](#), [268](#), [270](#), [271](#), [300](#)

 The Guilty Men (Episode 9), [viii](#), [46](#), [48](#), [60](#), [140](#), [154](#), [331](#), [458](#)

Thomas, Donald (Don), [xlv](#)

Thomas, Helen, [87](#)

Thompson, Doug, [220](#)

Thompson, Frank, [349](#)

Thornberry, Homer, [488](#)

Thurman, Mace B., [47](#)

Tippit, J. D., [267](#)

Toni, Evan, [391](#)

Tonkin Gulf Resolution, [337](#), [340](#), [440](#)

Tordella, Louis, [389](#)

Tourney, Phillip F., [392](#)

Tower, John, [5](#)

Tregoff, Carole, [306](#), [311](#)

Tripp, C. A., [xl](#)

Truit, Ann, [247](#), [248](#)

Truitt, James, [247](#)

Trujillo, Rafael, [119](#)

Truman, Harry, [169](#)

Truman, Margaret, [193](#)

Tully, Joe, [388](#)

Turner, Dale, [235](#)

Turner, Nigel, [46](#), [140](#)

Turse, Nick, [357](#), [358](#)

Twining, Nathan F., [xlvii](#)

Twyman, Noel, [xv](#), [372](#), [373](#), [459](#), [477](#)

Uecker, Karl, [304](#), [305](#), [307](#)

United Arab Republic, [376](#)

Updegrove, Mark, [1](#), [51](#)

Urso, Lisa, [305](#)

USS Amberjack, [420](#)

USS America, [384–386](#)

USS Davis, [384](#), [413](#)

USS Liberty

 Frontlet 615: Attack of, [212](#), [391](#)

(See also Operation Cyanide)

USS Maddox, [338](#), [405](#), [434](#), [490](#)

USS Maine, [489](#)

USS Massey, [413](#)

USNS Private Jose F. Valdez, [380](#)

USS Requin, [420](#)

USS Saratoga, [384–386](#)

USS Turner Joy, [338](#), [339](#), [344](#), [434](#), [491](#)

Utley, Robert M., [46](#)

Valenti, Courtney, [153](#)

Valenti, Jack, [xix](#), [xxxviii](#), [29](#), [44–46](#), [71](#), [75](#), [140](#), [141](#), [151–156](#), [164](#), [169](#), [190](#), [191](#), [253](#), [260](#), [262](#), [450](#), [457–458](#), [471](#), [472](#), [486](#)

Valenti, John Lyndon, [154](#)

Valenti, Mary Margaret, [153](#), [154](#)

Van de Kamp, John, [302](#)

Van Dyk, Ted, [320](#)

Van Praag, Philip, [317](#)

Vance, Cyrus, [444](#)

Vanocur, Sander, [304](#)

Veciana, Antonio, [288](#)

Versailles Peace Conference, [197](#)

Vietnam Veterans Memorial, [140](#)

Voloshen, Nathan, [241](#)

W. E. B. DuBois Club, [313](#)

Wade, Coleman, [6](#), [33](#)

Wade, Henry, [238](#), [256](#), [269](#), [479](#)

Wagenvoord, James, [78](#), [81](#), [86](#)

Walker, Edwin (Gen.), [478](#)

Wallace, George, [96](#)

Wallace, Henry, [180](#)

Wallace, Malcolm (Mac), [xxxiii](#), [xli](#), [2](#), [14](#), [46](#), [172](#), [244](#), [256](#), [301](#)

Walsh, Diane, [45](#)

Walter E. Heller Company, [xxix](#), [157](#)

Walton, Robert, [316](#)

Ward, Joseph, [385](#)

Warnke, Paul, [207](#)

Warren Commission, [ix](#), [x](#), [xiv](#), [xxii](#), [xxiii](#), [36–38](#), [41](#), [43](#), [44](#), [61](#), [62](#), [74](#), [111](#), [131](#), [132](#), [150](#), [155](#), [160](#), [188](#), [202](#), [203](#), [236–238](#), [246](#), [250](#), [264](#), [265](#), [288](#), [295](#), [296](#), [319](#), [372](#), [373](#), [475](#), [477–479](#), [487](#), [489](#), [498](#), [501](#), [507](#)

Warren Report, [37](#), [39](#), [109](#), [246](#), [247](#), [295](#), [372](#), [440](#), [459](#), [487](#)

Warren, Earl, [38](#), [68](#), [111](#), [144](#), [288](#), [477](#), [487](#), [506](#)

Washington, George, [117](#), [482–484](#)

Wasserman, Lew, [113](#), [155](#), [186–192](#), [207](#), [406](#), [458](#)

Watson, W. Marvin, [149–151](#)

Wattenberg, Ben, [210](#), [406](#)

Wayne, David, [234](#), [272](#)

Weaver, Jr., Warren, [457](#)

Wechsler, Jimmy, [454](#)

Weiner, Tim, [137](#)

Weingartner, LaVerne, [244](#)

Weisberg, Harold, [39](#)

Weisel, William, [304](#)

Weisl, Sr., Edwin, [186](#)

Weizman, Ezer, [378](#), [415](#), [416](#)

Weldon, Doug, [xv](#)

Westmoreland, William, [353](#), [355](#), [356](#), [358](#), [360](#), [367](#)

Wheeler, Earle, [348](#)

Wheeler, Keith, [68](#), [467](#)

White House, [xvi](#), [xxiv](#), [xxxii](#), [xxxvii](#), [xxxviii](#), [li](#), [lii](#), [4](#), [12](#), [49](#), [51](#), [52](#), [62](#), [68](#), [70](#), [72](#), [77](#), [89](#), [90](#), [102](#), [106](#), [113](#), [116](#), [1119](#), [126](#), [127](#), [129](#), [134–136](#), [140–142](#), [144](#), [145](#), [147](#), [149](#), [153](#), [155](#), [161](#), [169](#), [181](#), [185](#), [207](#), [209](#), [210](#), [212](#), [213](#), [215](#), [217–219](#), [221](#), [229](#), [240](#), [243](#), [247](#), [248](#), [264](#), [280](#), [281](#), [285](#), [291](#), [292](#), [317–321](#), [325](#), [327](#), [328](#), [330](#), [332](#), [335](#), [339](#), [342](#), [345–349](#), [353](#), [360](#), [361](#), [363](#), [365](#), [366](#), [369](#), [379](#), [385–389](#), [399–401](#), [406](#), [409](#), [412](#), [414](#), [419–421](#), [423–425](#), [432](#), [444](#), [445](#), [450](#), [451–455](#), [463](#), [465](#), [467](#), [469](#), [500](#), [517](#), [518](#)

White Stars, [11](#), [112](#), [113](#), [429](#)

White, Geneva, [267](#)

White, Leo, [210](#)

White, Ricky, [267](#)

White, Roscoe, [266–268](#)

Wiesl, Ed, [155](#)

Willcutts, Morton D., [225](#)

Wild Bill's Stables, [312](#)

Wild, Sr., Claud, [181](#)

Wiley, Mary Margaret (See Valenti, Mary Margaret)

Will, George, [499](#), [502](#)

Williams, Geraldine, [77](#)

Williams, John, [68](#), [79](#), [240](#), [447](#)

Willoughby, Charles, [52n](#)

Wills, Gary, [163](#)

Wilson, Will, [24](#)

Winchell, Walter, [223](#), [224](#), [230](#), [233](#)

Winter-Berger, Robert, [68](#), [240](#), [348](#), [352](#)

Wirtz, Alvin, [11](#), [113](#), [178](#), [179](#), [180](#), [181](#), [189](#), [491](#)

Wofford, Harris, [292](#)

Woods, Randall B., [129](#)

Woodward, Halbert, "Hal" (Judge), [20–23](#)

Woodward, Warren "Woody", [159](#)

Wooldridge Park, [97](#)

World Independent News Group (WING), [391](#)

World Zionist Conference, [184](#)

Wright, Jim, [161](#), [182](#)

Yamashita precedent, [358](#)

Yarborough, Ralph, [xxv](#), [xxxi](#), [xxxii](#), [xlvi](#), [61](#), [63](#), [99](#), [123](#), [217](#), [467](#)

Yarborough, William P., [288](#)

Yitzhaki, Aryeh, [399](#)

Yorty, Sam, [312](#), [313](#)

Young, Whitney, [149](#)

Youngblood, Rufus, [xxv](#), [61](#), [261](#)

Zeller, Roger, [158](#)

Zionism / Zionist

- "Christian" Zionists, [175](#)
- "Jewish" Zionists, [175](#)
- "Secular" Zionists, [175](#)

Zirbel, Craig, [xix](#), [xxiv](#)

1005th Special Investigations Group of the Air Force, [331](#)

1956 Democratic National Convention, [450](#)

1960 Democratic National Convention, [159](#)

1963 Christmas party, [334](#)

1964 Presidential Campaign

Democratic National Convention, [188](#)

“Daisy Ad”, [145–150](#)

1968 Presidential Campaign

Democratic National Convention, [207](#)